TRANSCENDING THE NINE HEAVENS

BOOK 05

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Transcending the Nine Heavens

(傲世九重天)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Chu Yang, the Ninth Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, sacrificed almost everything he had for the sake of improving his martial arts, including the love of his life. After spending three years locating the fifth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword, he was ambushed by all sides at that very place. Mortally injured with no means of escape, Chu Yang executed a sacrificial technique by plunging the Nine Tribulations Sword into his very own heart. “With the blood of my heart, ten thousand tribulations will collapse!”

After witnessing the death of all his ambushers, Chu Yang’s vision began to darken. At a distance, moments before his death, he saw the mastermind who had plotted his downfall — Mo Tian Ji. With that, his eyes finally closed.

However, with a start, Chu Yang once again awoke to find that he had returned to when he was sixteen years of age! Furthermore, the Sword Spirit of the Nine Tribulations Sword now resided within his Dantian, the energy center of his body! From that very moment, Chu Yang would then begin to right all of his past regrets, and carve his very own legend by fulfilling his destiny as the final Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and defeating the Heavenly Devils beyond the realm of the Nine Heavens Continent.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

Editing by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: What Do You Mean?

The enemies didn't retreat after they heard Wu Kuang Yun's announcement. In fact, the three generals became even more vigilant, and began to launch more intensive attacks.

Long Ao spurred his horse to move forward, and began to rain curses on Wu Kuang Yun in a loud voice, "Get lost, you mother*ker! Do you think that you have any credibility? Your grandfather has already f*king turned into a pile of ashes... and you still have the guts to swear on his name. Shame on you... you sly cheater... You think the same as your foolish, sinister and vulgar Wu family..."

Wu Kuang Yun got furious and cursed back, "I'm your Father. Your Father's grandfather is your Great-grandfather. How dare you curse your Great-grandfather... you disobedient, un-filial bastard. You're a wicked person... without any redemption. You're being disrespectful to your deceased ancestors! This is utterly disgraceful and heresy. Long Ao... you son of a b*tch, you offal, you are a bastard son born of a wh*re." The persuasion attempt had turned into a comical scene of two armies hurling abuses at each other.

Wu Kuang Yun and Long Ao weren't satisfied with hurling abuses at each other. Therefore, both of them gathered their subordinates, and lined them up to form squads for chanting abuses in unison. Wu Kuang Yun refused to be outdone. So, he went one step further and divided his soldiers into several groups. These groups were to take turns to continue this battle of abuses. He even stripped down to his waist, and joined his men in chanting abuses.

That atmosphere along with the shouts was a world-shaking phenomenon.

Their curses darkened the sky; a sense of gloominess was spread

over the earth. Even the sun and the moon had lost their brightness. These soldiers were bold and straightforward. Moreover, each one of them was skilled at cursing. So, they continued to curse all sorts of vulgar abuses in various dialects from all over the country…

There were a total of one million people including the soldiers atop the wall and the ones stationed below. And, all of them were hurling abuses at each other! All possible references to each other's female relatives – tracing all the way up to seventeen or eighteen previous generations had been mentioned…

Chu Yang, Tie Bu Tian and the two shadows had taken a detour, and had arrived there by that time.

Tie Bu Tian and the shadows didn't know that there were other routes leading to the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. So, they had followed Minister Chu, and had found a narrow and winding road. Moreover, Minister Chu had found a rare wild ginseng and a hundreds of years old Red Spirit Mushroom from the sides of this secret road. He had also collected a pile of stuff like Solomon's Seal Plant and Fleece flower on the way…

The experienced and knowledgeable shadows were dumbfounded by his ability.

[How's he finding these items?]

[While walking around… Chu Yang often utters an expression of surprise – 'hmm'. Then, he starts sniffing around… and squats down to inspect a patch of grass… only to find a precious herbal medicine. Each herb he finds can be regarded as a high-quality item…]

[This skill goes in defiance of the natural order. Even a poor person – without any aptitude – can enhance his cultivation with this ability…] the two shadows thought.

The road was extremely narrow and twisted – like a sheep's

intestines. The narrowest section of the road was so narrow that even a slim person could barely squeeze through it by pushing himself sideways. There were several such narrow sections. Fortunately, none of the four individuals were fat. So, they were able to pass through these sections.

Minister Chu noticed that the other people didn't face any difficulty in passing through such sections. However, the lean and thin Tie Bu Tian would get his chest stuck in narrow spots several times...

Minister Chu was puzzled by this, [His chest seems average. It's rather flat... to be precise. His chest muscles aren't even developed. Why does his chest keep getting stuck? This is really strange...]

The mountain road was getting more and more difficult to tread-on. It was hard to tell how old this road was. In fact, it could no longer be called a road as it was densely covered with thorny bushes. They reached a certain point after they had climbed less than halfway to the peak; it was impossible to move forward from there.

It would've been impossible for these people to move ahead if they had low cultivations.

Tie Bu Tian's physical strength gradually started to cause problems. So, a shadow had to carry him. Chu Yang felt sorry for the shadow. After all, this shadow was a skinny old man, and could get tired easily. However, Chu Yang was young and full of strength and vigor. Moreover, he was a king level expert now. So, he proposed to lend his back.

He hadn't thought that his proposition would receive a strong opposition from the two shadows and Tie Bu Tian.

Their reaction was so intense that it startled Chu Yang. He was at a loss, and had no choice but to let the old man continue to carry Tie Bu Tian on his back. He complained in his heart, [What the hell! Are you afraid that I'll throw the Emperor from the cliff and

into the abyss?]

He became depressed.

But, he also felt strange, [Tie Bu Tian doesn't mind being carried on the back of the shadow. But, why won't he allow anyone other than the shadows to carry him? Doesn't he know that I proposed to carry him... only because I look at him as a brother? Yet, he bluntly rejected my offer...]

Tie Bu Tian was helpless. The transforming effect of her jade ornament could deceive only people's vision, but not their sense of touch. Chu Yang would've certainly detected the difference if he were to carry her on his back...

But, she didn't mind being carried by the shadows... because they were a married couple even though she called the two of them 'Uncles'.

They finally arrived at the summit of the mountain after they had crossed several cliffs. A bone-chilling wind was blowing at the summit. It was issuing a howling sound. The four people were forced to use their martial powers to be able to stand steadily. It was extremely cold at the summit even though it was mid-summer.

"Cross this mountain-peak... and get down from that side. Then, you'll arrive at the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. But, you'll have to get down from this seven-to-eight-hundred feet high concave cliff if you wish to enter the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass... You can't afford to fall from here." Chu Yang pointed his finger at a cliff and spoke, "The slanting valley is right below this protruding cliff."

Tie Bu Tian nodded thoughtfully.

"Your Majesty doesn't need to worry. We've taken an extremely secret route to arrive here. Someone can't climb-up this road unless they have a cultivation of Revered Martial Artist or higher... It's even more implausible to bring an army."

Tie Bu Tian replied with a faint smile, "I'm not worried about that. I heard you say that the slanting valley is beneath this. But, the slanting valley must be jam-packed with Great Zhao's army since Wu Kuang Yun must be guarding the mountain pass right now. How can we destroy them? Shouldn't we have a way to do that... since we are currently at an advantage?"

"Maybe... this isn't the lucky chance?" The shadow on the side said, "You must know that there must be a suitable terrain to pull that off..."

"You didn't even look around. How do you know that this isn't our lucky chance?" Tie Bu Tian frowned and spoke, "Besides... we've arrived here with much difficulty. My heart wouldn't allow me to get down from here without doing anything."

Tie Bu Tian didn't pay any attention, but Chu Yang had appeared to be thinking hard with wrinkled eyebrows ever since he had spoken this sentence. He then spoke, "Such being the case... I know a way. Come with me."

Then, he followed the same route that they had taken to arrive here, and started to descend. The other three people didn't know what he was trying to do. However, they followed after him.

They vaguely heard the vigorous shouts coming from below. The mountain was indeed extremely tall, but three of these four people were king level experts. So, they possessed superhuman hearing abilities. How could they not hear those shouts?

"Awesome!" Chu Yang spoke in a heartfelt manner, "Just look at the way Wu Kuang Yun is hurling abuses. It's such a marvelous achievement! Such an occurrence can be considered as 'unprecedented' in any war."

Tie Bu Tian almost bent over and giggled. He then said, "It seems that Great General Wu is extremely anxious."

"How can he not be anxious? He left you – the Emperor behind...

and ran back to safety; even if it was by your command. In case something happens to you... he'll most likely jump into the Nine Heavens' Milky Way and commit suicide. This guy's mind is being tormented by a hundred claws right now. He must be going through an unspeakable amount of bitter suffering..."

Chu Yang smiled mischievously and said, "I guess General Wu must be feeling extremely satisfied in his heart right now."

Tie Bu Tian couldn't help but laugh. He said, "Yes! When you see him... ask him how satisfied he really felt..." Suddenly, Tie Bu Tian's face turned red for some reason...

"No need to ask... I already know what he'll say..." Chu Yang curled his lips and replied.

"What will he say?" Tie Bu Tian asked curiously.

"Once he sees that you've come back safely... And, when you aren't around... if I go and ask him how he felt... and how satisfied he was..." Chu Yang replied, "... he'll puff-up his chest and say this..."

"What?" Tie Bu Tian asked.

Chu Yang imitated Wu Kuang Yun's coarse and thick voice, clutched his chest, swung his buttocks and said, "... Ahwooh... I feel so good... I really feel so good... ah... ah... ah... ahwooh..."

Chu Yang had perfectly imitated Wu Kuang Yun's posture and body movements. He had spoken in a sentimental tone. That made it seem as if he was deeply indulged in a fantasy, and was embarrassed enough to blush from ear-to-ear...

Tie Bu Tian staggered and almost went rolling down from the mountain top. He kicked Chu Yang in the butt. His face flushed with anger as he said, "Nonsense! He won't say such things..."

The two shadows also staggered and nearly fell on their heads. They didn't know whether to laugh or cry. They steadied themselves, and looked at Minister Chu. They continued to stare at

him for a long time. They didn’t understand the meaning of what he had just said…

"But… I must say that you mimicked his voice very well." Tie Bu Tian calmed down, and said with a smile, "I can tell from hearing you… that you possess a very good memory… don’t you?"

"Yes… ah. My memory is rather good." Chu Yang shook his head and said with a sigh, "He was once captured by me… and held captive for ten days during his assassination attempt on Du Shi Qing. He shouted curses at me for several days. His voice was extremely annoying. But, when he took it too far and provoked me… I told him something. Then, he immediately became obedient…"

"Eh? What did you tell him?" Tie Bu Tian became curious. After all, Wu Kuang Yun was the kind of guy who could even clamor in front of Tie Long Cheng. So, what exactly was said to him that made him obedient in spite of the fact that he shared a hostile position with Chu Yang…?

"I told him that… I’ll feed aphrodisiacs to all the warhorses if you dare to curse at me again… and then, I will strip-off your clothes… and make you assume a sexy pose in the shed of those warhorses…" Chu Yang squinted and said happily.

"You…" Tie Bu Tian had an intuition. That resulted into a burst of rage. These words nearly stimulated him to jump off the cliff.

Not for Wu Kuang Yun… but for himself.

[Feed aphrodisiac… and then assume a sexy pose…]

[Doesn’t it sound like the same thing that happened to me that night… when Chu Yang was unconscious after an aphrodisiac overdose?]

[Why did he tell me this? Was he conscious at that time?]

Suddenly, Tie Bu Tian blushed.

He couldn’t restrain his anger. He asked furiously, "What do you mean?!"

The two shadows looked at each other in dismay, [Don’t tell me that this minister…]

"Eh?" Minister Chu was shocked. He looked at Tie Bu Tian innocently, and scratched his head. He then said, "What?"

"Humph!" Tie Bu Tian realized that it was a misunderstanding. [The way this guy was caught off-guard just now… the baffled expression on his face explains it all. He isn’t pretending. It means that he genuinely threatened Wu Kuang Yun.] However, the thought of it left Tie Bu Tian in a rage. He clasped his hands behind his back; he had an icy look on his face. Then, he started to walk while he fumed with anger.

Chapter 402: Doesn’t it look like...? Doesn’t it look like...?

Minister Chu opened his eyes wide, and looked at them in an innocent manner. He felt extremely wronged. [You were the ones who made me say that... alright? I said it to joke around... and have some fun. Why did you all get mad?]

[The color of the sky is very hard to predict... ah.]

[No wonder they say that accompanying a King is as dangerous as accompanying a tiger. This saying is absolutely true.]

"He genuinely deserves this sort of a treatment," The two shadows looked at him fiercely. Then, they went along with the Emperor without showing any mercy or sympathy towards him. Chu Yang was being treated miserably and despised upon – like one would treat a heartless scoundrel who had abandoned a girl after having thoughtless s*x with her.

Chu Yang stared at the backs of the three people. He couldn’t take it anymore; he cried out in a depressed tone, "What did I do wrong? Why are you treating me like this? This is unfair. I’m being wrongly accused... this is really insane. How did I end-up offending all of you at once?"

The three people had their own reasons to ignore him. But, they felt delighted as they heard his depressed cries.

"Well... it’s here." Chu Yang pointed ahead. The three people had been ignoring him ever since he had revealed his expert tip on ‘how to bring Wu Kuang Yun under control’. So, he had remained gloomy throughout the way. He continued to rack his brains, [I’m sure that none of the words I said could’ve offended anyone. Then, why did these three people get angry? What... what’s going on?]

[It seems that talking too much leads to some mistakes.]

They finally reached the location, and felt relaxed. But, getting a

cold shoulder never feels good; especially when one’s having a fun discussion, and the next moment something comes out of one’s mouth that annoys someone... and then one is left scratching one’s head – wondering where one went wrong...

"What’s here?" Tie Bu Tian asked.

"You’ll find a little slope after you get down from here. You can’t see it from here... but the slope goes three-thousand feet down. It’s very steep. It’s impossible to come-up from below. But, there’s no hindrance while going down from above." Chu Yang spoke, "Of course, people can’t get down from here."

"What’s the point of coming here... if people can’t get down from here?" Tie Bu Tian titled his head, and looked at him. He hadn’t missed any chance to ridicule Chu Yang since that talk.

"But, other things can go down... for example, a stone." Chu Yang smiled mischievously and continued, "I remember that the slope slants down into the slanting valley... and the slanting valley is jam-packed with Great Zhao’s army... haha... this is so amusing."

Tie Bu Tian’s countenance changed; he became terrified. A sharp look appeared in his eyes as he said, "You mean..."

Chu Yang smiled and said, "What I mean is quite simple. Since Great Zhao’s army is crowded in this narrow slanting valley... we may as well turn it into a bloody valley... We can also interrupt their supplies to a certain extent..."

A glint of ‘cruelty’ was visible in Chu Yang's smile. Even the two shadows shivered as they looked at his expressions.

Tie Bu Tian pondered for a moment and said, "You’re right... But, you want to achieve that by relying on only our strength. I think... you’re overestimating our capabilities." He lowered his head to think for a moment. He then said, "We can’t cause a lot of damage even if we roll tree-logs or stones down from here... The most we can do is cause some disturbance... it won’t be very useful."

"That's why I've brought you to the right terrain... ah... or else why do you think I would be leading you back-and-forth?" Chu Yang was surprised by Tie Bu Tian's stupidity. [Did this guy stop using his brain?]

Chu Yang didn't know that most women possessed this characteristic – as long as a woman can rely on the man by her side... she'll let the man deal with any problem that occurs. She would never consider the fact that there are some problems that she can easily handle herself...

"Just explain your plan," Tie Bu Tian was also aware of her abnormal behavior. So, she coughed twice to disguise her embarrassment.

"Look over there... at that mountain," Chu Yang said enthusiastically as he pointed towards a tall mountain in the front. Its peak was hidden in the clouds.

The three people were shocked as they looked at it.

They saw a towering mountain peak a few thousand feet away from where they stood. It was a lofty peak; it looked like a giant arm that was protruding into the sky. It was hard to tell its actual height since most of it was hidden in the clouds.

It had a smooth surface; it wasn't covered with weeds or plants. It looked like a towering lump of stone that stood erect between Heaven and earth.

"See? This mountain peak is appropriate for the task. We only need to push it over... Then, it'll go rumbling downwards. Considering its shape and size... it'll dash down all the way... and fall at the center of the slanting valley. I'm sure that its massive momentum will keep on rolling it for a few miles... And, about one-hundred-thousand soldiers of Great Zhao stationed within these miles will be turned into meat sauce..."

The way Chu Yang talked about such an important matter was

really incredible. Moreover, there was an imposing style to it. However, the other three people didn't find this matter very casual. So, they were stunned. They looked at him as if he was a monster...

"Push it over?" Tie Bu Tian looked at the 'delighted prehistoric creature' called Chu Yang. He continued to look at Chu Yang for a while. He then said, "Minister Chu, I have to say that your plan is brilliant. In fact, this mountain peak will cause more than one-hundred-thousand casualties if we manage to push it down from here... But, the issue is how to push it over?

"I'm not talking about the weight. I'm talking about the size of this mountain peak. It's several hundred feet tall... and we can't even see its peak. It's very thick too. I'm assuming that it has more than a hundred feet of perimeter. The four of us can't even shake it with our combined strengths; let alone push it. That's impossible."

Chu Yang laughed and said, "I didn't say that we must push it down all of a sudden. This kind of thing takes time; we must take one step at a time. We must strike when the iron is hot. You see... you must take your time... and entice her slowly. And, at the right time... when she's showing the least resistance... Ahem... then you take it and slam it inside with a bam. Boom... Bang... Boom... there... it's done. Mission accomplished!

Chu Yang's words left the two women to blush. [No matter what comes of out of this bastard's mouth... it makes him look like those perverts who molest young girls...]

[How did an important plan related to eradicating the enemies turn into such a vulgar talk?]

The two shadows shook their heads as they looked at the mountain peak. [I'm afraid that even a Martial Monarch can't move such a mountain peak; forget about pushing it over...]

[Perhaps... only a legendary Martial Saint or a Supreme Martial Artist can achieve such a feat.]

[Of course... a Supreme Martial Artist would be able to flatten this mountain peak with just a flick of his hands. Then, there won't be any need of going one step at a time... But, would such a character even need to push-over this mountain peak to deal with such a petty human army? He-alone would be enough to kill them all...]

[However, this feat can't be achieved with the combined power of the three King level experts present here...]

"I have an idea..." Chu Yang stated in a confident manner, "... but it will need a significant amount of time. It can't be done in a short time..."

Tie Bu Tian curled-up his lips and said, "There's no need to push it at all if you wish to wait until next year..."

"How can that be?" Chu Yang said in an angry tone, "It'll require only two days of time. In fact, not even two days..." He beckoned with his hand and spoke, "Come with me if you want to achieve this great victory... "

Then, he started to walk towards the mountain peak.

The other three people were helpless; they had to follow after him. They couldn't help but think of his idea as a joke.

The more they thought about it... the more they felt that Chu Yang's idea was completely unreasonable... and totally unfeasible. However, it was very strange to see that the entire mountain was made-up of rocks that had constituted to form a big stone. This big stone weighed millions of kilograms...

The big stone was cylindrical in shape; it had been standing upright at the top of the hill since a long time. It was rather incredible. It could be regarded as a massive natural structure that stood tall between Heaven and earth...

"I don't know the name of this mountain... but I know the name of this mountain's peak. It's called the Chun Yang Peak. Its name is

very famous in the nearby areas... This Chun Yang Peak is composed of only one stone. There is a backstory that explains its origins." Chu Yang spoke in a deep voice as he walked, "Do you wish to know?"

"What backstory?" the three of them asked in unison. They had seen this place for the first time, and didn't know anything about it.

"This backstory... haha... is really difficult to tell. Fortunately, there's no woman present here. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to tell it." Minister Chu revealed a vulgar smile. His eyebrow went up and down. He winked as if trying to hint the three men that – 'you know... only men can understand this kind of stuff'. The three people smiled at him.

He was oblivious that the sentence that he had just spoken – 'fortunately, there's no woman present here' – was truly ridiculous. Two out of the three people present before him were women...

The three people were in a good mood, and were having fun. They felt powerless as they thought that this guy goes crazy from time-to-time.

"What's the backstory?" a shadow asked.

"Look at this mountain from bottom-to-top. Focus on the two oval-shaped bases that support it from the bottom. Hmm... though it's very big... it doesn't seem that vivid... but it doesn't matter... the key point it at the top."

Minister Chu chuckled, and tried to inspire the spirits of the three people; it seemed as if he was showing them a newly discovered continent. He said, "You see... there's a mushroom head at the top. Now, follow along the thick stem that runs all the way down to the two circular shapes... do you understand now? Hehe..." Chu Yang grinned; he seemed overjoyed.

Tie Bu Tian and the others looked at him with a doubtful expression on their faces.

"You people don’t have the slightest imagination..." Chu Yang heaved a deep sigh and spoke, "Can’t you see... if you shrink it hundreds-of-thousands of times... what will it look like?"

Chu Yang looked extremely excited. He laughed twice in an obscene manner. Then, he spoke... as if to guide them patiently, "Think about it... we all have something... haha... that looks like this... Take a good look at it, and think carefully... Doesn’t it look like...? Doesn’t it look like....?"

The three people shook their heads; they seemed to be at a loss. However, only two of them were truly oblivious. The third one was trying his best to suppress his laughter; so much so, that he felt that his lungs would explode... [I can’t laugh... I can’t even smile. I’ll be in trouble if I do. The misfortune of Minister Chu will get shifted to my head...]

However, it wasn’t easy to keep a straight face in the current situation. It was extremely uncomfortable to suppress his laughter. He couldn’t let any strange expression appear on his face. In fact, he had to use his powers of Nine Grade King level to control his facial muscles...

Chun Yang Peak: ‘Chun’ means pure or simple. Yang means sun; it’s also the ‘male principle' in Daoism.

Chapter 403: This is the Backstory!

"I feel like taking off my pants to let you compare!" Chu Yang was eagerly waiting to see the reactions on their faces when they'd finally figure out the joke and burst into laughter thereafter. He was looking forward to that expression on their faces. However, he only got to see a bewildered expression on their faces, and a doubtful look in their eyes.

Minister Chu's excitement finally broke down. He couldn't bear anymore. He shouted in a loud voice... in utter desperation, "Can't you see that this thing resembles the 'thing'... in our crotch?"

Minister Chu literally blew his top. He had never known himself to get so frustrated after cracking a joke!

[These three people have no sense of humor...]

Minister Chu's frustration wasn't without a reason. After all, his efforts in building-up this joke had gone down the drain. However, he was completely unaware that he had said something which had misled the others — 'all of us have it!'

This small sentence had messed it all up!

He had said that they all have 'it'... but, the problem was that they all didn't have the 'thing' he had hinted at... they really didn't have 'it'! But, perhaps they might've guessed it if he hadn't said it, and had continued further with his joke...?

Therefore, Minister Chu couldn't help but blow his top, and eventually had to explain the joke in short. But, he had roared out the last sentence in a very depressed manner.

He noticed that those three had finally understood his joke after he said these words — including the ones who hadn't understood it earlier. One individual had been holding back his laughter all this while. He finally clutched his belly, and broke into a wild laughter.

His reaction could be considered as 'laughing one's a*s out';

[you’re killing me…]

The other two looked at Chu Yang angrily. It seemed from their stances that they were about to charge forward and beat him up!

Minister Chu finally saw that someone had understood his joke, and had also started to laugh. However, the other two were glaring at him with ice-cold eyes for some reason. In fact, the angry glares he was receiving from them… was enough to chop him into a thousand pieces…!

Minister Chu felt a chill running down his spine. He was about to burst into laughter, but he held it back in his belly. He smiled in embarrassment, and touched his nose. Then, he scratched his head and asked, "What’s wrong? Wasn’t it funny?"

"Funny!" Tie Bu Tian clenched his teeth as he tried his best to stop himself from flaring up. However, his rage exploded as he replied, "Funny, my a*s! It was so vulgar… so dirty… so… you had the guts to declare it from your mouth… and that too so triumphantly… you’re… you’re extremely shameless!"

The other shadow didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. She gazed at Chu Yang, and felt like beating the sh*t out of him.

"Eh…" Chu Yang was stunned. [This joke should’ve been fine among men… I don’t know how this joke has suddenly backfired?]

[This is very shocking!]

[Could it be that the Emperor’s men aren’t the same as ordinary men? Can’t they even laugh at such a joke?]

"Why don’t you just tell that backstory?" Tie Bu Tian angrily said. He seemed rather impatient to change the topic. This joke was embarrassing as hell. In fact, Tie Bu Tian’s face that already turned red.

[To speak such a vulgar thing in front of me is simply outrageous! Hateful! This bastard!]

"I... can’t say," Chu Yang lowered his head and replied in a worn-out voice. He spoke in his heart, [a simple joke has triggered such a violent reaction... won’t I get chopped into pieces at the end of this backstory?]

"It’s alright. Just say it," The male shadow encouraged him. It was clearly visible in his eyes that he was taking pleasure in another’s misfortune.

"Go ahead and say it." Tie Bu Tian had a cold expression on his face. However, one could also see that he was strongly suppressing a hint of smile in his eyes. [It’s so embarrassing that I can’t even smile... This bastard!]

"Ok... So, here it goes — they say that there was once a man... he was good looking. And, he was also very rich. But, he could never find a wife for himself. He lived for more than 80 years. But, he still couldn’t find a wife, and died in the end," Chu Yang said this, and quickly stole a glance to see everyone’s reactions.

He felt relieved since he saw no major change in their expressions. So, he boldly continued, "...then, he reincarnated. He once again grew up to become handsome, cool and very rich. He again lived for more than 80 years, but still couldn’t find a wife... and ultimately died single..."

The three people were shocked when they heard this. [This... what kind of a backstory is this?]

"What relation does this story have with this mountain peak?" Tie Bu Tian raised his eyebrow and asked. He genuinely didn’t understand the point of such an absurd story...

"Don’t be hasty. Just keep listening, and you’ll find out..." Chu Yang replied comfortingly, " ...he continued to reincarnate thereafter. In fact, he reincarnated for a total of nine times! When he was on the verge of death in his ninth life — he recalled that he had remained a bachelor for nine lives! This ‘virgin of nine lives’ finally erupted like a volcano..."

Chu Yang spoke with grief... and with a similarly ‘grieving’ look on his face, "So, he made his final wish before he died. He said — there are males for females, and females for males in this world. The Yin and Yang join together to breed and create myriads of things! This is the principle of Yin and Yang. Why am I the only one who has stayed single for nine lives? Is this the heaven’s way to tease me?! Where’s the justice in it? How’s this fair? Where’s the human sympathy? Where’s the heaven’s law? Where’s the nature’s justice...?!"

Chu Yang’s modulating tone and manner of speech added a feeling to the story. The other three couldn’t help but be attracted to this story. They thought that the heaven was at fault to not create a predestined marriage for this man. Even a youthful and good-looking man was made to stay single for nine consecutive lives as a result. Even the thought of this tragedy would make anyone sigh again and again. There was no other explanation to this... one could only call it the Heaven’s injustice...

Tie Bu Tian thought of this in particular. He couldn’t help but sigh. He said in his heart, [Is it the heaven’s fault that there’s no marriage written in my destiny? I wasn’t supposed to meet him... but I did. We could’ve been together... but I’m bound to a life of solitude for various reasons... there’s not much difference between my story and this man’s...]

Tie Bu Tian couldn’t help but sigh. He then asked, "So... what wish did he make in the end? Did he ask for three wives and four concubines?" Tie Bu Tian guessed at this since he believed that a common man would harbor such a desire... especially if he were to spend nine lives as a bachelor.

"No." Chu Yang smiled strangely, and continued to narrate, " ...he faced towards the sky, and shouted loudly. He said — what’s the use of this heaven if I can’t find a partner? What’s the point of taking another rebirth? Everyone marries and mates in this world. They allow their Yin and Yang elements to complement each

other, but the heaven is unfair to me. I can't take this anymore. This is unbearable! I couldn't join with someone in this life... but, I wish to join with the heaven when my body dies!"

Tie Bu Tian uttered an 'ah'. Then, he turned silent. He was stopped by the sudden surge of shame in his heart. He felt a strong regret in his heart; [It's better that I don't say anything. It doesn't matter whether this guy's story is good or not... it's definitely embarrassing to death...]

Chu Yang was overjoyed. He shrugged his shoulder and said as he smiled, " ...he took off his clothes after he was done making the wish. And then, he lay down on his back with his legs spread out, and died! His grievances rushed upwards, and impacted the ninth heaven. Suddenly, the thunders rolled, and the lightning flashed in the sky. Then, his body suddenly underwent an incredible mutation!"

Tie Bu Tian felt like asking... [What mutation?] But, he decided to hold back for now. [I know that this guy is incapable of saying nice things. As the saying goes... no good words are to be expected from a scoundrel...]

" ...The mutation caused his body to transform into a great mountain. His arms turned into canyons, his blood turned into rivers... and his hair transformed into flowers, plants and trees... he basically turned into a towering mountain! And, the 'thing' in his crotch excitedly stood tall and upright. It became the tallest peak on his mountain. It charged into the sky to penetrate it... in accordance to his death-wish! It was as if the sky was... one big hole!"

The other three heard this... and felt as if they had been struck by a lightning. They were stunned. They looked like silly ducks. They blankly stared in a daze as their bodies covered in cold sweat...

[This backstory is really... it is really... something that can't be narrated...]

"That's why the peak before us is called the 'Chun Yang Peak!'" Minister Chu finally dropped the curtain on this story. He smacked his lips again and again as he looked at that cylindrical and smooth 'upright stone'. But, he looked like he had something more to say. So, he said, "This mountain peak has another name. We all are more familiar with this name. Moreover, this other name even depicts the very image of the..."

"Don't say it! Don't say it!" Tie Bu Tian cried out loud. His face turned from white to red... from red to blue... and, from blue to black. He was so angry that it seemed like his belly would explode.

He remembered how he had felt a moment ago. He had felt that something like this had happened to him as well. He had even felt sorry for himself in the secrecy of his heart... and, those feelings and emotions had come from such a 'backstory'?! He couldn't help but be ashamed of himself. One could've clearly seen the look of pure rage on his face if the magical jade pendant hadn't concealed it. He looked at Chu Yang, and got even more furious, [my anger won't calm down until I beat him up!]

Tie Bu Tian firmly stared at Chu Yang, and clenched his teeth to control his anger. He somehow uttered these words, "Minister... Chu! You are very... knowledgeable!"

"You're flattering me haha..." A smile had long been present on Chu Yang's face like a blossom. His entire body trembled like a small plant that was swaying in the wind as he laughed uncontrollably, "Wa ha ha ha... ha ha... he he..."

Tie Bu Tian was fuming on the other side...

It was alright if this joke was told to a man... in fact, it wouldn't have been a big deal. But, the problem was ... the problem was...

Minister Chu was in big trouble!

He was laughing, and his whole body was rocking back and forth as if he was having cramps. Tie Bu Tian and the female shadow

attacked him, and pinned him down. Minister Chu was so pleased that he had lost his sense of measure, and thus... was caught off guard. He was unable to dodge, and was captured in one neat move.

And then, a rain of fists poured down!

Bang Bang Bang Bam Bam Bam

Poor Minister Chu didn't know where this disaster came from. He hadn't even stopped laughing when he suddenly started to take a severe beating... he came to his senses after a long time, and furiously asked, "What is this? Why are you doing this...?"

The two women refrained from giving him a reply. They just continued to beat him mercilessly. And, Minister Chu continued to scream endlessly...

A long while passed... the two women eventually got tired of beating him. So, they finally stopped and let go of him. Minister Chu jumped to get up. His body ached all over. He got agitated, and angrily asked, "Why would you beat me up all of a sudden?! Is this the law of the land?!"

"I'm the law of the land!" Tie Bu Tian snorted with pride. He rubbed his wrist. It was sore from excessive punching. However, his pent-up anger still hadn't subsided...

The two shadows couldn't help but smile as he stated this sentence! [Which law of the state are you talking about? The Emperor is standing right here!]

Someone else would be called 'an ignorant who doesn't know the immensity of heaven and earth' if they were to speak this sentence. However, who could refute if the Emperor were to say that he was the law of the state...?

Chu Yang's eyes looked bland. He realized that he didn't stand a chance against these people. So, he replied in a defeated manner, "I admit that I took a beating... but... at least give me a reason..."

Chapter 404: Heaven Shakes and Earth Moves

"This is my wife — not my brother," the male shadow who had been laughing wildly all this while finally spoke up. His whole face convulsed because he had attempted to restrain his laughter for a long time.

"What the f*k! Why didn't you tell me earlier that there's a woman in our midst!" Chu Yang was stupefied at first. But then, he suddenly realized; [I've been treated unjustly. I've been beaten up and scolded for no reason. I'm innocent... I would've never told such a vulgar story with such passion if I had known that there's a woman in our midst. I'm perfectly aware that it's like asking for trouble...]

Then, Chu Yang looked at the 'female shadow'. She was looking back at him with an evil intention in her eyes. Chu Yang shook his head. He seemed to be taking pleasure in another's misfortune. [So, this is your wife? I thought she was your brother. She has a nonexistent chest and flat buttocks... how disappointing and boring...]

They had arrived at the 'Chun Yang Peak' over the course of this conversation. Tie Bu Tian looked up at this mountain peak, and was suddenly reminded of the 'backstory' Chu Yang had narrated. He couldn't help but harbor a surge of nausea. He uttered the vomiting sound a few times...

[This is so very disgusting!]

Tie Bu Tian frowned in a disgusted manner and spoke, "Minister Chu, you said something about pushing over this... peak. How do you plan to do that? Let's discuss that instead."

Tie Bu Tian had suddenly started to feel very disgusted to see this peak standing tall and erect on this mountain after he had heard

that ‘backstory’. It had become an eyesore! [I wish I could push it down right now!]

[I originally thought that it would be a pity to destroy this big structure. But now... that feeling of ‘pity’ is nonexistent. How could I allow such a filthy, unsightly and blasphemous object to be majestically preserved for eternity?]

[It won’t do! I can’t let that happen!]

"I’m certainly considering this possibility." Chu Yang wanted to cry but had no tears to shed. He rubbed his waist. Then, he gently pressed his fingers against his bruised face. He used his tongue to check for any loose teeth, and was relieved to find none. Then, he spoke, "Look over there. There’s slope there. And, you won’t find anything if you follow down this slope. There’s only a cliff that goes straight down."

The male shadow observed carefully, and measured with the footsteps to confirm Chu Yang’s claim. Then, he nodded and said, "Well, indeed. If assuming in accordance with the human body — there has to be a steep concave pit at the end of one’s lower abdomen..."

"Do you wish to die?!" Two individuals simultaneously clenched their teeth and glared at him. He immediately realized that he had made an ‘indiscreet’ remark, and turned silent.

"That’s right. That’s the spot. Your vision is quite good, and your deduction is very accurate," Chu Yang recklessly replied, but hastily turned his head when he saw four knife-life eyes glaring at him. Then, he continued, "You see... we can skid this mountain peak with the help of some tools if we hollow out this side and excavate from the other..."

"Hollow out?" It seemed as if the shadow had suddenly lost confidence in this plan. He said, "Didn’t you see? This mountain peak is a single chunk of stone. It’s very hard... and the quality of material it is made up of is far superior to an ordinary stone’s.

Even a heavenly weapon won’t be able to support its weight... let alone push it over. Moreover, it’s so huge! It would be an understatement to say that it weighs several millions pounds. How much strength would it take to push it over?"

"We obviously won’t be pushing down the entire mountain peak... only the uppermost section." Chu Yang confidently spoke, "Leave the task of hollowing-out to me. You’re only responsible for pushing the cut-out stones off the cliff. These stones should bring-about a lot of annihilation. But, their main purpose would to roll down and pave the way for the mountain peak..."

The two shadows looked at him with distrust.

Chu Yang smiled and said, "Now, the only concern is whether the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass can withstand such a big shock! What if this massive shock caused the collapse of the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass Border? It will become a self-defeating move, and it will completely ruin our chances of survival."

"No need to worry about that." Tie Bu Tian slightly smiled and spoke, "Minister Chu doesn’t know that this Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass has existed for thousands of years? Every nation that has ever been in control of this mountain pass has treated it as an important strategic location, and an impregnable natural stronghold!

"There was an incident in particular about 700-800 years ago. The nation that occupied this stronghold had come close to losing. However, they managed to win with great difficulty. The nation’s monarch had ordered that the entire wall of the Heaven Splitting Mountain pass must be cast with molten pig iron!

"It was later discovered that this method was very effective. Thereafter, the other enemy nations also began to reinforce their city walls with pig iron!" Tie Bu Tian spoke, "Iron Cloud gained control of it after the subversion of the previous country. There has never been an accident here ever since. It gets routine

reinforcements and maintenance each year. And, this pig iron reinforcement is also the reason why Diwu Qing Rou hasn't been able to penetrate our defenses for so many years!"

Tie Bu Tian continued with a smile, "Otherwise, wouldn't it have been rather easy to break through the defenses of the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass if he were to send those powerful siege-type catapults?"

"I'm relieved if that's the case," Chu Yang replied. He secretly exclaimed in admiration; [Crap, so this wall is reinforced with pig iron... So what was I worried about in the first place?]

Then, he addressed Tie Bu Tian, "Your Majesty, you must move aside. You're in the way..."

His first sentence made Tie Bu Tian have a 'sweet' thought in his heart, [this guy is rarely so considerate and thoughtful of others.] However, he suddenly felt like kicking Chu Yang after he heard the second sentence...

[What a disgraceful bastard he is!]

[Who are you calling a hindrance!?]

He bitterly turned and went to the side. He arrived on a wide and flat land. He then used the lapel of his jacket as a cushion, and sat down on it.

Chu Yang suddenly took a big stride forward, and leapt up. A sword appeared in his hand with a 'clang' sound. He abruptly stimulated his martial energy, and unleashed an awe-inspiring cold energy.

"Cold Ice Energy?" The two shadows were shocked. His desire to excavate the mountain with his sword was certainly inconceivable. However, his martial art was even more intriguing.

[Cold Ice Energy! Isn't that the trademark martial art of the super clans of Upper Three Heavens?]

"No, this isn't the Cold Ice Energy. It's even more powerful than that... it's the Seven Shades Cold Energy!" Chu Yang wagged his head. He looked rather pleased with himself as he added, "Pay attention. It's starting..."

The long-sword pierced into the mountain peak with a 'swoosh'. And then, the mountain peak's hard stone was cut from left to right by the sword. It seemed as if the sword had cut through butter.

"Such a sharp sword!" The two shadows were gob-smacked!

They had seen many heavenly and divine weapons. But, they were seeing a weapon of this caliber for the first time. [It was able to cut such a hard stone... and that too without making any sound!]

[This is incredible!]

"No wonder you could come back alive from Great Zhao after getting chased for more than 5000 Km. So... it was actually because of this incredible heavenly weapon!" The Shadow sighed.

"Indeed." Chu Yang laughed out loud. The long sword slashed three times in quick succession, and a 'not-very-big' chunk of stone was dug out. Then, Chu Yang conveniently threw the stone to one side. This stone was only half-a-foot in thickness. A small slit appeared at the base of the mountain with the removal of this stone.

The two shadows immediately realized that the plan had been kick-started once this slit appeared on this side of the mountain peak.

The next stone Chu Yang dug out was as big as a calf. It weighed several thousand kilograms, and had been separated from the mountain peak in its entirety.

The shadow lifted it with his hands. He then took a few steps forward, and threw it down the slope with a thundering sound!

And then, another stone followed...

Then another…

The rumbling sound of thunderclaps began to echo.

The distance between the summit and the slanting valley was far more than ‘just’ 10,000 feet… It was at least 30,000 to 40,000 feet. So, the people on the ground didn’t know what was happening at the top…

The loud rumbling sounds were heard by the three tiger generals of Great Zhao… as well as Wu Kuang Yun — who was within the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. They hurriedly looked up towards the sky.

The three tiger generals got so worried that they were nearly came to tears. [It would be terrible if the weather worsened, and it began to rain heavily. So many soldiers and horses of Great Zhao are camped outside. They would be caught off-guard by a devastating flood of rain-water… especially because it would get boosted by the slanting terrain of this valley. The result would be terrible!]

However, Wu Kuang Yun was very excited. [Motherf*ker, it’s going to rain? I say… the more the merrier. It would be better to drown these bastards to death…]

Everyone ran out to check the weather. But, the sky was clear with a brilliant sun rising in the eastern sky. [The sky is blue, and there are no signs of rainy clouds. Is it really going to rain?]

However, the rumbling sound got louder and louder. No one knew what was going on. Moreover, the sound was endlessly echoing in the valley amidst the surrounding cliffs… bang… bang…

Soon, the entire valley started to tremble. The mountains had also started to tremble. The Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass was a bit far away, but it began to tremble nonetheless. This phenomenon had scared everyone.

"Is this an earthquake?" Wu Kuang Yun's complexion changed; big-time. He tightly held on to the wall he was standing on. His facial expression had turned dark because of shock; [Fu*k ah. The Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass is done for if this is an earthquake...]

Suddenly, one of the officers standing in the crowd of Great Zhao's army yelled out. His eyes literally popped-out of his eye-sockets. His trembling finger was pointed at the diagonally opposite cliff. He screamed in a scared voice, "Fu*k... this is bad! This is bad guys... ah ah ah ah ah..."

The later part of his speech came out in the form of whispers... and was basically gibberish. And, the rumbling sound had gotten really very close by this time. The source of the sound had nearly approached the ground, and was soon going to enter the slanting valley. The soldiers turned their heads upwards — only to see the stunning spectacle of a huge square-shaped stone falling towards them. It seemed as if this massive stone had come straight from the sky. It was producing a thunderous sound. And, it seemed as if it was going to destroy everything with its massive momentum. It had literally rolled down from the sky. Then, it finally smashed down...

The impact spread dust everywhere. This dust blocked everyone's vision. Then, countless big square-shaped stones came tumbling down from above, and smashed down with incredible momentum. The impulse shook the ground. The soldiers who were lined up within the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass fell down one after another!

This wasn't very surprising when one considered the momentum of these massive stones...

"Dodge!" the army officers shouted this word. But, they were greeted by a bloody scene...

[Dodge? Where to? There's nowhere to take cover...]

The massive boulders fell from above, and smashed right into the crowd of soldiers. And then, these boulders rolled around violently. They crushed and killed everyone in their vicinity. Sparks flew and glittered in the valley. The heart-wrenching screams echoed in the valley. This had given birth to a sea of blood...

Bang...

These big stones were falling from a height of 8000 meters; at least. What kind of impulse would they generate when they'd hit the ground? How much force would that be?

No one could calculate the exact figure! As the saying goes — even a finger-sized stone can smash one's head and crack-it-open when it is dropped from a few kilometers of height. However, these stones were the size of a camel...

Chapter 405: The Gods Fight... the Mortals Suffer a Calamity?

The big stones had come from the top of the peak, and had smashed onto the ground. The impact had sent the crushed stone fragments and dust flying in all directions. Even a day's sunshine and winds wouldn't have been able to drop-off such big boulders ... It was hard to tell how many more boulders were going to fall... It was possible that a small mountain peak had caved in, and its fragments were falling down from above...

[My dear god! Is this the end of the world?]

The smoke and dust soared-up in the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. The place became pitch-dark; it was difficult to see anything. In fact, one couldn't even see one's own fingers.

One block of a big stone had come down as a trailblazer. It had advanced unhindered. It continued to rush down for a thousand feet, and crushed everything in its path before it came to a halt.

Then the second stone fell, then the third, and the fourth...

The falling stones were producing a loud rumbling sound. They were falling in a continuous manner – like dumplings... The blood-curdling screams of the crushed soldiers were overshadowed by the earth-shattering noise of the stones pounding against the ground...

A tragic scene of devastation had spread across the entire slanting valley.

The people present near the two ends of the valley weren't in trouble as the stones would pound in the center of the valley, and then roll down the slope. They'd smash everything before they'd come to a halt...

The slanting valley was divided into three sections.

The rear and front sections were safe. However, the middle section was covered with flesh and blood.

This bloody middle section was around thirty-five-hundred feet wide. No survivor could be seen within the area.

Wu Kuang Yun was in the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. He had only seen the sudden burst of dust and smoke. He had only heard the endless rumbling sounds. Then, the entire slanting valley had been filled with dust. His ears had been shaken by the shocks and vibrations; so much so, that he suffered from a temporary loss of hearing. His entire body trembled due to the intense vibrations. He opened his eyes wide like an ox, but he still couldn't see anything.

He knew that Great Zhao's army stationed in the slanting valley was in trouble. However, he didn't know what was going on. He was far away from the spot where this was happening. So, he didn't know that the big stones were hailing down from the summit. He just thought, [What's going on? What just happened?]

[Oh Good Lord! I don't know which God noticed my hardships... and bestowed such a treat upon my eyes and ears...]

[The tremors have toppled over several weapons on the ground. The lighter weapons were launched into the sky... Then, they fell down. The ones in the warehouse are still clattering... and have bundled into one mass...]

[Fortunately, the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass is very strong. Even the shocks of this caliber can't shake the reinforced foundation of pig iron casting. This mega-structure will survive.]

[But, the inner side of the wall has collapsed. Fortunately, the exterior wall is reinforced... Otherwise, it would've collapsed too.]

Wu Kuang Yun continued to pray in his heart. He was delighted, and was taking pleasure in another's misfortune, [Kill those sons of bit*hes! Kill them all...]

More than a thousand big stones smashed down on the ground. The same number of rolling wooden logs wouldn't have caused this much damage in usual siege warfare. After all, the might of the logs thrown down the wall couldn't match the might of the big stones that had come rolling down from the altitude of eight kilometers.

The comparison between their destructive powers would be like comparing an elephant with an ant...

The surrounding mountains stopped shaking once the thousands of stones had smashed down. Everyone's ears were still ringing. In fact, they could no longer hear any sound.

Thousands of people had turned deaf.

Those who were still alive could only see each other's mouths open and close. They could only see each other's mouths move, but couldn't hear what was being said.

The three tiger generals came out of their tents with an ashen look on their faces. There was a look of horror in their eyes. Their mouths were wide open, and their eyes looked blank. They were baffled; they couldn't understand how such an unfathomable thing had happened.

They shook their heads with all their strength, and patted their ears. They washed their faces with cold water, and then chugged it down in abundance in order to irrigate their stomachs. But, they were barely able to hear anything. Wherever they looked — they saw their soldiers bleed from their ears. The huge shock and vibrations had injured their eardrums. Several of them had become deaf...

"What's going on? What the hell happened just now?" the Golden Tiger General Jin Nankai shouted. There was a grim look on his face. However, the surrounding men seemed to be in a daze. They saw his mouth open and close, but didn't hear anything.

"Relax. Don’t be impatient." The Silver Tiger General Long Ao patted his shoulder. Even his complexion was pale.

They soon heard the heart-wrenching screams that were coming from the slanting valley... These screams and wails seemed to be coming from a distance of several kilometers.

"It ought to be a surprise attack by the enemy." The Jade Tiger General Yu Cheng Long shook his head. He felt extremely uncomfortable in his ears. He could still hear the ‘rumbling’ sound. He felt as if ten-thousand cicadas were crying in his ears. However, he could hear the other sounds as well...

"Let’s go there... and have a look." The three generals had a bad feeling as they glanced at each other. They summoned their bodyguards. Then, they mounted their horses in a determined manner, and dashed towards the source of the tragic cries...

They rode for about ten kilometers, and finally came across the tragic scene. It appeared like a living hell. The three generals were war veterans; they were the so-called desperados... they were known as the ‘butchers of the battlefield’. There was no tragic scene unknown to them.

However, their complexions changed drastically as they saw this dreadful scene. Their visions turned dark, and their bodies became sloppy. They almost fell down from their horses.

They looked ahead and saw big stones lying in the slanting valley. These stones were dyed red in blood. They lay motionless on the ground.

Their entire path had been covered with flesh and blood. The human body parts and broken limbs were spread on the ground. They looked as far as their eyes could see, but they didn’t spot a single intact corpse for several kilometers.

Even the mountain walls on both sides had been stained with flesh and blood. The blood was dripping from the mountain

walls... even from a height of hundred feet... The stains of blood and spattered brain fluid could be seen everywhere...

The three generals spotted some wounded soldiers nearby. These soldiers were covered in blood. They were among the few lucky one who had only lost their arms. Even their metal armors had failed to protect them from such huge boulders. They had only gotten injured since they had been ‘gently’ grazed by the ‘edge’ of the rolling stones...

"These... these... are how many people?" Jin Nankai asked in a trembling voice. He stared in anger and bewilderment at the inhuman and brutal scene.

No one answered. Everyone was stupefied after watching this spectacle. They felt as if the blood in their hearts had dried-up.

"Go... take a look," Long Ao ordered in a deep and low voice.

Some people resisted their urge to vomit and brought themselves to go forward. However, their horses wouldn’t listen to their commands. The horses seemed frightened as their big widened eyes gazed at the scary scene. They continued to shake their heads, and their bodies shrank back a little; as if hinting that they didn’t wish to go any further.

Then, a bodyguard of Jin Nankai’s rode forward on his horse, and dashed out. The sound of hooves gradually diminished as the rider rode further into the valley. The three generals frowned as they listened to the sound of the hooves. They felt as if it was coming from an empty valley. It sounded as if the rider was riding through an uninhabited and silent road. Their complexions turned unsightly as they realized this.

They waited until the sound of the hooves had nearly become inaudible. Then, they heard it again coming from afar. The sound was initially feeble. It gradually became louder; as if the horse was coming back.

"There’s no one to be seen for three or four kilometers ahead on this road," Yu Cheng Long spoke in a sullen manner. He had deduced this by hearing the sound of the hooves. He didn’t even wait for the rider to return.

The countenance of the other two generals changed; they became distressed.

A high density of soldiers had been concentrated at this place. How many troops were gathered on this three to four kilometers long, and two-hundred to three-hundred feet wide road?

It wouldn’t be an overstatement to estimate at least ten-thousand soldiers.

In other words, at least ten-thousand people had died in this accident.

However, it was still inexplicable. No one knew the reason why this had happened. They just knew that these stones had rolled along the steep slope down the cliff.

They looked-up at the steep cliff that seemed to be protruding above their heads. But, they couldn’t see anything clearly. They couldn’t even see the top of the cliff as it was covered in clouds and mist.

"Look at these stones," Long Ao asked for everyone’s attention.

"What about it?" The others turned around. Someone was already cleaning the stones. Then, a stone was carried over to them. It was covered with lots of dents that had been caused by the collisions on its way down. Its volume had also decreased considerably due to this factor.

Three large stones were carried over to a spot. The three generals gathered around the spot to examine the stones carefully.

"What the hell is this? This stone looks as if it has been cut down with a sword. Each block looks as if it has been chopped down in equal proportions..." Jin Nankai spoke in a shocked manner.

"That’s impossible, alright?" The other two generals were equally shocked as they observed the stones. They also had to acknowledge this fact, "Does this mean that the enemy had prepared this ambush on the summit in advance? Is this the ‘stone version’ of the ‘rolling wooden logs strike’?"

"This is absolutely impossible!" Jin Nankai had once been to Iron Cloud; he ruled out this possibility with confidence, "It’s difficult for the birds to reach the top of these mountains; let alone humans. Even the apes would fall to their deaths if they were to try and climb-up these mountains. Only a king level expert or above can climb-up these mountains."

"But, if it’s really a person of that caliber... then why would he be interested in making things difficult for us?" Long Ao said; as if to dismiss the possibility.

"Or... maybe this is the case... when Gods fights... the mortals suffer a calamity... or perhaps... a section of the cliff collapsed and resulted in a destructive avalanche. That is also possible. After all, these mountains have existed for tens of thousands of years..." Jin Nankai contracted his pupils to gaze at the illusory clouds and fog. He heaved a long sigh and said, "Arrange these stones on one side. It’s unlikely that something would fall again."

He sighed again, and then turned around and walked back.

[Indeed... it’s simply impossible that there are soldiers up there. If there was a fight between experts going on at the summit... then it should’ve come to an end by now. So, it’s unlikely that this will happen again. And, if it was a landslide... then too there’s no reason for it to happen again in quick succession...]

[What if it’s a supreme expert? That’s even more unlikely... since a supreme expert would definitely not throw stones to play around.] Great General Jin was confident that his deduction was correct. The huge pile of stones had divided their army into two halves. So, how would they go to war? How would they make a

strike?

The three generals seemed to be in low spirits. They didn't say a single word on their way back. However, they were constantly praying in their hearts, [Please don't happen again...]

Meanwhile, Chu Yang and the two shadows were squatting on the ground at the summit, and breathing heavily. A continuous high-intensity labor could even tire King Level Experts to the extent of becoming numb.

About an hour had passed. Chu Yang and the two shadows had managed to dig-out a big gap at the base of the mountain peak.

Chapter 406: You Can Rest Assured... We Will Take Good Care of Her

The gap had a vertical width of fifty to sixty feet. It was more than a hundred feet deep. It had nearly reached half the thickness of the mountain peak.

It appeared as if a giant had opened its big mouth. It looked ominous...

"This should be enough for this side..." Minister Chu sprawled on his back and lay on the ground. He didn't seem to care about his image. He continued to complain, "My God, I'm so exhausted. I'm dying of exhaustion... F**k me... it's still far from being over..."

He had spoken the exact same words several times in the past as well. He had said it for the first time when he had obtained the Nine Tribulations Sword Point. The second time was when he had obtained the Mysterious Ice Jade Paste. In fact, he had complained even after he had secured a huge amount of the Mysterious Ice Jade Paste. But, it was an obligatory work labor this time; nothing more.

He heaved a deep sigh. Then, he took out a huge water bottle, and moistened his dry throat. He gulped down several mouthfuls of water in one go.

"Boy, share the water with everyone..." the shadow said.

"Well... actually this water is quite precious. So, there isn't enough..." Chu Yang recalled that the bottle in his hand contained the Vitality Spring Water.

"Fart! We don't need a potful of water, you know?" The male shadow snatched the bottle from him. However, he didn't drink it. Instead, he handed it over to the female shadow.

The female shadow raised her mouth to drink the water. She started to feel different as soon as the water went down her throat.

She was startled, and stopped drinking. She carefully savored the water in her mouth and exclaimed in a shocked voice, "Vitality Spring Water?!"

The other shadow was also startled as he heard these words. It seemed as if he had forgotten that he was feeling tired. He jumped over, and rushed to the side of the female shadow to have a look.

[Vitality Spring Water? Isn't it the wonderful water that can stimulate a person's vitality and life force?]

Both of them were left dumbstruck as they tasted it. They couldn't help but burst into tears. The tears came streaming down their cheeks. Their hands were slightly trembling. One could see a hint of misery and bitterness in their eyes.

It's indeed the Vitality Spring Water.

The two of them had gone to the Medicine God Clan several times in the hope of obtaining this priceless treasure. They had even sold their family property, and had spent the entirety of their savings for it. However, they had been conned into buying a fake product. Yet, they hadn't stopped. They had accumulated some precious items, and had gone to the Medicine King Valley to exchange those items for Vitality Spring Water. But, they had only managed to obtain a few drops of it even after going through all that... They only needed a little amount of it to expand their life force and vitality. Their bodies were aging, and the only cure was to make a breakthrough.

They only needed one breakthrough to reach the Emperor Level. It seemed the same as crossing a fine line, but it could bring tremendous changes.

However, they weren't been able to achieve it; no matter how much they tried.

The two of them had been despaired for a long time. Then, they had accepted a request, and had come to the Lower Three Heavens

to protect Tie Bu Tian. This had happened over a decade ago. They could've never imagined that the elusive Vitality Spring Water they had desperately craved all those years would appear before them ten years later in such a manner.

And that too... in such a huge quantity...

In fact, they were holding it in their own hands.

This was a mysterious item. Everyone in the Nine Heavens Continent yearned for it... even in their dreams. And, a big bottle of it was now in their hands.

[So, it was this. No wonder he said that 'this water is quite precious, so there isn't enough'. You call it precious; is that all? It's priceless.]

The two shadows had only tasted a little bit of the Vitality Spring Water. The small sip they took a moment ago was enough for them. In fact, it was more than enough.

The worth of that small sip couldn't be converted into money. The only word that could describe its worth was — 'priceless'.

There was still so much of it remaining.

Suddenly, their shocked eyes fell upon Chu Yang. It seemed as if they were looking at a monster.

[Even the Medicine King Valley and Medicine God Clan didn't have so much Vitality Spring Water in their yearly reserves; it definitely wasn't enough to fill such a big bottle, alright? In fact, their combined yearly reserves wouldn't even fill half of this bottle.]

[And this boy... this King of Hell Chu... is carrying so much of it with him.]

[Moreover, this guy is treating the precious Vitality Spring Water as some ordinary boiled water... and, he's using it to quench his thirst...]

The two shadows went crazy as they recalled that he had made gurgling sounds while he had taken big gulps of the Vitality Spring Water a moment ago.

"Do you know what this is?" the male shadow asked. He was clutching the bottle of Vitality Spring Water as if it was the most precious thing in the world. His eyes had turned red.

"I know. The person who gave it to me told me about it," Chu Yang spoke in a casual manner... as if it wasn't important.

"You... and you're still wasting it like this?" The shadow went berserk with rage. He couldn't understand, [Who uses the Vitality Spring Water to quench their thirst? Good Heavens, who are you? The prodigal son of some rich family?]

"Weren't you thirsty?" Chu Yang snorted and said, "If you want to drink it... then drink. If you don't want to drink... then I'll gladly take it back."

"Whoa! Slow down!" The shadow looked at him from head-to-toe. Then, he took out his and his wife's water bottles. He first raised his mouth to take a gulp of water. After that, he poured a few mouthfuls of Vitality Spring Water into his water bottle and plugged the lid.

Chu Yang thought, [These two don't seem to be greedy. I can tell by just looking at them that they are very straightforward and honest people. No wonder Tie Bu Tian trusts them so much. They truly deserve every bit of it.]

But then, he changed his views as he saw the shadow going next to Tie Bu Tian and saying something to him. Tie Bu Tian seemed to be a bit shocked. Then, he firmly shook his head. The shadow said something again, and Tie Bu Tian shook his head again. Suddenly, the shadow took Tie Bu Tian's small water bottle, and filled it with Vitality Spring Water. After that, the shadow returned the bottle to Tie Bu Tian.

The shadow came back with a red face. Then, he smiled in embarrassment and returned the bottle to Chu Yang, "Here... take it. I'm giving it back."

"Eh... is it finished?" Chu Yang shook the water bottle and noticed that more than half of the water was still left in the bottle. A profound smile appeared on his face.

"Ahem... we took advantage of your kindness." The shadow smiled and spoke in an embarrassed tone, "Actually... the thing is..."

"There's no need to explain." Chu Yang smiled and said, "I was already willing to share. I wouldn't have taken it out in the first place if I didn't wish to give it to you guys... correct?" He blinked, "I'll be happy as long as it's useful to you."

The shadow continued to stare at him for a long time. He then said, "You... are a very nice guy... very nice guy!"

The other shadow also nodded.

[Is he really 'just' a nice guy? If someone else had so much Vitality Spring Water... then would that person be willing to give it to others for free? Even a drop! But, this King of Hell Chu wasn't the least bit stingy for our sake.]

Tie Bu Tian's eyes turned towards Chu Yang and the shadow. His small ears were slightly erected. He appeared indifferent and aloof, but his entire attention was focused on the ongoing conversation between Chu Yang and the shadow. The corners of his mouth revealed a gentle smile as he heard the shadow's words. It seemed that she became happy when someone praised Chu Yang.

The shadow said, "You can rest assured. We'll protect His Majesty well. We'll not let her suffer the slightest injury."

Chu Yang was caught off-guard. He said, "This... what is this?" [I just gave you something for no particular reason; that's all. But, what is this... this... what relation does this have with His Majesty?

You take care of him and protect him because that’s your responsibility. Why are you giving assurances to me?]

Tie Bu Tian coughed gently.

The shadow was startled. He sighed and lowered his head.

"I think we’ve taken enough rest, right? Let’s continue..." Chu Yang said as he stood-up and stretched his body.

"Right!"

The three people circled around the mountain peak, and went to the rear side. The shadows began to carry the stones. They needed to carry the stones to the front in order to throw them down. The workload would certainly increase owing to that. However, the destruction and killings caused by these falling stones was truly impressive.

The Great Zhao army had hidden far away from the place of impact in the valley. However, there had been no sound or movement for a long time. So, their commander-in-chief had realized that there was no point in keeping the army divided into two sections. Then, some people had stepped forward and volunteered to clean-up the mess. They were rather sad during the cleaning process. The front and the rear units finally merged into one once the cleaning process was complete. However, they didn’t dare to look at the bloody traces on the cliffs... or they wouldn’t be able to stop themselves from trembling...

The soldiers were always prepared to lay down their lives on the battlefield. However, dying from an unknown cause was frightening and aggrieving.

However, everyone was relieved as the commander-in-chief had said that it wouldn’t happen again. They sighed once again, and gathered together.

After a long while...

"What’s that sound?" someone asked in a suspicious manner as

he heard something...

"I also hear something..." another person frowned and replied...

"Thunder?"

"***! It's coming again... run everyone..."

The 'rumbling' sound grew louder and louder. The mountains began to tremble and the ground began to shake once again. Even the people began to turn deaf again...

The complexion of Jin Nankai and the other generals became deathly pale as they heard the terrible sound.

[It's happening again!]

[Holy ancestors! How can this be?]

The violent sound was certainly a prelude to the upcoming disaster. It seemed as if no other sound existed between the Heaven and the Earth. Countless square-shaped stones came roaring down from the height of eight kilometers, and crashed onto the ground like thunder...

They smashed into the crowd of men with an irresistible force. They rampaged about indiscriminately – crushing everything in their path and leaving behind a trail of blood through the Great Zhao army. The big stones cut a bloody path out of the field...

"Dear God... what a tragic and amazing scene this is!"

Wu Kuang Yun said excitedly. He was in the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. His ears were plugged with strips of cotton cloth, but he was swinging his buttocks on the rhythm of the tremors; [Wow... hahaha... I feel so good!]

[You tried to invade us. Now face the wrath of the Heavens, you mother*kers! The heavens won't spare any of you.]

[Haha...]

[This is so awesome...]

The wails and cries aroused by the chaos were submerged by the deafening sound...

The chaos lasted for an hour. It eventually stopped; but only after it had caused more than ten-thousand casualties.

This chaos had caused even more casualties than the previous one.

That was because the distance covered by these stones was longer than the previous ones. Last time, the stones had come across lots of obstacles on their way down. Moreover, the texture of the ground had been rough enough to pose resistance. However, the stones had come across fewer obstacles this time; even the ground's texture had smoothened and acted as an elastic cushion to preserve the speed of the stones. Thanks to that, the stones had continued to move non-stop, and had covered longer distances...

Great Zhao's army had encountered two terrifying accidents in succession. Everyone was in a complete mess. They were all looking around in panic. Their complexions looked pale. There was horror in their eyes. It seemed as if they would collapse at any moment. Even Jin Nankai and the other generals couldn't sit still.

Chapter 407: Push... Push...

Several troops of Great Zhao Army were gathered here. These soldiers belonged to three big regiments; there were one million people in total. However... putting so many people in order was a taxing job!

"We must put the army in order. We must quickly retreat before something happens again." Long Ao spoke with a serious look on his face, "There's no point in staying here. We'll only get eroded by the enemy little by little. And, what if... our route of retreat gets blocked by the enemy? We will be done for if that were to happen..."

The other two generals nodded again and again.

In fact, the three of them understood that the majority of the Iron Cloud's forces had been firmly contained on the main battlefield by the Great Zhao's forces. Only a small part of Iron Cloud's army was stationed here; and, they couldn't leave their posts either.

Therefore, they certainly didn't need to worry about their route of retreat getting blocked by the enemy. Long Ao only said that in an attempt to site 'any' suitable reason to withdraw his troops from here.

They were basically scared after they had had come across such a situation. They would rather go to the main battlefield and fight the enemy. They didn't wish to stay here since they might have to face the falling boulders at any time!

"However, one of must stay behind in order to prevent Wu Kuang Yun from taking advantage of our withdrawal and launching a sudden attack." Jin Nankai looked at the other two and spoke, "Who will stay behind?"

"I will," Long Ao stated solemnly.

Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long looked at each other and nodded. Staying behind in the current situation might seem like a choice with the greater risk. However, the ones who stayed behind wouldn't be in a danger of complete annihilation. On the other hand, the retreating troops would be faced with the danger of getting ambushed by the stones falling.

Though... there wasn't enough assurance of whether it would really happen or not.

The three generals quickly reached a decision — [we will first wait for the unrest to subside. Then, we will determine the safest time, and two forces would rush down the slanting valley at the fastest possible speed. Long Ao's troops would retreat immediately-after!]

[Things would get a lot easier once we are outside the slanting valley!]

"It's such a pity that we ended up facing such a difficult situation..." Yu Cheng Long heaved a deep sigh and said. He looked towards the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass with a regretful look in his eyes. The other two also sighed.

This situation was very rare and unusual. The Iron Cloud's forces had been contained tightly on the main battlefield. So much so, that they couldn't even move an inch from there. And, Diwu Qing Rou had made such a clever plan to capture this side by deploying three army regiments at once. The total number of soldiers in these three regiments was over a million. They had closely pursued the enemy forces up the slanting valley, and all the way up to the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass.

Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass was certainly called the strongest natural stronghold in the entire world. However, it wasn't indestructible. Great Zhao's army had a numerical advantage. They had been attacking day and night. And, they could've continued to attack persistently as long as the military

supplies continued to arrive from the rear. They would've surely sustained several hundred-thousand casualties during the course of the attacks, and would've only been able to break through the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass after several attempts. The sacrifice on Great Zhao's end might seem massive at first. However, it would've been worth it since these sacrifices would enable them to break through the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. They could've then opened up the path to capture the vast open lands for their own nation. It would have been such a massive achievement for them!

In fact, these three desperado-generals had been assigned to this mission to implement this very strategy! And, these three hadn't intended to return without success when they had first entered this place.

They had been willingly to give it their best shot even if they had been at a serious disadvantage where they could've lost ten soldiers against one of Iron Cloud's!

They had even started to notice the signs of fatigue on the faces of Iron Cloud's defenders. They had realized that they only needed to continue strengthening their offensives. They would've found an opening in enemy's defenses sooner or later. However, they were being forced to withdraw due to such unforeseen and inexplicable circumstances. This was very aggrieving.

It would be better to not waste any more time since they had already decided to retreat. The troops were ordered to prepare for retreat. The officers and soldiers had long been frightened by this horrifying phenomenon. So, they reveled when they received the order to retreat. Their spirits were aroused 100-times-over by this news. They wasted no time, and packed their stuff at a lighting speed. Everyone was dying to leave this place...

More than 90% of them swore in their hearts — [I will never come back here! I would rather knock my head against the wall and die. That's better than dying in a place like this...]

…. ….

Meanwhile, Minister Chu was at the summit. He was chopping the mountain. The base of the mountain peak had nearly been emptied-out. It was an alarming sight since the peak was tottering. It seemed like it would fall any time now. Moreover, the excavation they had done on the rear side of the mountain peak was long, but its vertical width wasn't too thick.

That was because Chu Yang didn't want this humongous mountain peak to fall in the opposite direction; their efforts thus far would go in vain in that were to happen.

Afterwards, he dug some on the left and the right side as well. He only left a few-dozen-foot thick section in the middle to keep the peak attached.

Whenever the strong winds blew… it felt as if the peak would fall down…

Chu Yang used several big stones to provide support in the back. And then, he cut down a few big trees with long stems, and carefully placed them in the rear. He planned to use these big trees as crowbars. His plan was to use several crowbars to function as one big crowbar when used simultaneously. It would be easier to operate a few crowbars together than operating a big one alone…

In fact, the combined strength of these three people might not be enough to operate one big crowbar… especially since they already a bit tired. So, Chu Yang had no choice but to use this leverage-method. Their safety coefficient would increase since operating long crowbars would help them in staying far away from the peak. Moreover, the possibility of pushing the mountain's peak over would also increase by several times.

However, Chu Yang dug a big cave nearby. This would ensure their security. These three would immediately hide in that cave once the mountain peak would start to fall…

Chu Yang spoke in a loud voice once everything was ready, "Your Majesty, you first go hide far away from here. Don’t forget to plug your ears... so as to avoid any injury."

Tie Bu Tian immediately complied. He used body weight reduction technique, and rushed towards a distant spot. He arrived at a stretch of flat land about 1000 feet away, and stopped. His body looked like a small black spot to Chu Yang from the distance.

Then, Chu Yang waved his right hand and the three people started to use their strength together. They shouted the labor’s chant while they were at it, "One, two, three, push... push... push!"

The three people were working together. Each of them was holding a crowbar in their hands, and was slowly pressing it downward. They couldn’t use too much force from the start. They must probe a little in the start since they might not be able to handle the rebound if they applied too much force and the mountain peak accidentally started to sway. Moreover, they were standing on the rear side. So, the sudden upward thrust would fling them off the mountain, and they would crash down below...

The three of them applied the same amount of force, and realized that the mountain peak shook a little bit...

However, they had used their full strength this time. Chu Yang waved his hand, "Slowly, slowly stop applying the force. Don’t do it at once; do it slowly and gradually. Reduce your strength bit by bit..."

Chu Yang rushed forward as soon as the crowbars had returned to their original positions. It seemed like he had discovered something. He chopped out several big stones from the base, and then readjusted the point of the crowbars’ application. He then tossed the big stones to one side.

The two shadows saw him move back-and-forth under a megalith with an almost hollowed out base. They couldn’t help but be covered in cold sweat, [Minister Chu would instantly turn into a

mass of blood if this megalith abruptly slammed down...]

[This guy is indeed very courageous!]

Chu Yang kept scuttling underneath the mountain peak with continuous ‘swooshing’ sounds. The two shadows broke out in a cold sweat, [this bastard! He keeps truncating the base of the mountain peak... it’s not even 20 feet thick now...]

[So daring!]

Chu Yang quickly rushed back to his own position. Then, he checked the links again, and made some adjustments. After that, he held his crowbar and gave a hand signal, "Start!"

The three people slowly started to exert their force; in unison with each other’s actions.

The mountain peak slowly tilted. The spirits of the three king level experts were aroused by this sight. They mustered the entirety of their strength, and shouted out loud, "Down you go!"

They suddenly concentrated their strength, and pushed the crowbars down!

The mountain peak tilted forward in a super-slow motion, and began to topple over. It seemed like a towering giant was about to fall flat on his face... and it was happening in a super-slow motion.

"It’s done! Withdraw..." Minister Chu exclaimed as he let go of the crowbar in his hands and flew back with a ‘swoosh’. The three persons’ shadows issued ‘whooshing’ sounds as they leapt here-and-there. They managed to cover a distance of 700-800 feet at an incredibly fast speed. Then, they quickly went inside the cave they had dug-up in advance...

The mountain peak toppled over. It tilted slowly until it reached half the inclination point. Then, it suddenly accelerated!

It finally landed on the ground!

BANG...

The surrounding mountains trembled fiercely!

The mountain peak slowly rolled over towards the cliff, and then slowly slid on to the slope below. It went rolling down from there... Boom! There was yet another tremor...

And then, the sounds gradually grew louder and more frequent... Bang, Bang, Bang, Bang, Boom, Boom, Boom, Boom...

It sounded like the god of thunder was playing drums. The entire Chun Yang Peak went somersaulting downwards. It seemed like a meteor was falling from a height of 9 Km; it thundered as it rolled down from the top of the mountain.

The mountains in the surrounding radius of several hundred kilometers were as if 'disco dancing'. The mountains were trembling; particularly this mountain since this major event had occurred here. The superficial boulders jubilantly jumped tens of feet high. It seemed if they were competing with each other. Then, they followed after the Chun Yang Peak in abundance... and went down the mountain...

Such power and momentum were indeed world-shaking!

This great peak hadn't even fallen halfway, and the effects it had caused so far were already equivalent to a scenario of an exceptionally massive 'mountain rockslide'. Moreover, this scenario was simultaneously taking place in the surrounding radius of 50 Km!

This was not a landslide! It was a falling megalith!

We often make the analogy and say that it was a 'mountain-high tsunami' or it was an 'earth shattering landslide'. However, how many of us have actually seen the 'real' 'mountain-high tsunami' or 'earth shattering landslide'?

Undoubtedly, many people would at last get to see one. And, the Great Zhao Army in the slanting valley would in-particular get to see such a 'rare beautiful sight' with their own eyes. However, they

would rather wish they had been born blind in this life than to see this ‘rare beautiful sight'!

…. ….

Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long finished organizing their troops. They bid farewell to Long Ao, and issued the military order to set out. The carriage wheels rattled, and the horses neighed. The bows and arrows were hanging on everyone’s waists. A military order must be strictly obeyed; no matter what. So, the soldiers rushed out.

The two tiger generals put on their full-body armors. Then, they turned around and mounted their horses. They rode to the forefront of the army with sullen looks on their faces. The soldiers formed rows, and queued up behind them. Then, the neat army formation started to retreat.

All of them were well-trained veteran soldiers. However, there was a look of terror and grief on their faces.

A dull atmosphere was prevalent in the army. The same could be said about the warhorses. They all hung their heads dejectedly, while their eyes looked lifeless. They covered more than 5 Km within no time. Then, they advanced for another few kilometers, and arrived in the section of the slanting valley where the fall had occurred.

Jin Nankai gave a meaningful glance to his men and shouted, "What are you men feeling dejected about? We are only retreating for the time being. We aren’t defeated yet! Sooner or later, we will come back! And at that time, this will be the territory of Great Zhao!"

He paused then said, "Everyone, raise your spirits. We must speed up and cross this section of the road in one vigorous effort; understood?"

"Yes!" everyone replied in unison.

"Good, now speed up. Let’s go!" Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long spurred their horses. The horses dashed forward with a ‘whooshing’ sound. Even these two couldn’t wait to get out of this damned place...

At this time... an immensely dull and loud sound suddenly resounded, "Boom!"

Chapter 408: Everyone Buried Alive

The galloping horses were suddenly thrown off-balance by the shock. Their four hooves lost hold of the ground by the sudden tremors. The mountains around them were shaking. The trees on the mountains were also trembling violently!

Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long were jolted off of the horseback and fell down. They lay on their stomachs on the ground with a tragic look on their faces.

They could tell that the destructive power of this tremor was several times more potent than the previous two.

And then, a dull explosive noise resounded, "Bang!"

The army was already in chaos.

"It's bad! It’s very bad! The big stones are coming again!"

"Everybody run! Hurry! It’s landslide!"

"Oh no***..."

"Mommy... mommy..."

"Heed me oh heavens, please let me get out of here alive... My 80-year-old mother awaits me back home..."

"*** ah, will that sl*t at my home... steal my son after I die?"

"Fu*k me, I had just snatched a young beauty before I came here... I never even got the time to enjoy her..."

Such screams and laments fluttered-about everywhere. The entire army was in disarray, and their formation was in a complete mess. The ones who were somewhat courageous — had already run out of the formation. They were desperately rushing forward. They knew that they would be fine as long as they were able to get out of here.

Some people rushed forward while some chose to draw back.

However, the slanting valley was densely packed with people... so, they didn’t know where to run to...

"***Motherf*ker! Don’t push!"

"Stay back!"

"I’m anyway screwed... and you fu*kers still keep pushing..."

"Brothers, dash forward..."

Everyone swarmed forward. They didn’t pay attention that their commanding generals — Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long — were still lying on the ground. The two got trampled by the frantically stampeding soldiers...

However, the loud ‘Bang!’ sounds submerged every other sound in the midst of this chaos. The surrounding mountain peaks were trembling. Bang... Bang... The ‘banging’ sounds grew louder and louder... and more frequent too. The stones on the surrounding cliffs couldn’t bear the tremors, and began to rain down...

Rumble Rumble...

The ‘rumbling’ sounds got closer and closer. They grew louder and more concentrated...

Finally, a terrified look appeared in everyone’s eyes as they saw a massive mountain fall from the sky. It was falling straight down to pound upon their heads!

Bang!

The mountain peak finally slammed onto the slanting valley with an extremely loud sound. It sounded as if the sky had collapsed onto the earth. The people present in the surrounding radius of hundreds of feet couldn’t utter anything from their throats; they immediately fell down. They began to bleed from all the orifices in their bodies.

And then, the mountain peak trod forward. It seemed like an elephant was trampling the wheat field. It went rolling down the

slanting valley, and produced a loud ‘rumbling’ sound throughout the way. It crushed people wherever it went. Broken body parts and limbs flew everywhere in its wake. It rolled down the slanting valley with an unstoppable force, and continued to advance forward. It only left a bloody alley behind!

Two valiant and untamable tiger generals like Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long didn’t even get a chance to scream. They were crushed alive by the megalith. And, their bodies turned into two piles of blood and minced meat.

With this, two of the ten ‘great tiger and dragon’ ranked generals of Great Zhao died... without even getting a chance to attain military achievements on the battlefield. They died a miserable death by getting crushed under a big stone. It was very sad and aggravating.

Moreover, it happened in the process of their retreat. About a million soldiers were retreating under their leadership. All of them were crushed to death. This was even more dumbfounding. The later generations would be at a loss for words to describe this incident when they’d write about this phase of history. They’d thus write down — the two generals of Great Zhao namely — Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long — led a million soldiers north, and faced many difficulties on the way. They had no way to survive, and decided to retreat. But, the heaven got furious, struck them with lightning, and killed the both of them!

Simply put... these two were ended by the wrath of Heaven.

The megalith was unstoppable, and it continued to roll forward. However, the entire slanting valley was greeted by a rain of big boulders. They continued to pour down in torrents. The first half of the slanting valley had remained untouched during the last two disasters, but even that section was submerged in a rain of boulders this time around.

So many big boulders were pouring down from every big

mountain in the vicinity. One could only imagine the kind of power this impact would have...

Even the screams couldn't be heard in the midst of this noise. Nearly half of the slanting valley had been submerged by big boulders. The debris and crushed stones had fallen from above, and had buried the slanting valley!

The mountain peak had been the first one to fall. And, it fearlessly forged ahead for 15 Km! Then, it finally hit a corner with a bang, and caused tremors. It staggered a bit, and then finally came to a halt. But, only after it had crushed yet another group of hundreds of people...

This slanting valley was about 300 feet wide, while this piece of stone was about 250-260. So, the road was wide enough to let it advance freely for such a long distance. And, it had continued to advance without much hindrance. The army was in its path... so... it was turned into a river of blood...

It might have rolled out of the slanting valley if a corner hadn't appeared after it had covered the 15 Km!

It was overwhelmingly forceful.

No wonder it was an object that had been created from the resentment of a man who had remained unmarried for nine lives. He must've gotten very angry after he had seen that these soldiers had wives and concubines...

This phase of chaos and destruction came quickly... and also went by quickly. It had come to an end in a relatively short period of time. This massacre took almost the same time it takes to sip a cup of tea.

The world had become very silent all a sudden. This was kind of scary...

The Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass no longer had an exit channel because more-than-half of the slanting valley was now

buried. The fallen rocks and boulders had formed a new ‘dwarf’ mountain in the valley. The slanting valley was still a ‘slanting’ valley, but its terrain was much more elevated now. However, the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass wasn’t the least bit affected even though all this had happened in the slanting valley.

Many stones had fallen in the Heaven Splitting Mountain pass as well. And, several people had been injured. However, this was nothing in comparison to the devastation that the Great Zhao’s army had to face outside. Their plight was tragic and unbearable.

Long Ao’s hands and feet had turned cold. He recalled bidding farewell to Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long only a while ago. Then, he had watched them go far away with the troops. He hadn’t yet turned around when all of this happened...

Long Ao staggered when it was all over. He then rushed forward to take a good look. After that, his eyes turned black. He faced upwards and fainted.

[Gone!]

[They are all gone!]

The two other generals had led away the majority of the army. Only half of the army’s tail had been left behind. And, all those soldiers were now gone! The slanting valley before Long Ao’s eyes was now filled with rocks! All he could see was rocks...

A river of blood was flowing-out from underneath the rocks...

Long Ao’s personal guard gently rubbed his chest, and patted his back to calm him down. He came back to his senses, and immediately spat a mouthful of blood. Then, he cried out from the bottom of his heart, "We are finished... it’s all over..."

He suddenly beat his chest, and stamped his feet in frustration. Tears started to rain down from his eyes...

Perhaps even the initiator of this calamity — Chu Yang — hadn’t anticipated that his move would result in such a splendid victory.

The three tiger generals of Great Zhao had each led about 500,000 men and horses to the frontline. However, they had changed direction midway, and had brought a total of 1.5 million soldiers here.

They had rushed like a hurricane until they had reached here. A total of 300,000 soldiers were stationed near the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. And, less than a quarter of the total soldiers were stationed outside the slanting valley. The rest were spread in the 50 Km-long slanting valley.

The total number of casualties during this during this 'sky-fall' tragedy had surprisingly surpassed 600,000 on Great Zhao's side. That was because Jin Nankai and Wu Cheng Long had coincidentally led their troops to retreat, and had met with the disaster head-on. They were smashed by the megalith, and had been nearly wiped out...

Moreover, the landslides and rockslides which followed the impact had buried more-than-half of the slanting valley. Hundreds-of-thousands of soldiers were smashed and buried under the rocks.

They were all buried alive!

It could be said that Great Zhao's Army had now turned into head and tail. And, these two groups couldn't even see each other. The one on the outside couldn't come inside, and the one on the inside couldn't go out. What was even worse was the fact that... the soldiers who were trapped inside couldn't receive any supplies...

Moreover, the army group on the outside had basically turned into a group of honeybees without the queen. They were in a total mess. The three great generals were inside, and the highest ranked army official on the outside was merely a deputy general. On top of that, the three generals had always been strong leaders. So, this deputy general had never gotten a 'real' chance to assume responsibility. Therefore, these soldiers were basically like blunt

weapons after having faced such a ‘world-shaking’ event…

Wu Kuang Yun had seen the entire event from inside the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. He knew what had really happened. There had been so much noise and chaos. He would have to be extremely stupid to not understand…

He was happily jumping on the spot. He was shouting and rejoicing.

"Great… Great… General Wu… shouldn’t our army… go… go out the walls…" Wu Yi found the right opportunity to come close. He then asked with a solemn and respectful look on his face.

"Stop! How about I take your place and continue this talk?" Wu Kuang Yun couldn’t withstand all the stammering, and felt very uncomfortable inside. So, he immediately raised his hand and asked, "You want to suggest… that we send our army outside the wall and annihilate the enemy?"

Wu Yi persistently nodded.

Wu Kuang Yun spoke, "Now I will answer — there’s no need for that. Then, you will ask — why not?"

Wu Yi nodded.

Wu Kuang Yun complacently replied, "Now, I will reply. They’ve already been crippled as an army. They are already done for. So, we don’t need to attack them. Now, you will ask — why are they done for? Then, I will reply — because they can’t survive without eating! Now, you will ask — why can’t they eat? Now, I will reply — because of the landslides. Then, you will ask again… ouch!"

He was interrupted midway by Wu Yi’s kick. He was kicked very maliciously, and was sent flying up. He fell down far away… and in a weird posture. Wu Yi snorted. He turned around with a livid face, and walked away.

[Motherfu*ker, you’re still not done taking digs at me… It’s not like I can’t talk, you know? I just stutter a bit.]

Wu Kuang Yun clutched his butt and crawled up. Then, he flew into a rage, "Wu Yi! You are a deputy general, and yet you dare to hit a general! Are you out of you mind? Damn! Wait and watch how I complain about you to the higher-ups. I will get you dismissed from duty once I go back. No. I will get you sacked and banished from army. I will get you exiled..."

He was roaring, but Wu Yi didn't even turn back. He had gone far away without paying any attention to him.

Wu Kuang Yu was mad. He was dying to vent his anger. He turned his head to the side, and saw his personal guard laughing up his sleeves. He asked in a scolding tone, "Why are you laughing, huh? What are you laughing at? What is so funny? Does it make you happy to see your Great General being beaten up?"

"Absolutely not, General!" the soldier assumed the 'attention' posture, and replied.

"You won't, or won't dare to?" Wu Kuang Yun fiercely asked.

"I won't, and won't dare to."

Wu Kuang Yun was satisfied with this reply. He patted-off the dust from his buttocks, and swaggered away. He left, and a burst of laughter sounded behind his back.

Wu Kuang Yun paid no attention to it. His lips curled-up in a grin as he said in his heart, "I don't know whether it is an achievement or not... but I can tell that I will be able to defeat Long Ao soon. Then, I will rush out to find His Majesty."

At this time... On the summit...

Chu Yang patted the dust off of his clothes, and jumped out of the cave. He twisted his waist, and patted his butt to get rid of the dirt. His casual behavior made it seem as if he had just done a trivial thing. He spoke in a fairly relaxed tone, "It's done. Let's go now. Wu Kuang Yu might commit suicide if we don't deliver His Majesty to the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass in time."

Chapter 409: Sword Spirit Wakes Up

The two Ninth Grade King Level Shadows felt their hearts thump loudly after this incident had occurred. They turned around, and saw that the young King Level expert had already jumped out. The nonchalant expression on his face made it seem as if nothing had happened.

[Such a calm disposition at such a young age...]

The two shadows shouted in their hearts – Monster!

Tie Bu Tian sat leisurely far away from there. He stood up, and walked over to them; his clothes fluttered in the wind as he walked. There was a calm and tranquil look on his face. Even the cracks that had appeared in the ground due to the tremors didn't seem to affect him.

"Is it over?" Tie Bu Tian asked with a smile.

"It's over," Chu Yang smiled back and said.

"It can be estimated that Great Zhao Army has suffered some losses this time." Tie Bu Tian revealed a faint smile and spoke, "It may not be a heavy blow to them, but it should be good enough to put them under stress."

Chu Yang laughed and said, "10,000 to 20,000 people should've died according to my estimate."

"10,000-20,000?" Tie Bu Tian asked in a startled manner, "How can there be so many casualties?"

Chu Yang laughed mischievously and explained, "Your Majesty, a landslide of this scale occurs once in ten thousand years. It's that rare! I'm confident about my estimate!"

They were unaware that their actual achievement was simply mind-boggling. This phenomenon couldn't possibly be described as a mere 'landslide'.

They couldn’t imagine the kind of victory they had obtained. Perhaps, they wouldn’t believe it even if someone were to come and tell them – that 600,000 troops had been destroyed by their actions!

Moreover, the casualties also included two tiger generals — two amongst the top-ranked generals on the continent! Jin Nankai and Wu Cheng Long!

"Let's go." Tie Bu Tian smiled. She hadn’t had high hopes from the beginning. So, this much damage was enough to cause some commotion in her heart.

"Ok." Chu Yang laughed out loud, and then took a step forward.

Suddenly, the Nine Tribulations Sword Point burst into a rage within his Dantian. It then came out abruptly, and issued a telepathic thought to Chu Yang in order to prevent him from leaving.

Chu Yang uttered "Ah?", and his footsteps halted.

Chu Yang clearly knew what the Nine Tribulations Sword Point wanted. [This little guy thinks of nothing but personal gains. So, it wouldn’t have come out if it hadn’t seen the possibility of a gain.]

The Nine Tribulations Sword Point was quite bewildered in reality. It would’ve spoken out in a shocked tone if it could speak, [Going? Why are you going? You haven’t even obtained the treasure, and still you wish to leave?]

[Did you call me out to dig a Mountain? All that hard work wasn’t to dig out some treasure? Why were you digging so excitedly if it wasn’t to dig out treasure? Are we miners or something?]

Chu Yang could sense the dissatisfaction and grievances of the Nine Tribulations Sword Point. He couldn’t help but smile bitterly as he said, "Actually, I would like to search around here for a bit. It seems like there’s some treasure here..."

Chu Yang was somewhat embarrassed. He was touching his nose,

and looked very uncomfortable from his facial expression. After all, he was the one who had proposed to head back. And now, the others were ready to head back in accordance with his proposition, but he had proposed to stay back... how could something like that not be embarrassing?

The shadows and Tie Bu Tian had seen Chu Yang's elixir finding ability. They figured that there must be some treasure nearby if Chu Yang was having this feeling. So, they complied to follow him without complaining. They were basically very curious to see what this ever-mysterious King of Hell Chu was going to find on this barren mountain...

The Nine Tribulations Sword Point throbbed inside Chu Yang's arm. It anxiously guided Chu Yang in the correct direction.

Chu Yang took a few steps, and realized that he was 'actually' walking in the direction of the 'chopped-off' Chun Yang Peak. Chu Yang couldn't help but scratch his head. He thought to himself, [what is this strangely lucky coincidence? I inadvertently chopped down a mountain peak, and now I'm surprisingly going to find treasure under it?]

The terrain continued to get steeped and steeper as they got closer and closer to it. And, the Nine Tribulations Sword Point continued to pulsate more and more cheerfully.

Tie Bu Tian was walking behind Chu Yang. He looked around, and spoke with a gentle smile on his face, "This mountain peak is very strange to be honest. The other mountain peaks in the vicinity are covered with trees and vegetation. This Chun Yang Peak is the only one that's barren in the surrounding radius of several dozen kilometers. There's only stone as far as the eyes can see, but there's no trace of trees or plants... Minister Chu, that contraption you made to lift the megalith was made-up of tree logs... You had to bring those tree logs from so far away from some other mountain, ha-ha. It wouldn't have been possible to fetch such huge trees from other mountains if your martial power

wasn’t this strong."

His words caught the listeners’ attention.

Chu Yang’s advancing footsteps halted as soon as he heard Tie Bu Tian’s remark. And, his entire body trembled as if he had stepped on a live electric wire!

[Indeed, indeed! No wonder I also felt that this place isn’t normal. So, that’s how it is. There are no trees or vegetation in this region. There’s not even a trace of any weed growing in the areas surrounding the Chun Yang Peak... that too in the radius of more than a dozen kilometers.]

[Moreover, we traveled twenty or so kilometers to arrive here, but we only found withered trees over that distance. Also, for some reason the growth of trees isn’t that luxuriant within the radius of a few hundred kilometers...]

[Why is that?]

[There’s only one possible explanation to all this – that there’s something here... something which can absorb the spirit energy from the surroundings for its own use. It has absorbed the spirit energy from the surroundings for its own existence. And, it has deprived all other living things of their opportunity to grow and prosper. This is the reason why the trees and plants have withered... or stopped growing altogether!]

[And, an elixir that can have such powerful ability is certain to be a heavenly treasure... perhaps even one of the nine great herbal medicines!]

[It has to be!]

Chu Yang thought this, and his heart could no longer be stopped from pounding loudly.

He looked all around in the surrounding areas. He spotted lush trees and dense vegetation beyond the large radius of several hundred kilometers.

The range of this elixir's effect clearly exceeded the range of the Jade Snow Spirit Ginseng.

In fact, its range was more than double of the Jade Snow Spirit Ginseng's!

[Does that mean this elixir is better than the Jade Snow Spirit Ginseng?]

Chu Yang's heart throbbed.

Tie Bu Tian saw that Chu Yang had suddenly stopped. So, he curiously asked, "Why aren't you walking? Did you find it?"

"No." Chu Yang calmed himself down, and began to walk forward. His target was obviously that bottom part of the Chun Yang Peak.

Chu Yang suddenly burst into laughter once he had approached it. He then spoke, "Just look at how precisely I've cut this d*ck from the middle... this bottom end is just... tut-tut, it would've been rendered unusable if it were a person's d*ck. Those mother*king and pathetic eunuchs in the palace have no urge or impulse down there... But, at least their d*cks aren't chopped-off from the middle. However, this one can't perform any function, and is basically as good as dead..."

Tie Bu Tian suddenly flew into a rage. [You have come here to find an elixir or talk dirty like a hoodlum?]

The two shadows didn't know whether to laugh or cry as they watched Minister Chu blatantly spout such utter nonsense; and that too in a haughty manner. They felt helpless and frustrated in their hearts; [he's fearless because he doesn't know the truth! This guy wouldn't dare to be so presumptuous if he knew that His Majesty is a woman in reality...]

[He is simply indecent.]

Minister Chu laughed heartily, and finally arrived before the Chun Yang Peak. It looked even more magnificent, imposing and

lofty up-close. Chu Yang gently stroked and stroked that chopped-off section of the peak with a smile on his face. He then sighed with emotion and said, "I'm sorry I wasn't caring enough and chopped you off."

Tie Bu Tian's complexion turned dark. He immediately turned around. Then, he took a deep breath to calm his anger. He surprisingly realized that his mind had sobered up after he had taken a deep breath. He couldn't help but point this out, "I've never climbed mountains before, but I've have heard that it is very difficult to breathe at high altitudes... especially at the summit of tall mountains. Shouldn't it be difficult to breathe on this mountain too? But, I have yet to experience any breathing difficulty here. What's going on? Is it because there's an elixir here?"

The two shadows were baffled by this. Their faces immediately revealed a look of shock at this realization.

[Indeed, Tie Bu Tian's comment makes logical sense. We haven't faced any breathing difficulties yet. All of us have been neglecting this point since we have come up here.]

[It seems like there's an extraordinary treasure hidden in this mountain peak...]

Sword Point began to tremble even more intensely. It was constantly pointing towards the middle spot of the chopped off Chun Yang Peak.

Chu Yang took a deep breath, and jumped up. A weary voice suddenly spoke in his consciousness, "Dig from either side... then, go obliquely down for 90 feet..."

Chu Yang was startled, "Sword Spirit? Where were you all this time? I called you several times, but you didn't give the slightest of responses."

The Sword Spirit asked in a feeble voice, "First you tell me what

happened back then... you went totally berserk. Those people were close to chopping you into pieces, and you had fallen unconscious. You would've died if I hadn't used my powers to protect you. Unfortunately, the spiritual power I had been accumulating for such a long time got exhausted in saving you, and I ended up falling into a deep sleep..."

"Eh... so that's what happened back then..." Chu Yang felt somewhat embarrassed. He recalled what all things happened that night. Even he himself felt strange as to why he had gone berserk, and then faced the mass attack head-on instead of dodging...

"I fortunately had a narrow escape. I have absorbed the power of the Mysterious Jade Ice Paste in the last few days. That has restored me a little bit; else, it would've been impossible for me to wake up." Sword Spirit said, "You make the best use of time, and get that elixir. I'm off to take rest now..."

"Wait. Slow down. What treasure is there inside this? You know that, right?" Chu Yang asked.

"What sort of treasure do you expect to find inside a peak that is named Chun Yang?" The Sword Spirit snapped and said, "You must know that there must be some reason why this naturally formed structure got this name of all the names that exist between the heaven and earth!"

He disappeared without a trace after he spoke that.

Chu Yang's belly was full of queries, but the Sword Spirit had already vanished. He touched his nose, and jumped down from the chopped mountain peak. He stood to the side of Chun Yang Peak and slashed obliquely with the Nine Tribulations Sword.

Tie Bu Tian stared blankly as the bluish-green sword in Chu Yang's hand cut through the stone as if it was cutting through butter. His sword would pierce into the stone to its hilt each time. Tie Bu Tian's eyes were full of shock.

Chu Yang cut out a big square-shaped stone after a while, and placed it on the side. Then, another one and so on…

The two shadows stepped forward to lend him a hand like before. They were sure that Chu Yang had found the treasure's location.

However, there wasn't the slightest trace of greed in their hearts. Their minds had a pure thought instead; [we must help him in taking out this treasure intact.]

Chu Yang had given them Vitality Spring Water for free, and had done them a big favor in doing so. This kindness was enough to make these two his followers and supporters forever. They wouldn't ask him for a share in this profit. How could they possibly ask for something like that? Besides, this was something that Chu Yang had discovered on his own merit. Moreover, he was doing all digging by himself. They couldn't possibly demand a share for merely moving the stones, could they? They could never be so cheap.

Chu Yang had already dug down for 60 feet. A big tunnel had already appeared on the floor.

Chu Yang inserted the Sword Point once again into the stone. However, he felt a subtle heat travel-up the Sword Point this time. It travelled along the Sword Edge, and through the hilt, before it entered into his palm. His exhaustion subsided in an instant. It seemed as if he had soaked his body in hot springs. His entire body suddenly felt completely relaxed and comfortable. And, he didn't even know how that happened…

Chapter 410: Mysterious Yang Jade Essence

Chu Yang was excited! [It seems that I'll be reaching it soon. Sword Spirit said that it's located 90 feet below. But, I have already started to notice changes. And, that too after I have covered a distance of only 60 feet... does that mean that it is some kind of a badass treasure?]

Chu Yang once again threw out a big stone. It was caught by the two shadows, who stood at the cave's mouth. They clearly felt something wrong about this stone. The bottom part of this big stone was very soft. In fact, it was so soft that their finger could poke inside it without applying any force. Moreover, it was giving off a strange heat.

Moreover, the bottom of this stone had an inch-thick coating; this coating was dark-red in color. It was this dark-red layer that was giving off that strange heat.

The shadows noted that they felt a sense of comfort throughout their body after they came in contact with this heat.

Chu Yang was about to dig further when the space in his consciousness suddenly began to shake. The Sword Spirit suddenly appeared, and hastily cautioned, "Be careful from hereon. Collect everything present within the surrounding radius of 30 feet, and put them inside the Nine Tribulations Space!"

"Eh?" Chu Yang asked doubtfully.

"Don't 'eh' me; do as I say!" Sword spirit was usually sluggish. But right now, he was very excited for some reason. He sighed and spoke in a trembling voice, "I have to admit that you are very lucky, kid! This is insane. I am speechless!"

"I'm lucky?" Chu Yang knitted his brows and asked.

"You are more than just lucky..." Sword Spirit was silent for a moment. He then spoke, "You used to be powerless in the

beginning. Then, you found the Sword Point, and you also managed to obtain a part of the Seven Shades Cold Energy along with it. These two things were enough to prevent you from getting injured in most situations. Afterwards, you used your powers of Martial Master to obtain the Vitality Spring Water when you obtained the second fragment of Nine Tribulations Sword! In fact, you obtained the entire spring. You should know that the Vitality Spring was supposed to dry up after the second fragment was removed from it. However, we actually managed to take it whole, and somehow placed it inside the Nine Tribulations Space. It has now become an ever-existing treasure trove for you.

"Then, you even luckily found a small Spirit Jade Ginseng while pursuing the enemy. And, the medicinal efficacy of that ginseng was so subtly stolen by the Nine Tribulations Sword Point."

Chu Yang said, "Spirit Jade Ginseng?"

"Yes. I understand that Diwu Qing Rou's Spirit Jade Ginseng is only a small ginseng. It is 3000 years old, and isn't qualified to become a real spirit jade ginseng at such a young age. However, don't forget that it is still counted among the genuine 'nine great herbal medicines' in the world!

"It's just like... a newly born tiger cub can be easily put in order even by a rabbit, but no one can deny that it is a tiger, got it?" Sword Spirit gave this simple explanation very thoroughly and in detail.

"Understood," Chu Yang replied.

"However, the medicinal efficacy of that 'very' little Spirit Jade Ginseng was later combined with other medicines to form the Nine Tribulations Pill's prototype. And, the very creation of this prototype stimulated the Nine Tribulations Sword to seek more and more of such elixirs! This is just like opening one's spiritual wisdom. Do you understand what I am saying?

"In other words, the Nine Tribulations Sword wouldn't have

rapidly discovered these precious treasures if you hadn’t obtained those items in the beginning. And, you would’ve most-likely missed the nine great herbal medicines even if they were present in your vicinity in that case. However, things are entirely different now, and they are certainly in your favor...

"Then, you found the Mysterious Jade Ice Paste! Moreover, it’s a fully matured Mysterious Jade Ice Paste!" Sword Spirit exclaimed in admiration, "It is 90,000 years old. It is simply... priceless! On top of that, it is one of the nine great herbal medicines.

"Your good luck comes in quick succession. I was in deep sleep until now, and I was using the Mysterious Jade Ice Paste’s cold energy to nourish my soul. But, the mysterious yang energy suddenly came inside your body and caught my attention when you came close to this place. The Yin and Yang elements joined together, and I suddenly woke up... only to find that you have found another treasure!

"What in the world is this treasure?" Chu Yang rudely interrupted the Sword Spirit since it was jabbering on-and-on. He was unable to tolerate the suspense any longer. He thought, [didn’t you say that you are tired and need rest to recuperate? How come you appeared so suddenly, and started to chirp like a bird, huh?]

"The material present in the surrounding radius of thirty feet... as well as well thirty feet down from here – all of it is Mysterious Yang Jade! It is Mysterious Yang Jade, you fool." Sword Spirit said excitedly.

"What is the use of Mysterious Yang Jade?" Chu Yang asked.

"First you first dig it out. Then, I’ll tell you," Sword Spirit replied impatiently.

Chu Yang snorted and brandished the Nine Tribulations Sword to delimit a big circle. He didn’t even get enough time to put out his hand to grab the jade since the impatient Sword Spirit had already transferred that big chunk of mysterious yang jade into the

Nine Tribulations Space. Then, Chu Yang saw the mysterious yang jade change shape inside the Nine Tribulations Space; it transformed into a circular lump under the Sword Spirit's control.

And then, the Sword Spirit sat down cross-legged in the middle of that weird circular lump.

Chu Yang continued to mine out the mysterious yang jade, and the Sword Spirit continued to receive the chunks of jade into the Nine Tribulations Space in kind. It merged them all into that weird round lump, and the lump continued to grow bigger and bigger.

Eventually, the last piece of mysterious yang jade was received into the Nine Tribulations Space. Chu Yang used his intention to take out three pieces of the mysterious yang jade.

Sword Spirit immediately got agitated, and quickly shifted them back into the Nine Tribulations Space. He then asked, "What are you doing?" He looked like a mother-hen who was trying to protect her chicks. He had basically gone all-out against Chu Yang.

"What happened?" Chu Yang was somewhat speechless. He pointed at the big and round heap of mysterious yang jade inside the Nine Tribulations space and said, "You have so much of it, yet you can't spare three pieces for those who helped us. What's the meaning of this? Besides, I only took out a few pieces. Why you are being so stingy...?"

"Even a drop is out of the question!" Sword Spirit tightly locked down the Nine Tribulations Space. He then looked fiercely at Chu Yang, "Who told them to help? Couldn't we have done it ourselves? Your argument is truly laughable!"

Chu Yang felt a headache when he realized that the Sword Spirit had usurped control of the Nine Tribulations Space. He couldn't take anything out as a result. So, he felt quite helpless, "Just this time..."

"This time?" Sword Spirit looked at him suspiciously.

"Only once..." Chu Yang nodded again and again.

"Sigh... it's such a pity. This... this mysterious yang jade is an authentic treasure. It's priceless." Sword Spirit was stubbornly staring at the three pieces of mysterious yang jade that lay before his eyes. He then put away two of them. He took the smallest piece, and broke it into palm-sized pieces. Then, he took one palm-sized piece, and further broke it into three tiny pieces. Afterwards, he threw these three tiny pieces out of the Nine Tribulations Space, "Take these away!"

Chu Yang almost fainted!

[I have never met a stingy guy like him. He's way too stingy. I highly doubt that I've seen someone stingier than him!]

[You have a big mountain of this treasure, but you're not even willing to give three palm-sized pieces to the others? How can someone be that stingy?]

However, the Sword Spirit's stance didn't change. He had put on a resolute and stubborn appearance. It seemed as if he wouldn't back down from his decision no matter what, "Do you want them or not? If you want these tiny pieces... then I will take these back too."

Chu Yang smiled bitterly, "You are ruthless!"

"Now, why don't you get back to work?" Sword Spirit roared, "The stuff lying under the Mysterious Yang Jade is actually the Mysterious Yang Jade Essence! It's of the same rank as the Mysterious Ice Jade Paste! It's one of the nine great herbal medicines. What are you waiting for? Bring it inside."

"What... what...?" Chu Yang was startled. In fact, he nearly stuttered. He was already more than satisfied and overjoyed to have obtained so much mysterious yang jade. He wasn't prepared for such a pleasant surprise.

He quickly turned to have a look, but didn't see the Mysterious

Yang Jade Essence. Instead, he saw a smooth item lying on the ground. This item was issuing a pink luster. Chu Yang bent over, and gently picked it up with his sword. That small object suddenly became smaller as soon as it left the ground; most of it had melted in the air. However, there remained a small lump of pink stuff on the ground. And, it was wriggling gently. Its appearance was very similar to that of the mysterious ice jade essence. It was exuding a burning hot temperature, but Chu Yang noticed that it wasn't hot despite of this.

[It seems like this is the Mysterious Yang Jade Essence.]

Chu Yang moved this small lump of Mysterious Yang Jade Essence into the Nine Tribulations Space. The Sword Spirit also let out a cry of surprise. He immediately placed it into the Vitality Spring Water. Then, he finally heaved a sigh of relief, and happily said, "Awesome! Now we can have Yin and Yang coordination in the Nine Tribulations Space. I don't need to worry about that anymore. Moreover, my spiritual strength will also grow rapidly... thanks to the coordination of Yin and Yang. I will be able to assist you more that way; and faster too..."

"Eh? Yin and Yang coordination?" Chu Yang suddenly remembered that backstory he had earlier narrated. He then spoke with amazement, "Is the story of that 'nine lives bachelor' true?"

"What 'nine lives bachelor'?" Sword Spirit looked at him and asked in a perplexed manner, "What the hell are you talking about? I am sure that it's some hideous bullshit, isn't it?"

Chu Yang forced a smile, and quickly narrated the 'backstory' once again. Then, he asked, "Don't tell me it's true?"

"Are you for real...?" Sword Spirit was speechless as he looked at Chu Yang, "Mysterious Yang Jade Essence is always found in harsh conditions. For example, it was found here under this peak that has stood erect under the blue sky for ages. This peak's body has been fully exposed to the sun for ten thousand years, and that's

how it gathered so much ‘pure yang’ energy from the heaven. Hence the name... ‘Chun Yang’ Peak! The next important condition is the Nine Dragons Terrain! Got it? The nine dragon veins intersect under this mountain. So, it’s not surprising that such a heavenly treasure has slowly formed over ten thousand years!"

"So that’s how it is." Chu Yang thought of that backstory and chuckled twice.

Then, he suddenly thought of something, "Doesn’t that mean that another heavenly treasure will be formed here? After all, we haven’t destroyed its Nine Dragon Terrain..."

"But of course. You will just need to wait for ten thousand years to obtain it." Sword Spirit grinned and spoke, "It needs to stay exposed to the sun for ten thousand years. In other words, a treasure like this needs ten thousand years to take shape. Wanna wait?"

"Wait?" Chu Yang smile wryly. [Motherf*ker, I don’t even know where I’ll be lying buried after ten thousand years? Even my descendants won’t be able to find my corpse... And, you are asking me to wait...?]

Chu Yang soon jumped out from the hole.

It was pitch-dark in the pit. Therefore, the others hadn’t been able to see what he was up to. But, the three of them were glad when he jumped out of the pit.

"You came out? Are you all right?" Tie Bu Tian asked.

"I’m all right," Chu Yang replied.

"Excellent. Let’s go then." Tie Bu Tian spoke that, and turned around to leave. The two shadows gave a warm smile, and followed after Tie Bu Tian.

They didn’t ask what Chu Yang had found. That’s because asking this question would’ve only put Chu Yang in awkward situation.

This treasure was Chu Yang’s. So, why would they needlessly create trouble?

"You guys won’t ask what treasure I found?" Chu Yang asked in a puzzled manner.

"It’s yours to begin with. Regardless of what you got — it’s yours." The shadow patted Chu Yang's shoulder, and spoke with a genial smile on his face, "So, we didn’t ask."

"Wait." Chu Yang was somewhat moved by this. He sighed and said, "I found a piece of jade inside. I have divided it into four parts." Saying this, he recalled how big of a miser Sword Spirit had been. He suddenly felt embarrassed in his heart.

However, neither did he know, and nor did he understand the true value of the Mysterious Yang Jade. If he had given-out the three chunks he had originally planned to give... the two shadows would probably have died on the spot from a stroke...

Chapter 411: King of Hell Chu Commands the Army!

Chu Yang flipped over his wrist and spoke, "This is for the three of you!" He looked at the thin and tiny pieces of jade in his palm and felt embarrassed as he continued, "Cough cough... these are a bit small... But, cough cough... the original pieces weren't big... so..."

Chu Yang clearly had a guilty conscience as he said this sentence. [Not big? It's actually as big as a mountain. But... how can I say that? I can't say that my Nine Tribulations Sword's Spirit is so stingy that he doesn't want to give you any more than this, can I?]

However, the other three people had already been stunned!

The three pieces of pink jade in Chu Yang's palm were issuing a bright reddish luster under the illumination of sunlight. It seemed as if these jades were melting in sunlight, and were exuding a burst of dense vapor...

A warm aura suddenly spread out, and shrouded the three people.

"The Mysterious Yang Jade!" a shadow suddenly called out in surprise, and his eyes opened wide in a stare. The two shadows stared at the jade pieces, and it seemed as if their eyes would pop out!

[No wonder this place is barren and not even a blade of grass can be seen growing here! No wonder this mountain peak is called Chun Yang Peak! It's indeed pure yang energy. It's the purest form of yang! So, such a priceless treasure – that can even startle the heavens – was hidden in this peak. It actually contains the power of pure yang...!]

[The Mysterious Yang Jade!] The shadows were moved to tears, [so this treasure wasn't just a legend. It 'really' exists in the real

world!]

Tie Bu Tian didn’t know what kind of an item the ‘Mysterious Yang Jade’ was, but he could tell by the reaction of the two shadows that this tiny jade was no ordinary treasure.

"This jade... His Majesty can have it, but we can’t!" the shadow said with great difficulty. His eyes were fixated at the Mysterious Yang Jade in Chu Yang’s palm.

"Why?" Chu Yang asked.

"An innocent ordinary man can get into trouble on account of a cherished item that can arouse the jealousy of others." The shadow sighed and said, "We are not carefree like you. Unlike you, we can’t go wherever we want... or do whatever we want. But, His Majesty is the Emperor of this nation. He’s far from being ordinary. There won’t be any problem if he is to carry such a precious treasure on his body. However, our case is different. We have a Family. And, we must return to our Family from time to time..."

The look on the shadow’s face was somewhat bitter and astringent. There was something he wanted to say but didn’t, [The Family will certainly try to take this precious treasure away from us as soon as they find out that it’s in our possession. It’s certainly great that we are Ninth Grade King Level Expert, but the Family doesn’t take this level of strength very seriously.]

Moreover, these two were already quite old. So, their future development wasn’t going to be favored by their Family. Why else would they have been sent to the Lower Three Heavens?

"Are you implying that you won’t take these?" Chu Yang was astonished and asked, "I brought them out for you two. Do you want me to take these back?"

The two shadows hesitated for a moment and finally made a decision, "Well, we definitely don’t want that... So, let’s do it like this... We will accept only one for both of us since we are a married

couple."

Then, the shadow picked up the smallest and thinnest piece of jade. After that, he picked up the largest piece, and gave it to Tie Bu Tian. He then resolutely returned the last remaining piece to Chu Yang.

"We took this small piece, but it is our most precious heirloom now. We thank you for your kindness," the two shadows spoke with dedication.

As to why they gave the biggest pieces to Tie Bu Tian... the two shadows felt, [you lost your martial arts for the sake of someone else. You paid a big price by losing the most precious thing a woman has. So, it should be completely fine to receive a big piece of the Mysterious Yang Jade since it will nourish your body.]

"Your Majesty, this piece of jade is called the Mysterious Yang jade. You may carry it on your body, or wear it as an ornament. It won't just nourish your body, but also your soul. Moreover, it will take good care of your skin, and it will help you maintain a young appearance. You are burdened with the responsibilities of the nation, and you often have to deal with thousands of state affairs. It's difficult to escape from exhaustion when you have such an arduous job. However, all sorts of illnesses shall shy away from your body and your spirit — so long as you have this Mysterious Yang Jade. You will always feel full and energetic. In fact, you will forget what it feels to be tired or fatigued. Moreover, it will never harm your body."

Shadow solemnly suggested, "Your Majesty, this piece of jade must never be shown to others. You can also pass it on as a national treasure in the future!"

"Pass it on as a national treasure?!" Tie Bu Tian held that piece of jade in her hands. She had been playing with it since she liked its warm aura. She found it adorable, and couldn't part with it. However, she was suddenly startled when she heard the shadow's

words.

Pass it on as a national treasure? Tie Bu Tian was the Emperor. So, how could he not know what sort of treasure could be passed on as a ‘national treasure’?

Only a treasure that went against the heaven’s will could be designated as a ‘national treasure’.

"I will always keep this piece of jade with me... forever," Tie Bu Tian raised his head and solemnly said. There was a deep meaning in this sentence. At least the two shadows felt that there was a deep meaning in this sentence.

Chu Yang didn’t feel anything though...

The two shadows sighed in their hearts after they saw the difference in those two people's demeanors... [what a pair this is... The man has someone else in his heart, and the woman is burdened with the incredible weight of responsibilities...]

[One is madly in love with the other and is willing to do anything for her love, while the other is completely oblivious... Can there really be such a strange emotional entanglement in this world?]

The four people went down the mountain. They continued to walk until it was early evening. They crossed several mountains, and went to the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass via another direction.

Wu Kuang Yun was burning with impatience.

That was because Long Ao still hadn’t moved an inch from the spot - not because he didn’t wish to move... but, because he simply couldn’t. There was a ‘dwarf mountain’ behind them, and it was blocking their path. He was trapped in such an awkward situation. He wanted to cry, but had no tears to shed.

[I can make my several hundred thousand men climb up the mountain cliff if want them to withdraw. But, what about taking the horses and carts outside... this is no fairy tale you know?]

[Also… there would be chaos and disorder if several hundred-thousand men start to climb the mountain. It would be a lot easier for Wu Kuang Yun to launch a surprise attack in that case… wouldn’t we all be annihilated if that were to happen?]

Long Ao was very courageous, but even then he wouldn’t dare to take such a ridiculous step. Let’s assume they turned out to be lucky and managed to climb up… but what would they do if the megaliths fell at that time? This was a genuinely unpredictable matter!

Therefore, Long Ao could only tough it out.

"Your Majesty… Your Majesty… Your…" Wu Kuang Yun received a report about the Emperor’s arrival, and quickly rushed out to welcome him. He was overexcited. In fact, he was almost moved to tears. He wiped his tears, and excitedly greeted him, "… you finally came back. I… I… I… I nearly committed suicide…"

Tie Bu Tian smiled and spoke in a consoling manner, "No need to be anxious. I’m perfectly fine. Well, what’s the situation in Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass?"

"The situation is excellent!" Wu Kuang Yun’s short reply shocked Tie Bu Tian, [Excellent?]

"Yes, wa ha ha. This Old Wu has been way too excited the entire day. It was like the sky itself fell down. A huge mountain crashed down, and crushed those bastards to death. Wa ha ha…" Wu Kuang Yun grinned.

"Just one mountain can’t possibly crush all of them, right?" Tie Bu Tian knitted his brows, [this Wu Kuang Yun is exaggerating, right?]

"But this mountain was rolling, Your Majesty! This mountain rolled down along the slanting valley… Moreover, the impact of the fall had caused vibrations throughout the valley. And, this induced landslides and rockslides everywhere. Ha ha, that scene

was truly spectacular! I heard that even Jin Nankai and Yu Cheng Long were crushed to death... Great Zhao's casualties have surpassed six-hundred-thousand!"

Wu Kuang Yun was blushing with excitement, "Six-hundred-thousand ah. Six-hundred-thousand Your Majesties ah!"

[Six-hundred-thousand your majesties?]

Tie Bu Tian was baffled by this reply. [Did he actually say 'six-hundred-thousand your majesties'? What kind of a casualty figure is this? How can a nation have six-hundred-thousand Emperors?]

However, Tie Bu Tian also knew that Wu Kuang Yun was extremely excited... hence the incoherence in his speech. So, he didn't take it seriously.

"I will go in and see." Tie Bu Tian waved his hand to dismiss Wu Kuang Yun.

Wu Kuang Yun stealthily arrived in front of Chu Yang. His hairy hand patted on Chu Yang's shoulder, "Hey! Kid, do you still remember Great General Wu?"

Chu Yang raised his eyebrow, "You mean the general I was going to offer to the 'warhorses on aphrodisiac'."

Wu Kuang Yun suddenly gawked. He stared blankly and furiously said, "Fu*k!" [He just had to expose my mental scar from the very start of our meeting.]

Wu Kuang Yun was about to lash out, but realized that Chu Yang had already gone after Tie Bu Tian.

Wu Kuang Yun's heavy body thudded forward to catch up with them. He was about to assume an authoritative pose. But, Tie Bu Tian suddenly turned around. He then looked at Wu Kuang Yun, and spoke in a solemn tone, "You mustn't be unreasonable with Minister Chu!"

Tie Bu Tian's voice was very low; as if to let only Wu Kuang Yun

hear it.

Wu Kuang Yun's jaw dropped. His mouth opened wide in bewilderment as he shouted in his heart, [Minister Chu? King of Hell Chu? ***! So that means that this guy is... King of Hell Chu?]

He recalled the uproar that the King of Hell Chu had caused throughout Iron Cloud. He could never have imagined that such a dreadful person would turn out to be a youngster... Wu Kuang Yun tried his best, but he simply couldn't seem to accept this absurd fact.

He opened his mouth to speak, but saw Tie Bu Tian glare at him. His gaze was sharp like a knife!

[His Majesty is clearly hinting me to not reveal the King of Hell Chu's identity...]

Wu Kuang Yun immediately made a tactful decision, and shut his mouth. However, he still thought in his mind, [why tell me if His Majesty doesn't want to reveal the King of Hell Chu's identity?]

The walked along, and saw that the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass was in a mess. The house walls had collapsed everywhere. Tie Bu Tian couldn't help but sigh with emotion, [that was really dangerous.]

[Any other city instead of the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass would've long been turned into a pile of dust...]

They went up the wall, and looked outside. Tie Bu Tian's sharp eyes continued to observe for a while.

Then, he said, "Minister Chu, I'm leaving the five-hundred-thousand troops and horses stationed here under your command from now on!"

Chu Yang was stunned, "My command?"

"Yes, your command." Tie Bu Tian replied with utmost trust, "I believe that you can bring this war to an early end."

Chu Yang looked outside the wall and said, "Very well!"

Wu Kuang Yun – who had been following them all along – finally understood. [So, His Majesty plans to leave the command of the army in King of Hell Chu's hands. That is why he told me his real identity...]

[Humph, it's not easy to command the army. A genius isn't equal to a commander!]

Wu Kuang Yun secretly cursed in his heart.

Then, he listened to Tie Bu Tian speak further, "General Wu, you are responsible for assisting Minister Chu. You must attend to him at all times. You must follow his order..." He looked at Wu Kuang Yun. He then asked insipidly, "Do you understand?"

"I understand! I understand!" Wu Kuang Yun nodded like a pecking chicken.

Chu Yang put on a black robe, and covered his entire face. He was dressed in the signature get-up of King of Hell Chu now. Then, he held the first military meeting.

A ghastly aura was lingering in the meeting room, and it was coupled with traces of the Seven Shades Cold Energy. He had done this deliberately. Therefore, this room had come to seem like an ice-cave in this burning hot summer, and everyone was left to shiver.

Several valiant generals of the army were seated around. There was dissatisfaction in their hearts, and they didn't wish to engage in anything as per Chu Yang's command. However, they would feel as if a snake was climbing up their backs whenever their visions would clash with King of Hell Chu's. They would feel a cold and creepy sensation seep into their bodies. So, the thoughts of revolt soon melted and vanished without a trace — just like snow under the hot sun.

"I won't talk any nonsense here. I only wish to say that the army

in my command shall win us the war!" King of Hell Chu coldly looked at the audience, "I hereby announce my first order!"

Chapter 412: Calling Me ‘Daddy’ is Useless!

The audience was startled!

[This Minister is very direct! He gets straight to the point! He’s a no-nonsense commander. Has there been such a leader since ancient times?]

Then, they saw Minister Chu browse through the booklet in his hand. A personal guard who stood next to him narrowed his eyes to glance at the booklet, and almost laughed out. He had seen a climbing vine-like handwriting in the booklet. It was an incomparably ugly handwriting – the handwriting of General Wu Kuang Yun.

Chu Yang had forced Wu Kuang Yun to write down the characteristics and traits of his generals according to his own understanding. These people were Wu Kuang Yun’s former subordinates. So, he was obviously well-aware of their qualities and special abilities.

And, Chu Yang would rely on this data to give various orders to these generals.

They were to face the tired enemy soldiers who were stationed outside the walls. So, it wouldn’t be difficult to fight this battle. However, Tie Bu Tian’s plan was to allow Chu Yang to make good use of this battle by training the soldiers.

"Wu Yi!?" Chu Yang knitted his eyebrows and called out.

"This... This... This This... humble general is..." Wu Yi got up with a ‘swoosh’, and stood straight with the valiance of a soldiers. However, the heavy stuttering ruined his valiant image.

The audience suddenly burst into a faint laughter.

Chu Yang was somewhat dumbfounded. He raised his head and spoke, "You are a Deputy General?"

"This... This... This... Humble..." Wu Yi began to foam at the mouth.

Wu Kuang Yun quickly joined the conversation, and interpreted, "Allow me to interpret, Great Commander. He wants to say: This humble general is at your service!"

"Oh..." Chu Yang looked at those generals who had burst into laughter. His complexion suddenly changed as he pounded his hand on the table, "Why are you all laughing?!"

The generals were stunned.

"What are you laughing at? What's so funny?" Chu Yang glared at them fiercely, "Is it that 'funny' that you people don't stutter but he does? So, you will ridicule your fellow brother? Huh? You lot are indeed very united! Stuttering is quite funny, isn't it? Say something!"

He heavily pounded on the table again.

There was absolute silence!

"Wu Yi!"

"Ye... Yes!"

"I am assigning you to lead 50,000 elite troops out of the walls. You shall attack the enemy! Attention! You must engage the enemy, but there's no need to indulge in excess killings. You only need to compel the enemy to mobilize their troops. Then, you must come back with your troops!"

"Un... Understood!" Wu Yi straightened his chest and replied.

"Go."

"Yes!"

Wu Yi received the order, and left with large strides.

Chu Yang then selected the names of several senior generals. Basically, one of these senior generals would be leading 50,000

soldiers out of the walls every other hour. Their only goal was to harass the enemy, and return.

Yes, harass the enemy.

Long Ao was in big trouble.

He was secretly making his army clean-up the debris of the fallen mountain at present. They just needed to open up a small path in order to allow the horses and carts to run up the slope. They could then leave this place...

This task had been deliberately concealed, and was being carried-out covertly. In fact, it was going to be completed very soon.

At this time, the gates opened wide with a loud sound, and a large group of troops rushed out like a tide. The commander of these troops shouted under the bright moonlight, "Long... Long... Ao! Do... Do... you... you... dare to fight with this... Wu... Wu... Yi?"

Long Ao's belly almost exploded with anger. [A bastard just had to come out to challenge me at such a critical juncture. Moreover, such a stuttering one has arrived...]

[But, the enemy is rushing over... So, I have no choice but to meet them head-on! I'm not worried about the soldiers being harassed if they managed to crash into our barracks... But, I'm worried about the enemy finding out about our covert operation at the back. Wu Kuang Yun would definitely mobilize the entirety of his troops at once and wipe us out if someone from these guys manages to report this matter to him...]

Therefore, Long Ao hastily dispatched troops to resist the enemy's attack.

He didn't know that the enemy general would retreat right after he would mobilize his troops. Mere one round of battle took place between the two sides, and the stuttering general retreated with a declaration, "Will... Will... definitely come tomorrow... again... again..."

He hadn’t even finished the sentence by the time his silhouette disappeared from the battlefield...

Long Ao furiously threw down his tea-cup inside his command-tent.

Then, another wave of soldiers came out after an hour, and the battle started. This wave of soldiers broke through the defenses of Great Zhao Army’s vanguard troops, and reached the barracks. They returned after they had done a bit of killing and arson...

After an hour... another wave came...

Long Ao flew into a rage. He was at his wit’s end; he felt powerless!

He remained in a state of maddening hypertension the entire night.

Long Ao was pacing back and forth in the commander’s tent at dawn. He suddenly heart a noise coming from outside at this time. It seemed like the soldiers were causing a commotion. The Military Provisions Officer came in and reported, "Commander in Chief... we, we have no food provisions..."

"We don’t have any food?" Long Ao’s eyes almost popped out, "Hadn’t I told you to make the soldiers divide their daily ration into three-day portions? Now where do I arrange the provisions from at such a time and place?"

"But... we’ve been indulged in intense battles all night... plus no one has slept all night... the soldiers are..." Military Provisions Officer was also helpless. He had fallen into a difficult situation since the military supplies were no longer in his hands — in spite of being the Military Provisions Officer. The remaining provisions had been divided into three-day rations after they had been trapped here. These provisions were then distributed among the soldiers.

The army didn’t have a unified jurisdiction over distribution.

The rations were usually left in the hands of the soldiers. And, who can refrain once hunger strikes...?

Five days had already passed. How could there be anything remaining by now?

The noise was getting louder and louder outside.

"You’re not allowing us to eat, and you still want us to go to war?"

"How can you expect us to win a battle on empty stomachs?"

"We demand food!"

This gang of senior soldiers comprised of rowdy people. Basically, only a few of them were literate. The rest could at-most write their name. There were some highly educated individuals in the army as well. However, one’s literacy or illiteracy didn’t matter much in the face of hunger. Hence, they had come looking for the responsible official. It didn’t matter to them how critical the situation was — hunger and starvation was simply out of the question!

Long Ao raised his brows. He lifted the curtain, and dashed out with big strides, "Why are you shouting? What’s all this commotion about?!"

Everyone fell silent all of a sudden.

Then, someone shouted, "Commander in Chief! We demand food!"

Everyone’s courage boosted up when someone took the lead. They began to clamor in unison, "Commander in Chief, we demand food!"

Long Ao’s cheeks trembled as he angrily blurted, "You don’t have food? Why don’t you go eat horse-meat? So many dead horses are piled up there. Why don’t you eat them?!"

The soldiers cheered, "Eat Horse-Meat! Eat Horse-Meat!" Then,

they all left at once.

Then, a conflict broke out over the dead warhorses. The cavalry soldiers treated their personal horses dearer than their own lives. Their personal horses had died, and they hadn't even gotten enough time to grieve. Would they ever allow others to eat their horses? They obviously refused this gang of hungry soldiers.

Hence, the conflict broke out.

Soon, the cavalry soldiers – who were protecting the corpses of their warhorses – were totally defeated and fell face down. Then, another conflict broke out among the hungry soldiers since they started to accuse each other for taking bigger portions. This commotion was relentless.

Finally, the Military Provisions Officer had to step in. The dead horses were gathered under his supervision, and the horse-meat was equally distributed among all thereafter. No one got a bit more or a bit less than the others...

This crisis had passed for now, but it was only a temporary calm. Long Ao had already seen the signs of destruction in this incident. [You can eat the meat of dead horses today. Maybe you can carry-on on a half-empty stomach tomorrow. But, the living horses will have to be killed the day after tomorrow...]

[Can cavalry soldiers still be called 'cavalry' soldiers after their horses are dead?]

Then, Wu Kuang Yun appeared while Long Ao was in such a terrible shape. General Wu had appeared with a heavy responsibility on his shoulders — Minister Chu had sent him to persuade the enemy to surrender!

Wu Kuang Yun's disposition wasn't meant for such tasks. And, anyone could guess that Long Ao wouldn't surrender if Wu Kuang Yun was sent to persuade him.

This was simply impossible! However, the fact was that Minister

Chu didn’t intend to accept the surrender from the start!

Moreover, Wu Kuang Yun’s very first sentence blew any possibility of it, "Long Ao, you mother*ker. I command you to surrender!"

Long Ao got so angry that he nearly fainted on the spot!

He had initially planned, [I may end up arriving at the end of the line at some point. So, I will temporarily comply to a surrender if the enemy sends someone to persuade me. And then, I will backstab them once I get the chance after we’ve arrived on the battlefield. That will be considered to be a ‘meritorious service’. It will help me atone for my failure, and it might allow me to redeem myself in the eyes of Prime Minister Diwu!]

[However, the enemy ‘just’ had to send a fool like Wu Kuang Yun to persuade me for surrender! Is this how you persuade somebody? Doesn’t your attempt to persuade me appear more like a declaration for war?]

"I would rather die than surrender!" Long Ao climbed on his horse. He rushed out of the army’s formation, and bellowed in rage as he rode forward. There was a look of anger and hatred in his eyes. It seemed as if he would split the enemy with his stare. He lowered his voice once he got closer, and said, "Wu Kuang Yun! You f*king ‘persuade’ someone to surrender... not ‘command’ them!"

He had spoken this sentence in a very low voice so that only Wu Kuang Yun could heart it.

Long Ao’s had meant... [you don’t try to ‘persuade’ someone to surrender with such bossy attitude. How will you make me ‘comply’ if you keep this attitude? Firstly, you must offer to have me promoted to a higher official rank and show your sincerity. Then, I will pretend to consider. Then, you repeatedly persuade me... and then I eventually ‘surrender’... it should’ve been like this!]

[Besides, how will I be able to save my face before the two armies if you behave like this? You can’t treat me like a dog and expect me to surrender, you know? That is simply absurd.]

Wu Kuang Yun didn’t understand his meaning at all... He merely leaned his ear sideways, and asked loudly, "What did you say? Say it again, and loudly!"

Long Ao was very irritated by this, but he didn’t get mad at Wu Kuang Yun. He merely clenched his teeth to hold back his temper, "Wu Kuang Yun, you have come to persuade someone to surrender, right? At least show a little good faith."

Wu Kuang Yun suddenly realized what was going on. So, he replied in a low voice, "You mean..."

Long Ao was slightly happy in his heart. Finally, a door had opened before him. He whispered, "I mean that you put forward some condition..."

"Such as...?" Wu Kuang Yun winked at him.

Long Ao answered in a lowered voice, "Such as... you can promise to make me a Great General... and then later give me a promotion to the ranks of nobility. Then... tell me how to arrange my subordinates? How I will I receive the rewards..."

"You are surrendering, but you still wish to become a ‘Great General’?" Wu Kuang Yun cried out loud and stared at Long Ao with a bewildered look in his eyes. He had exclaimed this sentence in such a loud voice that many people had heard it.

Long Ao became anxious, and his face got covered in sweat, "Whoa, calm down my daddy. Can’t you talk in a low voice..."

"***!" Wu Kuang Yun yelled out, "Do not you dare call me ‘daddy’ because you are eager to surrender, ok?"

Long Ao glared at him...

"Why are you glaring at me? You are the one who called me

‘daddy’ just now, didn’t you? Isn’t that right?" Wu Kuang Yun spoke-out cockily. It seemed as if he wanted to kick-up a racket.

"Wu Kuang Yun!" Long Ao’s roar exploded as his face flushed red with anger. Even his eyes had turned bloodshot.

"Why are you shouting?!" Wu Kuang Yun shouted in an even louder voice, "What? You called me ‘daddy’ a moment ago! And now you want to deny that?! Long Ao, do you dare to swear in the name of your ancestors that you haven’t called me ‘daddy’? You swear it right now! Swear it now! You swear that you haven’t called me ‘daddy’! Do it! Do it now!"

Long Ao’s entire body shivered with anger. He stared at Wu Kuang Yun in anger. It seemed as if he’d tear him apart with his stare alone. However, he didn’t dare to swear. This was an era where people gave much importance to filial piety. Long Ao had indeed called him ‘daddy’, but not in that sense of the word. However, he still couldn’t bring himself to swear in the name of his ancestors.

"F*k, wants to be a Great General! Also wants to be promoted to the nobility... then he also wants to receive rewards... damn it!" Wu Kuang Yun thundered, "I tell you Long Ao... Calling me ‘daddy’ is useless! Kneel down and surrender at once; otherwise, I will kill you! What? And, you want to talk conditions with us? Have you gone crazy or what?!"

Long Ao was so enraged that he felt as if his chest would explode. He screamed and spouted a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 413: What Does It Mean to Get Rid of Somebody Once He Has Served His Purpose?

"Wu Kuang Yun! You..." Long Ao was struck with grief and indignation. He was in an inconsolable state of mind at the moment. He reached out with his hand and pointed at Wu Kuang Yun. He screamed as he shed tears of blood. His scream could literally piece one's heart. However, he only saw an expression of malice and ridicule in Wu Kuang Yun's eyes.

[So... he never intended to persuade me to surrender!]

[He has been playing me all this time!] Long Ao almost collapsed as this thought arose in his mind. He had always been very proud of his intelligence and smartness. But, he had been played so miserably today!

The enemy troops were to the front, while his own army was to the rear. However, his army was 'booing' at him to show their displeasure and distrust in him. Long Ao had an urge to draw his sword and commit suicide... as if to apologize to the whole world.

Humiliation! Utter Humiliation!

Long Ao had been always been a proud man. He would triumph in every battle. Had he ever faced such humiliation before?

Moreover, this had happened in such a critical situation. His army had reached the end of the line, and had nowhere to go. His only option was to restrain his anger and surrender, but even his own soldiers were no longer on his side. This Commander had built-up his current prestige over many years. However, his decades-worth of prestige – which he had built through painstaking efforts – had been ruined by the opposite party!

Completely ruined!

Long Ao's body swayed. He couldn't sit still on the horseback; in fact, he almost fell down. His vision darkened, and every hope in his heart turned to dust. He subconsciously turned his horse around, and rode towards his own army.

His mind was filled with the memories of the generals he had defeated and humiliated in the past. He couldn't help but think that they must have felt the same way he was feeling at the moment...

Wu Kuang Yun didn't pursue him. He merely sat still on his horse. A smile of mockery appeared on his face as he saw Long Ao ride away. He thought, [it seems that King of Hell Chu's plan was very effective. Look at this guy... he's so angry that he appears half-dead. It seems as if he doesn't wish to live anymore... this is awesome!]

Long Ao went back, and was greeted by doubtful, suspicious and despising looks from his subordinates. The soldiers were silently giving him similar looks as well.

[He deliberately lowered his voice so that we couldn't hear his words. He was definitely pleading! And, the other party didn't lower their voice...]

[The other party also said that Long Ao called him 'daddy'... and Great General Long didn't even refute this claim. The other party even forced him to swear... but he only spat blood... he didn't swear!]

[What does all of this indicate?]

[This shows that Great General Long was 'actually' begging for mercy... that he wanted to seek good treatment, status and rewards after the surrender. He even tried to curry favor by acting servilely and calling him 'daddy'... but he was severely humiliated by the other party instead!]

[Is this... is this really our Great General Long?]

Long Ao felt a heavy stroke in his chest when he was presented with this awkward silence and looks of suspicion. He felt like a knife was being twisted in his heart. He wanted to say something, but he saw stars revolve before his eyes. He opened his mouth to say something, but ended up spouted a big mouthful of blood instead...

He was dejected. The thoughts of killing himself had started to appear in his mind...

He turned his horse around, and suddenly shouted, "Wu Kuang Yun! I couldn't eat your flesh while I was still alive, but I will chase your soul after I die! Whether in heaven or hell — I will never coexist with you!"

He continued to bellow even though blood was still dripping from his mouth.

Then, he pulled out his long sword and shouted in anger, "Wu Kuang Yun, you wait for me. My ghost will come for you at night..." He slashed his own throat with the sword, and committed suicide on the horseback! The tone of his voice before his death was sad and shrill. It seemed as if the devil had rushed out of hell and shrieked wildly. His voice was filled with endless hatred and sorrow. The people who heard his voice were creeped out by it.

He died on the spot. The blood continued to gush out, but his body didn't fall down. His eyes continued to glare at Wu Kuang Yun. And, there was anger and resentment in those eyes. His eyes looked like the eyes of a dead man — profound and seemingly connected with the netherworld...

One of the most famous generals of this generation had chosen to commit suicide!

"Commander-in-Chiefl!" His personal soldiers burst into tears.

"Commandin-Chief!" thousands of people bellowed in unison. They then knelt down, and burst into tears.

Wu Kuang Yun shivered a little. Then, he suddenly burst into laughter, "Motherf*ker, don't you know that the count of people who wish to kill me are more than ten-million in number? At least know this much if you hold a grudge against me and wish to take revenge. You will come for me in the night? Well, then you will have to stand in the queue before you get to me! The f*ker is dead, and he still dared to threaten me before he died!"

Then, he raised his arm and announced in a loud voice, "Long Ao is dead! Thou... You all still haven't surrendered... till when do you plan to wait?" He had initially wanted to say 'thou', but he realized that 'thou' would sound a bit 'genteel'. So, he replaced it with 'you' at the last moment.

A man adorned in a black mask stood on the wall. His black clothes fluttered in the wind. He had a pair of cold, sharp and ruthless eyes. It was King of Hell Chu!

"Minister Chu, do we allow these people to surrender..." Tie Bu Tian asked as his eyes flashed.

"Their Commanding General is dead. So, we will naturally allow them to surrender!" Chu Yang indifferently said, "We will have Long Ao's personal soldiers executed after the surrender. The senior generals shall also be executed. The remaining high-ranking officers shall be imprisoned. The existing teams shall be broken up, and reorganized to form a 'new force'."

"I understand that the senior generals need to be executed, and the high-ranking officers must be imprisoned. But, why execute the personal soldiers?" Tie Bu Tian knitted his eyebrows and asked, "Killing the prisoners of war is..."

"This is no time to be benevolent and merciful. We should focus on our survival. We must live on — only then can you think about dominating the whole world!" Chu Yang coldly replied, "The reason why Your Majesty doesn't understand the execution of personal soldiers is because Your Majesty doesn't know what a

‘personal soldier’ really is! Personal Soldier... these two words aren’t ‘just’ for show."

Tie Bu Tian felt embarrassed. So, he only smiled in response. A senior general who stood nearby spoke-up, "His Majesty doesn’t command the army. So, it’s only understandable why he doesn’t understand this course of action. Anyway, we won’t have to kill many of his personal soldiers because Long Ao is already dead. So, most of his personal soldiers will soon accompany him by committing suicide!"

His facial expression was somewhat serious as he explained further, "And, those who won’t follow after their dead master... would most likely hold grudge against us. So, they will most likely plan to die after they’ve had their revenge." He heaved a long sigh, "Your Majesty, this is the true meaning of a ‘personal soldier’... that Minister Chu is talking about!"

He paused for a moment, and then said, "The so-called ‘personal soldier’ is a genuine ‘die-hard’ servant! He’s the very incarnation of the word 'loyalty'! There has always been an unsettling rule on the battlefield... that is... the basic factor used to measure the power and influence of a famous general is to see how many of his personal soldiers are willing to die in case he’s to die on the battlefield."

Tie Bu Tian was shocked by this!

Long Ao’s personal soldiers had begun to wail on the spot after he killed himself. A few of them pulled-out their knives, and committed suicide.

They had realized that they had lost after Iron Cloud offered these soldiers a chance to surrender. Therefore, the soldiers had immediately put-down their weapons. However, the personal soldiers — who were still alive — got extremely angry, and started to kill their comrades. Then, the ordinary soldiers – who had gotten attacked by the personal soldiers – also began to fight back.

Hence, they started to chop each other into pieces!

The Iron Cloud Army hadn't even moved, and Great Zhao's ordinary soldiers and personal soldiers had already engaged in a bitter struggle amongst themselves. A scene of carnage had appeared on the battlefield as a result. The personal soldiers were weeping and wailing as they slaughtered the other soldiers. They shouted crazily as they swung their weapons, "Great General wasn't that kind of a person! Great General definitely wasn't that kind of a person! You people desecrated him! It's your fault..."

These tragic shouts resounded for a long time, and only came to a stop when the entirety of his 3000 personal soldiers had been wiped-out. Even the last remaining personal soldier continued to slaughter furiously until he had used-up the last remaining bit of his strength. In fact, he used all his strength to shout out loud with his last breath, "The Great General was not..."

One could tell that this shout was clearly meant to reach the dead general's ears. It seemed as if he wanted to tell his Great General that he believed in his innocence. And, he also wanted to tell his Great General that he was still defending his reputation and dignity... even after the man's death. His dedication had originated from the unconditional trust he had put in his General when the man was alive! Everyone else misunderstood Long Ao. So, his own personal soldiers had sacrificed their lives in order to offer a final hymn to the man they had sworn their loyalty to!

[Our Great General didn't deserve this!]

However, his voice suddenly froze in the middle of the proclamation of his master's innocence as his body submerged in a sea of swords and sabers.

His blood and life soared to the heavens — just like his loyalty!

Tie Bu Tian looked at this scene of carnage; flesh and blood was flying everywhere. He heaved a long sigh and spoke, "It's a pity that such a famous general died such a miserable death! It's truly

lamentable!"

Chu Yang indifferently said, "His Majesty's heart is overflowing with compassion, isn't it? But, it's not worth it!" His words were impolite, but Tie Bu Tian didn't get angry. He merely asked, "Why?"

"These so-called 'famous generals' are born out of hundreds of battles. Each general naturally comes to have his own extremely devoted followers in the remaining years of their life. And, each time such a general dies — many such people get buried alongside him! Moreover, these people are perfectly happy to die for him! This is because of his charisma."

He further continued, "He simply wouldn't have deserved to become a general if he didn't possess such charisma! Such things are very common on the battlefield. In fact, some generals would intentionally gather some tramps, orphans and death-row prisoners as their own direct descendants... because he knows that these people have nothing. Therefore, even a smiling face of his' is enough to make them die for him... let alone doing the favor of giving a lease of life to such rejects."

"Besides, this is the war between the two nations... not a civil war, right?" Tie Bu Tian smiled and added.

"Correct!"

"I understand! My compassion will only make trouble for the future. But... I can't help but be emotionally stirred whenever I see such a scene." Tie Bu Tian gently smiled and said, "It's just that there aren't many 'heroes' around, and I can't bear to see them die like this... perhaps because I myself employ many such 'heroes'!"

Chu Yang was silent for a while. He then said, "These very 'heroes' turn to mediocrity when they are used by the king since he's superior to them. You cast aside your bow once all the birds are dead. You cook the hounds once all the rabbits are bagged. It may sound cruel at first, but it's the necessary evil for the greater

good... one’s acknowledgement of the inevitable!"

Tie Bu Tian was silent for a long time. Then, he finally heaved a long sigh and said, "Yes."

These words were clearly derogatory, but Tie Bu Tian and Chu Yang were aware that this was the way of governing a nation. What’s the use of a bow when all the birds are dead? What’s the use of hounds when all the rabbits are dead? This world is a cruel place; at least for ordinary people. And... it’s filled with uncertainties.

Everyone knows that wars are fought for the sake of peace. However, the generals and soldiers are left with no choice but to retire and go back to the farm once the true peace is obtained. A soldier’s greatest value can only manifest in the brutal war. That’s the cruel reality!

War incites the fighting spirit. However, peace works towards pacification and harmony! This is an irreconcilable contradiction.

Tie Bu Tian turned his head to look at Chu Yang. He then spoke in a profound manner, "Minister Chu, I never knew that you have such thorough knowledge on the methods to rule a nation! Those in power have always cast aside commoners once these people have outlived their purpose. This has been the norm since ancient times. It indeed sounded a bit harsh when you quoted the saying ‘you cast aside your bow once all the birds are dead’. However, I must say that this is true way to govern a nation!"

"Keep your bow safe and ready as long as the birds aren’t dead. But, once the birds are dead... you may destroy your bow if you want. This is the way of a magnificent Emperor. Don’t forget." Chu Yang calmly said.

Tie Bu Tian was deeply inspired. He took a deep breath as he replied, "Absolutely won’t!" This reply was similar to a vow!

The topic of discussion between these two had become somewhat

deep and heavy. So, they concluded their discussion, and didn’t speak further on the topic.

A long time passed before Chu Yang raised his eyebrows and said, "You can open the wall-gates and allow the surrendering soldiers in."

Tie Bu Tian exhaled a deep breath, and spoke with a smile, "The war has finally come to an end... here." There was a smile on his face, but was wonder in his heart, [we will go to the main battlefield soon. And, Wu Qian Qian will be present there. She doesn’t know... about all this...]

Chapter 414: Thank Heavens for He Came Back!

Minister Chu gave the order to the soldiers. He then crossed his hands behind his back, and watched as a total of 400,000 enemy soldiers surrendered.

It had been an effortless victory. The battle had ended with no blood on his men's swords.

The enemy had obviously arrived at the dead end, and Minister Chu had been rather opportunistic at the right time. However, one simply can't deny that there were no issues in Minister Chu's strategies...

He had undertaken a very vigorous and resolute stance the moment he gained the command of the army. He had decided to deal with the war's situation with authority, and so he had begun to send wave after wave of troops to harassment the enemy. This had pushed the enemy in a state of panic. It was similar to applying salt in their wounds.

Later, he had sent Wu Kuang Yun to persuade the enemy to surrender. This was an amazing move. Wu Kuang Yun had a special status in the army. And, he had personally come out to persuade Long Ao. So, Long Ao would've been despised had he not come out of his army formation as well. Moreover, Wu Kuang Yun's in-person arrival for the 'surrender' talks also gave Long Ao a hint that there may be a scope for negotiations!

...That was because these two men occupied high-enough positions.

Moreover, Long Ao had been at the end of the line. So, Wu Kuang Yun's arrival had given him a chance to save his face. He had no option but to get out of there. So, he had decided to try out his luck, and had come out to discuss his surrender.

However, Minister Chu had instructed Wu Kuang Yun that he was supposed to send Long Ao in wild rage... if not irritate him to death as long as he were to come out to talk! Wu Kuang Yun was obviously to ensure that Long Ao lost his prestige and honor in front of his entire army at the very least.

It was one thing to get agitated under usual circumstances. However, he had lost his prestige in such a life or death crisis... this was tantamount to being 'finished'!

Long Ao had been instigated to commit suicide in the end... Hence, the remaining army of 400,000 soldiers had become similar to a headless dragon. Moreover, Long Ao had lost the trust of his subordinates before he died. In fact, they had started to despise him. This was coupled with the impasse they were in... so, how could they not surrender?

There were many Iron Cloud Generals who were dissatisfied with King of Hell Chu's approach. They couldn't help but think — 'Even I could've achieved this victory!'

However, they took control of the enemy army, and found out that Long Ao had been building a large slope in secrecy. This meant that the enemy soldiers could've easily disappeared without a trace.

In fact, this slope would've been completed in half-a-days' time at the most...

These generals would've waited for the enemy to starve themselves to death if Chu Yang hadn't arrived in-time. And then, the 400,000 enemy soldiers would've escaped from right under their nose... this situation would've been similar to watching 'a thoroughly cooked duck fly away'... It could be said that these generals would've had heart-attacks if things had really evolved that way...

Everyone was covered in cold sweat when they found out how the prisoners would be dealt with. In fact, the younger generals

amongst the enemy's ranks were so frightened that they pissed their pants.

Because... Minister Chu said — "Kill them all!"

Minister Chu was clad in a black robe when he had spoken these words. His face was hidden behind a black mask, but his eyes appeared cold and ominous. So much so, that it seemed as if they were completely devoid of any emotions!

The crowd was overwhelmed with shock and horror!

Tie Bu Tian — as the Emperor of Iron Cloud — pled for leniency because he believed that this act might enrage the heavens.

However, King of Hell Chu replied, "What's wrong with this? Aren't these only 400,000 people? Didn't we crush those other 600,000 to death? So, why should these 400,000 get any preferential treatment?"

Everyone present there felt cramps throughout their body after they heard this sentence.

[So... those terrifying landslides that happened on that terrible day were caused by this King of Hell Chu? Holy crap... is he even human?]

The crowd was too scared to speak. And, Minister Chu was determined to kill them. He even said... "Let them dig a big pit on their own. Then, they can jump inside and bury themselves alive..."

Tie Bu Tian repeatedly pled for mercy. And, King of Hell Chu seemed rather helpless when he saw the Emperor of a nation beseech with such earnest. So, King of Hell Chu finally gave in. But, he still looked very unhappy, and spoke in a threatening manner — "I'm sparing you all today in order to give face of His Majesty. Otherwise, I would've killed you all! But...! If there's any person among these prisoners who turns out to be dishonest, and tries to pull-off something... then, he shall be killed along with his

entire team! And, all 400,000 prisoners shall be buried alive if even one team turns out to be dishonest!"

The surrendered enemy generals came out of the massive command-tent after this horrifying meeting was over. Their legs had turned limp. Their pale faces were covered in sweat. Many of them were so scared they had pissed their pants. They went back to their troops in such a miserable state, and issued the command — "No one is allowed to act rashly. Even one motherf*ker who tries something reckless will drag all of us down into the pits of hell along with himself!"

The generals then explained, "We must thank the benevolent Emperor of Iron Cloud. He strongly argued for what is right, and saved us from the King of Hell Chu's butcher knife..."

One could easily imagine the response.

Chu Yang and Tie Bu Tian were obviously playing the 'good cop, bad cop' game to pacify the prisoners. The prisoners were then handed over to Wu Yi. Afterwards, 150,000 soldiers were left behind to guard the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. Whereas, Chu Yang and Tie Bu Tian led the remaining 300,000 of their soldiers, and returned to the main battlefield in triumph!

Both — the guarding generals as well as the surrendered enemy generals — were greatly relieved when they found out that King of Hell Chu had left. They couldn't tell why... but they felt their psychological pressure lift all of a sudden. They had felt as if they were looking at a thick black cloud loom over the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass whenever they'd see King of Hell Chu's black robe. This had made them tremble with fear.

Tie Bu Tian was grinning from ear-to-ear while they were on the road. He said, "Minister Chu, your black face-mask is very effective! Even I was confused back then... I thought... why would you suddenly talk about 'massacre' when you were the one who had suggested that we must accept the enemy's surrender...?

Luckily my brain turned quickly."

Chu Yang tilted his head and looked at Tie Bu Tian with a strange look in his eyes, "Your Majesty thinks... I was kidding back then?"

Tie Bu Tian's complexion changed as he stammered, "You... weren't?"

Chu Yang smiled and replied in a cold and gloomy voice, "I think there's no harm... in killing 400,000 trivial people. These prisoners are likely to become the biggest variable if Diwu Qing Rou remains undefeated and the war enters a stalemate. After all, this is the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass! It would've been better to get rid of them once and for all since it would've avoided any future problems."

Tie Bu Tian was stunned. A long time passed before he came to himself, but only to realize that his entire body was covered in cold sweat.

[Four-hundred-thousand people...! Did he say 'kill'... kill them all at once?]

"However, you will become the Lord of the whole world one day, and this whole 'massacre thing' would've left a stain on your reputation. So, when you pled for mercy... I took advantage of the situation and gave you face." Chu Yang calmly explained.

Tie Bu Tian was speechless.

[It seems my face is really big ah...]

Chu Yang and Tie Bu Tian were on their way to the barracks on the main battlefield. Meanwhile, Tie Long Cheng hadn't slept in three days and three nights. He had obtained reports about the movements on the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass, and had been burning with impatience ever since.

Tie Long Cheng had flown into a rage when he heard that Wu Kuang Yun had left behind the Emperor, and had himself rushed back to the safety of the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. In fact,

he felt like heading out for the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. He was dying to personally behead that ‘mad-dog’... even if it meant that he’d have to face defeats on all fronts!

Tie Long Cheng was so angry that he ended-up vomiting blood. He hadn’t slept or eaten these past few days. He felt like each day was dragging past like a year. In fact, Tie Long Cheng almost fainted from overexcitement when he finally saw that Tie Bu Tian had come back.

He rushed out in big strides to welcome Tie Bu Tian. His old eyes were stained with tears.

Tie Bu Tian suddenly noticed that Chu Yang had already left her side, and had disappeared without a trace. He realized that Chu Yang must’ve gone to switch places with Wu Qian Qian since she had been playing his role all this while. However, Tie Bu Tian felt an inexplicable sense of loss in her heart for some reason...

Chu Yang rushed at a fast pace, and arrived at the place where the Bu Tian Pavilion’s tents were located. He was aware of Wu Qian Qian’s habits. So, it didn’t take him long to find her tent. He was incredibly fast... almost like a burst of breeze. In fact, he was so fast that he didn’t even cast a shadow...

He was about to open the door when he suddenly heard someone heave a sigh inside.

Chu Yang was startled by this. So, he stopped his footsteps.

"His Majesty came back, he came back?" Wu Qian Qian was startled. She was sitting in a chair. A contradictory pain arose in her heart. Her heart had basically turned to chaos with this news.

She had broken into a run when she heard that the army had returned. But, she had suddenly halted at the door, [what if... what if... ‘he’ hasn’t come back?]

[What if... His Majesty brought back a bad news...]

[What if it’s true...]

[What will I do?]

She had been swayed by her worries, and had almost lost control of her body. She couldn't dare to take one step to go out! However, the 'truth' was waiting right outside. She just needed to go out and see for herself, but she still couldn't dare to take that one step forward.

She had given-in to her fears. She was scared that she would burst out crying once she would see that he had come back safe and sound. She was also scared of the possibility that he hadn't come back... that he was dead...

These contradictory feelings of hope and fear were eating her heart. She was so perturbed emotionally... that she was unable to make up her mind. So, she went back to her chair. At this time, it suddenly turned black before her eyes, and she heard a voice, "Minister Chu, which national affairs are you thinking about?"

Wu Qian Qian's entire body trembled, yet she didn't dare to turn around. She tightly closed her eyes shut, and then opened them. But, it was still dark. Her slender hand went towards her other arm to pinch it in order to confirm; [is this a dream...? Or is this not a dream?]

Then, she pinched with all her strength...

[No pain?!]

Wu Qian Qian wasn't sure yet. So, she malicious twisted the skin, [still no pain?]

She felt disappointed. She opened her eyes, and was at a loss, "It's just a dream... sigh."

Suddenly, a voice filled with pain and agony resounded from behind her, "Older Sister... you pinched my arm. So, you obviously don't feel pain. But, my poor arm has already turned purple..."

Wu Qian Qian let out a loud cry and jumped up; the chair also flipped over with a 'bang'. She was pleasantly surprised to hear

this comment. So, she turned around, but only to see a face contorted in pain. Chu Yang inhaled and exhaled cold air as he said, "Older Sister... it hurts... please let go."

Wu Qian Qian looked down, and saw that her slender jade fingers were pinched into Chu Yang's arm. She had jumped and turned around, but she hadn't loosened her grip. Moreover, the sudden surprise had made her exert even more effort... to the extent that his flesh had already turned 360 degrees...

She quickly let go of his hand. She was embarrassed for a moment. She didn't know what to do. Should she throw herself into his arms? Or... should she behave calmly and pretend as if nothing had happened?

However, her eyes had turned red. And, tears had started to stream down her face. She felt her heart pound wildly. She was so moved emotionally that she even thought, [even if I were to die right now... it would still be worth it! Because... because he came back safe and sound!]

[He came back!]

"I came back." Chu Yang smiled and said, "Were you worried?"

Wu Qian Qian's face revealed a miserable smile. She quickly wiped her tears. She turned her back towards him and replied, "You... came back safe. Ha-ha, you've made people very worried over these past days."

Wu Qian Qian's voice was still filled with emotions; it had still trembled a bit in the beginning of the sentence. However, her voice had managed to regain its tranquility by the end of it. She turned around and looked at Chu Yang. She then smiled, "I can finally relax now that you're back. It's been very tiring to do your job for such a long time."

Wu Qian Qian had used-up all her strength to suppress her feeling from exploding before Chu Yang. Chu Yang suddenly felt

suffocated because he was overcome with a sense of guilt. He felt as if some kind of emotion was trapped in his heart, and was preventing him from breathing. He exercised a powerful self-control and spoke, "Yeah, it must've been very exhausting for you."

Wu Qian Qian faintly smiled and replied, "You take a seat. I'll bring you a glass of water." She turned around and walked away.

The two had met again after a long period of separation. However, they were still talking about random and irrelevant matters. They were trying their best to prevent themselves from talking about personal matters. They were exercising control over themselves, and were being very cautious... for they feared that they might take that one step out of line, and may overstep their bounds.

Wu Qian Qian turned around to walk out of the tent. Her small mouth suddenly flattened up, and she covered her mouth tightly as tears flooded out of her eyes. She firmly controlled herself to prevent even a tiny sound from escaping her mouth. And then, she hurriedly rushed out. She finally arrived at a corner, and crouched down to the ground. Then, her fragrant shoulder started to shake as she silently burst out crying.

[Thank heavens! He came back! He's safe and sound!]

Chapter 415: Isn't This What You Want?

Wu Qian Qian had gone back to normal by the time she returned. She seemed bright and beautiful; except for her reddened eyes. She was adorned with peerless grace and talent!

It seemed as if her long lost vitality had returned to her body.

She didn't say anything to Chu Yang; nor did she do anything to express herself. She had taken Chu Yang's role due his absence. And, she had been playing the role of Chu Yang ever since. In fact, she had become King of Hell Chu. She had continued to deter the entire Iron Cloud dressed in those black clothes. And, she had committed no mistakes in portraying the role!

She had decisively murdered for him. She had dominated the warlords for him. She had spread his dominance and tyranny for thousands of kilometers... again... just for him! For him... she had resorted to the use of all sorts of sinister and ruthless methods! And, she had withstood all this... just for him!

No one was aware that all of this had been done by a woman – who was disguised as a man. One could only imagine what sort of dedication and hard work it must've taken to achieve this. This must've etched a deep impression in her being... an unforgettable impression had been thoroughly carved in her bones, and had been engraved in her heart...

However, she had suddenly reverted into the Wu Qian Qian who used to quietly accompany him. She had once again become the same Wu Qian Qian who used to quietly watch him from the side, and provided assistance whenever he needed...

She had once again become the type of woman who was reluctant to ask for anything... who just dedicated herself to her beloved, and silently waited for him to reciprocate her love.

She was very smart. She used to observe Chu Yang's daily

behavior. Therefore, she understood that his heart was somewhere else. So, she had never force herself onto him. As a result, she had suffered in the solitude of her silence while she had continued to love him in the secrecy of her heart.

[I love you, and it is my problem. It shouldn't matter to you. I've never said that you must accept me because I love you. I don't even want to tell you about my feelings... because I don't want to make you feel awkward...]

[You can go if you want to... but, I'm going stay. And, you can come back whenever you want to... You will still find me here.]

[But, I won't take the initiative to tell you about my feelings as long as you don't urge me to declare them... I'll never tell you that — Chu Yang, I love you!]

[I just can't tell you!]

[I'm not afraid of rejection, but I'm afraid of waking up from my dream. Because... in my dreams... you are mine!]

She remained silent for a long time. Then, she began to speak in a dull voice, "Chu Yang, I have sorted out Second Elder Martial Uncle Li Jinsong."

"What?" Chu Yang was startled.

"Not just him... I have disposed-off several people of Beyond the Heavens Sect." Wu Qian Qian calmly said, "Keeping these people around would've been way too dangerous. They were bound to cause trouble in the future, and it would've caused an even bigger mess. So, I weeded them out."

Chu Yang opened his mouth like a fool.

"Why did you sort them out?" Chu Yang closed his mouth after a long time. He noticed that he had almost dislocated his jaw by keeping it lowered for so long. He smacked his lips again and again, [so, this girl is really capable of going so far as to deal with her own Second Elder Martial Uncle and his men... without the fear of

being punished by her father...]

"I initially waited for you to come back to sort them out. But then, I thought that you had been expelled from the sect, and that you might find this task somewhat inconvenient." Wu Qian Qian continued in an indifferent tone, "So, I decided to do it in your place."

"Oh..." Chu Yang showed her the ‘thumbs-up’, "You had thought it through."

"Li Jinsong’s wife was poisoned. It was a strange poison called ‘Spring to Autumn Broken Heart Powder’. Only the administration of a wonderful medicine can suppress the poison. Otherwise, a year will pass before the poison takes its real effect. Then, the victim will suffer for three days and three nights... during which their internal organs will rot and fall apart."

"The Second Elder Martial Uncle was very dissatisfied when father became the leader of Beyond the Heavens Sect. Then, the Golden Horse Riders Department had approached him at that time. And, they had said that they can provide him the required medicine. They had also offered to help him become the leader of Beyond the Heavens Sect... That’s how they managed to manipulate him so easily." Wu Qian Qian continued, "He loved his wife very much. This is also a vital reason."

"But, the Golden Horse Riders Department only gave him the medicine to suppress the poison on a temporary basis. They hadn’t given him the medicine named ‘Crystal Mushroom’... that medicine would’ve eliminated this poison. And, they just kept him hanging until his task was over."

"So, that’s what happened." Chu Yang nodded. He recalled that time when he had been eavesdropping, and had seen Li Jinsong approach those other people to get a Crystal Mushroom... but to no avail.

Then, he further recalled the time he had sneaked into the

treasure house of the Golden Horse Rider Department. He couldn’t help but smile, [the Golden Horse Riders Department never intended to give him the Crystal Mushroom. That’s because... they never had one!]

"How did you deal with him?" Chu Yang asked.

"Killed." Wu Qian Qian replied with a somewhat sad look on her face, "I don’t know how... but, he had a premonition that I was planning to cope with him. So, he went as far as to sneak in the night like a thief in order to assassinate Tie Long Cheng. He was later besieged by the people of Bu Tian Pavilion, and was killed on the spot. He asked father to let off his wife and child when he was on the verge of death."

"I see."

"But... his wife committed suicide when she heard of this." Wu Qian Qian sighed and said, "Before her death, she said — it doesn’t matter whether he was loyal or deceitful. I accompanied him when he was alive. He’s dead now... but I will look for him. He had to suffer for many years because of me. But, he’s in the netherworld now. He no longer needs to suffer because of me. Now, I can finally repay him in death..."

This might have seemed like the romantic confession of a faithful wife if someone else had said it. However, Wu Qian Qian had spoken it in a dull and unexciting manner.

However, it still had a serious hinted appeal to it.

Chu Yang heard this, and heaved a sigh.

"Li Jian Yin’s legs were cut off. Then, he was banished. I’m afraid..." Wu Qian Qian continued further, "...the other people were either killed or crippled. In fact, the entire clean-up process has been completed."

Chu Yang was silent.

[Wu Qian Qian spoke this in such a casual manner, but this must

have put a serious mental pressure on her.] Chu Yang had merely thought about it, and still couldn't remain unaffected.

"I have an idea." Wu Qian Qian looked at him and spoke in a soft voice, "When the war ends – and it won't work if Iron Cloud gets defeated... But, if Iron Cloud wins the war... I'd like Father and the others go back to the Beyond the Heavens Sect in order to re-establish it. I don't want us to accept a title and recognition in reward from Iron Cloud. I don't want us to create a faction and serve the imperial court..."

"Great!" Chu Yang found it quite pleasant to hear. He suddenly had a strong feeling of admiration in his heart. [This move is equivalent to making a brave retreat without taking any rewards. In fact, it's the most brilliant move!]

[We have done a lot of things for you, but we don't want anything in return. But, you are the Emperor of Iron Cloud, and the future Lord of the world. And now... you owe us one.]

"Moreover, I'm now the same as you. I'm no longer a disciple of Beyond the Heavens Sect!" Wu Qian Qian's eyes gently hung down. One could no longer see the look in her eyes.

"Why?" Chu Yang was startled.

"Because... you will leave sooner or later... So, I can be... King of Hell Chu for a long time." Wu Qian Qian seemed to smile gently. She then added, "King of Hell Chu for a lifetime."

Her smile gave off a cold and aloof feel. It was as tranquil as stagnant water. She said, "Chu Yang, you are only a passing traveler! So, you can't be King of Hell Chu. But, I can be King of Hell Chu for a lifetime!"

[King of Hell Chu for a lifetime? For a lifetime? For a lifetime? Such an outstanding beauty and peerless talent is going to spend her entire life hiding herself in this black robe...?]

[Her youthful elegance – that can cause the downfall of a nation –

will stay covered-up her entire life!]

Chu Yang's heart was suddenly in a complete mess. He felt very uncomfortable. He stared at her in a daze. And, he just felt a chaos building up in his heart...

Wu Qian Qian gently turned her head. Her fluidity of her glance swept Chu Yang’s face. Chu Yang was experiencing a deeply-ingrained pain when he heard her say, "To use King of Hell Chu’s identity to ensure that Beyond the Heavens Sect stays immortal...! This... wasn’t it your final plan from the very beginning when you had supported me?"

Chu Yang felt a sharp pain in his heart. And, an immense pain engulfed him entirely the very next instant... and... his mind instantly went completely blank...

Iron Cloud was preparing the warhorses for war! Tie Bu Tian had brought back a total of 300,000 soldiers. Moreover, the troops had continued to arrive from various parts of the nation. So, the total strength of Iron Cloud Army was now over 3 million.

Great Zhao Army had close to 6 million soldiers in the beginning. However, they had lost more than a million in the Heaven Splitting Mountain Pass. Therefore, they were close to 4 million in strength at the moment. In fact, it could be said that the two sides were almost evenly matched as of now. Tie Long Cheng had been worried all this while, but he could finally relax...

The Great Zhao’s side was suddenly drowned in loud cheers the very same night Tie Bu Tian and Chu Yang arrived at the Iron Cloud’s barracks. In fact, the intensity of these shouts was similar to ones people issue when a tsunami comes. The cheers had continued to linger around for a long time. The atmosphere was as lively as it usually is during the New Year’s celebration...

A banner was raised from inside the Great Zhao's military camp soon-after. The flag had a golden dragon on it, and this dragon seemed to be standing on white clouds. The word ‘Diwu’ was

printed at the top. The flag swayed in the wind. The strong summer winds howled and made a soughing noise. The flag give off a vigorous aura... it seemed as if it was prepared to proclaim its desire to rule over the entire world!

Diwu Qing Rou had finally arrived!

It didn't matter whether it was a coincidence... or it had happened deliberately. This was the first time there was going to be an official confrontation between Diwu Qing Rou and the team of Tie Bu Tian and Tie Long Cheng after having fought against each other for several years!

Moreover, King of Hell Chu and Diwu Qing Rou would also get to confront each other. Their clash would be even more magnificent!

This war would decide the ruler of the world!

Diwu Qing Rou had worn a smug look on his face when he had appeared before his army. However, his complexion sank as soon as he walked into the commander's tent. Then, a fire of rage erupted in his heart.

He had received news about Jin Nankai's and the others' annihilation only yesterday.

This news had struck him like a thunderbolt. It had nearly thrown him into confusion even though he was usually very calm and composed. He had expected the destruction of those three army units to be a 'next to impossible' scenario!

However, he couldn't help but sigh after he heard the full report. Then, he went silent and pondered, [landslides and fissures ravaged the slanting valley, and buried hundreds-of-thousands of people alive. Over one million troops were split into two sections... head and tail. The one on the outside couldn't go inside, and the one of the inside couldn't come outside. The battle ended instantly.]

[This was divine intervention!]

Diwu Qing Rou felt somewhat heavy in his heart. It might seem like the Great Zhao's army had more soldiers than the Iron Cloud's. However, he was aware that there was a significant difference between the combat efficiency of the two sides.

Iron Cloud was located in the north. Their people were usually valiant and sturdy! Almost everyone could ride a horse into a fight. Therefore, they could engage in cavalry battles.

As long as there were enough warhorses — there could be as many cavalry soldiers! Such advantages weren't present on the Great Zhao's side. People of the south lived in temperate climate. So, they possessed softer skin, and tender bodies. They weren't on the same level as the sturdy soldiers of Iron Cloud.

Therefore, Diwu Qing Rou had no choice but to use his own wisdom to make up for these disadvantages!

However, there was another matter that gave Diwu Qing Rou great comfort, [anyway, King of Hell Chu is finally dead! Otherwise, using just my own power to acquire Iron Cloud would've become a very difficult task.]

Jing Meng Hun had rushed to Diwu Qing Rou's side covered in bruises. Diwu Qing Rou hadn't believed his eyes. An expert at the pinnacle of the Ninth Grade King Level had been dispatched along with tens-of-thousands of people to chase down King of Hell Chu. Yet, Jing Meng Hun had returned with a disability, and was also covered in cuts and bruises. In fact, it seemed like he had barely managed to protect his life!

This was too unexpected.

However, he then heard about the last attack when hundreds of people had attacked King of Hell Chu at once... and Jing Meng Hun had even managed to land a kick on him. So, Diwu Qing Rou thought, [King of Hell Chu is definitely dead!]

Moreover, Jing Meng Hun was also quite sure about it! Even an

Emperor Level Expert wouldn’t be able to withstand that kind of an attack!

Diwu Qing Rou sighed the next day, "It’s a pity that I won’t get a chance to have a show-down with a hero like King of Hell Chu on the battlefield. I’ll regret this all my life!"

At this time, his personal soldier came to report, "Prime Minister, a black-robed man in black mask has come out from the Iron Cloud’s side. He’s claiming to be the dead guy. He said that he’s grateful to you for gifting him such a fragrant orchid. He has specially requested to have a face-to-face chat with you."

Diwu Qing Rou was startled... and suddenly raised his head...

Chapter 416: I'm Already a Legend!

Diwu Qing Rou's eyes turned towards Jing Meng Hun!

Jing Meng Hun's face suddenly turned pale as he called out, "This is impossible!"

Diwu Qing Rou insipidly said, "It can't be impossible if he has showed-up in person." Jing Meng Hun just stood in a daze with his eyes opened wide in a stare. Diwu Qing Rou stood up.

A team of Iron Cloud's soldiers – seated on their horses – were neatly arranged in a formation on the battlefield. Their backs stood erect as they waited in silence.

The strong east wind was blowing the Iron Cloud's army flag up towards the sky. The flag was fluttering magnificently in the wind, and was producing a fluttering sound. This peculiar sound was capable of inciting passion for war in the hearts of those who heard it. The ones who heard this sound felt a murderous desire rise from the depths of their hearts.

Two fast horses stood motionless before the team. Two people were seated on the back of one horse. It was hard to tell their age. They were just sitting upright on the horseback, and seemed indifferent. They were standing before a mighty force, and the sun was shining at its best in the sky. However, the figures of these two individuals appeared somewhat fuzzy.

There was lone dark horse more than a hundred feet ahead of them. A person in black robe sat on it back. This person had put on a golden mask. His large black robe was fluttering magnificently in the east wind. And, his sleeves were issuing a creepy sound in the wind.

A bone-chilling cold energy was surging around this black-robed man. This cold energy was constantly rolling over-and-over in a turbulent manner!

Only a single rider was present before the Great Zhao Army, but the soldiers still had a strong feeling in their heart, [it looks like an ancient devil has come out in this broad daylight from the depths of hell!]

Wherever his sharp vision fell... everyone felt a burst of bone-chilling cold!

[King of Hell Chu!]

It wasn't like he had introduced himself or anything. However, this name had cropped-up in the minds of the Great Zhao's soldiers immediately after they had seen him!

[Such an imposing presence and such a tyrannical aura can easily rival those of Prime Minister Diwu! And, only a character of such caliber can storm across a distance of 6500Km, and still come out alive in spite of being chased by the Golden Horse Riders Department!]

[And, he has finally appeared here!]

A bugle sounded on the side of the Great Zhao's army. The entire army formation suddenly separated to the sides to make way in the middle.

The look in everyone's eyes changed; it suddenly became respect and full of reverence.

The slow hoof beats sounded, and Diwu Qing Rou's guards appeared. There was a leisure-chair in the middle of the guards. Diwu Qing Rou was seated in it. He appeared before King of Hell Chu with the hint of a smile on his face.

The guards hesitated a little, but Diwu Qing Rou used the folding fan in his hand to signal them to move forward. He had done so in a very strict manner. The escorting guards were helpless, and had to continue to carry him forward. They stopped only after they had crossed the half-way line.

After that, Diwu Qing Rou waved his hand, and the guards

retreated. Only the leisure chair remained in the field along with a solitary group of a thousand soldiers of Diwu Qing Rou's.

Then, Diwu Qing Rou raised his head, and smiled as he looked at Chu Yang... who was directly across him. His smile was light like the clouds, but various meanings were hidden in it.

The two shadows were almost ready to cause trouble any moment now, [don't know why this Diwu Qing Rou is considered a legend. He doesn't even know martial arts. Isn't this a heavensent opportunity to capture him or kill him?]

The shadows moved slightly, but were interrupted by Chu Yang's whisper, "Do you want to die?"

The shadows were stunned.

"Diwu Qing Rou is an Emperor Level Expert!" Chu Yang spoke in a low voice.

The two shadows were suddenly drenched in cold sweat from head to toe, and their eyes turned somewhat lifeless. [Emperor Level Expert? So, Diwu Qing Rou has been deceiving the world?]

Then, Chu Yang urged his warhorse, and resolutely advanced towards Diwu Qing Rou; step by step.

The distance between the two was getting shorter and shorter.

Center line!

The two men only had a distance of 30 feet between them at the moment! This was a very risky distance. It was especially more dangerous for Chu Yang.

Chu Yang stopped his warhorse. Then, he raised his eyes, and looked straight ahead. Diwu Qing Rou had also raised his head, and his warm eyes were gazing at Chu Yang.

The four eyes met each other.

For some reason, the people present behind these two individuals felt a strange feeling rise within their hearts when the gazes of

these two men clashed.

It seemed as if the whole world had suddenly trembled, and then gone completely dark.

Then, Diwu Qing Rou laughed gently. He was seated in his leisure-chair, and seemed to be at complete ease as he spoke, "Seeing your whole face really isn't easy."

Chu Yang gave a tit-for-tat reply, "Maybe because Prime Minster Diwu lives a sheltered life... and has little contact with the outside world."

Diwu Qing Rou laughed merrily. He then said, "Internal affairs need qualifications... but like external ones."

Chu Yang also laughed.

This meet with Diwu Qing Rou was just a flash in the pan.

He had initially thought to stay hidden in the shadows, and use his skills to engage in sabotage. He would then look for an opportunity to strike like the thunder. However, he had considered for a long time, and had finally given up on his initial plan. He planned to meet Diwu Qing Rou directly thereafter.

The news of King of Hell Chu being alive would've reached Diwu Qing Rou's ears sooner or later. However, it wouldn't have left such a psychological impact if he had come to know about it from the mouth of someone else. That was because Diwu Qing Rou would've obtained enough time to be mentally prepared, and would've adjusted himself for their meeting. In fact, he would've formulated countermeasures too. And then, he would've had a feeling of satisfaction while facing Chu Yang... as if everything was in his grasp.

However, as it stood... Diwu Qing Rou was sure that King of Hell Chu was already dead. However, he had suddenly appeared, and had asked to have an audience with Diwu Qing Rou. This had landed a heavy blow on Diwu Qing Rou... that too at a time when

he was enormously proud of his success.

This way, he had managed to make Diwu Qing Rou feel a sense of defeat, [so, he didn't die! So... that means the big price I paid was for... nothing!]

Chu Yang needed for Diwu Qing Rou to perceive such a sense of defeat since even a trace of it would make him feel as if everything had deviated from his master-plan.

This was necessary because the outcome of this war wasn't dependent on the number of troops on either side... but on Diwu Qing Rou! The entirety of Iron Cloud's efforts would eventually go in vain if Diwu Qing Rou's master-plan would stay unhindered. It would be an arduous and long war, but Iron Cloud would most likely lose in the end!

So, Chu Yang wanted to do everything he could to break Diwu Qing Rou's state of mind, and create a hole in his confidence. And, this sudden meeting was his first move to do just that...

Diwu Qing Rou looked at his grim mask with interest, and spoke with a chuckle, "You should let those two come forward."

Chu Yang also chucked and replied, "I should let them come... and give you enough reason to kill all three of us before everyone?"

"No!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled, "They will surely die if they come forward! But about you... I'm not so sure." He gently exhaled and insipidly said, "Mysterious King of Hell Chu. The King of Hell Chu who bravely rushed 6500km from the Great Zhao, haha..."

Chu Yang laughed, "This Chu is honored to be called 'mysterious' by the Prime Minister."

Diwu Qing Rou was silent for a while. Then, he asked, "In the Great Zhao... you were the younger one out of the two Young Masters of the Chu Clan, right?"

"Yes." Chu Yang didn't deny; denying would be pointless at this moment anyway.

"And, the one who got injured by my palm attack was also you?" Diwu Qing Rou asked this question, but in a rather affirmative tone.

"Yes."

"I see..." Diwu Qing Rou's tone was getting more and more tranquil. He asked, "The one who sneaked into my hidden treasure house, was you?"

"Hidden treasure house?" Chu Yang knitted his brows.

"It wasn't you?" Diwu Qing Rou asked in a soft voice.

"No," Chu Yang answered. This matter involved the secret abilities of the Nine Tribulations Sword; Chu Yang couldn't possibly admit it.

"I see... so it wasn't you," Diwu Qing Rou quietly said. His prying gaze fell upon Chu Yang... as if to observe him carefully. It seemed as if his sharp glance had penetrated through Chu Yang's mask to see every inch of his face.

Diwu Qing Rou slowly said after a long time, "It seems like that was someone else." He unconsciously stopped paying attention to this matter, and was secretly relieved in his heart.

[King of Hell Chu isn't the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master!]

"Prime Minister should guard his Hidden Treasure House properly." Chu Yang reminded him, "It would be a huge loss if someone stole stuff from such an important place."

"Are you taking pleasure in others' misfortune?" Diwu Qing Rou couldn't help but laugh out loud. But then, his eyes turned sharp as he spoke, "You wanted to meet me today; I doubt if it was for some idle chatter, correct?"

Chu Yang nodded earnestly, "I wanted to take a good look at the man who rules the entire Great Zhao, and plans to take the whole world in his hands. Prime Minister Diwu, I wanted to see what you

look like."

Diwu Qing Rou gently smiled, "And, also to give declaration of war... I presume."

He looked calmly at Chu Yang, "The moment you appeared here and asked to see me — I knew that the war between the two nations has started."

"Prime Minister Diwu, this war will decide who shall control the world. You may probably have to go all out." Chu Yang's eyes gradually sharpened as he spoke in a soft voice, "An illustrious man like yourself mustn't lose or allow his reputation to fall."

"I will go all out." Diwu Qing Rou nodded slowly. However, he didn't respond to Chu Yang's aggressiveness in a similar fashion. He just calmly made a point, "Look at this war-torn battlefield... it is covered in the flames of war that reach the sky. Who can decide the final outcome of the war...? Who can dictate the ups and downs..."

"King of Hell Chu... Ha ha ha..." Diwu Qing Rou gently said, "Don't disappoint me."

"I'm afraid that Prime Minister will be struck by the unexpected," Chu Yang replied indifferently. His eyes suddenly sharpened like a sword as he stared intently at Diwu Qing Rou. It seemed as if two divine swords had broken through the blue dome of the heavens, and had been directed at Diwu Qing Rou's heart!

Diwu Qing Rou remained unaffected. His pupils contracted slightly as he replied, "Even if something unexpected comes at me — I shall face it, and I shall win!"

They no longer talked...

The sun was burning strong above, and there were no clouds to be seen for thousands of kilometers in the sky. However, the armies behind these two felt as if it was about to rain. It seemed as if the blue sky would fall down any moment now.

A long time passed... Chu Yang raised his head up to look towards the sky, and spoke in a deep tone, "Prime Minister, your name ‘Diwu Qing Rou’ will become immortal on this continent if you lose this war. The world will always remember your name! You will become a legend."

Diwu Qing Rou calmly replied, "I also guarantee that I’ll have your biography written after the Iron Cloud Nation is destroyed. Then, the name of ‘King of Hell Chu’ will become a legend of the continent!"

The two men laughed heartily.

Chu Yang suddenly turned his horse around, and urged it to gallop towards the Iron Cloud’s formation. He faced upward towards the sky, and let out a long laugh. Even the wind and clouds trembled in his wake. His laughter never stopped, but the trembling sky proclaimed along with him, "Ha ha ha, that’s not needed! I – King of Hell Chu – have already become an immortal legend in the Lower Three Heavens!"

Chapter 417: Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin

Chu Yang's laughter surged forth as if to shock the wind and thunder. And, it reverberated endlessly between the heaven and earth. King of Hell Chu's haughty stance had left a deep impression in the hearts of the soldiers of the two armies.

The sky trembled. The mountains shook and moved! Every soldier held his breath! It seemed as if this figure – who had his face upwards as he shouted towards the sky – was similar to a scary and divine sword that could cut the sky or earth into two halves!

[So crazy! So wild! This King of Hell Chu is amazing!]

Diwu Qing Rou chuckled as he shook his head.

[This guy made a fool of me before everyone.]

[He so proudly declared to the whole world that he can be domineering to the utmost! But, I could not. And this way, he has managed to create an illusion in front of the two armies — that I am the one who fell into a disadvantageous situation in this argument.]

[This guy…! He doesn't miss any chance to get one up on me.]

Diwu Qing Rou slowly returned to the formation as he thought of this.

He was thinking about Chu Yang's words on the way. He couldn't help but force a smile as he shook his head, [this King of Hell Chu… His words seem meaningless on the surface…]

[But, each one of his words was directed at my mind's guard! Perhaps, this would've affected me if I didn't have such a firm mind.]

[But… did it really not affect me?]

Diwu Qing Rou's complexion sank.

Millions of troops stood motionless. They silently watched as those two split up, and went their own ways. King of Hell Chu appeared insufferably arrogant as he rode back to the barracks. Diwu Qing Rou also went back.

The day passed in this way.

The night fell, and darkness spread over the world.

In the Iron Cloud military camp... the stars twinkled in the sky as the patrol teams were patrolled here and there. The army was in a state of high alert, and ready for battle.

Tie Long Cheng and Tie Bu Tian were sitting across each other in the commander's tent.

"King of Hell Chu was far more overbearing today than he was in the past." Tie Long Cheng sipped tea and spoke in a praising manner, "He even intimidated Diwu Qing Rou. And, that too before thousands of gawking eyes. He made a fool out of Diwu Qing Rou, and even rendered him speechless! This has thoroughly boosted the morale of our troops!"

Tie Bu Tian smiled and responded in agreement, "Yes ah." He thought that this was to be expected because the current King of Hell Chu was the real King of Hell Chu.

"However, Diwu Qing Rou suffered a verbal loss, and didn't even have a comeback... This must've affected the morale of Great Zhao. Diwu Qing Rou must redeem his reputation with victory. So tonight, Great Zhao might make a surprise attack on our barracks." Tie Long Cheng had spent almost half his life fighting against Diwu Qing Rou. So, it could be said that they understood each other very well.

"But... it is difficult to guess what kind of steps he will take and what sort of strategy he will employ if he launches a surprise attack on our barracks..." Tie Bu Tian frowned and said.

"We can only stick to an unchanging strategy at present in order to deal with the changing events." Tie Long Cheng took a long breath and said.

Inside Bu Tian Pavilion's big camp... King of Hell Chu looked like the real King of Hell in his black robe and sinister mask. He was seated in the uppermost and largest round-backed wooden armchair. His sharps eyes were glaring at the subordinates seated below.

A bone-chilling 'yin' cold mist was lingering in abundance inside the tent.

Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong were sitting upright with expressionless faces. Though, they were nervous and perturbed in their hearts, [what's all this about? Why call us for a meeting so suddenly? The Minister seemed to be in a gentle mood only a while ago. So, how come his aura has turned so oppressive? This oppressive atmosphere is very uncomfortable. It's getting difficult to sit still...]

They stole a glance, and saw Wu Qian Qian. She was seated next to Chu Yang, and had an ice-cold expression on her face. They couldn't help but curse in their hearts, [when did this witch arrive? How come we didn't discover her earlier?]

Some people had recently joined the Bu Tian Pavilion. So, they were seeing the real King of hell Chu for the first time. They were so frightened after facing his dark and sinister aura that they almost sh*t their pants.

"The two chiefs shall now report about all the things that have recently happened." Chu Yang was gently tapping the tabletop with his fingers. The sound generated from that was similar to the sound of King of Hell's drums used to manipulate souls.

The two men cursed in the secrecy of their hearts, [don't you already know?]

However, who could dare to speak even half-a-word of criticism under these circumstances? They had no other choice but to report those matters to Chu Yang.

Chu Yang listened to their reports in silence. He indifferently said once they were done, "In other words, everybody has been very busy these days, right? So, their strengths didn't increase... but not because they didn't work hard... but because they were too busy, correct? Isn't this what the report says?"

Cheng Zi Ang's and Chen Yu Tong's complexions collapsed at the same time.

Minister Chu hadn't urged them to deal with any matter. So, they had thought that they could slack off, and wouldn't get punished for it later on. However, they hadn't expected to be confronted like this today.

"This place has tens of millions of ghosts. And, these ghosts howl day and night." Chu Yang indifferently said, "I believe that many of you will join the ranks of those howling ghosts as soon as the war starts. Know that this will be the consequence of only relying on your strength — and not your hard work."

Minister Chu heavily snorted. Everyone remained quiet out of fear.

"Go and make preparations to deal with the Golden Horse Riders Department," Chu Yang solemnly commanded as he waved his hand.

Cheng Zi Ang and the others hastily rushed out; they were drenched in sweat. They felt that the power and influence of Minister Chu was getting more and more heavy.

Now, Chu Yang and Wu Qian Qian were the only ones left in the tent.

"The strength of these people must be pushed forward every day." Chu Yang whispered, "People are inherently lazy. They rely

on conscious indulgence of practice to enhance their strength. But, that's not feasible for these people. So, it is necessary to tailor a goal for them from time to time. And then, we must make them treat it as a mission that must be completely. This will help in enhancing the overall strength of the Bu Tian Pavilion."

"Yes," Wu Qian Qian replied.

"What's your current level..." Chu Yang looked at Wu Qian Qian and asked.

"Martial Master... Third Grade," Wu Qian Qian replied. She seemed somewhat ashamed. Little did she know that her progress speed was enough to leave several people stupefied...

"Pretty good," Chu Yang complemented. It was indeed pretty good. Beyond the Heavens Sect's martial art was good at providing sure and steady growth, but it was impossible to expect a rapid growth from it. Wu Qian Qian's current speed had already gone far beyond Chu Yang's expectation.

Wu Qian Qian bit her lips and spoke, "Chu Yang, I want strength... I want to enhance my level quickly... can you help me?" She somewhat hesitated, but continued anyway, "I know that you have several martial practice methods..."

[I want to promote myself quickly; the sooner the better. I don't wish to overtake you, but... I wish to live long-enough to bear witness to your legends... when you rush into the Middle Three Heavens or Upper Three Heavens... that's enough for me.]

Chu Yang pondered for a moment, "Alright. I will find one for you." Chu Yang wasn't surprised by the fact that Wu Qian Qian wanted to enhance her strength. In fact, it would give her the means to defend herself at the very least.

Then, Chu Yang knitted his brows, and started to ponder. In the end, he asked the Sword Spirit in his consciousness, "Is there any suitable practice method for a woman? Its might should be higher,

and the practice should be quicker..."

The Sword Spirit was sitting cross-legged between Mysterious Yang Jade and Mysterious Jade Crystal. He had already restored the entirety of his spiritual vitality with the power of these two materials. Moreover, his spiritual power had also forged ahead vigorously. He puckered his eyebrow after he heard Chu Yang's question, and spoke, "Practice method for a woman?"

"Yes, and it shouldn't be an ordinary or slow one either..." Chu Yang categorically placed the requirements.

"There's only one." Sword Spirit said, "Fortunately, my strength has increased a lot, and I'm able to remember a lot of thing; else, I wouldn't have been able to answer to your sudden question."

"What is it?"

"How about 'Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin'?" Sword Spirit replied with a complacent expression on his face... as if he had offered a valuable piece of advice.

"Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin?" Chu Yang was clearly shocked, "Isn't that a devil technique?"

"Nonsense!" Sword Spirit replied angrily, "This is the most orthodox martial art. But, some people had tampered with it. They had gone against the flow of meridians, and had turned it into a devilish martial art. They then used it to absorb the mysterious yin power of young girls. But, I have the complete and intact mnemonic chants of the secret Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin practice method!"

"I see." Chu Yang touched his nose. [I'm obviously an ignorant and inexperienced fellow in front of this several-thousand-years-old monster.]

The Sword Spirit closed his eyes. Three old books appeared out of nowhere soon after, and fell down with a 'thud'.

"Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin Divine Art"

"Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin Step"

"Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin Sword"

Chu Yang looked at those three secret books in his consciousness, and couldn't help but be speechless. He suddenly had a feeling, [this Sword Spirit is a martial art treasure-house...!]

"I'll remind you that Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin Divine Art can be practiced faster if used in coordination with the Seven Yin Cold Energy or Mysterious Jade Crystal!" Sword Spirit mentioned the Mysterious Jade Crystal with strong sense of reluctance on his tone.

"Understood." Chu Yang smiled mischievously.

"If that's the case... then you don't need to practice the martial arts of Beyond the Heavens Sect. I will teach you another one," Chu Yang spoke as he thought in his heart, [the Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin had once caused a huge bloodshed on the Nine Heavens Continent thousands of years ago. The common people have come to regard it as one of the most evil martial arts ever since. I shouldn't tell Wu Qian Qian its real name. It would avoid causing a lot of trouble for her.]

"What?" Wu Qian Qian was excited.

"It's called 'Ice Jade Divine Art'." Chu Yang rolled his eyes and continued, "Now, I will teach you the mnemonics. You must remember them firmly. But, you must ensure that you don't make any notes... This is the continent's top martial art. You would be in big trouble if someone were to find out about it."

"Ok." Wu Qian Qian nodded diligently. Her eyes lit up. [It's the top martial arts of the continent? That's great! That way I will be able to shorten the distance between us, and then get closer to you.]

One person taught, while the other one learnt. Wu Qian Qian was extremely smart. So, it didn't take her long to learn the entire set

of mnemonics by heart.

Chu Yang was thinking of giving her some Mysterious Jade Crystal, "Sword Spirit, how many mysterious jade crystals will be sufficient?"

"How many, you ask?" Sword Spirit rolled his eyes, "You just need a small piece to be carried on one's body or to wear as an accessory. Why would you need many?"

"Ok. Then, I'm taking a small piece." Chu Yang looked at the gigantic array formation. The Sword Spirit was sitting cross-legged inside it. It was made up of Mysterious Yang Jade and Mysterious Jade Crystal. He asked, "I wonder if this array formation will also work on me?"

"Of course, it will be useful for you!" Sword Spirit snorted, "This is the Yin and Yang array formation. It can gather the purest spirit energy."

"Why didn't you tell me earlier?" Chu Yang asked angrily.

"I haven't yet recovered..." Sword Spirit felt to be in the wrong. So, he replied, "Besides, you would've already taken out many of these rare items if I hadn't setup this array formation. I wouldn't allow that to happen even if you wanted to die..."

"Just a small one?" Chu Yang asked.

"A small one... well, that may be possible." Sword Spirit felt helpless. He had no choice but to grab a finger-sized Mysterious Yang Jade as well as a Mysterious Jade Crystal. He kneaded the two pieces, and turned them into a strange-looking ornament. He had actually made a tiny array diagram with these materials. He rolled his eyes and said, "I know that you want to give this as a parting gift to your close female friend. Here, take it."

Chu Yang was overjoyed.

Chapter 418: Unusual Transformation in the Sky's Appearance!

"This is for you." Chu Yang pretended to fish out something from his bosom, and gave it to Wu Qian Qian.

"This is..." Wu Qian Qian was somewhat surprised.

"You can wear this as an accessory. This can boost your practice speed." Chu Yang vaguely explained.

"It's really beautiful." Wu Qian Qian didn't know what this was, but she her body felt very comfortable when she held it in her hand. It was slightly cold, yet slightly warm. Its temperate was interchangeably fluctuating between cold and warm. It was translucent and sparkling. She liked it too much to part with it. She just continued to look at it, and felt as if she had received a priceless treasure.

"Practice well," Chu Yang said in an encouraging manner.

Wu Qian Qian revealed a sweet smile. She didn't care much about the rare technique that she had received from Chu Yang, but she very much adored the fact that Chu Yang had finally given her a treasure; and too with his own hands. This had made her extremely happy.

However, Chu Yang was unaware that this Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin along with this 'Yin and Yang Jade Pendant' would give birth to a very terrifying persona in the future!

That was because neither Chu Yang, nor the Sword Spirit knew that Wu Qian Qian had grown-up in a place that was very rich in the Seven Yin Cold Energy. She wasn't just exceptionally brilliant, but she also had an inborn 'Mysterious Yin Female Body'!

Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin – as the name suggests – requires nine revolutions for an ordinary woman's body to transform into 'Mysterious Yin Female Body'. And then, it can

display frightening power!

However, Wu Qian Qian didn't need these nine revolutions for the transformation. She could directly enter the Mysterious Yin Realm!

This is similar to martial arts practice or cultivation to become an immortal. An ordinary person starts from the body; one step at a time. They temper their bones... then the internal organs... and that's how they manage to jump from being an acquired martial artist to an innate one. And then, they build the base to become an immortal... Yes, this is the road that must be followed.

However, the base had already been built in Wu Qian Qian's case. And, she was merely waiting to receive for the initiation to set out on the journey. Moreover, her starting point was the highest point for the vast majority of people!

Everybody started from the ground, but she would start from the skies. This was simply incredible. Her ultimate achievement wouldn't be as extravagant as those of the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword. However, one could say that she could be compared with Chu Yang!

Chu Yang naturally didn't know any of this.

However, things were doomed to not remain calm for long...

The lights suddenly extinguished on the side of Diwu Qing Rou's army! This incited a state of tension and unrest on the Iron Cloud's side.

Then, a roaring squad of Great Zhao's soldiers rushed towards Iron Cloud's side. They appeared like an angry black dragon in the darkness. Iron Cloud immediately took emergency action, and mobilized the archers. The archers prepared their bows at an incredible speed, and unleashed a rain of arrows.

However... that squad of Great Zhao's soldiers arrived about a few hundred feet away from the Iron Cloud barracks. And then,

they suddenly changed directions... just like the wind. Then, the squad took a roundabout way, and went back to the main army's formation.

This was just a harassment tactic to raise a false alarm.

And, the Great Zhao army squads began to attack from all sides immediately afterwards; first from east, and then suddenly from the west. And, they attacked from every possible angle. Such a continuous harassment tactic had been turned into reality. And, its unpredictability was working greatly towards confusing people.

The battlefront was stretched over a long distance. So, the effect of Diwu Qing Rou's harassment tactic was also greater.

Curses started to rise from the Iron Cloud Army's side after dozens of consecutive harassment attacks! Some of the short-tempered generals had even begun to shout 'mother*kers'. [You mother*kers don't even allow the others to sleep? You just had to rush over to fight in the middle of the night, ah!]

Tie Long Cheng appeared calm in the commander's tent. He continued to issue commands with ease.

This wasn't a decisive attack; just a harassment tactic. It would be very bad if something like this were to enrage the Supreme Commander. Meanwhile, Tie Bu Tian had already gone to bed. The Emperor hadn't slept well in the past few days. However, he could finally sleep properly...

Diwu Qing Rou's harassment warfare was endless. And, the dawn was beginning to break. They had already attacked 40-50 times during the night. In fact, they had even attacked from 7 or 8 positions at the same time on occasions!

Another wave of attack came as the break of dawn approached! Four army units had attacked from four different directions in this instance. Three of the army units retreated after harassing the Iron Cloud's side a bit once the alarms started to sound.

Everyone had grown accustomed to this pattern. So, they only relied on the archers to use their arrows to repel the attackers.

However... the seemingly ordinary squad in the middle didn't retreat! They faced the rain of arrows, and madly burst into the Iron Cloud's barracks with irresistible force!

This came as a big surprise!

This squad of cavalry soldiers wasn't big in number. It only had 2000 to 3000 rider, but each one of them was brave and unstoppable. So, the valiant soldiers of Iron Cloud didn't stand a chance against them!

Moreover, the ordinary-looking armors of these invading soldiers turned out to be invulnerable some for reason. The arrows would merely impact upon their bodies with a sharp 'pop' sound, and would then bounce back in succession.

They broke the stockades with their kicks... and the defense positions of Iron Cloud soldiers was next to fall. And then, the squad broke into small teams, and dispersed around. Suddenly, a loud 'Bang' sound was heard as the horses fell into the pitfalls that had been dug up in advance.

Iron Cloud's soldiers were busy cheering — when they suddenly heard a loud roar. And then, the warhorses unexpectedly galloped out of the pitfalls like a bunch of lightning spears sticking out of the ground!

A blood-curdling shout resounded!

The cavalry soldiers – who had just dispersed – suddenly converged into one irresistible and mighty current, and courageously advanced towards the depths of Iron Cloud's army formation. They continued to kill everything that came in their path!

Iron Cloud's generals got furious. They mobilized their own troops to pursue, besiege, and stop the enemy soldiers.

Tie Long Cheng was standing at a high altitude. He was looking at the Iron Cloud's troops from afar. However, they were moving about haphazardly. He sighed and spoke, "Golden Horse Riders Department genuinely lives up to its reputation!"

He paused for a second, and then said, "Diwu Qing Rou is really willing to pay such a price!"

The senior generals who stood nearby nodded in unison. They were shocked to look at the state of these troops. They couldn't help but think of their own troops, [would our troops have been able to withstand this drilling attack if they had been caught off-guard by such an elite squad?]

This squad of Golden Horse Riders advanced for a considerable distance, and eventually arrived in front of an impregnable iron wall. However, this squad of riders suddenly changed directions, and made an abrupt turn which would've been impossible for ordinary cavalry soldiers. After that, they went in another direction, and continued to kill and spill blood along their path!

However, this didn't continue for long... only for about half an hour!

The fire beacon billowed among the war cries that shook the sky. It was already daybreak. This squad of riders had continued to slaughter and spill blood. Their bodies were covered with bits of flesh and blood. So, they went returned to their army formation while taking strict precautions against Iron Cloud's offensives...

About two-thousand of initial two-thousand-five-hundred people were still alive!

This was undoubtedly a magnificent victory for the Great Zhao.

[Our Great Zhao is still invincible. The Iron Cloud won't be able to withstand a single blow from us!] This incident had greatly boosted the morale of the Great Zhao's army.

Tie Long Cheng watched the squad of Golden Horse Riders leave

with a profound look in his eyes. Yet, the look on his face was calm.

"Supreme Commander. Why don't we prepare a squad of elites, and kill them off in one fell swoop?" a general on the side suggested in an angry and confused manner.

"This is Minister Chu's decision." Tie Long Cheng indifferently replied, "Now isn't the right time to send out the elites!"

The generals seemed quite dissatisfied when they heard that it was Minister Chu's decision. However, they suddenly went silent. They recalled the insufferably arrogant King of Hell Chu... a man who had openly embarrassed Diwu Qing Rou in front of millions of troops.

They recalled the time when the combined 8 million troops of the two nations had gone silent after having heard King of Hell Chu's loud proclamation!

So, nobody dared to raise any objections...

No one knew that Diwu Qing Rou had stood alone atop the commander's tent that night. He had watched the stars as they twinkled in the sky. But, his face was dead-ashen.

He had come here after he had drafted the assault-strategy.

And, he had stood here quietly all night... His personal soldiers thought that the Prime Minister was sleeping, but they were unaware that he hadn't slept.

"What's this?" Diwu Qing Rou tightly knitted his eyebrows as he thought aloud, "The movement of the stars was blurred and hidden before the war. But, why has the universe hung itself upside-down all of a sudden?"

"The star of the Great Zhao has suddenly dimmed, while the Emperor star of Iron Cloud – that has been dim and obscure all this time – has suddenly become radiant and extremely bright!" Diwu Qing Rou remained puzzled no matter how much he pondered over

it, " I had observed the sky Six days ago when I was on the way here. And, I had noticed that the stars of both the sides were obscure and hard to read. But now... unexpectedly... it has become so clear! What in the world happened during these few days?"

Diwu Qing Rou was utterly confused. His train of thought was in a mess.

After all, he had no idea as to what had happened. Tie Bu Tian would perhaps hide her face in shame if he were to ask her. That was because... Tie Bu Tian had rescued Chu Yang on that night six days ago – right at the time of dawn's break...

"The Wisdom star has gone bleak; it seemed as if it would fall down from the sky. The northern side of the sky is shining red, and looks brilliant to the utmost. But, the southern side is clearly lacking in brilliance... and is submitting to the north... And, what's going on with this star?" Diwu Qing Rou focused his eyes to look at the night sky, and his brow wrinkled even more tightly.

There was a star within the scope of his observation, and this particular star had shrouded the entire sky with its brilliance. It was issuing a radiant brilliance that had overshadowed the nearby stars. Thus, the nearby stars appeared dull. In fact, they were barely visible. This star was the Emperor star.

However, there was yet another brilliant star right above this one. And, the radiance of his particular star couldn't be suppressed by the incomparable glory of the Emperor star either. Moreover, there was mutual repulsion between these two stars. Yet, they got along very harmoniously...

"This auxiliary star should reside under the Emperor star. But, why is it residing over the Emperor star? This is a bizarre anomaly... of a weakling commanding a strong lord... but then, why are these two stars so harmonious?"

"There has never appeared an auxiliary star. So, why did it suddenly appear this time? Don't tell me... this auxiliary star is

King of Hell Chu?" Diwu Qing Rou appeared distressed as he further pondered, "There's only one possibility that may have led to this situation. And, that is... something has happened between Tie Bu Tian and King of Hell Chu! But... what could possibly happen that has led to such an astronomical transformation?"

"The Wisdom star has grown so dim. Don't tell me that I... Diwu Qing Rou... am going to face some unpredictable disaster?"

Diwu Qing Rou continued to stare at the stars, and remained standing for a long time. His thoughts were in utter chaos, and he simply couldn't understand the fundamental reason behind all this. This sudden change in the sky had completely subverted Diwu Qing Rou's perception of the astronomical phenomena. And, thinking more and more about it had given him a headache... to the extent that he felt as if his head would explode.

"The Emperor star's strong brilliance clearly shows that it is already at the height of power! The destiny has already flipped over if such is the case! After all... the Emperor star was shining in the Great Zhao earlier... Its red light of luck was clearly shining in the Great Zhao! Why did it suddenly change sides? Doesn't this change indicate that it has been playing with me my whole life?"

An endless sense of loss and anger appeared on Diwu Qing Rou's face.

"Heaven, why must you tease me like this? The Emperor star of luck and fortune has been glowing continuously in the south for 25 years. And, it has suddenly moved to the north at this critical juncture?! This... is divine intervention ah! Is this some kind of a joke?"

Diwu Qing Rou muttered with grief and indignation. His mind was in turmoil. In this moment – at daybreak – he suddenly spouted a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 419: The Minister is Shocked!

25 years ago – Diwu Qing Rou had seen the positioning of the stars in the sky, and had decided to shoulder his family-mission. He had then embraced the ambition to unify all under the heaven. That was when he had come to the Lower Three Heavens.

He had gone in accordance with the heaven's decree, and the people's will. So, he was bound to be successful!

Diwu Qing Rou had the guidance of the stars in the sky. So, how could he possibly land himself on the losing side? Therefore, he had entered the Great Zhao, and had slowly obtained power and influence. And, he had ultimately become the world's most ambitious and ruthless persona of this generation — a force to be reckoned with!

However, such an astronomical transformation had occurred all of a sudden. And, that too at the time of this decisive battle!

This was undoubtedly telling him — the entireties of your efforts thus far were just a joke. You were being played with this entire time. Whatever you read in the star back then was a hoax! It was bogus; nothing more! And, what you see now... is the real thing!

This was tantamount to toying with Diwu Qing Rou's lifetime worth of painstaking efforts!

Would Diwu Qing Rou have gone to Great Zhao's if he had known that the providence was on Iron Cloud's side? And, this change had suddenly occurred at a time when he could no longer turn back...

Moreover, it was impossible to contend with the heaven's will!

His grief and indignation were simply inexplicable. How could this not exhaust him mentally and physically?

"This is the will of the heavens! So, I shall make the heavens pay the price!" Diwu Qing Rou's elegant beard was stained by the blood he had just thrown up. His gloomy eyes seemed as if they were

fixated on a newfound goal. He resolutely muttered to himself, "I can’t turn back this time, but I – Diwu Qing Rou – shall not be humiliated! The providence can’t be reversed, but I shall ensure that these 8 million troops are buried in their entirety! I shall ensure that the entire world remembers the name of Diwu Qing Rou!"

The two armies clashed frequently over the fortnight that followed. And, the war reached stalemate.

Diwu Qing Rou used one trick after another. He used diversionary tactics to distract and defeat the enemy troops. His wonderful strategies continued to emerge one-after-another. The team of Tie Long Cheng, Tie Bu Tian and King of Hell Chu was present on the Iron Cloud’s side. However, even they were caught off-guard by Diwu Qing Rou’s ever-changing strategies. They were unable to manage two or more things at once, and were constantly beaten to the punch by Diwu Qing Rou!

Diwu Qing Rou’s battle and strategy plans could be described as 'unfathomable'. And, his understanding of the war’s situation was keen to the point of being called ‘frightening’.

Moreover, Diwu Qing Rou grasp on the overall situation was amazing. He was wantonly sending out the troops. He was particularly mobilizing the Golden Horse Riders Department’s experts, and they were very elusive. They would appear and disappear unpredictably. Diwu Qing Rou was in no position to use his initial plans after he had found out that King of Hell Chu had come back alive. So, he had no choice but to scatter the intended army formation, and unleash the forces onto the enemy. This had led to a new and aggressive formation under Jing Meng Hun’s control. And, the lethality of this battle tactic had become even more terrifying!

They fought dozens of battles every day. And, they were yet to fight a decisive battle.

Tie Long Cheng, Tie Bu Tian and Chu Yang had to split up, and were forced to move to different sides of the battlefront under the enormous pressure of this aggressive warfare. And, this was merely done to confront Diwu Qing Rou.

Moreover, Chu Yang had surprisingly fallen into a baffled state of mind over the course of these days.

This had started half-a-month ago...

...When Chu Yang had given Wu Qian Qian a secret practice method, and made her practice on her own. Wu Qian Qian had restlessly come to Chu Yang's tent one evening a couple of days later. She had then started to speak in a hesitant manner.

"What happened?" Chu Yang had asked.

"Chu Yang, I think I have made a breakthrough..." Wu Qian Qian replied in a somewhat uncertain manner. There was a hint of fear and helplessness in her voice, "I... I... I wasn't messing around... I swear. I was only following the core method of the Ice Jade Divine Art... and then, suddenly I discovered that... I no longer felt obstructed by the bottleneck while I was practicing this core method... and, I have actually leveled-up to become a Four Grade Martial Master..."

"Say what?" Chu Yang's eyes suddenly turned round in a stare, "Let me examine." [She can't possibly progress so fast even if she is a genius...]

He grabbed Wu Qian Qian's wrist, and sent his vital energy into her body. His energy circulated through her meridians. But, he didn't find any anomaly. However, he didn't give up just yet... he tried again and again. But... he only discovered that her body was full of life force.

"There's no problem," Chu withdrew his hand and scratched his head.

"There's no problem?" Wu Qian Qian asked somewhat restlessly,

"Then, do I continue to practice?"

"Yes, practice! You should be happy that your strength has increased. Why are you panicking?" Chu Yang spoke-up. He thought, [it seems like she was on the peak of Martial Master Third Grade... this must be the reason why she has made breakthrough so soon...]

Then, Wu Qian Qian came again the next evening... and started to speak in a similarly hesitant manner.

"What's the matter?" Minister Chu asked again.

"Actually... I seemed to have made... another breakthrough..." Wu Qian Qian spoke and broke-off mid-sentence. Then, she spoke-up again and finished the sentence.

"What?" Chu Yang was shocked, "What's your current level?" [Did she make a breakthrough from the fourth grade to the fifth one in just one day? How's she so fast?]

"Sixth Grade Martial Master..." Wu Qian Qian was all 'flustered and panicky' in her heart. It seemed as if she was about to cry, "What's going on? How am I breaking through right when I start to practice... I just practice and a breakthrough happens... don't tell me... is something wrong?"

Chu Yang was dumbstruck.

Chu Yang conducted some rigorous investigation, and confirmed that there was no issue with her body. Moreover, the Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin martial art was also operating normally. So, he was finally sure — [everything is okay!]

However, Wu Qian Qian was very worried.

In fact, Minister Chu was quite worried himself. [This is very strange! She practices... and breaks through right away! How's that possible?] Minister Chu thought, [what's going on here? Has this girl consumed some kind of heavenly treasure that turns people into geniuses...]

However, Wu Qian Qian didn’t come back for three days.

Consequently, Chu Yang found himself relieved.

However, she came again the next day – right after he had coped with a wave of Diwu Qing Rou’s attacks, "Chu Yang..."

"Now what?" Chu Yang raised his eyebrows, "Did you have another breakthrough?"

"I broke through to Martial Great Master..."

"Say that again?!" Minister Chu staggered a little, and nearly fell down head-first. Minister Chu had always shocked people with his fast practice-speed. However, he finally got to taste the same taste himself...

Miss Wu Qian Qian advanced forward with irresistible force over that half-a-months’ time, and boldly rushed to the Ninth Grade of Martial Great Master! And, Minister Chu had been numbed by the shock!

[Really... she’s so aggressive!]

Chu Yang had become very restless. So, he asked the Sword Spirit. Even Sword Spirit was shocked. So, he made Chu Yang call Wu Qian Qian. Then, he made Chu Yang take her pulse in order to allow him to inspect her.

Then, the Sword Spirit remained silent for a long time...

"What happened?" Chu Yang asked anxiously.

"I must say... this is truly..." Sword Spirit went silent... then continued, "...this is truly the will of the heavens!"

"Will of the heavens...?" Chu Yang blinked.

"This girl – Wu Qian Qian – unexpectedly possesses the rarely seen Mysterious Yin Body. And, this body appears once in ten-thousand years!" Sword Spirit went speechless again. He then continued, "And... this practice method has been practiced by countless women in the past... but just for convenience. They just

found it easier to practice... so they did...

"Nevertheless, this is the most powerful one..."

Chu Yang was puzzled. So, he asked, "What do you mean by that? Is it improper?"

"It's not improper... the truth is that this practice method is tailor-made for her..." Sword Spirit didn't know whether to laugh or cry. So, he explained further, "Do you still remember the name of this practice method?"

"Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin?"

"Correct! It's called the Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin..." Sword Spirit took a deep breath, and said, "A woman can attain the Mysterious Yin Female Body only after she has completed the nine revolutions of practice... but, this female-friend of yours has an inborn Mysterious Yin Body. Do you understand what I'm trying to say?"

Chu Yang held his breath, "You mean to say... she can skip the nine revolutions... process?"

The Sword Spirit silently nodded, "Yes, that's precisely what I'm trying to say! She can immediately start to cultivate the Mysterious Yin Energy! The first half of this practice method is as good as walking on a smooth road in her case... without any bumps whatsoever. This means that operating this practice method will be as good as walking on a levelled road in her case. So, she can continue to level-up with ease!"

"F*k me!" Chu Yang's eyes opened wide in a stare, and he couldn't help but curse out loud. In fact, his mind was so agitated that he ended-up uttering this...

Chu Yang was holding Wu Qian Qian's wrist at this time. This was similar to the scene of pulling a girl's hand and saying... F*k me!

How would this image be?

Wu Qian Qian’s complexion immediately turned crimson. She raised her long brows, and glared at him, "What did you say?"

"I... cough cough..." Chu Yang coughed in an awkward manner, and hurriedly corrected himself. He said, "I meant... for me... for me... it is possible that my martial power may someday be as high as yours..."

"Humph!" Wu Qian Qian glared at him. She knew that this guy didn’t know what he had said... nor did she wish to haggle with him. However, her face turned more and more red.

And, the Sword Spirit had already broken in an uncontrollable laughter in Chu Yang’s consciousness, "You are a complete hoodlum!"

"At least I’m not a monster like you!" Chu Yang flew into a rage out of shame, and fiercely retorted, "Now... continue-on with the explanation."

"She’s experiencing the current promotion-rate because the ‘female inborn mysterious yin real energy’ inside her meridians is rapidly transforming into ‘mysterious yin energy’. But, it will soon be over. However, her progress speed will reach a terrifying extent once she starts to practice this newly obtained mysterious yin energy in the presence of the yin and yang jade pendant with the help of her mysterious yin body..."

"What can be her highest achievement at this rate?" Chu Yang asked, "Can she become a Martial Emperor?"

"Martial Emperor?" Sword Spirit curled his lips in a disdainful smile, "Martial Emperor is nothing for her!"

"Martial Monarch?"

"Martial Monarch? Even that is nothing for her!"

"F*k! Martial Saint?" Chu Yang’s eyes had already turned into little bells.

"Martial Saint..." Sword Spirit pondered.

Chu Yang thought he would say 'Martial Saint? It's nothing for her'. But, Sword Spirit finally opened his mouth and spoke, "Practicing to Martial Saint is possible if she doesn't die halfway, and manages to come across chance coincidences... she even has the possibility to advance further... However, she will come across thousands of hindrances in the way. To practice to the top as a woman is easier said than done..."

Chu Yang was stumped for words.

[Isn't there the Supreme level after Martial Saint?] He was struck so deeply by this... that his brain had automatically ignored the two sentences that followed...

"Unfortunately, the person who had created the Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin practice-method hadn't been able to cultivate to the Supreme level. So, she will have to do it on her own if she wants to go further..." Sword Spirit sighed, "Because... the founder of this practice-method didn't possess the Mysterious Yin Body at the beginning of the practice."

Chu Yang was finally shocked to the extreme...

He regained his composure, and looked at Wu Qian Qian. Her face was filled with anticipation and uneasiness. He sighed and said, "There's no problem with your practice-method, but..."

Wu Qian Qian heard him say 'but', and immediately asked, "But what?"

"It seems your body is too 'fit'... and, that's the reason why your practice-speed is so rapid!" Chu Yang solemnly warned her, "Don't allow anyone to examine your body, and don't tell anyone about your practice-method! Otherwise... it will be very hard for you to grow."

"Got it!" Wu Qian Qian firmly nodded. She then curiously asked with a look of anticipation on her face, "Will this practice-method

allow me to reach the King level?"

She had asked this because the cultivation of king level was the highest standard in the Lower Three Heavens. Therefore, she wanted to get very close to the King level.

"King level..." Chu Yang wanted to say — you can reach King Level in six months of practice. However, he only thought this, and didn’t say it. And, he instead replied, "Absolutely! You will reach it soon if you work hard."

"I will work hard!" Wu Qian Qian clenched her small fist.

Chapter 420: Stupid C*nt, Are You Tired?

Sword Spirit heaved a deep sigh in his consciousness and said, "But, she must go to the Middle Three Heavens or the Upper Three Heavens after she reaches a certain level. She can't promote much in the Lower Three Heavens."

Chu Yang knitted his brows. He raised his head to look at the pleasantly surprised Wu Qian Qian and spoke in a low voice, "I will give her that suggestion when the time comes..."

There was stalemate on the battlefield these days. Diwu Qing Rou seemed to have gone berserk. And, he was unceasingly venting his anger. Iron Cloud could only resort to passive defense since Tie Long Cheng was genuinely baffled by this super abnormal phenomenon!

[Storms don't last forever, and it doesn't pour all day long! Diwu Qing Rou doesn't understand this truth. He's wantonly attacking again and again without making time for rest. His troops will get tired at this rate. And, he will be in big trouble when Iron Cloud launches a counterattack.]

[Why is this wise and clever man making such an obvious mistake?]

However, Chu Yang was completely unaffected by this. So, he was calmly overseeing his own three-hundred-thousand troops. Chu Yang was motionless like a great mountain despite Diwu Qing Rou's wanton attacks!

He was sure that Diwu Qing Rou had a plan!

And, the time to fight a decisive battle with Diwu Qing Rou would arrive once that plan would reach maturation.

Moreover, this was a tactic. A tactic to tire-out both the sides! However, Great Zhao's soldiers would only be physically tired... not mentally. In fact, they would remain in high spirits since it

would indeed be incomparably exciting for them to see that they were the ones attacking, while the enemy had only been defending against their attacks.

Iron Cloud's soldiers were aggrieved on the other hand. In fact, they were rather depressed. They had been facing the enemy's attack without a break, and could only defend or retreat. And, they had exhausted their power in order to safeguard their position from getting wrecked.

How could this not be aggravating?!

However, they couldn't act rashly because any opening in their defense could give Diwu Qing Rou's army an opportunity to focus on expanding it. And then, the enemy could engulf them!

Everyone understood this point very clearly. That was because three army units would be dispatched from different directions each time. Two of these army units would try to sweep into the Iron Cloud's formation, while the third one would continue to attack like madmen. It was evident that the two army units would immediately widen any openings that were made in the formation. And, they could then rip the entire formation apart.

Moreover, the enemy would send another attack-team to take advantage of the opportunity if they tried to mobilize troops from other military camps.

Diwu Qing Rou's tactics were crazy… but effective!

Chu Yang had a feeling, [It seems that Diwu Qing Rou is deliberately forcing the two armies in an explosive warfare. He's pushing them to the point of exhaustion. He's shoving them to the end of the line. And then, he would start a decisive battle to death!]

Chu Yang had realized this, but he still couldn't believe it, [Why? Diwu Qing Rou has no reason to go so far!]

Therefore, he could only continue to speculate for now as he steadily tackled the violent attacks and harassment battle-tactics of

the Great Zhao’s army.

The Great Zhao’s army would suddenly appear like surging storms, and attack. And then, they would disperse like low tides after a short while. It seemed as if Great Zhao’s soldiers didn’t know what it meant to feel weary…

Chu Yang had been anticipating attacks from the Golden Horse Riders Department amidst all this… but they never appeared.

"Minister, our troops’ morale is going down." Chu Yang was in his tent when Wu Kuang Yun strode in. He looked a little anxious as he spoke, "Everyone’s depressed. How long will we last this way?"

"Is your men’s morale down… or is it yours?" Chu Yang raised his head, and looked at him with slanting eyes.

"Eh… Actually… I just went to ask the Supreme Commander and His Majesty, but they didn’t give any instructions…" Wu Kuang Yun’s face was red from the nervousness.

"Slow down." Chu Yang suddenly thought, [the morale of the army might plummet irrevocably if this goes-on for long. Wu Kuang Yun is grumpy and violent, but he’s still a famous army general. And, even someone of his stature is panicking like this. So, how can the ordinary troops be calm?]

[It’s necessary to take some action now.]

Chu Yang’s eyes rolled in a strange manner as he waved his hand to beckon Wu Kuang Yun closer. Then, he said, "Do this-and-this after you go out… And, do that-and-that when the Great Zhao’s army comes again…"

Wu Kuang Yun beamed with joy, and nodded repeatedly. Then, he admiringly gave a big ‘thumbs-up’ to Chu Yang and rushed-out like a gust of wind.

Wu Qian Qian – who was present behind Chu Yang – couldn’t help but shiver like a sprig of a plant, [Chu Yang is too

mischievous. He actually plans to pull such a prank... and that too in a serious war like this one...]

The sound of hoof-beats reverberated that night. And, it was accompanied by a howling sound. The Great Zhao's army rushed over like a pack of wolves charging down the mountain.

However, the Iron Cloud's army suddenly burst into laughter at this moment, "The stupid c*nts are coming... ha ha ha... it's that gang of stupid c*nts again..."

"Look at that. This gang of stupid c*nts runs back-and-forth so many times every night like a bunch of dogs. This is so f*king entertaining!"

"Brothers, come out and watch the show."

"Oh, we've been sitting here in wait for this gang of stupid c*nts to start their play. Motherf*ker, this is so much fun to watch! We don't need to go to a theater and spend money. We can watch this comical play for free here..."

Iron Cloud's army finally succeeded in venting out that pent-up anger and frustration from these past days as the burst of such remarks expanded its scope. And soon, every soldier had started to clamor out loud. Not long after... the crowd of thousands of soldiers had begun to chant in unison, "Stupid C*nts! You came! Stupid C*nts~~~ Are you tired..."

Great Zhao's army had come with grandeur and vigor, but their arrival was met with such treatment. They suddenly flew into a rage. They slaughtered for a while, and paid with casualties. Then, they immediately withdrew. However, they only heard a burst of clamors while they were retreating...

"Stupid C*nts ... are you going?"

"Stupid C*nts, come back soon..."

The general from Great Zhao who was in command of this attack almost fell from the horseback.

Furthermore, Wu Kuang Yun was at the frontline, and had led this instigation. He had even created a song within half-a-days' time with the help of some outstanding and straightforward men. And then, this song had been spread throughout the army.

The song was called 'Are you tired?'. The lyrics were as follows...

"You are sicked like dogs every night; are you tired you Stupid C*nts?

Are you able to ride the horse or not, you Stupid C*nts? Are you able to go to war or not?

You are made to run back-and-forth all night as toys; are you tired you Stupid C*nts? Ah wooh, oh yeah ~~~

Stupid C*nts, though you are bitter, though you are tired;

But, I feel so comfortable in my heart when I look at great men like you suffer daily...

Ah wooh, Ah wooh...

Stupid C*nts are suffering; Stupid C*nts are tired; Stupid C*nts are the good babies who entertain us!

Oh good babies!

Thump Thump Clang, Thump Thump Clang..."

Therefore, everyone on the Iron Cloud's side was busy in making preparations to welcome the enemy by the time the Great Zhao's soldiers came that night. In fact, they had even built a huge stage. They had prepared for an orchestra to be stationed on this stage. This orchestra was comprised of a few thousand soldiers, and they even had gongs and drums. Those 3000 incredible men simultaneously raised their sturdy necks under the command of a conductor, and began to sing chorus in their magnificent voices, "Stupid C*nts! Are you tired?"

Their surroundings were heavily guard. And, a special security regiment had been assigned to protect them. So, the singers were

focusing entirely on putting the entirety of their strength and vigor into singing at the top of their voice...

Therefore, the sound was like thunderclap!

They had even rehearsed for countless times. So, the loud singing voices of a few thousand had completely overshadowed the battle cries of tens-of-thousands of soldiers.

Every Iron Cloud soldier was laughing out loud. In fact, they were grinning from ear to ear. They were killing enemies on the one hand, while enjoying on the other. Even the ones who got seriously injured were groaning in pain on the one hand, while laughing on the other, [Motherf*ker, this is too entertaining.]

There hadn't been much scope for entertainment in the barracks of late. However, they were now having a lot of much fun... thanks to such a good program. This had also aroused everyone's spirit. So, they started to wave their weapons as they sung along with the melody.

The troops — who were part of the Great Zhao's surprise-attack team — felt as if their belly would explode with anger.

In fact, they even gave-up on their original plan on one occasion. And, they launched an attack on the stage were the soldiers were singing in full swing. However, this action led to their complete annihilation...

There were many casualties during the battle, but everyone was still in high spirits. The usual post-battle depressed atmosphere was gone, and everyone was always humming this song. In fact, they had even started to look forward to the next surprise-attack from the Great Zhao's army...

Minister Chu's invention had untied the Iron Cloud Army's predicament. One could hear the voices of soldiers singing 'Stupid C*nt, are you tired?' in the three big camps of Iron Cloud during evening time as well...

The soldiers grew more and more efficient in battles as their singing voice grew more and more loud and resonant. A soldier got stabbed in the chest by an enemy's knife in one instance. He had indeed received a fatal injury. But, he merely tilted his head to look at his enemy, and spoke with a smile, "Stupid C*nt, are you tired? You must know that I feel very comfortable..."

This sentence enraged the enemy soldier, and he ferociously rushed forward, "See how I make you feel comfortable!"

However, that Iron Cloud soldier revealed a carefree smile as he pulled out the knife from his chest and thrust it into the enemy's heart...

Iron Cloud had occupied a comprehensively advantageous position during the battles fought on that night in spite of being on the defensive the entire time. Several troops from the enemy teams who had come to invade their territory were left behind. And, they were obviously annihilated in their entirety.

Tie Long Cheng patted his thigh as he laughed uncontrollably inside the commander's tent. He was unable to conceal his happiness, and continued to smack his lips, "Damn! This King of Hell Chu is too much ha ha ha..."

Tie Bu Tian was on the side. But, she didn't know whether to laugh or cry; she was totally speechless...

What could she say? She genuinely had nothing to say about the sly stunt Chu Yang had pulled-off... especially for this kind of a stunt... which could only bring benefits and no harm. So, Tie Bu Tian could only choose to close her ears, and not listen to those singing voices. And, she could only force a smile...

Tie Bu Tian also drew a clear understanding from this — Men have a very strong inborn-desire to cuss and use foul language...

However, Tie Bu Tian wasn't in the mood to think about this matter since her mind was preoccupied with another problem at

the moment. And, a very serious problem at that... a very grave one...

And, this problem had left her flustered...

Great Zhao Barracks

Diwu Qing Rou's complexion was very serious. And, his face was slightly pale, "This situation arose from which military camp first?"

"It arose from the big camp of Wu Kuang Yun! The one called Sha Pei!" a general replied with a look of hatred on his face.

"Wu Kuang Yun..." Diwu Qing Rou chuckled as a cold light flashed in his eyes, "I was right. Wu Kuang Yun and his men were assigned under King of Hell Chu's personal command according to our previous estimates..."

He smiled solemnly, "Everything's exactly the same as my estimates. Wu Kuang Yun's army should be under King of Hell Chu's control. Such a weird strategy might appear vulgar and childish, but it has played a strong role in enhancing the morale of Iron Cloud's troops... Wu Kuang Yun couldn't have come up with something like this."

"King of Hell Chu is the one who is creating these obstructions!" Diwu Qing Rou drew an undeniable conclusion.

The generals in audience were suddenly dumbstruck, [so, it's King of Hell Chu?]

"Prime Minister, then what should we do?" the generals asked in unison.

"Meng Hun, have you made all the preparations?" Diwu Qing Rou asked.

Jing Meng Hun immediately stood up, "Prime Minister, everything is ready."

Chapter 421: The Moment of Decisive Battle?

"Well!" Diwu Qing Rou's eyes flashed brightly as he said, " We will be launching our last seize attack on their barracks tonight if that's the case. Dispatch the experts of the Golden Horse Riders Department, and launch a heavy strike on Iron Cloud. And, immediately withdraw the troops thereafter!"

"Withdraw the troops?!" The generals were greatly shocked.

"Yes, withdraw the troops! Withdraw them immediately after the raid ends. We will abandon our tents as well as excess baggage here. We shall retreat with only the necessary stuff. It should be enough as long as everyone withdraws," Diwu Qing Rou insipidly said.

"Understood!" The generals were puzzled, but they knew that Diwu Qing Rou definitely had a brilliant plan in his mind. They had such blind faith in Diwu Qing Rou. So, they would implement Diwu Qing Rou's order without the slightest hesitation.

"Order the infantry to retreat. Wrap cotton cushions on the hooves of the horses after the cavalry comes back, and evacuate them very quietly!" Diwu Qing Rou added one sentence at the end, "This must remain... top-secret!"

"Prime Minister, don't you think this is too hasty? We will have to cross the great mountain during our retreat. And... our decades-worth of expedition will go in vain once the great mountain gets seized by the enemy. Moreover, Iron Cloud will obtain a natural stronghold! This is detrimental for our grand plan of world dominance."

The 'veteran of hundred battles' Heavenly Dragon General Yu Han frowned... Meanwhile, the 'battle maniac' Dragon General Li Yi also nodded to show this agreement with Yu Han's argument.

"Hasty; it is necessary to be hasty. We will be giving Iron Cloud a chance to retaliate if we wait too long to make a decisive move. And, our strategy will have to be changed in its entirety once King of Hell Chu's reaction comes."

Diwu Qing Rou's eyes flashed as he said, "Yu Han, you should understand the real meaning behind this retreat. Why ask."

"But, the morale of the troops will inevitably be shaken. Also, our casualties will be heavy if we go around and strike the rear of the pursuers. In fact, our casualties will be almost as many as the number on the enemy side..." Yu Han spoke with a somewhat serious and sentimental look on his skinny face.

The Golden Horse Riders Department had been unceasingly working on the plan these past days. How could Yu Han not know what they were making? Yu Han recalled those vicious and cruel set-ups, and found himself getting covered in cold sweat. The enemies would undoubtedly fall into the trap, but their side wouldn't have much protection either. So, their own soldiers were bound to perish along with the enemy's!

Moreover, these were the soldiers he had always adored as his own sons. And, these were soldiers with whom this Heaven Dragon General had fought a hundred battles. How could he possibly feel well in his heart? So, he had dared to question Diwu Qing Rou's order for the first time in his life.

"You only need to execute the order!" Diwu Qing Rou looked at him and mildly spoke, "Yu Han, sacrifices are inevitable in the war."

Yu Han heaved a deep sigh.

Great Zhao's attack was far more violent that night. This was an overwhelming offensive that covered everything as far as the eye could see. It continued the entire night; non-stop. However, Iron Cloud had already gotten its strength back.

Moreover, such a violent offensive had made one thing very clear — it seemed like such attacks would cease in the future!

Tie Long Cheng was in the commander's tent. He tightly wrinkled his brows when he heard the heaven-shaking shouts and battle cries.

Several trusted aides and senior generals were by his side.

The end of Diwu Qing Rou's offensive would represent that it was Iron Cloud's turn to counterattack. So, the generals were somewhat impatient.

"It can't be this simple." Tie Long Cheng faintly felt that Diwu Qing Rou's plan couldn't be so meager. He felt that the man was planning something big in the shadows.

He waved his hand, "Everything shall wait until dawn."

Tie Long Cheng didn't dare to take any risk since he was faced with the unpredictable plan of Diwu Qing Rou. [I would rather give up on this great opportunity, but I won't act rashly.]

"Immediately report this matter to His Majesty and King of Hell Chu. And, see what they have to say about it." Tie Long Cheng made a decision, "Immediately pursue the enemy and attack after dawn if the enemy genuinely retreats, and if His Majesty and King of Hell Chu don't object!"

Meanwhile, Chu Yang was standing atop a tall flagpole. The night-time raid had started moments ago. He quietly observed for a while, and then his complexion sank drastically.

[If my guess is right... then I would probably get to see the true edge of Diwu Qing Rou's plan tonight! But, I just don't know what kind of plan this fierce and ambitious man has made.]

He saw Wu Qian Qian's body illuminate under the light of the flames in the vicinity while he was coming down. She was clad in black clothes, and her long hair fluttered in the wind along with her sleeves. She had been standing next to Chu Yang's tent for a

long time in wait.

"It should come to an end tonight," Wu Qian Qian said in a low voice.

"What?" Chu Yang looked at her.

"I can feel Diwu Qing Rou's determination in this attack." Wu Qian Qian solemnly spoke, "There are three reasons. First, Diwu Qing Rou hasn't prepared the military barracks for the plundered goods, and has invested the entirety of his manpower into attacking. Secondly, the total number of troops that Diwu Qing Rou has mobilized and sent is close to 1 million this time! So, this battle is tantamount to a semi-decisive battle. However, we are unable to sense that because it's occurring in the night. As for the last reason... it is my intuition."

Chu Yang appeared somewhat pleased as he looked at Wu Qian Qian. Wu Qian Qian was able to see this point, and this clearly indicated that she had matured in all possible aspects. Now, she was capable of assuming the sole responsibility for an important task.

Moreover, she had spoken 'my intuition' in the end of her reasoning with confidence. This was indicative of her sixth sense; an ability that only excellent decision-makers possessed. And, this was an outstanding and powerful ability.

More so when the opponent was someone like Diwu Qing Rou... which was even rarer...

"What would you do if you were Diwu Qing Rou?" Chu Yang asked her.

"I would immediately launch an attack in case I won tonight's decisive battle. But, I would immediately retreat if I didn't! That is because... this battlefield is large, but it can't accommodate eight million people fighting a decisive battle. One million each is the limit. We are fighting a semi-decisive battle tonight, but it will

determine the outcome of the decisive battle... as well as the war. And, I definitely won't win later if I cannot win tonight! Therefore, retreating for now, planning a strategy, and saving strength for a comeback is the best plan."

Wu Qian Qian paused for a moment. She then said, "However, the elite riders of the Golden Horse Riders Department haven't yet appeared. I'm a little concerned about this. If they don't appear until dawn... then that would mean Diwu Qing Rou is planning something else. But, a retreat will be his only option if they appear and he still fails to capture Iron Cloud by dawn!"

"You just covered the half!" Chu Yang seemed quite pleased as he looked at her. So, he spoke in a praising manner, "But, this isn't that easy to determine! The other half which you haven't seen... is Diwu Qing Rou's character. Furthermore... his sinister and ruthless plans...

"Diwu Qing Rou isn't the kind of person who would give-up that easily. And, even if he does give up... then there has to be some reason behind it. Therefore, he will have a backup plan if withdraws his troops!" Chu Yang slowly said, "So, if Diwu Qing Rou genuinely withdraws his troops... then, it will be a trap!"

"A trap...?" Wu Qian Qian asked in a puzzled manner.

"Yes, haven't you seen the barracks on both sides?" Chu Yang asked her as he traced his own mind, and tried to recall Diwu Qing Rou's plans... the ones he had heard on the rooftop of Prime Minister's Palace. He then slowly calculated... little by little.

The words that he spoke along with his projections sounded discontinuous.

"Our Iron Cloud relies on the strategic mountain pass in the north since it has towering mountains on both sides. Whether one needs to go forward, retreat or guard — all of it can be done without any worries. But here... Diwu Qing Rou will have a smooth path ahead of him if he manages to penetrate the frontline!"

"Yes." Wu Qian Qian looked at him, and thought to herself, [doesn't everyone know of this?]

"But, if you look at Diwu Qing Rou's strong battle formation for Great Zhao Army... He has clearly put-out the 'coiling dragon crouching tiger' battle formation. And it looked like a big coiling dragon holding its head high up from afar. Moreover, the lower body of the dragon resembles that of a tiger. The wind and cloud gather when the dragon moves... And, the tiger roars and rushes down the mountain to capture its prey! This is one elaborate stance to annex the Iron Cloud in one fell swoop.

"This point proves that Diwu Qing Rou has arrived here with the determination to engage in a decisive battle. Then, will he retreat so easily?"

Chu Yang frowned. It seemed like he was asking Wu Qian Qian... but he was asking himself in reality.

"However, it's a little strange that Great Zhao's army had originally moved their barracks quite forward. However, they fell back 9 Km for some reason after Diwu Qing Rou's arrival. The vast majority of the barracks are located halfway up the mountain on the almost flat surface. Moreover, they changed their horizontal formation to the four-sided formation. In other words, they assumed the 'Coiling Dragon Crouching Tiger' formation after Diwu Qing Rou's arrival.

"This shows that Diwu Qing Rou looks to exploit the terrain!" Chu Yang rubbed the space between his eyebrows. He words he had just spoken were rather difficult to understand. Moreover, he spoke this, and then stopped for a moment to devote his entire mental prowess to the analysis. This kind of an analysis consumed a great deal of mental effort... an unimaginable amount of it.

In fact, it was even more difficult if one were to analyze the thoughts of an ambitious and ruthless character like Diwu Qing Rou...

"They've pitched their barrack in the most favored location. So, they can have a steady stream of supplies from the Great Zhao from the backside of the mountain camp. This seems like a safe and dependable approach. Moreover, the transport-team's fatigue can be reduced by withdrawing the army by 9 Km. How can this be some kind of a plot?" Wu Qian Qian knitted her eyebrows and raised an objection.

"It seems you haven't seen the terrain clearly." Chu Yang pulled Wu Qian Qian, and entered the big tent. They arrived before the sand table. He pointed at the terrain on the sand table and said, "See, Diwu Qing Rou's military camp will be here. It's absolutely safe here! Also, look at the rear side of the topography of the mountain.

"The topography of the mountain... is almost flat. This is precisely the ideal condition for the provisions team. So much so that they won't face any dangers or surprise attacks during the retreat. This is the perfect plan..." Wu Qian Qian gazed at the sand table with her beautiful eyes.

"But, what if our Iron Cloud troops get on this mountain?" Chu Yang pointed at the mountain and asked.

"Defeating Diwu Qing Rou will be easy if our Iron Cloud's troops can get there. In fact, it will be rather effortless!" Wu Qian Qian was very puzzled, [how will the Iron Cloud troops appear there? But, the war will end immediately if they manage to pull it off...]

"The mountain isn't high, and its topography is flat. So, it doesn't have any steep slopes either. This means that it is suitable for a cavalry assault. Moreover, the infantry can also to display three times their combat efficiency if they occupy a higher ground. Not to mention that this is quite a favorable position for the use of one's skills for the archers, spear wielders and knife wielders! Therefore, once they start attacking from the summit — attacking Diwu Qing Rou's barracks will be equivalent to placing ourselves in on the chopping board for being chopped alive like meat!

"And, even turning around to escape will become an extravagant hope because you can’t escape from a fierce tiger that’s rushing down the mountain at a very fast speed!"

The more Chu Yang analyzed... the quicker he spoke, "But, won’t we pursue Diwu Qing Rou if he deliberately creates a situation of panic and tries to escape?"

"Of course, we will pursue!" Wu Qian Qian replied without any hesitation.

"But, what if Diwu Qing Rou prepares an ambush at the top of the hill?" Chu Yang asked, "And, they suddenly descend down from the mountain like a fierce tiger, and attack our Iron Cloud Army while it’s busy plundering their barracks..."

Wu Qian Qian’s entire body was suddenly covered in cold sweat.

Chapter 422: What is Diwu Qing Rou Doing Here?

"You mean this is Diwu Qing Rou's trap?" Wu Qian Qian asked in a shocked manner, "So, he plans to instigate a decisive battle among 8 million people with this trap?"

"Do you think a person like Diwu Qing Rou will retreat that easily?" Chu Yang solemnly replied with a question.

Wu Qian Qian remained silently and didn't speak further.

The battle cries were getting louder and louder outside. There was so much chaos out there that if seemed as if the sky itself would collapse any moment.

"What will Diwu Qing Rou do if we don't pursue?" Wu Qian Qian asked.

"Diwu Qing Rou will genuinely retreat if we don't pursue, got it? So, this is a golden opportunity want to defeat Diwu Qing Rou if we really wish to do so!" Chu Yang smiled wryly, "That's because... it might be possible to get Diwu Qing Rou if you strike while he's pulling his army back. However, there's an equal probability of getting killed instead!

"And... Diwu Qing Rou wouldn't mind waiting for a long period of time to recuperate if we don't pursue him. In fact, he might even wait for 2-3 years... or even 8-10 years." Chu Yang smiled bitterly. He didn't have any other expression to show... besides a bitter smile.

Perhaps... Diwu Qing Rou had no intention to delay. The fact was that he couldn't afford to delay for long. The destiny of the Nine Tribulations was unfolding. So, how could he possibly afford to drag this "world domination expedition" for 8 to 10 years? This was unthinkable!

The sound of footsteps came from outside, and a person said,

"Reporting to the Minister. There's a letter for you from the Supreme Commander." Wu Qian Qian went out to receive the letter. Then, she came back in, and gave it to Chu Yang.

Chu Yang opened it to have a look at it, and couldn't help but smile wryly, "Tie Long Cheng has sent a letter asking whether we should chase after the Great Zhao Army after their retreat." Wu Qian Qian's complexion changed. They were discussing this critical issue just now. But, they hadn't expected to receive a letter from Tie Long Cheng about the same.

[It seems like we all have sensed something about this war, but are still unsure what it really is... And, our guess is probably correct...]

"What do you think?" Wu Qian Qian asked. In fact, there was no need to ask that because Chu Yang's approach was fairly discernible from his speculation.

Chu Yang carefully read the letter, and discretely pondered in his heart. Then, he finally said, "I think... we shouldn't take the risk."

Just then, a sudden and stern shout was heard outside the Chu Yang's tent, "Stop him!"

Afterwards, earth-shattering shouts began to resound outside the tent. And, these loud shouts sounded continuously without a break. Sad and shrill cries also rang out, "Hurry up! Quickly call the generals! It's an assassin!"

[So, there was an expert hidden among this wave of cavalry soldiers who've arrived to attack us?] Chu Yang was somewhat surprised in his heart, [Diwu Qing Rou's plan is being implemented quite successfully. So, why did he send an assassin?]

Wu Kuang Yun's voice fiercely exploded into a clamor and resounded, "Where is that son of a bitch!? Eat my saber!"

A loud 'bang' was heard. Then, Wu Kuang Yun's strange scream was heard. And, it was followed by the loud sound of a heavy

object falling to the ground.

Chu Yang thought of something. Then, he took big strides to rush out. He uncovered the tent's flap, and saw a person in black clothes 50-60 feet away. This person was wearing a black mask, and was cutting across the crowd of soldiers towards Chu Yang.

However, he was walking calmly. In fact, he seemed to have a carefree and confident attitude. He didn't appear the least bit angry or agitated. The guards who had surrounded him to attack him... were falling one after another. He was being besieged by hundreds of people... yet he was handling it skillfully... and with ease!

It seemed as if he was talking a stroll in the garden in spite the fact that he was being besieged by hundreds of people at once.

Chu Yang's pupils shrank.

[This man is by no means Jing Meng Hun!]

[And, this man isn't here to kill!]

[It seems that person has diverged from the armed forces that were sent by Diwu Qing Rou to perform a surprise raid!]

[However, this person has the ability to leave whenever he feels like. In fact, even a million soldiers won't be able to stop him!]

Chu Yang's eyes flashed brightly.

"Stop!" Chu Yang shouted at the guards, "Let him come!"

The bodyguards heard this and stopped. In fact, Cheng Zi Ang and Cheng Yu Tong simultaneously jumped up to relay the order. They were both panting. The people stepped aside, and opened a path between Chu Yang and that man in black.

The man in black raised his head, and his eyes looked at the sinister mask of Chu Yang from afar. He couldn't stop himself from revealing a trace of radiance in his eyes.

"Sir, it seems you have come from far away. And, I presume you

haven’t come here to fight, right?" Chu Yang spoke with a faint smile, "How about we go inside and have a chat?"

The man in black didn’t say anything. He just boldly stepped towards Chu Yang.

He managed to cover a distance of 50-60 feet in just a step or two, and instantly arrived in front of Chu Yang.

"Please come in," Chu Yang stretched out his hand to make a welcoming gesture.

The man in black fearlessly entered the tent.

"Everybody — scram," Chu Yang ordered. Then, he closed the tent’s flap. He didn’t even wait for their reply.

He turned his head, and saw that the black-clothed man had already occupied the guest-seat with elegance; Chu Yang couldn’t help but smile gently.

"Qian Qian, make some tea for our guest." Chu Yang smiled and said, "Use my best tea leaves." And then, he went and slowly sat down in the host’s seat that was placed in front of the man in black. A strong radiance of curiosity flashed in his eyes.

Wu Qian Qian immediately complied. She looked at the man in black with some suspicion and fear. Then, she turned around to make tea.

"Minister Chu is very skilled and bold," that man in black gently praised him with a smile.

"I don’t deserve your praise." Chu Yang modestly shook his head and said, "This Chu is nothing compared to the Prime Minister... who has managed to make his way through thousands of men and horses... unhindered."

[Prime Minister?!]

Wu Qian Qian was serving tea at this moment. However, her hands began to tremble and teapot nearly fell to the ground. [This

man in black is a Prime Minister? Prime Minister of what...?]

"Minister Chu has a very sharp vision." The man in black laughed softly. He then took off his hood, and revealed his lean face. An astonished look appeared in Wu Qian Qian's eyes when she realized the identity of the man who was seated in front of her!

The teapot in her hand fell on the table. Fortunately, she had almost put it down... otherwise it would've shattered. Wu Qian Qian's beautiful eyes opened wide in a daze. And, there was a look of disbelief on her face.

The man before her had lean facial features, and a fair complexion. His eyes looked gentle. He had long eyebrows... like those of a phoenix. Three wisps of beard were hanging down to his chest. He gave off a kind of spotless feeling. It was as if he would be calm and composed even if he were to come out from a sea of blood or a mountain of corpses. He possessed a natural grace, and an indifferent gentleness.

It was Diwu Qing Rou!

He was the man who had dominated the entire Great Zhao. The man – who was famous throughout the Lower Three Heavens for being a peerless genius as well as an ambitious and ruthless character – the likes of whom hadn't appeared in the last 6 thousand years. And, this man had surprisingly appeared in the tent of his mortal enemy — King of Hell Chu — while the two nations were engaged in a chaotic war!

Wu Qian Qian felt as if her small head had already short circuited due to shock. In fact, she was totally speechless. So, she just poured tea like a machine...

Her heartbeats calmed down... but, only after a long time had passed.

"This is..." Diwu Qing Rou looked at Wu Qian Qian and asked.

"I can't believe that Prime Minister doesn't know who she is."

Chu Yang smiled gently and replied.

Diwu Qing Rou smiled. Then, he reached for the cup and took a sip. He then said in praising tone, "Nice tea! Who could have thought that a hell demon was capable of brewing such a nice tea? King of Hell Chu, you are quite lucky."

"I am still lacking in comparison to the Prime Minister who holds the wind and cloud in his hand, and looks down on the entire world," Chu Yang revealed a reserved smile.

A trace of bitterness and astringency appeared on Diwu Qing Rou's face. He sighed softly and said, "In that case, the wise King of Hell Chu must be able to guess the purpose of my visit, correct?"

Chu Yang solemnly smiled, "I only know this much that Prime Minister isn't here to assassinate me."

"Oh?" Diwu Qing Rou doubtfully interjected.

"As for the real purpose of your visit — I truly have no idea." Chu Yang chuckled, "But, it doesn't matter. You will certainly state the reason since you have come here."

Diwu Qing Rou smiled in a relaxed manner, "Why do you think that I won't kill you?"

"Prime Minister, ever since you have arrived in the Lower Three Heavens – you have started at the bottom, and risen step by step to the top. You may have used plots and tricks to achieve your goal... and even caused the annihilation of millions of soldiers. In fact, you even brought about the change of regime in a nation..." Chu Yang calmly continued, "But... Prime Minister, you have never killed a person with your own hands in the last 25 years!"

He raised his head to look at Diwu Qing Rou, and smiled softly, "However, you had presumably come across the biggest setback of your life that time in the Great Zhao. That is why you had to make an exception for this Chu."

Diwu Qing Rou smiled. He brought the teacup close, and looked

at the green tea in the cup. Then, he calmly said, "Correct. Personally killing people is the behavior of the military men. If I – Diwu Qing Rou –have had to kill every single person with my own hands... then I wouldn't have achieved this position!"

He smiled proudly and said, "The blood spatters in a range of 5 steps when a military person kills people. A hundred or even thousand people may die at his hands, and the corpses of his victims may cover the entire ground. But, he would still need to pay with his life at some point. However, the tactical murder is incredible since you can create a mountain of corpses or spread the flames of war in thousands of miles with just the movement of your lips. And, you can make the lives of common people hell if you wish to.

"Such a grand difference can't be left untapped!" Diwu Qing Rou silently smiled.

"But, this isn't the real reason why Prime Minister never kills with his own hands, am I right?" Chu Yang put on a smile of amusement and raised objection.

These two individuals were mortal enemies, and hence shared great enmity. And, both of them were playing the role of the main strategist for their respective nations in this war that would determine the fate of the ordinary people of this world. And today... these two had surprisingly come together to chat like old friends.

Wu Qian Qian found this scene extremely incredible!

However, Chu Yang had gone on a mental journey at this moment. His thoughts had wandered off far-far away. And, he wasn't trying to guess the reason why Diwu Qing Rou had come... because as he just spoken... Diwu Qing Rou would tell anyway... even if he didn't ask. However, Diwu Qing Rou's words had reminded Chu Yang of someone else...

Moreover, Diwu Qing Rou's views were almost identical to those

of that man...!

And, that man was Mo Tian Ji!

These two men could kill others decisively. And, their wisdom went off the charts. But, they both advocated the use of tricks and strategies over brute force! The only difference was that... Mo Tian Ji's hands were reeking of blood even though both of them were cruel, merciless and crafty. However, Diwu Qing Rou's hands were still clean on the contrary... even though the number of people – who had died in the Lower Three Heavens because of Diwu Qing Rou – had perhaps surpassed tens of millions...

The two armies were fighting and killing outside, while their supreme leaders were sitting here in peace. The strange contrast of this situation had numbed Wu Qian Qian's entire body.

"If Prime Minister has something to say... he may please speak frankly." Chu Yang picked up the teapot, and poured tea for the Diwu Qing Rou as he solemnly said.

"Ha-ha... Minister Chu doesn't know the origins of me – Diwu Qing Rou, right?" Diwu Qing Rou smiled. Chu Yang quietly nodded and said, "I would like to hear the details."

Chu Yang knew that it was going to be a long talk as soon as Diwu Qing Rou made that remark. And, he could feel that all his doubts would be answered by Diwu Qing Rou in person.

Chu Yang didn't know why Diwu Qing Rou would wish to do that, but he chose to listen attentively since he believed that there must be a good reason behind this.

Diwu Qing Rou sighed softly as a pondering expression appeared on his face. It seemed as if he was slowly sinking into a long recollection, "My surname is Diwu, and given name is Qing Rou. I come from one of the nine super clans of the Upper Thee Heavens, the Zhuge Clan..."

Chapter 423: Let’s Talk Frankly and Openly!

"Zhuge Clan!" Chu Yang's body shook a little. He had already guessed... and even determined with the help of some information... that Diwu Qing Rou was from the Zhuge Clan — one of the nine super clans of the Upper Three Heavens. However, he was still somewhat shaken when he heard Diwu Qing Rou admit it with his own mouth.

"You may not be familiar with the surname ‘Diwu’." Diwu Qing Rou said with a melancholic smile, "But, my Diwu Clan used to be magnificent once. In fact, even Zhuge Clan can’t come close to its glory."

"Diwu Clan?" Chu Yang tightly knitted his brows, and racked his brains. But, he couldn’t find any information regarding it. So, he eventually said, "Please enlighten me."

"Zhuge Clan has ten-thousand years of glory to its name. And, it’s a bigshot in the entire Nine Heavens. But, no one remembers that my Diwu Clan had remained glorious in the 20,000 years that had come to pass before the Zhuge Clan’s rise to power! The Diwu Clan has a history and heritage of 30,000 years!"

Diwu Qing Rou put on a bitter smile, but his voice was still gentle...

"My Diwu Clan was appointed as a ruling super-clan by Nine Tribulations Sword’s Sixth Master. Moreover, my clan was the most wise and resourceful clan. It was ranked 5th among the nine super clans. The Diwu clan had managed to maintain its glory even after its first 10,000. The kind of glory and dominance left behind by the ancestors of the Diwu Clan was colorful and vibrant, and it had covered the entire world. Moreover, my clan’s temperament was generous and forthright. My clan even forged a close friendship with the Seventh Master of Nine Tribulations Sword. The other eight super-clans declined over the time the Nine

Tribulations Sword's Seventh Master was in effect. But, my Diwu Clan grew prosperous, and continued to do so for another 10,000 years!"

"I see." Chu Yang sighed, "So, this involves an ancient and divine relic like the Nine Tribulations Sword... and its impact on these clans for tens-of-thousands of years... it's seriously hard to imagine."

Diwu Qing Rou smiled slightly as his eyes flashed a little. Then, he continued the story, "The Eighth Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword gave birth to the Nine Tribulations Sword once again, and he began to change the world. The existing power structure was then overturned. The Diwu Clan eventually lost its power, and declined. And, the Zhuge Clan emerged in its place..."

"So, that's what happened." Chu Yang heaved a deep sigh, "That's very unfortunate."

"Moreover, only 2 or 3 youngsters from my Diwu Clan had managed to survive. The others had perished in that catastrophe. Their likes included several Saint-level ancestors, and several dozen Monarch-level powerhouses! Thousands of years of heritage was destroyed in a moment! The surviving members were forced to live under subjugation, and were received by the Zhuge Clan as slaves..."

"Slaves..." Chu Yang inhaled a mouthful of cold air.

"However, my Diwu Clan managed to progress along with the millenniums of evolution... thanks to the fortune that it had always been a clan of wise people. It couldn't rise back to its previous glory. But, it managed to attain great merits, and eventually got rid of its 'slave' status. Then, the Diwu Clan became the retainer of the Zhuge Clan. Moreover, its status gradually consolidated with time. The next thousand years came to pass, and the clan's younger generation managed to grow proficient-enough to receive the same education as the juniors of the main clan. So,

they began to study subjects like ‘civil arts’ and ‘military strategies’."

Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes emitted a trace of radiance.

Chu Yang remained silent.

That was because he was thinking about what Diwu Qing Rou had just spoken. It had completely blown his mind away — 'Several Saint-level ancestors and dozens of Monarch-level powerhouses had perished in that catastrophe!'

[Saint level! Monarch level! If Diwu Qing Rou speaks the truth... then the ruling clans of the Upper Three Heavens will have lots of elusive powerhouses in their ranks! The Diwu Clan had seen the destruction of several Saint-level experts and dozens of Monarch-level experts during its decline...]

[And, this is just one clan! But, I will have to deal with all the super-clans of the Upper Three Heavens in the future!]

[This is the destiny of the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!]

"***!" Chu Yang’s heart began to race wildly.

"I was surnamed Diwu at the time of my birth. My dear father gave me the name ‘Qing Tian’; Diwu Qing Tian — the clear sky!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled mildly. It seemed as if he was talking about someone else, "The Zhuge Clan’s juniors are divided into two streams — civil arts and military arts. The civil and military arts need to be cultivated simultaneously, but there are some stringent rules.

"One can’t stain their own hands with blood in their entire life if they take up the civil cultivation. One would need to rely on one’s intellect to pacify the nation. One would need to use their wisdom and strategies to manipulate cause-and-effect." Diwu Qing Rou chuckled gently, "The Zhuge Clan has produced many powerhouses from their civil cultivation stream in the last ten thousand years. However, these powerhouses can only use their

wisdom to solve the problems. They can't use their martial power. So, the civil cultivators of the Zhuge Clan were basically compelled to do their utmost and develop strong mental capability... They obviously grew more and more clever overtime."

"Understood." Chu Yang had genuinely understood. [I have to say that the Zhuge Clan's ancestors were very far-sighted! This decision was unbelievably brilliant. That's because... it would ensure that the Zhuge Clan will see a steady rise in the IQ of its children... generation after generation.]

[Civil and military arts complement each other. Those who only possess extremely strong martial power and don't have any wisdom... will only be used as a 'spear' in someone else's hand on the long and enduring way to success...]

[An illiterate person can become a powerful warrior, but he will never become a wise-man!]

[This is the fundamental difference between a wise-man and a warrior!]

"A warrior follows the way of the hegemon. But, 'civil' is a gentle art." Diwu Qing Rou continued, "Every generation's civil cultivators stand out from the rest of the disciples in the clan. And, their status is also deemed highly by the clan. The clan designated me as a 'civil cultivator', and they changed my name to Diwu 'Qing Rou' — a gentle Diwu.

"The name 'Qing Rou' was given to me in order to remind me of my identity as a 'civil cultivator'." Diwu Qing Rou solemnly smiled.

"I see." Chu Yang nodded. He finally understood the reason why a great persona like Diwu Qing Rou had such a gentle name.

"Thirty years ago... on the 10,000th anniversary of the Zhuge Clan... the five wise sages of the Zhuge Clan launched a secret technique. These five peak-level sages exhausted their painstaking efforts and burnt the remaining of their lifespan, and calculated

that the emergence of the Ninth Master of Nine Tribulations Sword was close. However, the Zhuge Clan's destiny didn't seem optimistic. Therefore, they wanted to go against the heaven's will, and desired to change the fate..." Diwu Qing Rou said.

"Go against the heaven's will to change the fate!" Chu Yang was genuinely shocked by this. [So, there are others in this world... who have the same idea as me.]

"Perhaps I should say that we're actually trying to take advantage of 'fate energy' to change the destiny set by the heaven!" Diwu Qing Rou paused to think for a moment. And then, he slowly continued to explain further, "And, that is why we need the 'fate energy' of the Lower Three Heavens to complement one another... do you understand what I've said so far?"

Chu Yang nodded, "You're basically trying to somehow extract the fate energy of a nation, and direct it towards your Zhuge Clan with the use of some method. And, that will help it to last for another 10,000 years without a hitch, correct?"

"Correct!" Diwu Qing Rou looked at Chu Yang with amazement.

"And, this is your reason to come to Great Zhao, isn't it?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes."

Diwu Qing Rou said, "Simply put... this is using one person's power to overturn the entire world! However, a person can't suppress this kind of massive fate energy even if the said-person has achieved the imperial energy. So, the said-person will have to use their own life and spiritual power to pay the price for changing the destiny. The wise-men of the entire clan would set-up a 'fate energy channel', and would then extract the power of stars from the sky!

"The duty of this 'person' had fallen onto me. That's because... the said-person's vitality will drop sharply and might even exhaust

in its entirety once this procedure starts. The juniors of the main clan are very mindful of their lives, and don't wish to take such a risk. But I – Diwu Qing Rou – am an ambitious man. So, I took pride in the task of dominating the entire world! So what if I may die after I unify the world under my command...? People live for so many years, and they still don't accomplish a single thing. What's the point of having peerless talent if you waste-away your life doing nothing?

"Moreover, I had also seen the Star Destiny Technique in operation at that time. The others present there weren't even able to comprehend these strange techniques classified as the 'stargazing techniques'. But, I was able to grasp most of it to a great extent... though... my knowledge is limited to the 'Imperial Star Technique' that relates to the 'power struggles in a dynasty'. However, that was exceptionally advantageous for my mission."

Diwu Qing Rou spoke this, and then heaved a sad sigh. [So what if I learnt the Imperial Star Technique? What good did it do anyway? The appearance of the sky changed suddenly at the most critical time...]

"Therefore, I came to the Lower Three Heavens with my master once I had turned twenty. Then, my master arranged an array formation to absorb the fate energy. He spat up blood after that, and died... but, he gained an insight right before he died, and he adopted an orphan. This orphan became my junior brother-disciples. My master's last words were — my junior brother-disciple will help me accomplish this mission. And then... my master passed away. He left behind me and my junior brother-disciple to rely upon one-another for survival."

"I adored my junior brother-disciple, and taught him wholeheartedly while I was looking for an opportunity. Finally, the appearance of the stars brightened after five years, and I found out that Great Zhao was destined to become the ruler of this world! So, I went to Great Zhao, and I worked my way up slowly... and

gradually... but, my junior brother-disciple remained hidden in the shadows. And, he left me and went to Iron Cloud once I had gained a strong foothold in Great Zhao."

Diwu Qing Rou's eyes revealed a trace of pain and sorrow, "But then... he was killed... by you!"

"Killed by me?" Chu Yang was stunned, "Who are you talking about?"

"Tang Xin Sheng!" Diwu Qing Rou viciously glared at Chu Yang as he spoke the name word-by-word, "He was my junior brother-disciple!"

"Eh..." Chu Yang was dumbstruck. A slight chill suddenly rose in his heart!

That was because he recalled Diwu Qing Rou's words — my master had adopted an orphan when he was on the verge of death. And, that orphan became my junior brother-disciple. My master's last words were that... my junior brother-disciple will help me in accomplishing this mission!

[This ability of foresight genuinely goes against the heaven's will!]

Chu Yang clearly remembered the scenery from his previous life. Diwu Qing Rou had dominated the Great Zhao, and had conquered the entire world. Even Iron Cloud Nation – which had been the hardest nut to crack – had been thoroughly crushed by Diwu Qing Rou and Tang Xin Sheng!

It could be said that Tang Xin Sheng had genuinely helped Diwu Qing Rou in accomplishing the most difficult part of this mission. And, Diwu Qing Rou's master had foreseen this when he was on the verge of death!

This had certainly increased the respect Chu Yang had for the wise-men of the Zhuge Clan in his heart. And, he was somewhat worried too since this was an incredible and mystical ability.

Diwu Qing Rou seemed to have sensed Chu Yang’s thoughts. So, he solemnly spoke, "You don’t need to worry. You must sacrifice your own life in order to use this ability!" His eyes revealed a somewhat cynical expression, "There are a lot of people in the world. But, those who are suddenly asked to sacrifice their lives for a cause and are perfectly happy to do so... I haven’t seen any such people..."

"Aren’t you also willing to do just that...?" Chu Yang asked in a sensitive manner.

"I have the ambitious and the determination to keep moving towards the great goal." Diwu Qing Rou answered calmly. He waited for a second, and then solemnly said, "And, I also have a family. Moreover, I’m just a... retainer!"

Chu Yang let out a dragged out ‘oh’ sound.

"Now, you know my history... as well as my identity." Diwu Qing Rou said, "Therefore, I have already kept my end of the deal, and I have spoken frankly and openly with you tonight."

"Yes," Chu Yang acknowledged.

"Moreover, I guess that you don’t plan to play for a long time with me in this war!" Diwu Qing Rou spoke with a profound look that had suddenly appeared in his eyes.

"That may not be necessary." Chu Yang’s heart was stirred a little. Yet, he smiled and said, "I will play slowly if you want to play slowly. And, I will fight quickly if you want fight quickly. I’m fine with both."

Diwu Qing Rou chuckled, and leisurely said, "Now, I am going to place an opportunity in front of you — the opportunity to end this war in a very short time!"

Chapter 424: Condition!

"You mean... tonight?" Chu Yang gave him a piercing stare.

"I can read Imperial Star Technique..." Diwu Qing Rou smiled, "The Emperor Star is dazzling the entire world at present, and it's basing itself on Iron Cloud's side. This means that Iron Cloud will come out victorious no matter how long the war continues. I can't change the providence even if I have incredible abilities."

The tip of Chu Yang's eyebrows moved as he looked at Diwu Qing Rou in astonishment. He hadn't expected the opposite party to be this honest. He said, "Have you seen the final outcome?"

"Yes." Diwu Qing Rou put on a deep smile, "That's why I have come here!"

Chu Yang smiled back.

[Indeed, Diwu Qing Rou would've never come here if the victory were in his hands!]

"State your condition." Chu Yang spoke in a relaxed manner.

"Now... you're also aware that this stuff called 'fate energy' is illusory, but it's extremely important for a clan. Moreover, the Zhuge Clan isn't the only one that needs fate energy..." Diwu Qing Rou's smile revealed a profound meaning, "... My Diwu Clan needs fate energy as well!"

"Fate energy..." Chu Yang pondered for a second. Then, he honestly confessed, "But, I don't understand the stuff you're talking about in its entirety..."

"You don't need to understand — I do!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled gently.

The noise of battle slowly started to reduce on the outside. It seemed like the enemy troops had started to retreat. However, Chu Yang didn't bother about it; Diwu Qing Rou didn't seem to care

either. In fact, he was alone in the enemy camp... surrounded by hundreds of thousands of troops... but, he wasn't least bit worried...

Some time passed-by. Chu Yang smiled indifferently and said, "What you said sounds right, but... to believe that things will happen in absolute accordance to what you said... I can't help but worry because I don't trust you!" His eyes were intently watching Diwu Qing Rou. He smiled and continued, "Unless you can give me a good-enough reason so that I can rest assured."

"I'm here to give you that exact reason." Diwu Qing Rou calmly explained, "Fate energy is very important. And, Zhuge Clan wants to extract fate energy by pumping it out of Great Zhao... but... Great Zhao wouldn't exist after this war ends!"

He let out a profound laugh and continued, "Therefore, Zhuge Clan won't have the fate energy they wish to extract..."

Chu Yang nodded, but his brain was constantly at work, and was rapidly processing a myriad of thoughts.

"So, the Zhuge Clan will be in trouble when Nine Tribulations Sword's Master ascends to the Upper Three Heavens this time." Diwu Qing Rou smiled.

"I don't understand..." Chu Yang shook his head. He seemed confused as he asked, "The Zhuge Clan doesn't necessarily have to face this 'misfortune' when Nine Tribulations Sword's Master ascends to the Upper Three Heavens, right? If these clans are modest and become friends with the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword... and don't provoke him... as long as they don't interfere with his work and mind their own business... he won't necessarily need to go out of his way to destroy the super-clans, right?"

"Ha ha ha..." Diwu Qing Rou couldn't help but laugh out loud, "Minister Chu, judging from what you've just said... one can say that... you are a man of great integrity even though you possess such superior wisdom and don't shy away from using strange and

sinister means!"

"Eh..." Chu Yang touched his nose in embarrassment. He genuinely didn't know what Diwu Qing Rou had meant by that...

"The Nine Heavens reshuffle each time the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master is born!" Diwu Qing Rou solemnly said, "But, why this reshuffle? This is the heaven's means to put things in order!"

"But, why reshuffle?" Chu Yang was following him closely; so, he asked. He faintly felt something about this topic... but, it was vague. So, he took advantage of this opportunity to ask the question in order to get to the bottom of it.

"Why does a nation's dynasty change?" Diwu Qing Rou asked a rhetorical question. Then, he himself replied, "That's because the former dynasty is so rotten that it has to be eliminated. The same applies to the Nine Heavens as well!"

Chu Yang nodded, "I agree with this point. Any clan that has monopolized power and enjoyed dominance for ten thousand years will certainly breed many malignant tumors. And, these malignant tumors are often deadly."

"Indeed, this is the reason." Diwu Qing Rou deeply nodded.

"The Nine Tribulations Sword's Master won't take the initiative to provoke the Zhuge Clan, but... the Zhuge Clan will provoke him for sure...! Something will surely happen without their knowledge of it... regardless of the clan's repeated attempts to stay out of trouble. Moreover, the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master won't accept any kind of peace settlement once this mishap occurs. And, these contradictions will continue to intensify. The Zhuge Clan will eventually find out that the opposite party was none other the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master. But, the situation would've intensified to such an extent that... even the divine intervention won't be able to restore it."

Diwu Qing Rou smiled deeply and said, "This is the predestined

fate; this is the destiny! And, the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master is the very origin of this predestined fate. Therefore, it stays by his side at all times, and doesn't separate from him... no matter what happens. He doesn't ever have to stir-up trouble, but the troubles will automatically find him!"

Diwu Qing Rou's gaze turned profound, "Even if he is at home sleeping — someone will come to rock his house, and force him to take revenge. He would try to look for justice and get an explanation, but this explanation is often never peaceful. So, he will have to resort to force when that happens... and then, people would die. And, the issue will continue to get bigger and bigger once people start to die."

Diwu Qing Rou put on a mysterious smile and asked, "Do you know why?"

"I don't." Chu Yang replied in honesty.

"It's called 'inexorable fate' in the Nine Heavens Continent. It corresponds to the term 'tribulation' in the name of Nine Tribulations Sword." Diwu Qing Rou chucked, "But, it is called the 'center effect' in the astrology. And, the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master is at the center of everything.

"Let's treat the Nine Heavens Continent as a stage for drama. And, the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master becomes the main character!" Diwu Qing Rou's cold eyes flashed and released a sharp light as he continued in a sinister and vicious tone, "However, the path of the protagonist is never free of problems!"

"So, that's how it is!" Chu Yang deeply nodded and said, "So, in the end... all of this can be described by this one term which is... 'providence', right?"

Diwu Qing Rou laughed heartily, "Exactly!"

His sharp eyes glanced at Wu Qian Qian, and a mysterious smile appeared on his face as he said, "Minister Chu, for example... if you

were the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master... you were at home and didn't do anything to any clan. You didn't offend anyone, but suddenly... here comes a young ruffian... a lecher who lives for sex. And one day, he comes, ties up an outstanding beauty like Miss Wu, and takes her away... I would like to ask you — will you let him off?"

He didn't wait for Chu Yang's reply, and continued further, "Assume that this young ruffian has the backing of one of the nine super-clans, and his father is at the helm of the clan — will you let him off?"

Chu Yang was stunned for a moment. But then, he firmly replied, "How can I forgive that f*ker so easily?"

Wu Qian Qian's face turned red.

"Right? This is exactly what you call 'fate'!" Diwu Qing Rou explained in a calm manner, "The ordinary people call it 'fate'. And, they can only accept their fate. But, the fate that manifests in the case of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master is called 'inexorable fate'! The inexorable fate of that young ruffian's clan..."

The so-called 'condition' that Diwu Qing Rou wanted to talk about had merely been mentioned in the conversation, but it hadn't yet been elaborated because Chu Yang had branched-off the discussion in a different direction. However, Diwu Qing Rou wasn't in a rush; nor was he irritated. He was doing his best to dispel Chu Yang's doubts instead...

This was very strange...

Diwu Qing Rou had patience and foresight... yet he shouldn't have to be so patient with Chu Yang.

"I see... so the Nine Heavens basically revolve around the Nine Tribulations Sword." Chu Yang took a long deep breath, "Or, to put it simply — the providence exists to bring about the change of rule

in the Nine Heavens. And, that's why the Nine Tribulations Sword is revered in the Nine Heavens!"

"Yes!" Diwu Qing Rou solemnly and respectfully replied.

They didn't speak again for a long time.

"How do you wish to cooperate?" Chu Yang asked. He brought this up on his own accord, and this could be considered as 'returning the favor' against Diwu Qing Rou's acts of sharing this information.

"My heart was set on this matter when I came to the Lower Three Heavens. So, I secretly studied the 'fate energy shift' channel, and built a small one myself..." Diwu Qing Rou smiled and continued, "It was small, but the entirety of the Diwu Clan's supplies — which they had been saving-up for the last 10,000 years — got consumed in one shot!"

"Oh?" Chu Yang raised his eyebrows.

"We obviously wouldn't dare to compete with the Zhuge Clan over the Great Zhao's fate energy. I had thought that Iron Cloud's noble imperial energy would still somewhat remain even if it loses in the war. But, its noble imperial energy would slowly start to dissipate in the world. However, the Zhuge Clan obviously wouldn't be interested in the leftover fate energy of the losing side. Such being the case... it would transform into a cheap bargain for my Diwu Clan! Moreover, a small array formation like this one won't impact my lifespan much — only 30 years... and, I can easily afford to pay with 30 years of my lifespan."

Diwu Qing Rou continued, "Therefore... it will be amazing for the survival of my Diwu Clan if Iron Cloud wins... Of course, I will have to first escape from the wrath of the Zhuge Clan for failing in the mission... then comes the rest."

"I see..." Chu Yang gasped. [It's hard to imagine that Diwu Qing Rou had been secretly working on such a move during those years.]

[This guy always keeps a way out for himself... regardless of what situation he's in!]

"However, I will be in imminent peril if that happens." Diwu Qing Rou laughed bitterly, "That's because I was only going to collect the residual fate energy. It was obviously just a casual arrangement. However... it seems that the Iron Cloud is going to win this war! This... is tantamount to the providence playing a merciless game with me. If my Diwu Clan really absorbs the fate energy of Iron Cloud by the time the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master arrives to dominate the Nine Heavens... that is when I – Diwu Qing Rou – will dissipate between heaven and earth!

"And, this originates from the fact that I had originally planted a small array! So, the end result is – the arrival of good fortune is always beyond expectation for a person!" Diwu Qing Rou faced towards the sky, and heaved a deep sigh.

Chu Yang was suddenly caught off-guard by this. He had been admiring Diwu Qing Rou's mysterious mechanisms and unpredictable methods a moment ago. But, he didn't know that it would evolve into this in an instant...

"I would gladly give-up my life if I can make my Diwu Clan last forever..." Diwu Qing Rou solemnly spoke-up, "But, I had truly arranged the array in a hurry... because for the fate energy to form – in-particular this type of fate energy... whose production depends on the rise and fall of a nation – it is required that blood and vital energy shoot up to the sky!"

"Blood and vital energy shoot up to the sky?" Chu Yang's face was as expressionless as a deadpan. He though in his heart, [It's no wonder that Diwu Qing Rou launched the war in such a blunt manner. So, that's how it is...]

"However, you must've guesses that something was off after the way I openly attacked... and then shadily retreat. In fact, you must've seen the flaw. So, you won't fall into my trap." Diwu Qing

Rou insipidly said.

"As the matter stands — a decisive battle may not happen! And, the fate energy won't be enough if I retreat because the Great Zhao will become frail day-after-day, while the Iron Cloud will start to shine like the midday sun. It will slowly flourish in the beginning, and reach the peak of its power. Then, it will get eroded with the progression of time. However, there will be no production of people's fighting spirit or fate energy..."

"Therefore, I need a decisive battle!" Diwu Qing Rou slowly clenched his teeth and said, "...8 million people invested entirely in a decisive battle of extermination! Then... you must defeat me in this decisive battle!"

Chapter 425: A Foolproof Plan!

Chu Yang's complexion turned heavy.

"Your Iron Cloud Army can make a surprise attack as soon as I withdraw tomorrow morning. Fight a decisive battle with my returning army, and that will give you – King of Hell Chu – a glorious victory!" Diwu Qing Rou continued further, and he stressed on each word as he spoke, "I suppose I will owe you a big one!"

"What if I say no?" Chu Yang asked without any expression.

"Then... I will lead the army, and return to Great Zhao. I – Diwu Qing Rou – may never exterminate Iron Cloud in my entire life, but Iron Cloud will never get to unify the entire world! And, I won't be facing any imminent disaster either. After all, my martial power is enough to allow me to live for two or three hundred years without any problem. But, I don't know whether Minister Chu can afford to wait for 2 or 3 centuries!"

Diwu Qing Rou raised his face, and looked at Chu Yang as he slowly spoke one word at a time.

Chu Yang stood up with a gloomy face, and wrinkled his eyebrows tightly. Then, he began to pace back and forth.

One could doubtlessly say that Diwu Qing Rou had been 'prefacing' until now. He had waited for the right moment to state his condition! Moreover, this condition had struck Chu Yang's weakest spot — time...!

200-300 years!

Could Chu Yang afford to wait if this situation continued for two or three centuries? He simply couldn't wait that long! He just couldn't afford to wait that long... no matter what!

However, this matter involved the lives of 8 million soldiers!

The war could end right away if Chu Yang accepted Diwu Qing Rou's proposition. And, the victor of the world would be decided at once. Moreover, he would be completing the first big step towards reversing the Nine Heavens! He could then leave the Lower Three Heavens, and go to the Middle Three Heavens. And, this had been his desire for a long time...!

That was the place where his beloved was trapped in the abyss of suffering. And, she was waiting for him to come and rescue her. That was the place where his good brothers were fighting a bloody battle for their common future... where his own master was expectantly awaiting his arrival...

Therefore, Chu Yang wanted to go!

However... Chu Yang couldn't afford to pay the price by sacrificing 8 million lives! It was normal for soldiers to die in a war. If a great decisive battle were to take place today, and Diwu Qing Rou hadn't come like this in advance — then, Chu Yang would've personally killed millions of people without facing the slightest psychological burden!

Because... this was war! And, it's either you die or I die in an unstoppable war!

However, Diwu Qing Rou had arrived, and had told Chu Yang his plan. Moreover, he also told him the upcoming situation of war... as well as the conclusion. And, this was tantamount to these two people planning to achieve the same goal...

This was equivalent to these two men plotting to kill 8 million people for their own benefit!

However, Chu Yang couldn't afford to pay such a price!

It seemed as if Diwu Qing Rou had spotted Chu Yang's sense of urgency. So, he leisurely awaited Chu Yang's response after he had proposed his condition.

"Why do you think that I can't afford to wait?" Chu Yang

hesitated a little, and then said, "The Great Zhao will have Diwu Qing Rou, but you can’t hold on for two or three centuries! I have the absolutely certainty that I will destroy Great Zhao after 3 to 5 decades if you genuinely retreat right now!"

"3 to 5 decades... you all will wait for so long?" Diwu Qing Rou didn’t deny. Instead, he asked a question. But, he didn’t wait for Chu Yang to speak. Instead, he gently laughed and said, "Your means have been swift and decisive with a desire for quick results ever since you’ve come to Iron Cloud. Yet, your actions are quite violent, and the repercussions caused by your actions have also been massive. Your methods are quite thunderous, but they aren’t the ways of ruling a nation.

"In fact, you could’ve used milder methods for each one of those matters. And, these milder methods wouldn’t have had any side-effects either. In fact, there are no means which you’re not aware of... yet you didn’t use any of those methods."

Diwu Qing Rou continued in an indifferent manner, "As for your trip to Great Zhao... you didn’t need to go — but you still did."

He pondered, and then looked at Chu Yang, "I’ve always felt that there is a strong sense of purpose in every action you take! I don’t know your goal, but I know that your world doesn’t lie in the Lower Three Heavens!"

He resolutely looked at Chu Yang. Chu Yang also looked at him calmly. And, a long time passed... Then, Diwu Qing Rou said, "You are looking forward to a bigger world! A world that only belongs to you! So, forget about 3 to 5 decades... you can’t even wait for 3 to 5 years!"

Wu Qian Qian was standing behind Chu Yang. Her tender body shook a little. She was someone who understood Chu Yang the best, and she knew that Diwu Qing Rou’s guess couldn’t be regarded as speculation... it was a fact!

"So, I launched the decisive battle ahead of time. You shouldn’t

oppose it. It’s just that the people who will die in the battle will be far more than anticipated," Diwu Qing Rou revealed a cruel smile.

"I'm curious why you had this suddenly had a chance of heart." Chu Yang twisted his eyebrows, "You talked about your clan’s destiny – that is one reason. However, I’m not convinced that this is the only reason!"

Diwu Qing Rou fell silent for a good while... then, he finally said, "At that time... I hadn’t expected that the Diwu Clan would be able to bring about a change in its fortunes. And, I came to the Lower Three Heavens for the purpose of not allowing my talent and knowledge to go to waste. I also wanted to become a minister who has given outstanding service, and is remembered for all eternity! Even if I were merely a temporary minister... my name would be immortalized if I could unify the world!

"I only desired a false reputation in this mortal world," Diwu Qing Rou spoke in disappointed and frustrated manner, "But, I hadn’t anticipated that the sky’s appearance would suddenly reverse right before I would set upon the final step to achieve success. This made a lifetime of painstaking efforts go to waste! In other words... even the heaven doesn’t want my name – Diwu Qing Rou – to be immortalized!"

His eyes suddenly lost their shine. His elegant tone changed, and became scary as he slowly spoke in a supple voice, "I can’t leave my good name in the history for hundreds of generations to come... So, I would rather have my name go down in history as a ‘byword’ for ‘infamy’! I can’t have a good reputation for a thousand years... So, I desire eternal infamy!

"Therefore, I’ve deliberately arranged this ‘playground of death’!" Diwu Qing Rou looked at Chu Yang, and slowly said, "So, do you agree with me or not? It will be very advantageous if you agree with me..."

"As for the 8 million soldiers..." Diwu Qing Rou indifferently said,

"The lifespan of moles, crickets and ants is anyway not long..."

"This decision is too insane... I can't agree with you!" Chu Yang solemnly replied. A hint of pain appeared in his eyes. He said, "8 million people... are going to be ruined by my hands in one stroke! My heart isn't that ruthless!"

Diwu Qing Rou was stunned by this reply. He gazed at him for a good while, and then said, "King of Hell Chu..."

"King of Hell rewards the benevolent, but punishes the evil." Chu Yang continued with a blank face, "If the war broke out under normal circumstances, and I ended up killing 8 million people all by myself... I will be calm, and I will retain a clear conscience because they wanted to kill me. But, you want me to be a part of this plan... I — Chu Yang — feel it beneath my dignity to do something like this!"

"Well, you must know... Great Zhao's soldiers will retreat as soon as I go back. Then, there will be a violent war for at least 3 to 5 decades!" Diwu Qing Rou said, "That war will inevitably continue for 3 to 5 decades. It won't give rise to bloody destiny or anything, but... the total number of war-dead will be far greater than 8 million when gathered together!

"You must be thinking that you're being's 'benevolent' by not deciding the life or death of 8 million people. However, there will be at least 16 million casualties in the future if the war continues. Could it be that they aren't living beings?" Diwu Qing Rou clicked his tongue loudly.

"Those are living beings, but at least I will have a clear conscience!" Chu Yang faintly smiled, "But, I won't be able to live with myself if I plot together with my enemy to slaughter my own soldiers — even if it's just one life!

"I desire to live with a clear conscience. I won't hesitate to wield my sword... even if I have to hack down everyone in the Nine Heavens as long as I have a magnanimous reason to believe in!"

Chu Yang seemed to have untied the matter that was gnawing at his mind, and spoke in a pure and honest manner, "But, violating my own belief and plotting against my own people is something I simply can’t do... no matter what!

"This is the motto of King of Hell Chu!"

Chu Yang said proudly.

Chu Yang suddenly felt that his mental cultivation had gone a step further after he had unexpectedly uncovered this layer of psychological barrier!

"Clap, Clap, Clap." Diwu Qing Rou surprisingly began to applaud softly. He then said in a praising manner, "As is expected of King of Hell Chu! You are worthy of being called a ‘maverick’."

The ground suddenly shook at this moment.

Chu Yang’s face suddenly changed color. He looked at Diwu Qing Rou with a sharp look in his eyes.

Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said, "I still wish to give you this magnificent victory... even if you don’t want it! Moreover, I will still owe you one! And, I understand that this is indeed somewhat aggrieving."

Chu Yang’s face turned pale.

The sound of tremors slowly moved far away... but their effect still lasted for a long time.

This was obviously the sound produced by millions of troops setting out!

"The pursuit has already started?" Chu Yang was somewhat at a loss.

"It went as expected... a total of 3 million soldiers from Tie Long Cheng and Tie Bu Tian’s army have been sent to the battlefield! Only your troops remain here," Diwu Qing Rou chuckled.

"Minister Chu, we have talked on many subjects since I came

here... but, did you notice that I would pause on every topic." Diwu Qing Rou made himself comfortable in his seat. Then, he said with a smile, "You have spoken a total of 179 sentences ever since I've come in. And, it took you only half an hour."

"However, I spoke a total of 421 sentences in order to deal with your 179 sentences, and that took an hour-and-half!" Diwu Qing Rou continued, "Two hours have passed by. And... it's already dawn."

"These two hours were enough for Tie Long Cheng to react and initiate the pursuit," Diwu Qing Rou chuckled loudly.

Chu Yang's countenance turned cold. And, he went out at once.

"They've already been dispatched. And, they would soon be stepping into my trap. It's already too late even if you wish to rush out right now. Minister Chu, your three-hundred-thousand troops will determine the outcome of war... it is best that you don't act blindly without thinking," Diwu Qing Rou solemnly said.

Chu Yang's foot — that had firmly stepped out of the tent — suddenly came to a halt. He turned around, and looked at Diwu Qing Rou. And, his pupils suddenly contracted, "You tricked me?"

"How couldn't I?" Diwu Qing Rou chuckled, "Besides, this is like giving you a big present..."

Chu Yang slowly sat down. He calmed down and asked, "How did you determine... that Tie Long Chen would attack?"

"That's because... Tie Long Cheng is the Supreme Commander, but the decision-making power lies with you!" Diwu Qing Rou said, "Tie Long Cheng has independently supported Iron Cloud for a very long time. He has performed a great service through hard work... and that too without the slightest trace of selfishness! So, Tie Bu Tian will never object to his decision. In fact, he's the person whom Tie Bu Tian trusts the most. It's more like a 'blind trust' scenario! Therefore, this uncle-nephew duo lacks fear!"

Diwu Qing Rou sighed, "This was my biggest assurance to defeat Iron Cloud, but it’s going to help it to succeed under the present circumstances... Ha-ha, the providence is truly hard to fathom.

"And, according to my plan — Tie Long Cheng would eventually step into my trap. And, once he does... so would Tie Bu Tian. You were the only one who could possibly turn the tide! Therefore, you were the only random variable in the entire plan..."

Diwu Qing Rou solemnly said, "So tonight, I didn’t come here to talk about the condition with you... I came here to keep you distracted... for two hours!" he continued with a strange and mysterious smile, "And, keeping you tied-down for two hours wasn’t very difficult for someone like Diwu Qing Rou.

"However, these two hours have already determined the present situation! And, you’re already powerless. You can’t reverse this desperate situation... even if you were to be the Nine Tribulations Sword’s Master! Not to mention... that you’re not!" Diwu Qing Rou slowly said.

Chapter 426: The Decisive Battle Begins!

Chu Yang calmly asked, "But, how could you have been so sure that Tie Long Cheng would fall into your trap?"

"Tie Long Cheng is the continent's number one 'famous general'. But, I've suppressed him for ten or more years! He would win if I wanted him to win. And, he would lose if I wanted him to lose!" Diwu Qing Rou said with a smile, "Would you not be aggrieved if you were in his shoes? And, would you not want revenge?"

"I would." Chu Yang replied in the affirmative. [Anyone would feel aggrieved after going through something like that. In fact, it brings an even more deeply-rooted shame for a man who's been considered a genius commander and a famous general of his generation!]

"Therefore, it can be said that there's a devil in Tie Long Cheng's mind. And, he's desperately looking for a chance to defeat me – Diwu Qing Rou – fair and square. However, he knows this very well that taking revenge on me is as difficult a task as ascending to the heavens is! So, I figured that he would be willing to take a heavensent opportunity more than anyone else... once I would create this said-opportunity for him. However, he would also hesitate more than anyone else. That's because he would be afraid of it being a trap since he knows how fierce I am.

"But, he would only need someone to affirm his 'pursuit plan' at this juncture! In fact, he would just need one affirmation — that's all." Diwu Qing Rou said, "And, he would be able to turn his own hesitation into determination as long as he receives this 'affirmation'!"

Diwu Qing Rou smiled and raised three fingers, "And, there are three people by his side who can play the role of this someone I spoke of – the person whom he'd need this affirmation from!"

Wu Qian Qian and Chu Yang held their breath.

"All of Iron Cloud's generals – who have followed Tie Long Cheng for all these years – have also been suppressed by me! So, as long as there's one person who gives their affirmation — they will swarm around to give their support... This is their psychology! They have been thirsting for revenge. And, this is the meritorious service they have been eager to render. They have longing to defeat Diwu Qing Rou — a man who has spread an unpleasantness in their hearts for so long ...

"However, I knew that Tie Long Cheng would most certainly desire to take your opinion because of your special status... even if he was sure about his pursuit plan. Therefore, Tie Long Cheng sent you a message after he had analyzed my intention of retreat. But, you are the only person who can be called an 'outsider' on this battlefield. In fact, you are the only 'bystander' here to be precise. And, as the saying goes — the spectator sees more of the game. Therefore, I firmly believed that you'd see through my plan...

"So, I came-in after the messenger delivered Tie Long Cheng's letter to you!" Diwu Qing Rou smiled, "My motive to arrive here was to keep you engaged for two hours... And on the other side... Tie Long Cheng must've continued to wait for your message while being urged by everyone to act. So, he must've eventually assumed that you've consented in a tacit manner. Moreover, he must've been rather impatient to start the pursuit because there was no time to lose. As they say — time never comes back once it's gone...

"Therefore, the mobilization of army was only inevitable!" Diwu Qing Rou insipidly continued, "This isn't just tailor-made for Tie Long Cheng's revenge on me, but it is also the best opportunity for Iron Cloud to dominate the world! So, he would surely desire to seize it. In fact, he would never miss it. He would rather take a risk... but he wouldn't miss it.

"And, that's how my plan became so simple!"

Diwu Qing Rou stood up leisurely, "Minister Chu, what you must prepare for... is the Golden Horse Riders Department. Of course, I

believe that you've already made preparations! Jing Meng Hun is no more than a clumsy clown in your eyes."

Then, he put on the mask. And, his seemingly weightless and slim body drifted out, "Minister Chu, I owe you one. And, I will surely return the favor if I have the good fortune to meet you in the Upper Three Heavens!

"I am saying goodbye at this point, but our noble connection shall last forever. I have a feeling that you and I will meet again!" Diwu Qing Rou said these last words, and then drifted away into the distance like the wind...

"Chu Yang, what should we do?" Wu Qian Qian asked anxiously.

Chu Yang was silent. His body floated out, and he went next to the flagpole. He then floated up to its top. He saw that the distant mountains were already on fire. And, the flames were soaring to the sky!

He quietly came down, and slowly said, "8 million soldiers have been thrown into the battlefield. So, we can only wait and see how things unfold..."

He paused, and then spoke further, "Order the army to go 25 Km forward! Tell them that they have to be prepared at all times to meet a contingency after they hear my order!"

"Yes!"

"Wu Kuang Yun!"

"Here!"

"Use the selected elite soldiers, all troops of Bu Tian Pavilions, and the experts of Beyond the Heavens Sect to form an army! But, keep the 300,000 troops separate! And, tell them to expect my order at any time!"

"Yes!"

The war had finally broken out. This was the moment Wu Kuang

Yun had been waiting for. So, this warm-blooded general was simply unable to control his excitement. And, he immediately had the bugle played as soon as he heard Chu Yang's order, and the 300,000 troops marched forward with a bang.

And, the collision between Bu Tian Pavilions and the Golden Horse Riders Department was about to begin!

Suddenly, the sounds of a series of mega explosions were heard from the distant mountains... the flames shot up to the sky. And, nearly half of the sky shone red...

Chu Yang's heart got heavy. After all, this was a matter of the lives of 8 million people. However, the heaviness in his heart started to subside as his warhorses advanced forward; step by step.

He became callous and tranquil; without any emotional ripples or surges...

[This is a catastrophe, and it has already begun. So... to bemoan the state of the universe, and pity the fate of mankind will only make me uncomfortable!]

[I must accept this, and then... overcome it!]

The three-hundred-thousand troops were shot towards the place where the flames were soaring to the sky like a sharp arrow!

Tie Long Cheng had immediately called the generals to discuss the matter after he had sent the letter to King of Hell Chu. But, the generals unanimously decided to attack almost immediately! The face of every individual was flushed with anger and excitement. And, they were brimming with fighting intention.

They had been oppressed by Diwu Qing Rou for so long. And, they had finally arrived at the turning point. So, how could they allow such a heavensent opportunity to slip-by?

Tie Bu Tian was distraught with anxiety. And, her mind was being troubled by another matter. So, she didn't think much, and quickly sent a reply — Imperial Uncle may take charge! And, I will

follow soon after; with my army!

Tie Bu Tian's affirmative reply made Tie Long Cheng heave a long sigh of relief. The fighting intention in his heart began to burn even more splendidly! However, King of Hell Chu's reply didn't come for some reason.

Time passed... little by little. And, the enemy had also retreated a little. Yet... there was still no message from King of Hell Chu.

"Supreme Commander! We can't wait any longer! Or... this opportunity will be lost!" the generals requested in unison.

"Maybe Minister Chu is already ready. Else, he would've already spoken his rejection," a staff officer spoke-up.

Tie Long Cheng angrily raised his brows at first. But then, he finally made a firm resolve and brandished his hand, "Mobilize the troops, and chase! Defeat Diwu Qing Rou!"

Earthquake-shattering cheers resounded. A bone-chilling fighting intention exploded in the night-sky with a loud bang!

Rapid and urgent bugle sounds resounded in a continuous. The vanguard teams of cavalry troops vigorously rushed out like angry dragons from various military camps. And then, they suddenly dashed into the darkness that lay ahead of them!

The uninterrupted rumbling sounds of the hoof-beats sounded like thunderclaps as they burst into the darkness. They were followed by a tide of over a one million troops!

Then, the rumbling sounds of tremors were heard along with a burst of hoof beats; Tie Bu Tian's troops had also started to rush out. They followed behind Tie Long Cheng's troops. And, they too were rushing towards Great Zhao's barracks to attack it.

Millions of people were set into action at the same time. And, their majestic might and grandeur was truly earthshaking!

Tie Long Cheng's army broke through Great Zhao's barracks

almost without facing any obstructions. And then, they looked around for a while... but only to find that a major portion of the army units had already disappeared without a trace. The only ones that were left behind were a few wounded enemy soldiers who hadn't been able to withdraw...

Therefore, Iron Cloud Army had comprehensively occupied Great Zhao barrack by the time Tie Long Cheng arrived.

"Reporting to Supreme Commander! There's no one left in the barracks," a cavalry soldier – who was among the first ones to burst into the barracks – came over to report. However, the barracks hadn't been completely empty in the beginning. But, the wounded soldiers had been chopped like vegetables on Tie Long Cheng's orders!

"Nobody?" Could it be that we arrived a bit late? Tie Long Cheng frowned, "Quickly scout the area!"

"Reporting to Supreme Commander! Great Zhao Army has retreated towards the mountain! Furthermore, the enemy troops who didn't get enough time to cross the mountains are in a difficult situation. So, they are trying to hurry on to escape," the mounted scout reported.

"Chase!" Tie Long Cheng made a prompt decision.

A large brigade of cavalry soldiers dashed towards the mountain like a surging tide.

Tie Long Cheng's cavalry troops dashed out of the Great Zhao barrack, and continued to pursue ahead. The rear part of Tie Long Cheng's army entered the Great Zhao barrack, and Tie Bu Tian's vanguard troops arrived outside the barracks...

At this time...

The bugle sounds suddenly sounded from the hilltop and echoed everywhere. This was followed by a loud bang. And, a large number of Great Zhao's cavalry troops rushed down from the

summit at a very high speed. They then readied their bows and arrows after they had rushed down halfway, and aimed towards the sky!

"Shoot!"

Hundreds of thousands of arrows were shot as the verbal command was issued. Everyone heard loud whooshing sounds, and felt a pain in their ears that was caused by the strong vibrations in their eardrums. Then, a dense rain of arrows appeared in the sky... and literally dyed it black!

"Ambush?" Tie Long Cheng sneered. He was pursuing the enemy. So, how could he not have expected to run into an ambush?

He issued an order. And, the Iron Cloud Army immediately calmed down after a short period of panic. And then, each soldier started to look for cover behind the mountain wall. The formation model also changed to defense.

"Diwu Qing Rou, I was already prepared for this move of yours," Tie Long Cheng laughed heartily.

"Kill!" the battle cries – which could shake the heaven – echoed everywhere as countless men and horses of Great Zhao rushed down from the summit.

Tie Long Cheng's complexion suddenly changed. An incredibly brilliant light flashed in his eyes, "Decisive battle?"

He had already expected that Diwu Qing Rou might have prepared an ambush, but he hadn't expected that Diwu Qing Rou would abandon his military supplies to start a decisive battle!

One could look at the Great Zhao troops that were swarming-in, and clearly tell that the entire army had been mobilized!

It took time to describe the scene, but the vanguard cavalry troops of the two armies had already clashed by now! The battle cries shouting 'kill' resounded everywhere soon after. Everyone drew out their weapons. And, the dark sky was illuminated by the

brilliant sword lights!

They put on a sinister expression, and began to bellow loudly. The horse crashed against each other, and burst into each other's formation! The two vanguard cavalries crazily advanced into the opposite formation — not knowing whether it were their enemies or friends who were falling from their horses... one after another... and getting trampled into meat and mud!

However, nobody cared about that because everyone had only one conviction in their heart — [I must kill the enemy! I must break into the enemy's formation and keep chiseling forward! And then, I must turn around and come back killing the entire way!]

"Kill!"

Hundreds of thousands of people were blowing-off steam at the same time. Even the sky was outright scared. A gleam of light appeared on the horizon at this moment!

The neighing sound of the warhorses, the screams of people, the war cries as well as the sound of clashes — these had made a cluster of sounds. The vanguard cavalry troops of Iron Cloud had already rushed to the abdomen of Great Zhao's cavalry. Similarly, the Great Zhao's vanguard had slaughtered their way to the center of Iron Cloud's cavalry!

It could be said that there was no strategy left on the battlefield by now — just kill kill kill! And, the so-called 'martial art skills' were practically useless in such a battle...! People's heads were being constantly shot-up into the sky. Their chopped-off limbs were also flying everywhere. The warhorses were dropping unceasingly. And, dozens of people were dying with each passing second!

Everyone had gone berserk! This was one crazy war!

Chapter 427: Diwu Departs

Countless flags fluttered in the howling winds as they made their way into the battlefield. And, millions of troops surged into the battlefield like roaring tides!

Great Zhao's barracks had already turned into a full-fledged battlefield! More than six million people were engaged in a brutal fight... slashing at each other... attacking and killing each other!

Suddenly, the flames danced and spread across the barracks at a lightning speed. The swaying flames then surged all around. A loud rumbling noise resounded with a bright flash. Then, an earth-shattering explosion occurred in the center of the Great Zhao's barracks!

This violent explosion had created a big hole in the central region, and it had a radius of hundreds of feet. Those who were present in the center – whether enemy or friend... and regardless of their military rank — had been blasted to the sky. And, their body parts had scattered everywhere!

Then, the barracks suddenly caught fire. And, the raging flames spread rapidly and uncontrollably at a lightning speed. It was too late to stop it. The fire had pervaded for 250-300 meters in a short period of time. And, it continued to spread towards the periphery at a rapid pace!

Intermittent bursts of yellow, green, purple and black smoke soared up to the sky. And, the smoke rapidly expanded throughout the battlefield in this windless and cloudless weather!

These smokes had clearly been added as 'extras'. Those who inhaled the yellow smoke started to feel dizzy, and their heads started to spin. And, they felt as if they were losing their sanity. It seemed as if their minds were caught in some kind of an inexplicable confusion. They shouted wildly, and frantically brandished their swords to attack and kill enemies and friend

alike... The chaotic war for unification had finally started!

The black smoke rose and spread everywhere. Those who inhaled it were rendered powerless from head to toe. In fact, they couldn't even control their eyelids. The weapons in their hands dropped to the ground with a clang. And, they could only watch their enemy's shining broadsword slash towards their own body with a look of fear on their face...

The green smoke tumbled up-and-around. Those who inhaled it were stimulated. And, they experienced a drastic rise in blood flow within their bodies. Therefore, they could now display endless strength. So, they clamored loudly, and attacked their enemies...

The dense purple smoke blasted out. And, those who inhaled it felt that there were flowers before them. They felt as if they were in a fairyland. Moreover, the blood vessels in their bodies dilated. They also went 'hard' down 'there'. Then, they started to visualize a stunning naked-beauty standing beside them...

Therefore, they couldn't help but gasp in excitement. And, they pounced forward like perverts. Obscene laughter, strange cries, and screaming sounds echoed everywhere... it was quite unsightly!

These smokes were a variety of narcotic drugs in reality. The Golden Horse Riders Department had collected them over dozens of years. Some could confuse or incapacitate people. Some had poisonous effects, while some worked as an aphrodisiac...

In short... various kinds of narcotic smokes — which could make people lose themselves — had been unleashed here! Moreover, they were unceasingly volatilizing along with the combustion...

Therefore, the density of narcotic smokes in the air was becoming higher and higher. They would soar upwards, and float toward the mountains. Then, they would hit the mountains, and drift back. And, these smokes continued to shroud the sky over the battlefield as a result. It seemed as if there was a huge magnet in the battlefield that was attracting these narcotic smokes... and

wasn’t allowing them to drift away…

The organized systems and disciplines were lost soon-after the war started. Everyone was fighting and killing in an instinctive manner. Whether it was the generals or foot-soldiers… everyone had lost their minds, and had fallen into utter confusion…

In Diwu Qing Rou’s tent

Jing Meng Hun was dressed in a suit of armor. He checked the time. Then, he got up and shouted, "We’re moving out! Inform everyone in the Golden Horse Riders Department to prepare for an attack! Our target is King of Hell Chu!"

"Yes!" everyone complied!

Jing Meng Hun was about to head-out when someone angrily shouted from outside, "How can this be? I want to see the Prime Minister! I want to see the Prime Minister!"

It was the ‘Hundred Wars’ Heavenly Dragon General — Yu Han.

He had madly rushed-in while shouting in a crazy manner, and had bumped right into Jing Meng Hun, "King Level Expert Jing, where’s the Prime Minister?"

"The Prime Minister isn’t here. You can tell me whatever you have to say," Jing Meng Hun coldly replied.

"What’s going on?" Yu Han angrily pointed at the frenzied battlefield that stood at the foot of the mountain. His pupils had turned bloodshot, "What kind of a f*ked-up fighting method is this?"

"General Yu, what are you talking about?" Jing Meng Hun looked at him in a discontented manner.

"I just want to ask… who ordered to detonate our barracks?!" Yu Han asked with grief and indignation.

"I did! It was my – Jing Meng Hun’s – order. And, the Golden Horse Riders Department executed the order. What about it?" Jing

Meng Hun snorted and asked.

"What?!" Yu Han’s grievance exploded as he roared loudly. He suddenly grabbed Jing Meng Hun by his collar, and then tightly clenched his teeth as he asked, "Why? How could you do such a thing?"

"This was Prime Minister’s order! You can go and ask him to give you an explanation if you have a problem." Jing Ming Hun looked at Yu Han's hand and spoke in an ice-cold voice, "Let go!"

"Bastard!" Yu Han got extremely furious. He suddenly landed a fierce slap on Jing Meng Hun’s face, and angrily shouted, "You’ve obviously detonated them ahead of time. And, that why the Great Zhao Army has had to withstand the majority of the impact from these explosions and smokes! Why did you have to do it when our own people had rushed in?

"This is a crime!" Yu Han was shouting wildly with grief and indignation, "Iron Cloud will finish us at this rate! We’re already finished... do you even understand that? You son of a b*tch... those are my brothers... my soldiers... out there! My soldiers!"

Jing Meng Hun reached out with his hand, and caressed the part of his face where he had just received a slap. The look in his eyes resembled that of an eagle. But, he firmly suppressed his anger and killing intention, "Great General Yu, you have no authority to speak in this matter! And, as far as the timing of this attack is concerned... I – Jing Meng Hun – knew what I was doing. Moreover, I acted according to Prime Minister’ plan. Now, you need let go! And, I’m not troubled that you slapped me!"

Yu Han angrily yelled, "Slapped you? Bastard, even chopping you to pieces will be difficult to make up for the heinous crime that you’ve just committed! What you have done is pure murder! This is deliberate rebellion! I must see the Prime Minister! I must meet Diwu Qing Rou!"

The killing intention was blazing more and more ferociously in

Jing Meng Hun's eyes, "General Yu, there are some things that you must never say."

Yu Han drew his long sword with a 'clang', and suddenly slashed towards Jing Meng Hun as he cursed out loud, "You murderer... you and Diwu Qing Rou are both murderers... gah..."

Jing Meng Hun suddenly extended his hand, and grabbed Yu Han's neck. Then, he raised Yu Han's burly body, and maliciously clenched his teeth as he spoke, "Who do you think you are? What does this have to do with you? Your soldiers, you say? You think yours soldiers can't die? Do you think that you have quite the face? Do you believe that I wouldn't kill you?"

Yu Han struggled to break free, "I dare you! Kill me if you have the guts! Because if you don't kill me, Jing Meng Hun... I will..."

His speech was abruptly interrupted by a snapping sound. Yu Han's neck crooked to one side. And, blood flowed out form the corners of his mouth. His eyes opened wide in a stare, and looked at Jing Meng Hun with a look of disbelief in them. Then, his body went limp... only a pair of rigid eyes was left behind, and they were filled with hatred and anger!

Jing Meng Hun had 'actually' broken his neck.

Everyone present inside the tent exclaimed. Then, they were left dumbstruck! [Did Jing Meng Hun just kill a top-ranked general?]

"You overestimated your capabilities!" Jing Meng Hun coldly snorted. Then, he casually tossed General Yu's dead body away. He then said, "Follow me! We're going to kill King of Hell Chu!"

It didn't take long for a 'fresh' piece of news to spread in the Great Zhao's barracks; the Heavenly Dragon General Yu – who had fought a hundred wars – had been assassinated by Iron Cloud.

Yu Han had 600,000 soldiers under his command. And, Diwu Qing Rou had kept this unit in the rear to provide support. Moreover, Yu Han was a person of virtue and prestige. He loved his

soldiers very much, and had always treated them as his own children. In fact, he would always come to their rescue whenever needed. However, he was now dead. So, these soldiers had been reduced to a flock of dragons without a leader. And, this had created a serious disturbance in their ranks.

Hundreds-of-thousands of troops were weeping at the new of this death!

"We must average our Great Genera! Kill those Iron Cloud bastards!" It was hard to tell who... but someone suddenly bellowed with tears flowing out of his reddened eyes.

"Let's go! Kill those bastards!" Dozens of soldiers of the higher ranks rode down towards the battlefield; they were whipping their horses in a frenzied manner.

"Avenge the Great General..." Several thousand soldiers crazily dashed over with a loud rumbling sound.

"Charge forward!" The vice-general burst into tears. He clenched his teeth and shouted, "Butcher them all!"

'Bang' almost 600,000 soldiers rushed down from the mountain. They resembled a waterfall as they descended from the higher ground, and fiercely smashed down.

The 30,000 riders of the Golden Horse Riders Department bellowed as these people rushed down, and turned to set out in another direction!

The hilltop had been densely crowded a moment ago. But, it had suddenly become empty; not a soul was in sight!

The cold breeze had started to blow. The thick smoke was fluttering about, and had covered the summit. A person's figure in black clothing walked out from the thick smoke. This black figure then appeared at the summit. He started to gaze at the battlefield below... where the decisive battle was going-on in full-swing. And, he calmly listened to the shouts and battle cries which could shake

the heaven and earth. Diwu Qing Rou's hands were crossed behind his back as he watched this bloodbath with a calm and gentle look in his eyes.

It seemed as if this tragic scene of bloodbath had nothing to do with him.

His black robe was fluttering in the wind... so was the beard under his jaw. He had a calm and composed expression on his face. He seemed callous... just like a Daoist immortal.

He continued to look this way for quite some time. Then, he heaved a soft sigh. He took out an invisible falcon from his bosom, and placed it on his palm. He stared at it for a long time, and then opened his palm as he gently said, "Go."

A sound of fluttering wings was heard as the invisible falcon flew up into the sky. It circled in the air once. Then, it disappeared without a trace... as if it had melted in the air...

This was a message that contained an order for Yin Wu Fa and Yun Wu Tian — who had stayed back in Great Zhao's Continent Center Citadel. Diwu Qing Rou had written only a few words in the message that this invisible falcon was carrying — Begin the blood purge in the Continent Center. Exterminate the Imperial Clan!

This message was followed by Diwu Qing Rou's personal stamp.

Diwu Qing Rou smiled faintly as he watched the invisible falcon disappear. Then, he turned his gaze in Chu Yang's direction, and gently spoke to himself, "King of Hell Chu, I owe you one for this time, but you must never forget that you owe me one as well! You and I will meet again... when you come to the Upper Three Heavens! At that time... sigh..."

He looked at the battlefield after he had heaved a deep sigh. Then, he turned his head and looked in the direction of Great Zhao's Continent Center. He would have to abandon it now. But, his unwillingness to leave that place was clearly visible in his eyes.

He clearly didn’t wish to leave. However, he didn’t say anything in the end, and only heaved a long sigh…

A long moment passed. Then, Diwu Qing Rou muttered in a sad and gloomy voice… as if he was sleep-talking, "Lower Three Heavens… so my job here has come to an end… just like that? I’m afraid I will never come back to this place…"

The sky had turned increasingly bright. And, the morning breeze had gradually begun to blow stronger. All sorts of narcotic smokes — which had originally enveloped the battlefield — seemed to have completed their mission, and had slowly begun to drift away…

The dispersion of these smokes became faster and faster as the winds grew stronger and stronger…

The smoke rushed to the top of the mountain with a gust of wind, and shrouded Diwu Qing Rou’s slim body. Then, the thick smoke dispersed. Diwu Qing Rou’s figure had disappeared without a trace…

Chapter 428: Who Was the One Who I?

The war’s situation had become even more chaotic!

Yu Han's army rushed into the battlefield, and was immediately enchanted by the narcotic smoke. These people were already lost in grief and indignation. So, this suddenly made them go berserk...

It seemed as if millions of people had lost their sanity in this war. They were wantonly charging forward, and violently killing in an indiscriminate manner!

Tie Bu Tian had also rushed into the battlefield. He was followed by the shadows, and his army. They soon discovered that something fishy was going on. The narcotic smokes were rising from every direction. And, the two shadows suddenly felt that this was far from good. They then went all-out at the risk of their lives to rescue Tie Bu Tian, and brought him out of there.

The dense smoke was floating about. So, the by-standing soldiers started to lose their sanity as well, and rushed into the battlefield one after another. However, Tie Bu Tian and the two shadows managed to come out unscathed.

Something on Tie Bu Tian’s chest would flash in a hazy manner every time the dense smoke would drift over. This object would then burst into radiance. Then, this radiance would shroud her entire body to protect her; the same happened with the shadows as well. All three of them were astonished in the beginning. But, they later discovered that this effect was caused by the Mysterious Yang Jade Chu Yang had given them.

[This piece of Mysterious Yang Jade unexpectedly has such a function as well...]

Everything went back to normal once they had withdrawn from the battlefield. However, the bloody atmosphere of the battlefield had made Tie Bu Tian sick. His face had turned ashen. And, he felt

like throwing up. He retreated several, and returned to normal only after he had moved far away.

The shadows saw a rather strange look of worry in Tie Bu Tian's eyes...

Only a few ten-thousand men had remained on Tie Bu Tian's side to protect him. And, the battlefield wasn't far away. So, the horses wouldn't take long to rush here from the battlefield. Tie Bu Tian – the most important person on Iron Cloud's side – was here. In fact, he was within the reach of millions of Great Zhao's soldiers. Yet surprisingly, not even one individual was looking this way.

Tie Bu Tian composed himself. Then, he focused his attention on the battlefield. He looked at the surrounding terrain, and suddenly realized something. Then, a look of deep concern emerged on his face... as if he couldn't endure it, "I see... so Diwu Qing Rou has unified his barracks with that tall mountain in the back. And, the mountain is acting as a dragon's spine. He has arranged the Great Array of Seven Killings! This Diwu Qing Rou is very vicious!"

"Great Array of Seven Killings?" The shadow was puzzled.

"Great Array Seven Killings – as the name suggests – is the most violent and murderous array formation. And, it requires the power of people's lives to operate. The higher the number of people who die... the mightier this array formation becomes. Moreover, people have completely lost their desire to draw back since Diwu Qing Rou has prepared so many bewitching drugs inside... So, everyone will be annihilated..."

Tie Bu Tian explained this at first. Then, his complexion suddenly changed, "Shadow, immediately rush into the array, and bring Imperial Uncle back! The soldiers – who are able to withdraw – make them withdraw. This array has become a living hell. So, those who stay inside it will only lose their life!"

The shadow complied, and jumped into the sky. He then turned into a streamer of light, and burst into the battle formation.

Tie Bu Tian looked-on in a worried manner. Then, he heaved a deep sigh, "The lives of 8 million people ah... Diwu Qing Rou, what are you trying to do? Why have you made such a messed-up decision?"

Tie Bu Tian was obviously unaware that Diwu Qing Rou was no longer here. He had already left. The green-robed man who had deterred the entire of Lower Three heavens had drifted into the distance...

A long while passed. Then, the shadow dashed out from the formation like a bolt of lightning. He was carrying a person on his back. This person's entire body was bathed in blood. This person was none other than Tie Long Cheng. The most decisive and famous general of this generation was currently in a coma-like state.

"What happened?" Tie Bu Tian asked in an utterly shocked tone.

"I knocked him unconscious..." The shadow put on a dry smile, "He had also lost his sanity..."

"That's fine," Tie Bu Tian took to deep breath. Then, his gaze turned to another direction, "Why haven't the troops of Minister Chu arrived yet?"

"Minister Chu is extremely intelligent and farsighted. I think he must've anticipated this situation. So, he must've withheld his troops. I think the most elite soldiers of Iron Cloud at present... are the 300,000 soldiers that remain with Minister Chu..."

The shadow replied with a sigh.

A look of pride and comfort flashed through Tie Bu Tian's eyes as he solemnly spoke-up, "It's always reassuring when Minister Chu handles things."

The shadow glanced from the side, and saw a different kind of emotion in Tie Bu Tian's eyes.

The sound of hoof-beats was heard at this time. A squad of

cavalry soldiers rushed-over like a whirlwind. The leader of the squad shouted to announce, "We have come here under Minister Chu's command. May I know if His Majesty is safe?"

"His Majesty is safe! How's the situation on Minister Chu's side?" the shadow loudly responded.

"The Minister is engaged in a confrontation with the Golden Horse Riders Department. The Minister has said that he will deal with the Golden Horse Rider Department. So, we will come out victorious as long as His Majesty is safe and sound!" the squad leader replied loudly.

"Understood. Tell Minister Chu to take care!" Tie Bu Tian loudly said.

"Yes! The subordinate will remember." The squad of riders suddenly turned their horses around. They changed directions, and dashed back in the direction they had come from.

"Minister Chu is a very smart and resolute person," a shadow spoke-up in a profound manner.

Tie Bu Tian's eyes exposed a trace of happiness. He realized in his heart, [Chu Yang must've known the situation here. That's why he's concerned about my safety.]

[Chu Yang is right. Everyone is inside the Great Array of Seven Killings. Some of them might manage to survive in the end, but there won't be many. So, Iron Cloud will win as long as I am alive!]

[That's because I will still have soldiers in my hands — the three-hundred-thousand soldiers under the command of Chu Yang! However, Diwu Qing Rou would've invested the entirety of his manpower.]

Chu Yang had arranged the 'Iron Barrel' battle formation to confront the Golden Horse Riders Department. But, Chu Yang would never start the decisive battle until he had received the news of Tie Bu Tian's safety.

And, this had made Jing Meng Hun unbearably aggrieved.

"King of Hell Chu!" Jing Meng Hun roared loudly, "Come and fight me to the death!"

However, Chu Yang simply ignored him.

The riders eventually came back, and brought back the news Chu Yang had been longing to hear, "His Majesty is safe!"

Chu Yang immediately felt relieved!

[Tie Bu Tian is safe. So, the only remaining task is to eliminate the Golden Horse Riders Department! I believe the enemy won't have any strength left as long as that's done.]

"Are all preparations in order?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes!" Wu Kuang Yun excitedly replied. His face was flushed in its entirety. He could finally go on rampage on the battlefield. He had merely been looking at the battlefield this entire time, but he had been dying to fight.

"I'm not asking you!" Chu Yang looked at Chen Yu Tong and the others.

"All preparations are in order!"

Cheng Zi Ang replied loudly.

"What about me?" Wu Kuang Yun gawked as he asked in an anxious manner.

"You take the army, and go to lend His Majesty a hand. You're needed there more. Leave the Golden Horse Riders Department to me," Chu Yang said. The trace of a complicated emotion had flashed in his eyes at the moment he had spoken the two words 'His Majesty'...

Chu Yang naturally had to make a well-calculated plan in order to deal with the Golden Horse Riders Department. However, in order to do so... he had to figure out some things which he hadn't known before.

His plan was to poison the enemy! But, he would somehow have to get the poison inside their bodies first. So, he had studied the nearby terrain with special attention, and had finally set the goal – a small lake that was located 175 Km away.

Chu Yang's idea was to turn the entire lake poisonous. Then, he would lead the Golden Horse Riders Department there. This would be a big blow to Jing Meng Hun's military power. And then, he would use more and more such tricks on the way. His motive was to defeat Jing Meng Hun — regardless of how it was done!

As for the head-on battle... Chu Yang hadn't thought about it yet...

Chu Yang and his men were merely baits in this plan.

Tie Long Cheng's heart was full of resentment towards Diwu Qing Rou. So, he wanted to defeat Diwu Qing Rou at all costs. But, Jing Meng Hun also felt the same way about King of Hell Chu!

In fact, this was an irreconcilable enmity! Therefore, Jing Meng Hun would try to kill Chu Yang regardless of anything!

Therefore, Diwu Qing Rou had especially asked Jing Meng Hun to deal with Chu Yang. The mission he had given to Jing Meng Hun was — Kill King of Hell Chu, and eradicate his existence from this world! You don't need to manage any other matter. You just lead the Golden Horse Riders Department, and kill King of Hell Chu!

Jing Meng Hun was very happy to receive this order!

Meanwhile, Chu Yang was thinking of something...

Chu Yang obviously thought of using the poison of the Poisonous Flood Dragon when it came to the prospect of picking his toxic-weapon. However, the Sword Spirit resolutely stopped him from using it. That's because the water would probably remain poisonous for countless years if it were to be used. So, an indeterminable number of people would die as a result.

Moreover, many of Jing Meng King’s subordinates had been killed by the poison of the Poisonous Flood Dragon. So, there was a chance that they might be prepared this time around.

Therefore, the Sword Spirit recommended another poison to Chu Yang, "You can use the Lust Dragon's poison. That will be far more easier-to-use than the poison of the Poisonous Flood Dragon..."

"The Lust Dragon?" Chu Yang was at a loss. So, he asked, "What’s a Lust Dragon?"

These words left the Sword Spirit to open his eyes wide in a stare, "You don’t know? You’ve been poisoned by the Lust Poison of Lust Dragon once, and you’re saying that you don’t know? How did you counter the poison back then?"

"I was poisoned by Lust Poison?" Chu Yang was even more at a loss.

"It happened in the final phase of your escape. Don’t you remember running into two giant snakes when you had come across Jing Meng Hun? One of those snakes had abruptly blown pink mist at you, remember?" Sword Spirit helplessly recounted and thought, [what’s wrong with this guy? How can he possibly forget that?]

Chu Yang suddenly recalled it, and replied, "Oh yes. That indeed happened."

"That was a Lust Dragon!" the Sword Spirit pointed out. He then explained the characteristics of a Lust Dragon. The more he explained... the bigger Chu Yang’s mouth opened. And, he was completely dumbstruck by the end of it.

"You mean to say that... I was poisoned back then?" Chu Yang asked in a daze.

"Yes!" the Sword Spirit gave an affirmative reply.

"And, you are saying that... copulation between a man and a woman is the only way... and, there’s no other method to stop this

poison? And, the victim’s body will fester-up if that doesn’t happen in time, and he will die soon after?" Chu Yang asked in a stammering manner.

"Correct!" the Sword Spirit gave an affirmative reply again.

"But then... why didn’t I die?" Chu Yang asked with a lifeless look in his eyes. Cold sweat had started to emerge on his forehead.

"How would I know? I had also lost consciousness at that time," the Sword Spirit replied in discontented manner.

"Is there really no other way?" Chu Yang felt like crying, [doesn’t this mean that my pure, chaste, and spotless body is... no longer chaste? Cough cough cough... but the question is... who popped my cherry?]

"I wouldn’t have been able to eliminate the lust poison even if I were awake back then. I could’ve at most suppressed it for some time. But, it would still need to be resolved via copulation in the end..." the Sword Spirit helplessly said.

Chu Yang sat down. A ghastly pale look had emerged on his face.

The Sword Spirit reminded him, "So, there must’ve been a woman who joined with you in a yin-and-yang harmony..."

Chu Yang covered his face, "Of course, but... who was that?"

He recalled that there were only two people with Tie Bu Tian at that time — the two shadows... [eh, don’t tell me it’s that shadow?] He thought of the female shadow’s stodgy face, and couldn’t help but shiver a little. Then, he immediately concluded, [But, I would’ve noticed something in her behavior if it had really been like that...]

[Moreover, her husband was also present there... So, that makes it even more impossible!]

[But then... the woman who did it with me... who is she?]

Chapter 429: Bu Tian Pavilion Vs Golden Horse Riders Department

Minister Chu was in extreme pain. He had unknowingly lost his chastity... so, how would he not feel like that? Moreover, he didn't even know who that woman was, or how she looked...

Could there be something more dumbfounding for a man?

Furthermore, this matter involved losing something very important...

"Regardless of who it was... I think Tie Bu Tian knows!" the Sword Spirit said.

"Sigh..." Chu Yang heaved a deep sigh. A suffocating feeling suddenly rose from his heart. [Tie Bu Tian, you knew everything! Then, why didn't you tell me? What happened back then? Was I perhaps toyed with?]

He got angry after feeling suffocated for a moment. However, it was undeniable that he was grateful as well. [It doesn't matter who she is. I was lying unconscious under the effects of lust poison. So, she must've had to take the initiative to do it with a stranger like me... and that too by taking complete charge of the act. This must've been extremely difficult for any woman...]

[Moreover... she must've gone through unbearable pain.]

[Because – according to what Sword Spirit said – my 'purity' is very powerful. Therefore, an ordinary woman can't withstand it...]

[Therefore, this woman is equal to my savior. But, it's a shame that I don't even know... who this savior is...]

Chu Yang fell in deep silence. He felt like going over to Tie Bu Tian to ask him about what had happened. However, he couldn't do that at such a crucial time.

Therefore, he could only wait until-after the war had ended.

Chu Yang heaved a long sigh.

He eventually accepted Sword Spirit's method – to use the inner core of Lust Dragon to make lust water. Firstly, it was more dangerous than the poison of the Poisonous Flood Dragon. Secondly, it was colored, but tasteless and odorless. Moreover, it was very convenient to use it – just toss the inner core into the lake. And, job done!

But, the most important point was... the lust poison would evaporate three days later, and the lake water would return to its original state.

The drug's efficacy would vanish in its entirety. So, there would be no associated worries afterwards.

Therefore, Chu Yang had already taken out the two inner cores of the two Lust Dragons a few hours ago, and had hidden them in the lake water.

Chu Yang received the news that Tie Bu Tian was unharmed, but noticed that Jing Meng Hun was still strutting-about in a blusterous manner. Chu Yang couldn't help but be extremely angry. And, a vicious feeling arose in his heart.

[Motherf*ker! You had continued to run around clamoring while I was sitting here depressed?!]

"Wu Qian Qian! You go with Wu Kuang Yun to that side! Leave this side to me!" Chu Yang spoke with a cold look on his face.

"Chu Yang, let me stay here," Wu Qian Qian calmly replied.

Chu Yang turned his head towards Wu Qian Qian, and saw that her attire was the same as his — a black robe that shrouded her entire body.

She'd only need to put on a mask to look exactly like the real King of Hell Chu!

"What are you doing?" Chu Yang's complexion turned cold.

"I'm taking your place to be the bait!" Wu Qian Qian's eyes were full of determination. Everyone already knew that there was going to be a large disparity of military power in this fight with the Golden Horse Riders Department.

Chu Yang had merely gathered a motley crew of people in an 'ad hoc' manner. They couldn't be compared with the 30,000 experts of the Golden Horse Riders Department! So, this battle was going to be dangerous... far more dangerous than the battle between millions of soldiers!

Moreover, the enemy was being led by a top expert like Jing Meng Hun – a Ninth Grade King Level Expert. There were dozens of Ninth Grade Revered Martial Artists. In fact, the weakest enemy expert had the cultivation of Martial Master Level! So, even an Emperor level expert could lose his life if he weren't cautious... let alone a King Level expert like Chu Yang.

Wu Qian Qian was very pessimistic in her heart. However, she was clear about one thing, [Its okay if I meet a cruel a death, but Chu Yang mustn't meet with a mishap!]

Therefore, Wu Qian Qian was already prepared, [I'll take Chu Yang's place, and I'll fight with Jing Meng Hun. I'll Keep fighting until I'm unable go on any longer. Then, I'll lead the enemy to that lake!]

[It will be nice if I can come back alive. But, even if I die in this war... at least Chu Yang will live on! And, it will be a lot easier for Chu Yang to finish them off if I deal with the Golden Horse Rider Department, and manage to weaken them by bringing their strength down to 50% on my own!]

Wu Kuang Yun also started to get ready to set out with the troops once he saw that the armed forces were prepared. On the other hand, Wu Qian Qian began to walk towards the crossroad outside the tent. She then took out a mask from her bosom, and put it on.

[My death won’t be in vain… as long as I die for my love!]

"No!" Chu Yang grabbed her, and looked sternly in the eye.

"I beg you!" Wu Qian Qian spoke firmly, but in a whispered tone. She further said, "I beg you! Please don’t go… let me go instead! I beg you!"

Chu Yang felt a shock in his mind. He suddenly and absent-mindedly recalled Mo Qing Wu. [She used to be just like this… she would rather get injured to death, but she wouldn’t allow any harm to me. She would try to do everything she could for my sake…]

Chu Yang groaned in pain, and then abruptly opened his eyes, "Qian Qian… I can’t accept your request! I won’t allow you to do that!" Then, he shut his eyes to suppress the surging emotions of his heart. He then said in a deep and muffled voice, "I already owe a woman my entire life. I don’t wish to owe my life to another woman in this life…"

Then, he suddenly struck at a point on her chest. She was caught off-guard, and radically had no time to protect herself. Her body swayed a little, and then gently tumbled into Chu Yang’s arms. Her beautiful eyes opened wide, and her face full of anxiety. It was clear from the look in her eyes that she was still requesting him earnestly — Let me go! Let me go!

"Wu Kuang Yun!" Chu Yang shouted loudly.

"The subordinate is here!"

"Young Miss Wu is injured. You take her with you, and let her recuperate beside His Majesty!" Chu Yang commanded.

"Yes." Wu Kuang Yun arranged a carriage for Wu Qian Qian while Chu Yang held her in his arms. Then, he gently put Wu Qian Qian in the carriage while she looked at him in an emotional manner.

However, Chu Yang heartlessly turned around, and walked away…

Tears silently streamed down her face as she watched him stride away from behind. There was endless sorrow in her heart, [Chu Yang, you already owe a woman your entire life. So, you must repay the debt with your whole life. That's why you don't wish to owe me your whole life... But, you know what? You know what? You already owe me!]

[You already owe me your whole life! I won't demand it from you, but you... you genuinely owe me...]

Wu Qian Qian's tears silently flowed down as the carriage slightly rocked, and slowly journeyed away. Chu Yang would thwart the Golden Horse Riders Department on this side, while Tie Bu Tian would rapidly sort out the battlefield to ensure the victory!

It was rather evident which was more important.

Minister Chu turned around, faced upward, and exclaimed, "Complete the rest of preparations!"

The thirty-thousand elite clamored at once, "Aoo!"

"Our enemy is the Golden Horse Riders Department. And, they are known as the most elite army of the present day! Are you afraid of fighting against them?!"

"Not afraid!"

"Do you think you can defeat the Golden Horse Rider Department?" Chu Yang bellowed in a stern voice, "We don't care if they are the best in the world! They are nothing but sh*t in our eyes!"

"The Golden Horse Riders Department is sh*t! Even worse than sh*t!"

The 30,000 people raised their arms, and clamored loudly.

Chu Yang burst into loud laughter. Then, he rode forth to the battlefield, and loudly shouted, "Jing Meng Hun! I'm giving you a chance to fight a decisive battle with me! There's an equal number

of soldiers on both sides. So, I challenge you to a fight to the last soldier!"

A look of profound hatred flashed in Jing Meng Hun's eyes, "I vow to tear you to shreds as long as you don't run away!"

"Wa ha ha..." Chu Yang let out a strange laughter. Then, he clamped his legs on either sides of the horse, and loudly said, "I will turn each one of you into mincemeat!"

His strong horse neighed, and fiercely dashed forward.

His 30,000 people followed after him like a strong whirlwind.

Jing Meng Hun grinned fiendishly as he waved his hand, "Attack! The one who kills King of Hell Chu will get a three rank promotion, and he'll also receive 12,000 gold pieces!" The experts of the Golden Horse Riders Department surged forward like molten iron, and gradually gained pace. They appeared like a mighty ocean-wave dashing towards the shore to greet Chu Yang's troops!

Chu Yang let out a long and loud battle cry. Then, he jumped up from the horseback, and recited, "What harm is there in slaughtering the whole world?!" The surrounding area of hundreds of miles – which was originally reeking of blood – suddenly turned bright as soon as this move was executed! And, the atmosphere surprisingly grew even more cruel and brutal!

A bright and radiant sword-light rose high up into the sky. It then turned into an unstoppable streak of light, and burst into the battle formation of the Golden Horse Riders Department; it was aimed straight at Jing Meng Hun!

Suddenly, a magnificent crown appeared impressively in midair!

This crown's body was glowing reddish-gold... just like the rising sun. And, it was several times larger than the crown of an ordinary King Level expert!

Jing Meng Hun called out in surprise, "King Level Expert?"

[Did King of Hell Chu make a breakthrough to the King level in such a short period of time?]

However, he didn't get enough time to doubt because Chu Yang's sword swept through crowd of people, and gave rise to a shower of blood as it swirled in the air. Dozens of people screamed at once. Men and horses had been chopped in half... right in front of Jing Meng Hun's eyes.

"Let's see what you've got!" Jing Meng Hun jumped from the horseback, and into the sky. He then unleashed a crisscross sword-energy attack in order to tackle Chu Yang's sword move – What harm is there in slaughtering the whole world!

A loud 'bang' was heard, and the bodies of these two people trembled. Jing Meng Hun went flying back, and was a bit distressed. The sword he had used for decades had unexpectedly chipped!

Chu Yang hardly cared about his damaged sword. He simply shouted loudly, and rushed over again.

Jing Meng Hun felt a chill in his heart. [I've felt this King of Chu's progress every subsequent time I've fought with him. But, he has clearly appeared as a rival this time. So, he won't drop under the wind that easily!]

[King of Hell Chu is drawing support from a heavenly sword that can unleash mysterious moves. However, it is still incredible to be able to rival my strength.]

Jing Meng Hun saw King of Hell Chu rushing over to attack in an aggressive manner. So, he dodged to one side to avoid Chu Yang's sharp attack. Then, Jeng Meng Hun randomly snatched a broadsword from a nearby subordinate, and prepared himself to clash with Chu Yang.

However, he turned around and realized that King of Hell Chu had ignored him. In fact, King of Hell Chu had stormed through

the army. In fact, he had slaughtered his way forward, and had spilt blood along his entire path. He bathed his path with blood. And, people's heads had started to roll on the ground like watermelons. Chu Yang had already covered over 200 feet in a split-second. And, he had left a trail of hundreds of mutilated corpses behind!

Jing Meng Hun roared, and rushed after him.

Then, two armies suddenly crashed into each other like thunders' clash in the sky. The two sides began to fight in a ferocious manner, and went all-out. They strived to push forward as they advanced through each other's ranks! Two people would often exchange moves, and then brush past one-another to switch to another opponent!

Everyone was striving to push forward!

A quarter of an hour had soon passed. And, Chu Yang had started to feel that there was a bright future waiting for them ahead. He felt a lot more relaxed now... as if the pressure had been lifted from his body. He had already neutralized the most prominent enemy riders. Thirty-thousand elites had followed him here, but only eighteen-thousand or so had remained. Then, Chu Yang dashed out, and the remaining troops followed after him!

Jing Meng Hun let out a long and loud shout in order to gather his troops. And, the troops assembled at the fastest possible speed in order to prepare for another round of battle!

However, this round of battle had boosted King Level Expert Jing's confidence! [The enemy has retreated, and has left over 10,000 corpses behind in this battle so far. However, we've lost less than 5000 people on our side!]

[We will wipe out the enemy soon if the battle continues like this.]

However, he turned around, and was suddenly startled at the

sight of his enemy's actions. King of Hell Chu was leading his troops away, and hadn't even turned back to look. They then crossed the barricades, and continued to bolt away in the opposite direction. They only left billowing smoke and dust behind.

Chapter 430: Proposes Marriage?

"Everyone escape ah. These bastards are too savage..." a loud voice sounded from afar. It was King of Hell Chu's voice!

Jing Meng Hun got so angry that he nearly threw up blood, "King of Hell Chu! You are too shameless! Wasn't it you who said 'let's start the decisive battle and fight to the death'?"

King of Hell Chu's condemning voice sounded from far away in reply, "Jing Meng Hun, you are a stupid cunt. A brain-dead retard like you has no qualification to engage with me in a 'fight to the death'. I had exhausted you to death once. Won't that be considered 'a fight to the death'? I had tricked you to death once. Won't that be considered 'a fight to the death'? Ha ha..."

Jing Meng Hun's eyes turned red. He bellowed, "Chase!" He didn't believe that King of Hell Chu's motley crew could escape from his golden horse riders!

Jing Meng Hun had become even more dead-set and super determined in his heart when it came to Diwu Qing Rou's firm order regarding killing King of Hell Chu. Moreover, he had obtained such a big advantage at this juncture. So, how could he not chase after them?

The two teams – one chasing, and the other escaping – darted off as they left billowing dust and smoke in their wake...

Meanwhile... Wu Kuang Yun had taken his army, and had quickly arrived at Tie Bu Tian's side. However, he suddenly sucked in cold air when he saw the utterly chaotic battle that was going on within the Great Array of Seven Killings!

"Your Majesty, why not give an order to attack...?" Wu Kuang Yun asked gently and cautiously. One look at this scene was enough to determine that this was the best moment to attack. The people fighting inside were clearly exhausted by now. So, it would

be very easy to grab victory by sending in a fresh army. Moreover, there were so many officers and soldiers of Iron Cloud in there.

"That won't work." Tie Bu Tian slightly shook his head, and replied with a look of pity in his eyes, "It's not like I don't wish to. But, I can't. Diwu Qing Rou has exploited the heavenly potential of this terrain. He has linked this mountain and the terrain around it with a killer array. He has already started the Great Array of Seven Killings in order to sacrifice the lives of millions of officers and soldiers! Moreover, this array links the heaven to earth, and hence can't be eliminated."

She sighed deeply, "Even if ten million people are to go in at this time... they will only get killed by the array's influence, and would then turn into mere corpses."

Wu Kuang Yun sucked in a mouthful of cold air. And, his eyes opened wide in a stare like two big copper bells.

"Diwu Qing Rou has gone completely insane. What he has done... is something even the heavens can't tolerate." Tie Bu Tian angrily spoke-up.

Everyone went silent. [Diwu Qing Rou has arranged such a battle array! One thing is clear from this... that he plans to wipe out the soldiers of Iron Cloud and Great Zhao alike! It would've been understandable if he had only done this to kill Iron Cloud's soldiers. After all, they were his enemies. However, he has planned to sacrifice his own people too. This is too inhuman!]

"It's such a pity... truly... such a pity. These loyal men have always risked their own live-and-limb to fight for Diwu Qing Rou. In fact, they've been fighting for him for decades now..." Wu Kuang Yun heaved a long sigh. Indeed, these people had always risked their lives for Diwu Qing Rou's sake. And, they had continued to fight in spite of the setbacks... as long as it was Diwu Qing Rou's command. Moreover, they had been guarding the borders of Great Zhao for decades without any complaints and

regrets. Yet today... they had been so heartlessly abandoned by Diwu Qing Rou. Therefore, Wu Kuang Yun couldn't help but feel somewhat sad for them.

Tie Bu Tian also sighed with emotion. Then, he changed the subject, "But then... Diwu Qing Rou is the kind of person that appears once in thousands of years."

Wu Kuang Yun felt cold in his heart. He bowed and said, "Indeed! Luckily we are in the capable hands of Your Majesty. That's why we are a million times stronger, and eager to excel than those Great Zhao guys."

He spoke this, and turned to look at the great array. He then said, "Your Majesty, it looks like this battle will conclude in the afternoon. Your Majesty might as well take a break and rest. Leave the matter here in my humble hands."

Tie Bu Tian smiled lightly. Then, she obliquely looked at Wu Qian Qian standing on the side. Her eyes then lit up as she said, "I see. I will go find Young Miss Wu, and have a chat."

Her tone of voice had meticulously exposed traces of tender sentiments.

Wu Kuang Yun gawked for a moment. However, he then revealed an ambiguous smile and replied, "Your Majesty, please do as you wish."

Tie Bu Tian nodded, and walked over to Wu Qian Qian. The two of them exchanged a few words, and then left under the protection of the imperial guards.

They entered the big tent, and Tie Bu Tian dismissed everyone. Only he and Wu Qian Qian remained sitting across each other as a result.

Wu Qian Qian had been constantly worrying about Chu Yang's safety. So, she was somewhat inattentive. And, Tie Bu Tian was somewhat confused, and didn't know to make her open up.

Therefore, they were silent for a while.

Wu Qian Qian regained her composure after a long time. Then, she solemnly asked, "Your Majesty, what did you wish to talk about?"

"Eh..." Tie Bu Tian seemed somewhat embarrassed, and replied with a smile, "Well, there's something I wish to discuss with Young Miss Wu.

"He-he, I just wish to speak what's on my mind... this war, it's very brutal... I only hope there won't be such a cruel war after this one ends... there's no need for people to die needlessly. The sight of common folks meeting with disaster... is a spectacle too horrible to endure..."

Wu Qian Qian insipidly replied, "Your Majesty is a wise man with divine might. So, I'm sure that the lives of common folks will get better and better under your rule."

"He-he..." Tie Bu Tian smiled gently. Then, he changed the topic and asked, "Young Miss Wu, how do you see Minister Chu?"

Wu Qian Qian's pupils contracted as soon as she heard the words 'Minister Chu'. And, her lax attitude gradually roused up. Her eyes twisted as she coldly asked, "Why do you ask?"

She said in her heart, [This whole situation is under control now. So, could it be that His Majesty wants to get rid of Chu Yang once he has served his purpose?] A deep sense of alert spontaneously arose in her heart as soon as she thought of this possibility.

"I'm not asking this in that sense..." Tie Bu Tian went silent midway, coughed once, and then said, "I'm saying that Minister Chu seems to have a woman he truly loves... and... he-he..."

Wu Qian Qian's bright eyes turned bleak as she replied, "That has nothing to do with me."

"Of course..." Tie Bu Tian had always been an eloquent speaker. However, he 'actually' found himself stuttering every time he

spoke a few words at this juncture. To the extent... that he didn't know how to express himself.

"But, could it be that Young Miss Wu plans to stay this way?" Tie Bu Tian's eyes flashed as he continued, "You must be aware of the saying that 'upon growing up... every male should take a wife, and every female should take a husband'..."

"Your Majesty, what are you trying to say?" A trace of concern arose in Wu Qian Qian's heart when she heard him speak 'upon growing... up every male should take a wife and every female should take a husband'. She couldn't help but have a bad feeling about this. [Well, I will soon turn 20. I will be considered an 'old girl' if I don't get married. I have taken an unbreakable oath, but father will certainly urge me to get married. That will be very bothersome... and extremely annoying.]

She thought of this, and she couldn't help but be at her wit's end.

"I am saying..." Tie Bu Tian coughed several times since he found it difficult to speak. He thought for a long time. Then, he finally sighed and asked in a stretch, "I – Tie Bu Tian – have been the crown prince since childhood. So, I've been under huge pressure over the past dozen or more years. In fact, even when I have to breathe a sigh of relief... I have to do it very cautiously... as for the emotion of love shared between ordinary men and women... I've never tasted that either..."

Wu Qian Qian immediately heard a loud alarm bell in her heart, [what's the meaning of this? Is he showing off his chastity? But, why is he telling me that he has never enjoyed women?]

"I had a few maids in my crown prince's palace. I've now ascended to the throne, and I've become the Emperor. But, I still don't have an imperial concubine..." Tie Bu Tian spoke in an obscure manner, "In fact, I have no beauty at my side even though I'm the Iron Cloud's Emperor..."

Wu Qian Qian snorted, and her face turned somewhat pale. In

fact, she would've left a long time ago... if she weren't in the presence of the Emperor.

"It's just that... the 'world unification' is within sight. So, I'm going to become an Emperor who must leave behind a thousand years of inheritance. And, I will have no choice but to carry forward my agenda. It is considered 'unfilial' of a son to have only 3 wives in ordinary families... because it's as good as not having a wife if there are any lesser. So, what could one speak of a family like mine since... we are the descendants of phoenixes and dragons...?" Tie Bu Tian was beating around the bush; and, he was feeling rather helpless in the heart.

Tie Bu Tian raised his head, and saw that Wu Qian Qian still had that same cold face... like that of a clay Buddha; in fact, there wasn't the slightest expression of her face. Tie Bu Tian sighed in his heart, and then continued with great effort, "Nowadays... my ministers try to convince me every day. This is making me very annoyed."

Wu Qian Qian snorted again. Then, she suddenly stood up, "Your Majesty, if you will excuse me. I will take my leave now."

"No no no, wait..." Tie Bu Tian quickly stood up, and stopped her, "I will be honest with you now. Actually... I wish to ask Young Miss Wu to do me a favor... that's all... just a small favor."

"What favor?" Wu Qian Qian asked.

"Young Miss Wu!" Tie Bu Tian's expression became serious and earnest, "If you will just forget about my status of the Emperor, and look at me as an ordinary man. What redeeming qualities do you think I have?"

"Your Majesty is the world's most remarkable man. So, there are several desirable qualities!" Wu Qian Qian replied insipidly.

"Then, how do you see me in your heart?" Tie Bu Tian insistently asked, "I wish to know your honest opinion."

"Your Majesty is handsome and dashing. He does everything gracefully. Your words and actions are filled with elegance. When you are gentle... you make people around you feel like they are bathing in spring breeze. When you are strict... you drop thunders on people's heads. When you are calm... you're like a maiden. When you move... you're like an escaping rabbit. You're a first-class man in the current generation of men!"

Wu Qian Qian spoke with sincerity, "But..."

"But what?" Tie Bu Tian anxiously asked.

"... But, you are obviously a bit short," Wu Qian Qian replied with no trace of politeness as she pointed out the most vital point. And, she looked at Tie Bu Tian with that kind of look in her eyes... as if she was clearly implying... [you are almost as tall as a woman like me...]

"Eh..." Tie Bu Tian was somewhat speechless.

In fact, Tie Bu Tian wasn't very short. He was 1.7 meters tall. And, that would clearly stand out among women. However, Wu Qian Qian was a tall beauty herself. In fact, she was as tall as Chu Yang. So, the height of a 'short man' like Tie Bu Tian... was clearly a shortcoming in her eyes.

"Actually, I'm not that short... Minister Chu is only a 'palm' taller than me..." Tie Bu Tian tried to defend herself powerlessly.

Wu Qian Qian rolled her eyes, [he's a 'palm' taller than you? What a dexterous explanation! Forget about palm... don't you know that you can never surpass a person's height even if they are only 'bean' taller than you?

[There isn't much discrepancy between the mountain and the sky by your argument. After all, there's only a difference of hundreds of thousands of miles between them...]

"Your Majesty , what's the important matter that you desire my help with?" Wu Qian Qian couldn't tolerate anymore, and asked

out loud, [you are keeping me here — a single man and a single woman alone. What if Chu Yang comes back, and gets some kind of misunderstanding by seeing us together like this?]

"Actually, I... Actually, I..." Tie Bu Tian stuttered a little. Then, he mustered strength in his heart and spoke-up, "Actually, I've always liked Young Miss Wu..."

"Stop!" Wu Qian Qian got furious. She said in her heart, [you really said it!]

However, Tie Bu Tian had already said it. So, why would he stop now? He disregarded everything, and continued, "Nowadays... the imperial courtiers have been urging me to get married. If Young Miss says yes — I would like you to be my Empress. Then, I wouldn't need to have two colors throughout my life...!"

"What nonsense are you talking about?" Wu Qian Qian's face turned frost cold. She leapt up to stand, turned around, and walked outward.

"Wait!" Tie Bu Tian abruptly shouted.

However, would Wu Qian Qian listen to him? Instead, she walked faster, and was about to make her exit...

Tie Bu Tian fiercely chased up, grabbed her hand to stop her, and said, "Why are you in such a hurry?"

Wu Qian Qian furiously said, "You let go of me!" as she held out her hand to push him.

However, her two hands formed a convex-like shape as they happened to push against Tie Bu Tian's chest...

Chapter 431: I Become Your Wife, and You Also Become My Wife?

Wu Qian Qian was left gawking all of a sudden.

[This... feels somewhat wrong ah.] She suspiciously looked at the seemingly flat chest of Tie Bu Tian. She couldn't help but grasp them in her hands... and then kneaded them...

"What?!" Wu Qian Qian then cried out in alarm, and almost sent the tent flying off.

This was a rare scene of the 'indecent offender' unexpectedly screaming in panic before the 'assaulted individual' had...

Tie Bu Tian only felt that her chest had gone numb. She couldn't prevent her whole face from turning crimson. This was summer time... so she was wearing fewer clothes...

"You are groping me!" Tie Bu Tian blushed as she retorted. She could feel that the two hands were firmly grasping and kneading her breasts.

"Ah!"

Wu Qian Qian called out in alarm, and jumped three steps back; her back was covered in cold sweat. Her face turned pale as she spoke in a stammering manner, "You, you, you... you, you, you, you, you... you, you, you..."

"What about me?" Tie Bu Tian glared at her, "Shush, someone will hear us."

"You... you are... a woman?" Wu Qian Qian finally came to her senses. Then, she lowered her voice and asked in a baffled tone.

Tie Bu Tian snorted. Then, she slowly put her hand inside her clothing, and took out a jade pendant from around her neck.

Wu Qian Qian only saw a dense layer of light fluctuate before her

eyes. But, the halo of light disappeared soon enough, and left her to rub her eyes incessantly in disbelief...

[Indeed...] Wu Qian Qian groaned. In fact, she nearly fainted from the shock.

She could swear that she hadn't blinked even once, and Tie Bu Tian had been standing right there without moving an inch from the spot...

However, Tie Bu Tian had completely changed after that flashing halo of light.

His initial appearance of a handsome young man – full of vigor and heroic aura – had surprisingly turned into a...

Tie Bu Tian was still dressed up in men's clothing, but he now had cheeks as peachy corona... her luxuriant hair appeared like clouds that hung down to her now bountiful chest. Moreover, his slender waist... all of which clearly made Tie BU Tian look like a peerless beauty!

Wu Qian Qian's eyes suddenly straightened up.

Tie Bu Tian rolled her eyes, and asked with a dull light, "Saw clearly?"

Wu Qian Qian nodded... blankly at that...

She recalled that feeling from a moment ago. And, she couldn't help but sense a lingering sensation in her fingers. She unconsciously twirled her fingers, and two phrases popped up in her heart — [So big! How can they be so big?]

Wu Qian Qian looked down at her own chest, and secretly compared in her heart. She was devastated at the result, and lowered her head, [it can be said that they are equally matched based on appearance... but, hers are really big...]

"Come on..." Tie Bu Tian obviously saw her twirling her fingers, and couldn't help but blush. She took her hand, and very

affectionately drew her to sit closer. Wu Qian Qian certainly wouldn't resist this time. [We are both women. What's there to be afraid of?]

Wu Qian Qian suddenly opened her eyes wide, and blurted out, "You are a woman... how can you have a wife? Why would you propose marriage to me?"

Tie Bu Tian's face flushed as she softly replied, "Yes, I'm a woman. But, I wish to marry you... this is true."

"Are you serious?" Wu Qian Qian was shocked.

Tie Bu Tian blinked. Then, she replied, "Anyway, you are not going to marry anyone in this life. So, it would be better that the two of us get together and be done with."

[The two of us get together?] Wu Qian Qian blinked her eyes as she tried her best to straighten out that mass of chaos in her heart. She suddenly recalled a legend from the past. And, this was long before the unification quest of Iron Cloud had started...

The Iron Cloud's previous emperor – Tie Shi Cheng – had suddenly gone insane before the onset of his illness, and had slaughtered the entire imperial palace ... even the imperial consorts and the princesses... he hadn't let off anyone...

Wu Qian Qian was an extremely intelligent person. And, she had finally understood what was going on. She just couldn't help but heave a sigh.

Tie Bu Tian saw her face, and realized that Wu Qian Qian had guessed it correctly. Tie Bu Tian looked somewhat sad as she spoke in a low voice, "My imperial father... didn't have a son. He only had a few daughters. I... I was the youngest daughter... He must've had a premonition of sorts back then, and that's why he kept my birth a secret. That's probably why he announced to the world that... a prince was born..."

"The reason is... my master-to-be was travelling in the Iron Cloud

when I was born. She saw me in the palace, and noticed that my body was good for cultivation. So, she received me as her disciple. Moreover, she gave this jade pendant to me."

"I see." Wu Qian Qian nodded her head, and seemed relieved.

As far as understanding this matter was concerned... she had indeed understood. However, she was still a bit puzzled, "But, why did you mention this now..." She wittily squinted at Tie Bu Tian, "... what are you so anxious about?"

Tie Bu Tian's face suddenly turned crimson.

Wu Qian Qian recalled herself visualizing Tie Bu Tian as an extremely dangerous man... someone she needed to be wary of. The more she thought of it... the more she found it funny. She giggled and said, "You're a very good actor. I had even begun to think that you have feelings for me..."

Tie Bu Tian's blushed as she replied, "That wasn't my intention initially..."

"He-he..." Wu Qian Qian was overjoyed. Her smile was like a flower plant dancing in the wind, "So, you're actually an Empress. You have wielded a dual gender identity your entire life... you are a very good actor. Which gender do you wish to pick out of the two?"

Tie Bu Tian couldn't bear anymore, and jumped up blushing hard. And then, she grabbed Wu Qian Qian's chest, "You little wench! You'd better not make irresponsible remarks on me again..." She had spoken this in a manly voice while she had mischievously fondled Wu Qian Qian's chest.

Wu Qian Qian's body went limp as she hurriedly patted her hand off and said, "You said you want my favor? Is it related to this?"

"Well... it's not actually. There's something else..." Tie Bu Tian mumbled as if she was afraid of speaking something.

"What?" a flower-like smile bloomed on Wu Qian Qian's face.

"Actually..." Tie Bu Tian' moved closer to Wu Qian Qian, and whispered something into her ear.

"What!?" Wu Qian Qian cried out in surprise and jumped up, "When...? How...? This is..."

"Shush." Tie Bu Tian swiftly moved her hand, and covered her mouth, "Why are you shouting my little grandma?"

Wu Qian Qian looked at her in utter shock. A good while passed like this. Then, she asked, "Whose?"

Tie Bu Tian's face turned hot red since she felt that bringing up this matter and talking about it wasn't a good idea.

"Who was it... that plucked the best flower of Iron Cloud?" Wu Qian Qian still found it somewhat inconceivable.

Tie Bu Tian mustered strength in her heart and said, "Who else can it be? It's none other than that sweetheart of yours."

"Chu Yang?" Wu Qian Qian was gob-smacked. Her complexion turned deathly pale, and her entire body began to tremble.

"Yes... but..." Tie Bu Tian heaved a long sigh, "He himself doesn't know about it..." after saying this, she explained everything that had happened that day. Tie Bu Tian had already told her this much. So, why would she possibly stop herself from sharing everything with Wu Qian Qian.

Wu Qian Qian listened, and her pale complexion slowly returned to normal, [so that's how it is... she saved him. She sacrificed her lifetime cultivation... her future prospects in martial arts... as well as a girl's most precious thing — all to save his life...]

"So... I need your help..." Tie Bu Tian finally finished explaining, and looked at Wu Qian Qian somewhat anxiously, "Honestly... I don't know what else to do to deal with this level of matter. This is just..."

"That's needless to say." Wu Qian Qian gently bit her red lip. A

fierce struggle was going on in her heart at the moment. Then, a firm look appeared in her eyes, "I agree!"

[I can’t be with him forever, but… I can raise his child with my own hands. Yes… that is also … a type of a consolation… isn’t it?]

Wu Qian Qian turned her head to look at Tie Bu Tian. [This peerless beauty – who stands before me – shares the same pain and misery as I do. We are in the same boat, and fellow sufferers should empathize with each other. It’s just that… she is more unfortunate than me in some aspects. But, I am more unfortunate in some other aspects…]

Wu Qian Qian stared at Tie Bu Tian’s belly, and a pang of jealousy suddenly flared up in her heart, [His child! This is his child!]

She recalled that night when Tie Bu Tian was very adamant on not allowing her to go. She couldn’t help but think of a scenario, [if I was the one who had gone… and not Tie Bu Tian… then, this child… would have been…]

Wu Qian Qian’s face turned burning hot after she thought about it. Therefore, she tried her best to prohibit herself from thinking along those lines.

"Thank you, Qian Qian!" a look of appreciation flashed in Tie Bu Tian’s eyes as she spoke-up with the entirety of her soul’s sincerity, "But, I just hope… that you won’t let him find out about this matter."

"I understand where you’re coming from…" Wu Qian Qian bit her lip and solemnly promised. This was genuinely understandable. There was some other woman in his heart… not her. Moreover, she didn’t even know the identity of this woman he loved so deeply. So, what would be the point of telling him?

Make him suffer? Make him choose? Force him to take responsibility?

What a joke!

Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian were proud women. They would never use such means!

[If you do not know... then you do not know. We won't deliberately shame you into taking responsibility. They wouldn't use such means to force Chu Yang to obey since they'd find doing such a thing beneath their dignity!]

[We don't desire your love in charity. We don't want a forced marriage! We just want to beat that woman he has in his heart... fair and square!]

Tie Bu Tian sighed and said, "You must consider this matter properly. I really want you to say yes, but I don't want to force you. After all ... you might still have a future with him. You're not hopeless like me..."

Wu Qian Qian painfully shook her head and replied, "There's no need to consider that... he will feel sorry for me even if he accepts me. What's the point of being pitiful like that? I'm very satisfied with the present outcome."

Drops of tears fell down from her vacant eyes as she gently said, "I... am very satisfied..."

Tie Bu Tian deeply sighed.

Then, she picked up the jade pendant, and wore it back on her neck. A burst of dense light flashed, and the peerless beauty suddenly became the heroic youth with the aloofness of the world's greatest emperor!

"Well then. I will let the Empress do the hard work of birthing the Emperor's child in my place. Meanwhile, I shall lay the unshakable foundation of Iron Cloud!" Tie Bu Tian softly said.

Wu Qian Qian smiled and nodded. [To birth the Emperor's child in your place...? I would gladly do it in real...]

"Later, I will send people to the leader of Beyond the Heavens Sect to discuss our marriage. I will use the ritual of country's mother to take you as my wife and make you my Empress!" Tie Bu Tian solemnly said, "Beyond the Heavens Sect will henceforth become the relatives of the Imperial family. And, Beyond the Heavens Sects shall become the number-one national security sect after the Iron Cloud unifies the land! Qian Qian, what else do you want me to add?"

"I don't want anything else." Wu Qian Qian thought for a moment and replied, "Even a little reward can become an extra burden sometimes. It can even harm Beyond the Heavens Sect in the long run. After all, a martial art school isn't the imperial court."

"That's also true," Tie Bu Tian agreed.

"Also, I don't wish to give up the status of Minister Chu in Bu Tian Pavilion." Wu Qian Qian gently said, "I'm King of Hell Chu. I wish to maintain this secret."

Tie Bu Tian looked somewhat startled, and grieved from her facial expression as soon as she heard the name 'King of Hell Chu'. She nodded after a good while. Her eyes suddenly lit up as she said, "Minister Chu, well... isn't that great that you can look that way? You are my Empress on the surface. But, you are Minister Chu for Bu Tian Pavilion. And, I'm your woman... your wife... great right?"

Wu Qian Qian was stumped for words. These words had clearly indicated that Tie Bu Tian had no regrets or complains against Chu Yang in her heart! Instead, there was only love. In fact, it was hard to guess that a Monarch like this could have such hidden and deep feelings of care for someone...

Wu Qian Qian nodded her head in silence. The eyes of these two women were smiling. However, there were tragic tears hidden in those smiles...

Wu Qian Qian overcame her tears, and spoke-up with a smile,

"Isn’t this like... I become your wife, and you also become my wife?" Tie Bu Tian also laughed and said, "That’s indeed the case."

Chapter 432: How Can Such A Thing Happen in the World?

Chu Yang was rushing about in a mountain forest. He was leaving a trail of dust behind. There were less than 15,000 fleeing troops following behind him! This cat-and-mouse chase had left everyone exhausted!

They had been moving in circles in the mountain forest. But, they had finally come to a stage where they couldn't persist anymore!

Iron Cloud's elites were familiar with this terrain. Hence, only the people of the Golden Horse Riders Department were fed up with moving in circles. And so, they were grumbling complaints endlessly.

Moreover, Chu Yang had consciously avoided any sort of water source throughout the chase. He would always rush towards dried up mountain springs. Moreover, everyone was sweating profusely in this burning hot and humid weather. Even Cheng Zi Ang and the others behind him were drenched in sweat. In fact, they were panting heavily with open mouths.

Chu Yang had already anticipated this. That's why he had provided two water bottles to everyone in his army beforehand. However, it had been 4 hours since their water stock had depleted! And, almost everyone had reached their limit by now. So, it wasn't hard to guess that the Golden Horse Riders Department was probably in a much worse-off state.

Chu Yang suddenly issued a long and loud whistle. He then urged his horse, and wildly dashed along the 'fork in the road' that had appeared up ahead.

His army followed after him. They made a sharp turn around a corner, and entered the fork in the road.

Jing Meng Hun was right behind them, and was darting forward like an arrow. His eyes turned bloodshot as he roared loudly, "They are finished! Chase after them. Overtake them, and then leave no one alive!" Jing Meng Hun had nearly been cussed to death by Chu Yang over the course of this chase. In fact, his belly had long been bursting with anger.

Even the men of the Golden Horse Riders Department couldn't take it anymore. Each one of them was intolerably thirsty. Most of them were experiencing a 'dry mouth and chapped lips' condition.

However, their spirit was roused after they heard their leader's words. They then rushed after the Iron Cloud's cavalry, and burst into that fork in the road like a whirlwind. The road ahead had been hidden until now, but it suddenly became visible to them. They saw that the Iron Cloud cavalry had nowhere to go from here on, and were basically at the end of the line. They realized that they could enjoy the killing to their heart's content as long as they could overtake the Iron Cloud's troops!

They had been furious over the entire course of the chase, and were desperately waiting for the decisive battle. But, it was finally the time for their revenge to present itself...

Chu Yang was leading the troops on the mountain road. He was speeding up. He looked back to confirm that Jing Meng Hun and his men were keeping up. Then, he secretly shouted in his heart, [my plan worked!]

He again turned a corner without the slightest hesitation, and rushed towards the small lake — wherein he had hidden the inner cores of the Lust Dragons.

Some people had fallen from their horses along the sides of the road since they hadn't been able to bear the thirst any longer...

"Speed up! Speed up!" Chu Yang clamored, "There's a water source up ahead!"

Everyone’s spirits were aroused as soon as they heard these words. They tightly clenched their teeth, bent down on the horseback, and crazily rode forward.

"There’s a water source up ahead?" Jing Meng Hun was also excited to hear that. They had been fighting and chasing all day long. And, that too in such a hot weather! Could a bottle of water possibly last that long? Not even a drop of water remained inside the water bottle. Even Jing Meng Hun couldn’t bear staying thirsty for one whole day...

"Hurry up, everyone! There’s a water source up ahead!" Jing Meng Hun also shouted to inform everyone. This instantly roused up everyone’s spirits multiple folds.

Chu Yang led the large military force, and crossed the lake like a whirlwind. He had secretly prohibited anyone from drinking the lake water. Moreover, he had sent several horses to run into the lake, and defecate everywhere in order to make the water filthy. The soldiers then got on their horses, and sped away once they had completed this devious assignment.

Jing Meng Hun arrived, and saw that several lumps of horseshit were floating on the rippling water surface. He couldn’t stop his eyes from turning bloodshot from anger.

However, the present situation was such... that he would die of thirst if he didn’t drink water.

"Filter out those filthy things. Hurry up, and fill your water bottles!" Jing Meng Hun nearly vomited blood when he realized that they must drink this water... even if it was filthy.

However, the army behind him didn’t have these scruples, [Damn! So what if there’s horseshit floating in the water? It’s still water! This water can save our lives at this time!]

Everyone swarmed around, and drank a bellyful of water. Then, they filled their water bottles, and felt completely rejuvenated.

Everyone was soon done drinking the water. Next, the horses were led to the lakeside in order to allow them to drink the water.

However, Jing Meng Hun was seething with anger on the horseback. The deputy general remained silent as he filled a water bottle, and handed it over to Jing Meng Hun.

Jing Meng Hun heaved a deep sigh and said, "I never thought that a dignified Nine Grade King Level Expert like myself would ever be subjected to such humiliation! I swear I won't call myself a 'man' if I don't take revenge for this!"

He spoke this, and put the bottle's opening in his mouth, and took several gulps of water in one go.

The deputy general stretched the corners of his mouth in a ridiculing smile, and said in his heart, [a great person like you may find this water filthy, but its good-enough for most of us as long as it quenches our thirst. Forget about a few lumps of horseshit floating in the water... would you not drink this water to save your life even if the lake was completely filled with horseshit?]

[You will die if you don't drink it! And here you're fu*king talking about shame and humiliation...]

Everyone's vitality was roused a hundredfold after they had filled their bellies with lots of water. And, they suddenly had a high morale, and fight spirit. Jing Meng Hun let out a long and loud clamor, "Everyone, get on your horses, and continue to chase after King of Hell Chu!"

"Yes!"

More than 20,000 riders lunged forward like a giant black dragon!

"Minister Chu, they drank it." Cheng Zi Ang grinned with his withered lips. The expression in his eyes was clearly a schadenfreude one. The people on his side weren't allowed to drink the lake water, but the enemy had ingested it... one could

very well imagine that something had been dissolved in it...

"They drank?" Chu Yang couldn't stop himself from bursting into laughter, "They drank it. They actually drank it!"

"What's in the water?" Cheng Zi Ang rode over to his side, and asked in a whisper.

"Some aphrodisiac; that's all." Chu Yang winked, "A kind of aphrodisiac which can kill you if you don't copulate with a woman within 5 hours of consuming it. The victim's body festers up, and he dies if he can't..."

"Ss..." Cheng Zi Ang sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

[This... this this... this is really cruel ah! Aphrodisiac... holy crap! There have been no women in a radius of thousands of kilometers for thousands of years ever since this area has been turned into a battlefield...]

[This move is very... cruel.] Cheng Zi Ang smacked his lips. His entire body trembled. And, he suddenly no longer felt thirsty...

[Many of these mountain herbs can be used as raw materials for antidotes in case you had poisoned them. In fact, soldiers keep herbs and medicinal ingredient on their body as accessories. So, they can drag on for some time if you had poisoned them. Moreover, the water in the lake is flowing slowly, but it is still running-water at the end of the day. So, the toxicity won't be that heavy... perhaps the water may still be poisonous, but the victim might be able to drag on for some time before the poison's effect takes over...

[But, with an aphrodisiac in the picture... they simply can't reverse this desperate situation. In fact, they are simply powerless!]

Chen Yu Tong was standing nearby. And, he was chuckling endlessly.

"Why are you laughing?" Cheng Zi Ang asked.

"I am laughing... wa ha ha ha..." Chen Yu Tong drew back the corners of his mouth in a grin, and spoke, "If those guys really couldn't hold back... and ended up doing it with the warhorses... the thought... the very thought of watching more than 20,000 people moaning while 'doing' with their warhorses is making me overjoyed. That will be Golden Horses, and the Riders, 'lying down' together ah..."

"Fu*k!" Cheng Zi Ang's cursed in rage as his complexion turned dark. But, he also smiled a bit. Then, he somewhat anxiously turned towards Chu Yang and asked, "Minister Chu, can... can it be detoxified by doing it with the warhorses?"

"That's utter nonsense!" Chu Yang silently looked at him, "Can warhorses become your wife?"

"Uh... uh..." Cheng Zi Ang lowered his head. He didn't dare to speak further.

"Let's move out, and go as far as possible! We will just move around for 2 hours, and then make a round trip back to the battlefield!" Chu Yang chuckled, "We must defeat them fair and square in the battlefield!"

[Defeat them fair and square?]

The facial muscles of Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong twitched at the same time. [You have given so much aphrodisiac to those guys! It can be estimated that those guy will have started to fester up by the time we return to the battlefield. Don't you think it's quite shameless of you to say 'defeat them fair and square'?]

Everyone got on their horses, and raced away.

...

Jing Meng Hun could faintly feel that something was fishy.

One hour had passed since he had drunk the water. And, he had suddenly begun to feel more and more feverish. Moreover, he felt as if the heat was coming out of his body.

King Level Expert Jing felt a little ashamed. He hadn't even ridden the hoses for a day, and his thighs had still started to go numb from the rubbing. And, King Level Expert Jing made a shameful discovery when he realized that the friction between his crotch and the horse's back had surprisingly incited a reaction down there…

[Crap! What's going on!]

Jing Meng Hun also began to experience a dry mouth and tongue. The thing down was getting harder and harder, hotter and hotter with every passing minute… just like a red-hot iron bar. This was making him feel very uncomfortable.

King Level Expert Jing was awfully embarrassed. He bent over on the horseback to lower his body and concealed himself, [motherfu*ker, if my subordinates saw that I've got a hard on from riding a horse… that would destroy my dignity as a man.]

However, he was very excited in his heart. Moreover, he was experiencing a blood rush throughout his body. He was having a very weird and ticklish feeling in his entire body. He felt as if that 'masculine impulse' had suddenly returned to his body after a long absence…

In fact, Jing Meng Hun felt that the wind blowing against his face was full of tenderness. Gentle like… his wife's tender hand on the wedding night…

Jing Meng Hun's vision soon began to blur a little. He couldn't help but think of that night… [Ah! My wife… I didn't even realize that you've been gone for so many years…]

Jing Meng Hun's eyes were full of gentleness as he recalled the most beautiful years of his life. He couldn't help but heave a long and sour sigh in his heart…

He was dashing against the wind as he pushed forward. However, his train of thought had already started to wander far away…

His subordinates were blushing in the back. Their eyes were emitting stimulated rays of light... everyone was breathing heavily... and that too in a rhythmic manner...

The warhorses were also getting more and more excited. They sped up, and became vigorous and livelier. Furthermore, they began to jump-about needlessly, and started to hop around continually...

If one would lower one's line of sight a little... one would see that it was already erect down there... like a big red spear! It was like thousands of stampeding horses going ahead full speed – with thousands of spears – ready for battle...

However, this beautiful and hazy feeling vanished when the second hour passed. And, everyone fell into a berserk state. Their eyes turned red. And, they all began to gasp for breath...

Jing Meng Hun awakened from the recollection that had filled his heart with overwhelming emotions. He was now sure that something wasn't wrong, [don't tell me!] He turned around, and what he saw... left him completely baffled! His subordinates were also in the same state as he was — bloodshot eyes, gasping for breath, and full of desire...

[Aphrodisiac!]

Jing Meng Hun was so frightened... that his soul seemed to have left his body, and had then flown beyond the confines of the sky!

[My God, when did it happen? When were we all given an aphrodisiac?] The feeling of restlessness was getting more and more powerful in his body. And, he had started to burn with impatience.

He suddenly thought of that lake, and it flashed in his mind like lightning. He immediately understood everything. He couldn't control his grief and indignation, and let out a long and loud cry, "King of Hell Chu... you are very cruel! King of Hell Chu! You are

very cruel! You are very cruel..."

Jing Meng Hun stared in anger while he was being torn apart by desire!

King Level Expert Jing had realized what was going on, but he was still puzzled, [where did King of Hell Chu bring so much aphrodisiac from? Tossing lots of aphrodisiac into such a large lake with running-water won't work for sure. What exactly did he use?]

He was unaware that King of Hell Chu had used the aphrodisiac that had been derived from those flood dragons who had appeared in the midst of the mountain fire that he had started. Moreover, Jing Meng Hun had personally wounded those flood dragons. This was just like... Jing Meng Hun had given these flood dragons to King of Hell Chu as presents!

Jing Meng Hun had personally started the fire that had compelled the flood dragons to come out. Then, he had personally wounded the flood dragons. So, he had basically wrapped them up as presents for Chu Yang. And now, Chu Yang had used the lust poison of those very flood dragons on Jing Meng Hun...

Jing Meng Hun would probably not wait for the lust poison to take its course if he found out about all this. In fact, he would've snapped his own neck the very next moment...! Can such a thing happen in this world? This was simply unimaginable. In fact, this was out-rightly inconceivable...

Chapter 433: The Hero who Controls the World Dreams to See Soldiers and Swords No More

Jing Meng Hun’s voice sounded from afar. It was filled with grief and indignation.

Minister Chu – who was leading the Iron Cloud’s troops – suddenly chuckled and said, "It seems that King Level Expert Jing hasn’t realized it yet, but unfortunately… this aphrodisiac doesn’t have an antidote."

[It’s incurable?] Cheng Zi Ang’s whole body trembled.

Chu Yang laughed heartily. He then proclaimed in a loud voice, "Jing Meng Hun, I – King of Hell Chu – once told you that I will toy with you till you die! Do you believe it now? Are you happy now? Ha ha ha ha…"

Jing Meng Hun became furious and shouted back loudly, "King of Hell Chu! I would rather die! But, I will drag you down with me!"

He turned around and shouted loudly, "Chase!"

"Jing Meng Hun, follow me closely!" Chu Yang let out a big roar, "To death! Let’s have our armies engage in an upright and fair fight to death! I shall defeat you fair and square! And, I shall leave you convinced and ready to concede!"

[You’ve already tricked us into consuming so much aphrodisiacs. And now, everyone’s having erotic thoughts. How can there be a fair battle now?]

[And then, you go so far as to shamelessly say ‘upright and fair fight to death’? , ‘you will defeat me fair and square’? , ‘leave me convinced and ready to concede’?!]

"King of Hell Chu, you are shameless!!" Jing Meng Hun shouted out loud, "How can you be so shameless?!"

He ended up spouting blood from his mouth along with that shout.

Jing Meng Hun had gone wild with rage...

[I must first kill King of Hell Chu! Then, I will think of a plan for detoxification...]

Two hours passed in the blink of an eye...

...

Wu Kuang Yun had finished tidying-up the battlefield in one day's time. Tie Bu Tian had given the command, and that huge crater – which had appeared after the massive explosion at the center of the array – had been filled.

There were corpses everywhere! They were innumerable and densely packed... 8 million soldiers had participated in this war, but no more than 200,000 of them were left alive by now. And, even they were riddled with injuries, and were drawing their last breaths...

Wu Kuang Yun was commanding the army to dig pits at present. They were preparing to bury the corpses. The weather was so hot that many corpses had already started to rot in just one day. This could lead to the outbreak of an epidemic... and that wouldn't be a pretty sight.

Therefore, burying the corpses was the top-priority at the moment. And, Wu Kuang Yun wouldn't possibly dare to show the slightest negligence in this regard.

Suddenly, the noise of neighing horses and clamoring men sounded while the digging work was going on. A team of cavalry soldiers could be seen rushing over from afar. Wu Kuang Yun was startled when he saw that the armors was of the cavalrymen were in a mess. The man at the forefront had disheveled hair, torn sleeves, and filthy black dirt all over his face. He appeared to be in an extremely distressed state. However, he was smiling for some

reason. And, his smile was as bright as the sunlight. This man was none other than King of Hell Chu!

The carefully chosen elite troops of Iron Cloud were rallying behind King of Hell Chu!

Wu Kuang Yun was in a shock.

[This guy is in such a distressed state. But, why does he look so pleased with himself? Don't tell me that he has destroyed the Golden Horse Riders Department?]

He was thinking of this scenario when he heard a loud and inconsolable bellow, "King of Hell Chu! Don't run! Come to die!" Jing Meng Hun was leading the team of Golden Horse Riders Department, and was chasing wildly-after.

Wu Kuang Yun opened his mouth and eyes wide, [this guy is being chased. So, he's actually running for his life! But... he still looks so proud of himself... he's fu*king amazing...]

[But... why is he leading the Golden Horse Riders Department here?]

The time taken to describe the scene was much longer than the one it took for it to unfold. King of Hell Chu urged his horse to move around in a circle, and shouted, "Make formation!" The cavalry soldiers behind him immediately formed a military formation in spite of being in a tired and distressed state.

This was then followed by a majestic roar, "Prepare to face the enemy!"

Wu Kuang Yun curled his lips. He was already running towards his warhorse at lightning speed. [It's a fu*king miracle that your soldiers are able to stand straight. But, you still want them to face the enemy? It seems I will have to move into action.]

However, what happened next... left Wu Kuang Yun in complete shock!

He saw the two armies – each in a similarly distressed state – lined-up in formations to face each other. Then, the troops on both sides suddenly charged towards each other.

However, the riders of the Golden Horse Riders Department suddenly began to collapse one after another on the way itself. In fact, some people were still dashing forward when their noses and ears suddenly started to rot and fall. Then, their arms fell to the ground with 'squish' sounds...

Even the warhorses of the Golden Horse Riders Department collapsed one after another, and turned into piles of rotten meat!

Wu Kuang Yun rubbed his eyes, [Fu*k! What's going on? These men were alive and kicking a moment ago! So, how did they suddenly turn into corpses more rotten than the one that have been lying in the battlefield for a day? Could it be... that these were originally corpses that were rotting on the horsebacks for a long time?]

[But, how can the corpses... make sounds?]

Chu Yang proudly smiled, [Damn, it's already past the time-limit of five hours! Why haven't you all died yet?]

The over 20,000 people of the Golden Horse Riders Department suddenly crashed down with a loud crashing noise, and instantly turned into decomposed meat alongside most of their horses! Chu Yang's troops – who were already tired-enough to be rendered incapable of lifting their weapons – didn't need to use their weapons in the end. Jing Meng Hun's troops simply collapsed on their own, and that too in a bizarre manner...

Jing Meng Hun turned around to look, and his entire body trembled. He faced upwards, and yelled out. This was a horrifying spectacle. And, he couldn't help but think that he-himself was affected by the same poison. He felt like dying from the grief that had started to plague his heart the very next instant!

"King of Hell Chu! What poison is this?" Jing Meng Hun's entire body was trembling. He could already feel his skin itch; it had started to fester-up...

"Jing Meng Hun... this poison is derived from the flood dragons which had appeared after you had burned the mountain..." Chu Yang laughed loudly, "Also, many thanks to you for seriously injuring those flood dragons. I wouldn't have been able to obtain their inner cores if it weren't for you. Now, you can say that I've avenged them by using their cores to poison your body! Moreover, this also serves as a revenge for the people whose livelihood was destroyed by the destruction of mountain forest!"

Chu Yang sneered, "Jing Meng Hun, you tell me... isn't this retribution?"

Jing Meng Hun was dumbstruck!

The 'thud' sounds had been coming incessantly from behind him over this short period of time. There were about 24,000 people of the Golden Horse Riders Department at the start of this chase. But, Jing Meng Hun was the only one left alive by now!

Furthermore, his warhorse had begun to rot, and had slowly turned into mush... So, Jing Meng Hun was now standing on the ground...

He raised his arm, and saw the slow emergence of yellow spots. Then, these spots turned into water-stains filled with pus, and eventually decomposed and turning into big holes... Jing Meng Hun wore a miserable smile, faced upwards, and let out a loud roar, "Retribution! Retribution!"

He put out his hand. Only the bones remained in place of his fingers. He used his bony fingers to draw out his long sword. And then, he slit his own throat! His tall and burly body then slowly fell down on the ground with a loud thud. And then, his entire body turned into a pile of rotten meat!

Chu Yang heaved a sigh of relief.

He saw people turning into piles of rotten meat one after another, and couldn't help a cold feeling in his heart. [This lust poison… is very potent and scary!]

He suddenly recalled that he-himself had been poisoned by this poison. [If not for… perhaps I would've also turned into a pile of rotten meat!]

He couldn't stop his facial muscle from twitching. He turned his head towards Tie Bu Tian's tent; it was located in the back… and, an extremely complicated look appeared in his eyes!

Wu Kuang Yun and his cavalry soldiers were approaching fast. They felt that they were watching a dream-like scene as they galloped along the way. Everyone was rubbing their eyes, [what the hell is going on?]

[More than 20,000 people! The most elite army on the entire continent!]

[And… they suddenly vanished into thin air… just like that? Even a Ninth Grade King Level Expert – who was also the chief of the Golden Horse Riders Department – also committed suicide in utter desperation… but, he still turned into rotten meat without exception!]

Everyone was petrified.

This decisive battle had finally come to an end! But, this bizarre and terrifying spectacle had forever branded itself in the hearts of all.

Chu Yang rested for a while. Then, he quickly left for that lake. He needed to retrieve the inner cores of flood dragons, [Fu*k! These things are too virulent. I must lock them inside my Nine Tribulations Space ah…]

Tie Bu Tian, Tie Long Cheng, and Wu Kuang Yun were discussing the means to deal with the aftermath of this war.

Great Zhao's 6 million soldiers had been wiped out in their entirety. And, Iron Cloud had 4 million soldiers in the beginning. But, only 300,000 of them remained! No one would've ever expected such an outcome beforehand.

The ten tiger and dragon generals of Great Zhao had also perished in the war!

The elites of Great Zhao's Golden Horse Riders Department had been poisoned to death under a treacherous plan formulated by King of Hell Chu!

Diwu Qing Rou was missing.

Great Zhao had been reduced to a 'tiger without teeth' after the war! There was indeed another nation called 'Limitless Nation'. However, it had been reduced to ruins by Diwu Qing Rou prior to the war between Great Zhao and Iron Cloud. Therefore, Limitless Nation was barely managing to maintain its feeble existence. It was no longer self-sufficient as it once used to be. So, Iron Cloud was taking the footsteps towards unifying the world. And, it would be able to go all-out with no obstacles in the way. The mission to unify the Lower Three Heavens would inevitably go smoothly since everyone else was bound to obey!

It was only a matter of time before this outcome would manifest.

However, Tie Bu Tian was still depressed in her heart. In fact, there wasn't the slightest trace of joy in her heart. She saw that scene of post-war devastation, and heaved a long sigh.

The breeze blew throughout the night. The moon was bright, yet the stars were sparse in the sky.

Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian were slowly walking towards the summit. There was residual smell of blood in the air even though this brutal war had already ended.

"This war was very disastrous. And, it has caused heavy losses!" Wu Qian Qian pondered for a moment. She then continued, "You

can unify the world now. But, it will probably take several years for this loss of strength to be fully restored. Moreover, it was even more devastating for the common people. It’s hard to say how many families lost their backbones... many lost their sons and fathers... sigh!"

Tie Bu Tian’s countenance turned serious as she looked up at the starry sky, and softly spoke, "This world is... full of helplessness!" She paused for quite some time, and then continued slowly, "I shall grant amnesty to the entire world after I’ve unified it. I shall re-formulate the style of governance, and only employ talented individuals...

"As far as the common people are concerned... I will exempt them from paying taxes for three years. Afterwards, I will add three-and-a-half years of taxes to recover the nation’s wealth..." Tie Bu Tian was somewhat at a loss as she continued, "I had become the crown prince of Iron Cloud a while ago, but I never expected that the task of unifying the world would fall into my hands. And, now that I’m about to do it... it just feels like a dream..."

Wu Qian Qian remained silent.

Tie Bu Tian was silent for a while. She looked at the shining stars in the sky, and then recited in a sad tone, "The war leaves its weapons useless, and armor’s steel become decorations. The hero who controls the world... dreams to see soldiers and swords no more...!

"Chu Yang has claimed great credit for himself in this war to rule over the world." Tie Bu Tian continued in a melancholic manner. She was obviously thinking that Chu Yang would soon leave.

Wu Qian Qian also sighed. She then spoke-up in a somewhat mischievous manner, "That’s your man. It can be said that your man gave this world to you as a gift."

"My man..." The traces of deep attachment and tender feelings flashed in Tie Bu Tian’s eyes.

Suddenly, the loud voice of a guard sounded from afar, "Who are you?"

"It’s me!" it was Chu Yang’s voice.

"Chu Yang is back." Wu Qian Qian’s eyes lit up, "He waited until now to visit... what’s he been up to?"

Tie Bu Tian’s eyes flashed as she gently said, "Remember what I told you... " She had faintly guessed the purpose behind Chu Yang’s visit.

Chapter 434: She Was Called Little Tian Tian

Chu Yang walked to the summit; step by step. His black robe was fluttering in the night breeze. He was taking heavy footsteps. There was some hesitation in his gait. His heart was in a state of complete mess... just like his black robe in the wind.

Wu Qian Qian looked at Chu Yang's black robe; she had sewn it with her own hands. Her eyes revealed traces of tender feelings.

"Minister Chu, you've just returned from the war. Why are you taking a leisurely stroll instead of getting rest?" Tie Bu Tian asked with a smile.

"I've come here because there's something I don't understand. And, it has left me puzzled. So, I've specially come to consult with Your Majesty," Chu Yang replied indifferently.

"Ha-ha, what in the world happened... that has puzzled Minister Chu so deeply?" Tie Bu Tian laughed in a clear and sonorous voice.

Chu Yang was silent for a long time. Then, he slowly spoke-up, "Qian Qian, you should excuse us. There's something I wish to discuss with His Majesty alone."

Wu Qian Qian complied by saying, "ok". She anxiously looked at these two people, and then turned around to leave.

Tie Bu Tian snorted, and said, "Qian Qian isn't an outsider. What's this matter that you can't talk about in front of her?"

Wu Qian Qian found herself sandwiched between these two, and didn't know whether to advance or retreat.

"This is a private matter. It will be very inconvenient to talk in Qian Qian's presence," Chu Yang indifferently replied.

"Private matter or public matter... they are all the same in front of me. These are mere worldly matters in my eyes!" Tie Bu Tian

gently said, "I'm the Lord of the world. I have the power to manage all such matters of the world. Qian Qian, you can stay."

Chu Yang looked at Tie Bu Tian; he was astounded. His face slowly darkened slowly. He simply couldn't understand how Tie Bu Tian had become so overbearing all of a sudden?

"Your Majesty, is this what you wish? Is this what you intended?" Chu Yang asked solemnly.

He 'genuinely' didn't know that the reason Tie Bu Tian was so adamant on keeping Wu Qian Qian here... was related to the fact that she was somewhat lacking in confidence. Moreover, she was a bit scared in heart as well. Therefore, Wu Qian Qian's presence would embolden her.

"Minister Chu, what's the matter?" Tie Bu Tian asked.

Chu Yang's complexion had turned gloomy. In fact, he had barely managed to suppress his rage from erupting. He tried his utmost to keep his anger under control and said, "Since Your Majesty says so... I'll speak frankly. I think you must've seen that Jing Meng Hun and his 25,000 golden horse riders were poisoned to death. They were completely wiped out... by a poison called the 'lust poison'!"

His eyes were firmly fixated at Tie Bu Tian's face as he said this.

"Lust poison!" Tie Bu Tian's facial muscles twitched.

"There's no method or medicine to cure this type of lust poison... besides the copulation between male and female!" Chu Yang bluntly said, "And, I was affected by the same lust poison on the day you had rescued me. But, I came out unscathed for some reason."

Tie Bu Tian's eyes moved aside to avoid eye-contact.

Chu Yang pressed forward, and moved a step closer. His eyes were still glaring at Tie Bu Tian as he calmly asked, "I wish to know why I didn't die back then? Who's the woman who saved

me?"

Tie Bu Tian began to panic. And, this was clearly visible from her frenzied facial expression. She opened her mouth to speak something as she helplessly looked at Chu Yang. Meanwhile, Wu Qian Qian was nervously watching her from the side...

"I just wish to know who she is!" Chu Yang softly spoke-up.

"Ha-ha... I never thought that Minister Chu would find out the truth," Tie Bu Tian's eyes flickered. There was a strange uneasiness in her smile, "This is the work of providence."

"Providence?" Chu Yang's eyes flashed.

"Yes..." Tie Bu Tian's gaze became somewhat distant as she spoke, "I guess I will have to tell you what happened that day since you're asking..."

"I would like to hear the details," Chu Yang solemnly said.

"Minister Chu had already lost consciousness when I came rushing to your rescue with my army behind. My shadow uncles went all-out, and saved you from the encirclement of the Golden Horse Riders Department at the risk of their lives," Tie Bu Tian began to narrate slowly.

"This much... I know. What happened afterwards?"

"Then, we found out that Minister Chu had a dreadful poison running in his body. And, this poison couldn't be cured with any antidote! Moreover, it was the lust poison of an ancient beast named the 'Lust Dragon'. The only way to get rid of this poison was copulation... otherwise it was incurable," Tie Bu Tian told little by little.

"And...?" Chu Yang knew that the narration was reaching the main point. So, he was listening very attentively.

"And, we were in the barren mountains that were surrounded by wilderness. Where could we possibly go to find a woman?" Tie Bu

Tian heaved a loud sigh.

"Oh?"

"But fortunately, the heaven never seals off every exit. We took Minister Chu along, and looked for help along the way. And, we suddenly found a young peasant maiden in the valley. She had come to the mountain forest to chop firewood..." Tie Bu Tian's eyes sparkled as she quietly continued.

Meanwhile, Wu Qian Qian cried out 'ah' in fear. The tone in which Tie Bu Tian was recounting the incident... made it seem as if she was about to tell the truth. However, Wu Qian Qian hadn't anticipated that Tie Bu Tian would pull out such a 'pack of lies' out of nowhere!

"A peasant maiden...?" Chu Yang wrinkled his brows.

"Her home was located in the mountains. It had burned down in the mountain fire, and everyone in her family had died. She survived because she had come to the valley to chop firewood, and there was a spring nearby," Tie Bu Tian narrated this part with difficulty.

This was the grand lie she had prepared in advance to deal with Chu Yang if he would ever come to press her for an answers.

"Continue..." Chu Yang's tone was quite blunt. There was a dangerous look in his eyes as well.

"We had saved her at that time. And then, we requested sister-in-la... requested her... to save you." Tie Bu Tian sighed and said, "She agreed..."

Chu Yang clenched his fist tightly.

"Where is she?" Chu Yang realized that this young girl had sacrificed her chastity for his sake, and he had been completely oblivious of it. So, he couldn't help but have a burst of constrained feelings in his heart...

He didn’t feel ashamed. He was lucky-enough to have survived in that kind of situation. Was he in a position to ask for some outstanding beauty? It didn’t matter what she looked like. After all, she had saved his life by sacrificing her most precious thing!

This was one big favor! And, for the man involved... this was one hell of a responsibility!

"I killed her!" Tie Bu Tian solemnly replied, "That girl... was clean and undefiled, but I figured that Minister Chu doesn’t need a burden like her. Moreover, Minister Chu already has someone in his heart. So, I realized that you won’t be willing to bear such a responsibility. Therefore, I determined what’s right for Minister Chu... and, I killed her."

A sharp pain appeared in Tie Bu Tian’s eyes as she said this, [killed her. Yes, I killed her!]

"Killed?" Chu Yang was somewhat dazed by this. He murmured to himself, "Killed?"

[A chaste girl sacrificed her dignity... her purity... as well as her most precious thing to save my life, and Tie Bu Tian killed her?!!]

"Why?" Chu Yang’s body trembled. Flames of anger surged forth in his eyes. He noticed a look of panic and guilt in Tie Bu Tian’s eyes. It was accompanied by an apologetic look as well. Chu Yang intuitively thought, [Tie Bu Tian doesn’t seem to be lying!]

"Why not?!" Tie Bu Tian indifferently replied, "Minister Chu, I did it for you."

[I did it for you! I did it for your own good... I don’t want you to be hurt...]

Chu Yang turned furious, "You did it for me? You killed my savior for my good? You killed a pitiful woman for my good?!"

Chu Yang couldn’t control his rage, and suddenly took a step forward. He stretched out his hand, and maliciously grabbed Tie Bu Tian’s neck. A vengeful look welled-up in his eyes, "You... how

can you be so heartless?! Don’t you understand that it doesn’t matter whether she was beautiful or ugly... it doesn’t matter whether I would’ve been reluctant to accept her or not... she was still my woman!?"

"My woman! How can you casually kill her?" Chu Yang asked furiously.

Tie Bu Tian was being strangled by him, and found it difficult to breathe. Her eyes rolled up into her head, and revealed the whites of her eyeballs. She was suffering a lot of pain. However, a sweet feeling had also appeared in her heart rather spontaneously. The words spoken by Chu Yang had firmly wedged themselves into her heart... [My woman!]

[How can you causally kill my woman?]

However, this strong woman tenaciously controlled her emotions, and coldly looked at Chu Yang.

"Chu Yang! Don’t do it!" Wu Qian Qian rushed over in panic, and tried to break-off Chu Yang’s grip, "What are you doing? Let go of His Majesty! Quickly let go... she... she is..."

She wanted to say that ‘she is pregnant with your child’, but didn’t dare to say it in the end...

Chu Yang gradually relaxed the strength in his hand, and Tie Bu Tian’s feet touched the ground. She was finally able to breathe. However, he still kept clutching her neck, and coldly asked, "Give me an explanation!"

Tie Bu Tian coughed severely. Then, she coldly looked at Chu Yang and slowly explained, "Would you have married her if I hadn’t killed her?"

Chu Yang’s complexion paled. He couldn’t help but take a step back. And, the grip of his right hand loosened in an involuntarily motion.

However, Tie Bu Tian took a step forward to close-in-on him, and

then asked in a heavy voice, "Minister Chu, how would you have handled her if I hadn’t killed her? What would you have done for her?

"Would you have accompanied her for a lifetime if I hadn’t killed her?" Tie Bu Tian’s piercing gaze pricked right into Chu Yang’s eyes like a needle, "Tell me... what could you have done? Tell me?!"

The five finger marks could be seen very clearly on her neck. These marks had been left by Chu Yang’s grip.

Chu Yang took several steps back in a completely distressed state of mind.

[If that woman was alive and present here... would I marry her, and take her as my wife...?]

[Yes, can I marry her...?]

Chu Yang suddenly remembered Mo Qing Wu, and felt a tearing pain in his heart!

[Would I? Would I? What would Qing Wu do if I had married this girl? What would be the point of my rebirth? But... her sacrifice would have been for nothing if I hadn’t married her!]

[How could I be so heartless?]

Chu Yang was at a loss after being confronted by Tie Bu Tian’s questions!

Tie Bu Tian covered her neck, and let out a painful cough. She gasped for breath, and spoke-up with difficulty, "So, I ended her life with my own hands. I terminated this entire matter myself... treating as if this incident never happened. Isn’t that good enough?"

She had felt as if a knife was had sheared her heart as she had spoken these words, [terminated with my own hands...? Ended with my own hands...?!]

Chu Yang stood stupefied like a wooden statue. And, his eyes

suddenly turned moist.

[That poor girl sacrificed so much... and even her life for someone like me... a man she didn't know, and had never seen before...]

He was always decisive when it came to killing people or ruthless slaughters! However, he wasn't a person without feelings. In fact, Chu Yang was always very serious about his responsibilities on the contrary!

He would kill everyone on the battlefield if they were hostile towards him... that too without batting an eye. However, killing an innocent person... would make him feel guilty.

This matter had made him feel very constrained in his heart. In fact, he was infinitely bitter in his heart.

A long passage of time elapsed. Chu Yang heaved a long sigh, and asked in a hoarse voice, "What... was her name?"

[Name?]

Tie Bu Tian took a deep breath as her eyes turned somewhat moist. She replied in a muffled voice, "I don't know her surname. I only know that she was called 'Tian Tian'. She had told us that her father loved her very much, and used to call her... Little Tian Tian..."

"Tian Tian? Little Tian Tian?" Chu Yang's voice was low and deep. It was hard to tell what kinds of emotions were raging in his heart.

Tie Bu Tian suddenly felt a sharp pain in her heart when she heard Chu Yang call her name. She felt congested in her chest. She hastily turned her head to one side, and tears began to well-up in her eyes...

Chapter 435: Leaves on a Long Journey!

"Little Tian Tian... Little Tian Tian..." Chu Yang wore a tragic smile and said, "I had never thought that I – Chu Yang – will ever fall into such a spiral of emotional debt!"

Tie Bu Tian felt that her voice was choking with emotion. She quickly coughed a few times to clear her throat and said, "Minister Chu, you must understand that there was no other way."

"There was no other way?" Chu Yang gave her a mirthless smile.

Tie Bu Tian felt as if her heart was being torn apart. But, she suppressed her feelings, and smiled gently.

Meanwhile, Wu Qian Qian lowered her head in sadness. She also felt infinitely bitter in her heart. She didn't know whether she was feeling bad for Tie Bu Tian... or for herself...

"Where's she buried?" Chu Yang took a deep breath and asked, "I'm going to offer my prayers." There was strange sadness in his smile, "It doesn't matter who she was... or what she looked like... this woman was my first woman in this life!"

[The first woman in his life?]

Tie Bu Tian's eyes lit up. She then said, "We were stuck in the turmoil and chaos of war back then. The entire mountain was burning. Moreover, there was a fear of being ambushed by the Golden Horse Riders Department any moment, so..."

"I understand." Chu Yang gently nodded and then turned away. He put his hands on his shoulders, raised his head to look up at the starry sky. Then, he murmured in a low voice, "Little Tian Tian... Oh Little Tian Tian... I will never forget you in my entire life!"

The three people remained silent for a long time.

"The war for Lower Three Heavens has ended. Iron Cloud will soon dominate the world. I guess it's time for me to go," Chu

Yang’s tone was somewhat melancholic. He had been looking forward to leave for the Middle Three Heavens rather eagerly. However, he felt a sharp ache in his heart for some unknown reason.

"You're leaving?" Tie Bu Tian and Wu Qian Qian raised their heads to look at him, and asked in unison.

"Yes." Chu Yang didn’t turn around as he replied softly.

The two women felt a pang of frustration. They couldn’t even speak for a long time. They knew this day would come sooner or later, but they still bewildered at the last minute. They were packing in their hearts, while their minds had gone completely blank...

"Your Majesty, I request you... please take good care of Qian Qian!" Chu Yang spoke-up in a muffled voice without turning back.

"You can rest assured about that!" Tie Bu Tian clenched her teeth, and sucked in a mouthful of cold air as she said, "I shall ascend the throne of the world, and make Qian Qian my Empress!"

"Empress?!" Chu Yang was startled in his heart. He turned around like a whirlwind, and looked at those two with disbelief in his eyes, "You..."

A tragic smile appeared on Wu Qian Qian’s face, "So, you don’t need to be worried about me..."

Chu Yang profoundly looked at her for quite some time. Then, he finally heaved a sigh of relief. But, he didn’t know why he was having these complex feelings in his heart. Eventually, he reluctantly spoke-up, "Such being the case, I... can rest assured."

Wu Qian Qian was experiencing heartache. She said in a soft voice, "When are you leaving? I will come to see you off."

"Why do you wish to see me off?" Chu Yang solemnly said, "That’s unnecessary."

"No, I must see you off." Wu Qian Qian firmly shook her head. She felt heartbroken as she said, "I'm going to shoulder the position of King of Hell Chu after you leave. And, now you – the real one – is leaving. So, how can I – the fake one – not bother to see you off?"

"King of Hell Chu... Ha ha ha..." Chu Yang let out a hoarse laughter. He spoke after a while, "I will leave tomorrow morning. I will first go to Beyond the Heavens Sect to say my prayers for Little Tian Tian since she sacrificed everything for me... and then, I will head out straight for the entrance to the Middle Three Heavens from there..."

"Tomorrow morning... so early..." Tie Bu Tian's body shook a little.

"Ha-ha..." Chu Yang laughed somewhat solemnly, "What's there to yearn for in the Lower Three Heavens?" He shook his head, and forced a smile, "There's none. There's none..."

The two women experienced heartache at the same time. They also had a burning sensation in their noses. [There's nothing to yearn for? Is there really nothing? Do you even realize... what you're throwing away? What you are leaving behind...?]

A long pause followed. Then, Chu Yang turned around and said, "Take care you two, ha ha ha..." Then, his body floated away like a cloud. His black robe danced in the ice-cold wind, and made a fluttering sound as he flew down from the summit.

He quickly disappeared in the night sky.

From beginning to end... he didn't look back!

The next day... early in the morning... right before dawn

Chu Yang's black robe fluttered as his well-dressed figure went out of the military barracks. He was carrying a small package in his hand. He looked back, and felt a bit nostalgic... Endless bitter feelings surged in his heart.

He didn’t know why this was happening…

He finally chuckled, and shook his head before he walked forward in a calm manner.

He suddenly gawked when he arrived in the valley area.

He saw four people mounted on four horses waiting up ahead. These were Tie Bu Tian, the two shadows, and Wu Qian Qian.

"Is Minister Chu ready to leave?" Tie Bu Tian’s asked in a shaking voice. She had tried her best to control herself, but she still hadn’t been able to help it.

Wu Qian Qian looked at Chu Yang emotionally… as if she were watching a daydream. Her tears simply wouldn’t stay-put, and continued to roll down endlessly. However, she was reluctant to wipe them-off… fearing that Chu Yang might disappear if she blinked…

Not knowing when they would meet again…

"Ha-ha, now I truly understand the debt of gratitude coupled with the duty to avenge. I’m hitting the road with that in mind." The moment Chu Yang said ‘debt of gratitude coupled with duty to avenge’… the sky – that had turned bright merely a while ago with the break of dawn – suddenly turned dark for some reason.

This darkness was short-lived, and remained for a mere half-a-minute. It then disappeared. However, these five people faintly realized, [the sky seems somewhat different.]

Chu Yang’s heart was filled with emotions.

[It feels as if… my mission of going against the heaven’s will, and changing my fate has been accomplished…? Or is it possible that I’m once again caught in the grasp of unknown future?]

Chu Yang suddenly became very eager to be at Mo Qing Wu’s side.

"I'm leaving," Chu Yang spoke in a soft voice.

"Take care on the way!" Tie Bu Tian’s entire body shook uncontrollably as she looked deeply at Chu Yang. She then spoke in a soft voice, "Minister Chu, you have given me so much in the last more-than-a year’s time! I will remember this phase of time my entire life..."

She paused for a moment, and then continued in a warbling tone, "This more-than-a year’s time was perhaps the happiest time in my life..."

Chu Yang couldn’t help but be deeply moved when Tie Bu Tian revealed his true feelings, "Your Majesty, there’s no need to be so emotional... There will be ample time for that later. This isn’t the day to say goodbye forever."

"The day to say goodbye forever...?" Tie Bu Tian’s eyes lit up, "Minister Chu, what do you mean..."

"Perhaps... I'll come back," Chu Yang quietly replied.

"Minister Chu, take good care until we meet again." The two shadows cupped their hands together in obeisance, "We will always remember your kindness in our hearts. That’s all we have to say."

"Yeah, I hope you two take good care of His Majesty," Chu Yang smiled and said.

"That's a given." The shadow took a deep breath and replied... almost as if they were taking a pledge, "Minister Chu can rest assured! We won’t allow anyone to lay a finger on His Majesty and Young Miss Wu as long as we live!"

"Chu Yang ..." Wu Qian Qian slowly walked up to him; there was a parcel in her hand.

Tie Bu Tian and the shadow heaved a deep sigh. They then moved a step back.

"This parcel contains black robes which I’ve sewn for you with my own hands. There are a total of nine of them." Wu Qian Qian nearly choked with emotions as she said, "You take them along

with you. Each strand of these robes has been personally contrived by me. I remember that you had once said that you like black robes... correct?"

"Yes..." Chu Yang had a feeling of congestion in his chest, but he still spoke-up with difficulty, "Thank you... Qian Qian."

"I'm just hoping to make your journey safe and comfortable..." Wu Qian Qian replied emotionally. She seemed obsessed as she looked at his face. She went up to him, tidied-up his collar, straightened his robe, and the hem. She reorganized each spot with her own hands...

Clusters of sparking and crystal-like tears fell to the ground.

Chu Yang was holding the parcel, but felt as if he was holding the heart of a pure and innocent girl. It suddenly felt as heavy as a mountain. He already had 6 or 7 such black robes in the Nine Tribulations Space. All of them had been sewn by Wu Qian Qian.

He was deeply touched by this. So, he took a deep breath and said, "Qian Qian, you shouldn't act like this... you will become the Empress of the world in the future. People would laugh at you if they saw you like this..."

Tie Bu Tian had seen how Wu Qian Qian's infatuated eyes had gazed at Chu Yang while she had sorted his clothes... like a wife grooming her husband's clothes before sending him on a long journey. A strange look appeared in Tie Bu Tian's eyes.

It was jealously...

"I'm leaving." Chu Yang controlled himself from holding Wu Qian Qian into his arms. After all, Tie Bu Tian was still standing nearby, and Wu Qian Qian was soon going become his Empress. Therefore, Chu Yang moved a step back.

However, Wu Qian Qian suddenly stepped forward, and hugged him. She buried her head in his chest, and began to sob tears of silence. Her hug was so tight, and so hard... that it seemed as if she

would never see him again if he left today...

The soft spot in Chu Yang's heart had been stirred by this. He couldn't help but raise his head to look at Tie Bu Tian; he was looking at Wu Qian Qian. However, Chu Yang noticed a particularly strange expression in Tie Bu Tian's. It seemed similar to the look of... endless jealously...

This look suddenly stirred Chu Yang's heart. [There's a strange look in his eyes... don't tell me that he's jealous because I am hugging his future Empress?]

Wu Qian Qian continued to weep silently for a while. She then suddenly pushed Chu Yang away. She lowered her head, and drew back two steps. Then, she spoke-up in a warbling voice, "You go now... go... just go..."

She suddenly turned around like a whirlwind, covered her face with her hands, and bolted away frantically. However, she turned around to look at Chu Yang after she had rushed out for several feet; her eyes were blurred with tears. Her tender body was trembling. She felt more and more powerless. She finally squatted down on the ground, and covered her face with her hands.

Chu Yang felt bitter pain in his heart. He finally cupped one fist in the other hand in respect, and resolutely spoke, "Take care, everyone!"

His feet trod back while he continued to face everyone. His body floated back like a lightning. He went back a considerable distance like this. Then, he suddenly turned around, and flew up to the top of a big tree.

"Chu Yang!" Wu Qian Qian let out a painful shout, and suddenly rushed back in a frenzy.

Chu Yang was standing atop the tree with his back facing her. He stood still, but his body was shaking. It seemed as if he would turn back... but he didn't in the end. A clear whistling sound

reverberated as his body darted away like lighting; it only left afterimages behind. His figure then vanished in the mountain forest.

"Chu Yang!" Wu Qian Qian poured her heart out in this one last shout as her crazily bolting body suddenly came to standstill. She then paused as she stood in a daze...

Tie Bu Tian had been enduring this entire time. The tears she had been holding back finally burst out like ‘an uncontrollable river from a broken dam’ as she watched him disappear. Her entire body shivered like a withered leaf in the wind...

A long passage of time elapsed. She eventually pulled back her vision from the direction in which Chu Yang had disappeared. She then squatted down, and stretched out a finger towards the spot where Chu Yang had left two clear footprints.

She sentimentally looked at his footprints, and tears began to fall down...

[Chu Yang, you will come back, right? You are in the Lower Three Heavens... you are here... in my heart. You have left such a deep impression in my heart. How can you just leave like that?]

[How can you just leave like that when you are in so much debt?]

Chapter 436: Arrives in the Middle Heaven

The war between Iron Cloud and Great Zhao had ended. The Great Zhao Army had been annihilated. The top-ten dragon and tiger generals were dead. Diwu Qing Rou was missing. The world domination at the hands of Iron Cloud was simply unstoppable!

A secret order had been received from Diwu Qing Rou in Great Zhao's Continent Center. And, the two brothers — Yin Wu Fa and Yin Wu Tian – had immediately started the purge. The Imperial Clan was the first one to get slaughtered. The imperial ministers got slaughtered thereafter. The long suspected enemy – Cheng Yun He – was also murdered by the two brothers.

None of the upper echelon of Great Zhao was spared by these two men.

Afterwards, these two brothers banded the leftover manpower of the Golden Horse Riders Department in Continent Center, and fled to live in the seclusion of the mountain forest. It is said that these two King Level experts have never been seen since!

Tie Long Cheng and Wu Kuang Yun consolidated a million troops, and marched south to sweep the world.

Iron Cloud's Emperor – Tie Bu Tian – returned to the Iron Cloud Citadel, and sent a marriage proposal to seek the permission of Beyond the Heavens Sect's leader – Wu Yun Liang. The approval arrived soon-after. Then, Tie Bu Tian arranged the nation's mother ceremony to coronate the Empress. And then, he got married with Wu Qian Qian, and made her the Empress of Iron Cloud!

It happened so fast that everyone was left greatly surprised. But, the Iron Cloud's ministers finally understood everything at the wedding, [this bride is a peerless beauty, but her abdomen seems quite bloated...]

[No wonder His Majesty was in such a hurry to get married. So, Young Miss Wu is already pregnant because an illicit pre-marriage relationship with His Majesty…]

The ministers rejoiced and congratulated each other once they realized this. They beamed with joy at the thought, [Iron Cloud is about to dominate the world, and our nation already has an heir! This doubles the happiness ah.]

The only surprising thing was that King of Hell Chu didn't show-up in-person to congratulate. He merely sent a congratulatory gift.

Tie Bu Tian took the infamous 'demon girl' Wu Qian Qian of Bu Tian Pavilion along with him after the big-fat wedding, and she was made to reside as the Empress in the Imperial Palace. Everyone presumed that this matter had probably left Minister Chu in a very bad mood. Perhaps, that's why Minister Chu's plans got more and more arduous, and his methods got more and more vigorous and resolute thereafter…

Therefore, Tie Bu Tian issued an imperial decree — Bu Tian Pavilion is being incorporated into the national structure, and will be an independent supervision department. It will be responsible for overseeing the government officials throughout the world. And, Minister Chu will have absolute authority to deal with any matter that involves any violation of the law.

Therefore, Bu Tian Pavilion was brought into the light from the dark, and gained immense authority. And, the ominous name of Minister Chu instantly spread throughout the world!

Tie Long Cheng's expedition army continued to get victories everywhere it went. It was akin to having effortless accomplishments with no setbacks whatsoever. They didn't encounter any serious resistance. So, they continued to advance triumphantly… singing songs of victory on their route…

The Iron Cloud's million soldiers reached Great Zhao Continent Center in just half-a-years' time, and captured it!

After that, Wu Kuang Yun continued to lead the army south in order to attack the Limitless Nation. Meanwhile, Tie Long Cheng led his army north to sweep the Wolf Tribe of the Northern Grassland.

Tie Bu Tian soon informed the whole world that Empress Wu Qian Qian had given birth to a son. Tie Bu Tian was overjoyed, and personally named him ‘Tie Yang’! He’s rumored to have said these words at time of his son’s naming — I hope that this child grows up to become a tall pillar of strength, and is able to support the heaven and earth with his indomitable spirit!

Tie Bu Tian named Tie Yang as the crown prince when he was merely one month old, and made the baby-boy the heir to the throne. Tie Yang then became the candidate for the role of the next Emperor! And, the entire nation broke into a great celebration...

These things will perhaps be taken-up later in the story...

... ...

Chu Yang arrived at the spot where he had fought with the Golden Horse Riders Department on that same day. He wandered around for a long time. Then, he finally heaved a deep sigh. He used his sword to engrave a few words on a mountain wall, and then floated away.

"Tian Tian! Little Tian Tian..."

Chu Yang sighed in a melancholic manner, [just these five words can express a hundred remembrances.]

... ...

The mountain pass was filled with clouds and mist. Chu Yang’s black robe fluttered as he burst into the dense fog.

The entrance to the Middle Three Heavens was located at this place!

Chu Yang rushed into this channel without any hesitation. He

had passed through it once before. His body was engulfed in dazzling seven-colored rays of light. It was genuinely fantastical. He arrived at a platform after he had crossed this very long channel.

Chu Yang’s expression was gentle as he set foot on the stone platform. The sky over the stone platform was misty. Suddenly, a gorgeous white light came from this dark and misty sky, and enveloped Chu Yang’s body in its entirety.

The light flashed once. And, Chu Yang’s body rose upward within the white light.

He was about to leave the Lower Three Heavens, but he suddenly remembered several things in this moment.

Wu Qian Qian was frantically running towards him... choking with emotions, yet calling out his name, "Chu Yang..."

Chu Yang closed his eyes shut, and sighed sadly.

Then, he strangely remembered that scene when Wu Qian Qian had hugged him, and Tie Bu Tian was watching with envy in his eyes.

"Why am I remembering this now..." Chu Yang smiled bitterly. But then, he seemingly heard Tie Bu Tian’s parting words in his ears, "... this more than a year’s time was perhaps the happiest time in my life..."

Chu Yang’s had kept his eyes closed until now...

He then opened his eyes, and he discovered that he was in midair. But, he was slowly going downwards. There was a vast green-field on flat land below. There were undulating mountains in the distance. There was rich spirit energy in the air as well! It was obviously far thicker in comparison to the Lower Three Heavens.

Chu Yang hovered down, and gently landed on the ground.

The circular door – that was hanging in midair – closed quietly.

This was the Chaotic Souls Plain!

Chu Yang's eyes revealed a thoughtful look as electricity rushed throughout his body. The place he wanted to visit the most was Mo Clan's residence!

He would have to go west from the Chaotic Souls Plain. He would then have to circle around, and take a long detour to reach the Mo Clan!

The journey would be a lot shorter if he would go north from here. However, he would have to pass through the Cang Lan Battlefront! It would be very dangerous. But, he couldn't possibly be afraid of any danger when he knew that there was a war going-on at the Cang Lan Battlefront, and Du Xing and the others might be there.

An earnest feeling arose in his heart when he thought of his brothers... whom he hadn't met in a long time, [Brothers, how are you all doing now?]

[Qing Wu, I'm coming!]

... ...

A strange mutation happened in the world this morning. And, that affected the entire Upper Three Heavens... as well as the Middle Three Heavens.

Several people of the respected super clans of the Upper Three Heavens went into seclusion to read the arrangement of stars in the sky. However, they found out that the sky's appearance was in a complete mess. The arrangement of stars was completely different than it had earlier been. In fact, it was completely inverted!

This situation had promptly aroused vigilance.

It was especially an atmosphere of deep concern for the nine

super clans.

The change in the sky's appearance indicated one thing – it was linked to the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master.

Such a phenomenon only represented one thing... as per the records mentioned in the ancient legends — the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master has completed the first phase of his growth!

Two years! The Nine Tribulations Sword's Master had completed the first stage in just two years. This was ten-times faster than the growth speed of the previous Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword!

This realization had brought the nine super clans to high-alert!

... ...

The Upper Three Heavens... Chu Clan's residence... There was a grave and sorrowful atmosphere in the Chu Clan.

That mysterious man in black clothing – who had formerly showed-up in the Lower Three Heavens – was standing here. His entire body was covered in wounds. He stood in the main hall, and appeared to be in a pathetic state. Several other people were standing at his side, and were in a somewhat similarly distressed state.

It was the Chu Clan's turn to face the Three Stars Divine Clan. They had experienced heavy losses in the recent battle.

"Big Brother, how's father?" the man in black clothing asked in a somewhat stammering manner.

Another man stood at his side. He was dressed in black clothing, and appeared approximately 40 years old. This man glanced at him sideways, and replied with a sigh, "We must wait for the results of the divine doctor's diagnosis."

"I... I'm really useless... it's my fault since I'm so weak and incompetent." The black-clothed man regretfully slapped his own

head, "Lord Father wouldn’t have been hit by the palm of that monster... if he didn’t have to save me..."

"Fei Yan, it is pointless to say all this at this time." Chu Fei Ling patted his Fourth Younger Brother's shoulder, and spoke-up in order to comfort him, "Let’s be patient, and hope that the heavens save our Lord Father. Fourth Brother, you have been wandering in the Lower Three Heavens these many years for my child’s sake. So, it’s not surprising that your strength and level advancement isn’t quick. Your sister-in-law and I have harmed you quite a lot."

"What are you saying, Big Brother?" The black-clothed man – Chu Fei Yan – sternly replied, "He’s my nephew. How can I not look for him? It’s such a pity... I couldn’t find him."

Chu Fei Ling sighed and said, "I must thank you for the hard work you’ve done over the years."

An old man walked out from the inner hall during the course of their conversation. He had a serious look on his face.

"Dr. Yu, how’s my father?" the two brothers stepped forward at once, and asked in unison.

Dr. Yu sighed and replied, "The Old Clan Head has been poisoned by the poisonous cold blood of Three Stars Divine Clan. This type of poison is specific to their martial arts, and is extremely potent. The victim’s body keeps turning cold once poisoned. And, the victim eventually freezes to death. I don’t know how to deal with this type of poison... I’m powerless!"

Their complexions turned deathly pale, "But... isn’t there a way to cure it?"

Dr. Yu sighed, and replied, "Have you heard of the Nine Great Herbal Medicines?"

Chu Fei Ling and Chu Fei Yan stared in shock, and replied in a stammering voice, "You wish to use Nine Great Herbal Medicine? Isn’t that something that’s mentioned only in the legends? Where

do we find it?"

"There's one that truly exists. It's called the Mysterious Yang Jade Essence. It's the best medicine to cure the cold poison within the Old Clan Head's body." Dr. Yu exclaimed, "The Mysterious Yang Jade Paste usually grows in the places where there's no influence of the Yin whatsoever. It's the world's most potent medicine with 'yang' property! However, it's extremely rare, and hasn't been found by anyone on the Nine Heavens Continent in tens of thousands of years..."

Chu Fei Ling and the others were suddenly baffled.

"At least find the Mysterious Yang Jade... if you are unable to find the Mysterious Yang Jade Essence," Dr. Yu said as he took a step back.

"We will head out to find it!" Chu Fei Ling's face revealed a color of strong determination.

"Time is running out!" Dr. Yu warned, "I have a millennium old 'raging fire ginseng' with me at the moment. Its 'raging fire' is potent-enough to keep the cold poison that has penetrates deep into the body in check... but only temporarily. It may guarantee the Old Clan Head's safety for a year! But, the same can't be said after a year's time passes..."

Dr. Yu paused, and then further warned, "This kind of elixir may not necessarily be found in the Upper Three Heavens. There's a possibility of finding it in the Middle Three Heavens, and the Lower Three Heavens as well. But, this possibility is quite low in the Lower Three Heavens since it's inferior to the Middle Three Heavens. Moreover, the elixirs of the Upper Three Heavens have mostly been discovered by now. So, the possibility of finding it in the Middle Three Heavens is larger."

"Good!" Chu Fei Ling resolutely took a prompt decision and said, "That being the case, Second Brother, Third Brother and Fourth Brother – you all must stay in the Upper Three Heavens. You must

ensure the clan’s safety. Moreover, we can’t write-off the missions that are assigned to us by the nine super clans. Secondly, you must also look for the Mysterious Yang Jade Essence and Mysterious Yang Jade here."

"Yes! Big Brother!" the brothers complied in unison after having received the order.

"I will go and search in the Middle Three Heavens. Ruo Lan... do you wish to go to the Lower Three Heavens?" Chu Fei Ling looked at the beautiful middle-aged woman who stood beside him.

"Yes." The middle-aged woman named Yang Ruo Lan was the wife of Chu Fei Ling. She had lost her two children in the Lower Three Heavens. And, Chu Fei Ling was arranging for her to go to the Lower Three Heavens. He was evidently doing it with the intention to comfort his wife...

"Elder Brother Chu should pay extra attention to the Cang Lan Battlefront if he’s going to the Middle Three Heavens." Dr. Yu said, "The spirit beasts run amuck in the Cang Lan Battlefront. The interior region is particularly dangerous, and mostly inaccessible. But, it’s the best spot for the growth of the rare elixirs because of this very reason. One simply can’t ignore this point. Moreover, you must keep the news about your departure confidential in this critical juncture since there’s a war going-on against the Three Stars Divine Clan! Don’t let the nine super clans find out! Finish this search... the sooner — the better. And then, come back... the faster — the better!"

"Right! We’ll leave right now." Chu Fei Ling and Yang Ruo Lan replied in unison.

Chapter 437: Mo Qing Wu's Last Hope!

The Middle Three Heavens — Mo Clan's residence...

Mo Qing Wu had been feeling better since the Young Master of the major clans had come to visit her.

However, her father – Mo Xing Chen – discovered that his little daughter was turning more and more reticent. She would practice martial arts every day, but she would just sit alone in her small courtyard for the rest of the day. She'd hug that scabbard, and stare at it in a daze.

Her disposition had become quiet and reserved from her previously lively and adorable self. In fact, she seemed to be lost in worries at such a young age. She no longer hugged him, or called him 'father' as sweetly as she used to. She no longer showed him that sweet smiling face of hers either.

She would occasionally run into a clan member. But, she would merely give them a vacant look, and then walk on.

She was going to turn eleven in a few months. Yet, her melancholic and reserved demeanor was similar to that of a 20-year-old girl who had been subjected to years of hardships, and had eventually shut herself as a result. And, the people who saw her like this were usually upset by this sight.

When his daughter's saber had been snatched away... she had come to meet him with tears in her eyes, and had begged, [Father, please return my saber to me...]

However, she no longer made that request either. It seemed as if that saber had never appeared in her life.

However, Mo Xing Chen knew that the aforementioned 'saber incident' had left a deep scar in his daughter's mind; a scar that would never be erased!

There was no light in her eyes. And, her lifeless eyes were devoid

of hope. Her father Mo Xing Chen would occasionally bring her toys and jewelry. But, this couldn't even incite any excitement in her eyes. She would thank him out of mere formality, [Thank you, Father.] But, she wouldn't say anything further.

Moreover, she never wore those jewelries either.

She was always in her red clothes. She would only wear that butterfly knot made of Red Cloud Steel on her head — the butterfly with spread wings... prepared to fly. And, she always held that tattered scabbard.

Mo Qing Wu's eyes showed heartfelt desire for these two things only. She appeared to be earnestly longing for something... as if looking forward to something. But, she would never talk about it...

Mo Tian Ji had been fighting at the Cang Lan Battlefront this entire time, and he had been doing his best. He would often send some strange items for his little sister. However, Mo Qing Wu never showed the slightest excitement upon receiving them. She would merely store these items inside an empty room, and seal them.

On one occasion, the person who had brought these gifts for Mo Qing Wu told her that the Second Young Master would love to receive a letter from her. However, she had indifferently relied, [Second Brother has great ambitions. He doesn't need a letter from me.]

Mo Tian Ji almost collapsed when he heard about this! He went all-out after that. He then began to gather his trusted troops, and started to make preparations to snatch the position of the first heir from Mo Tian Yun in one fell swoop! Then, he would find a proper place for his little sister to settle down!

He was only the Second Young Master at the moment. So, he didn't have the power to deal with such a serious matter! He knew that his little sister was in deep pain; he had known this for a long time. And, he also knew that temporary happiness couldn't cover-

up a lifetime of sadness!

Mo Qing Wu would reveal her real emotions only when she was at her mother's side. Emotions like — being treated badly in the clan, yearnings for love, resentment, and helplessness...

Her small mind clear knew that her clan had abandoned her! She was the abandoned child of the clan. The clan had been indifferent towards her this entire time, and would send her greetings once in a while. However, they had realized that it was worth investing in her when young masters with promising futures such as Ji Mo and Dong Wu Shang came to visit her.

And, their attitude towards her changed slightly thereafter.

However, this change of attitude was incited by a greater and selfish goal of theirs! Mo Qing Wu was young, but it wasn't hidden from anyone that she had grown-up in a big and influential clan.

These young masters had intentionally come to meet her. Perhaps their clans would eventually send marriage requests for her. And, that would be a great opportunity to form marital connections and allies!

This was especially true for the Great Elder Mo Wu Xin. He was said to have already started harboring thoughts of marrying her off. Moreover, the mysterious visits of Ji Mo, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and Rui Bu Tong had also conveyed this message. In fact, she would've been made 'someone's fiancée' if the Mo Clan hadn't been afraid of facing rejection because of her young age.

"Young Miss, Madam has invited you to come over," a maid came to inform her.

"Ok." Mo Qing Wu gently stood up. Her present height was only half-a-head shorter than what it used to be when she was in the Lower Three Heavens. However, her physique was thin, small, and fragile. She slowly walked out.

She had been putting great effort in practicing martial arts these

days, but to no avail. She would try to urge her spiritual power, but it would only cause unbearable pain in her chest. And, this pain couldn't be stopped. This had pushed her deeper into a state of despair.

"Little Wu, you're here." Madam Mo had a slight heartache when she saw how her little daughter had changed so much of late. The more she observed her... the more pain she felt in her heart. However, she was powerless. There was nothing she could do for her daughter.

She was the biological mother of Mo Qing Wu, but she was merely a woman in this patriarchal world... a world where it was common for men to have three wives and four concubines. The status of women in this big world was very low. Therefore, they had no right to speak in family affairs!

So, she had no other choice besides accepting the decision of the clan.

"Mother, why did you call me? What's the matter?" Mo Qing Wu's eyes flickered.

"Ah, Little Wu, I just wanted to confirm. You will turn 11 in a month, right?" a doting look flashed in Madam Mo's eyes.

"Yes, Mother. I will turn 11 years old next month, on July 7th." Mo Qing Wu's heart suddenly thumped, and an inexplicable sense of horror enveloped her heart, [why did mother ask my age? Don't tell me...?]

"I see, my Little Wu has become a big girl in the blink of an eye... my little dance has become a big girl..." Madam Mo wore a disappointed and frustrated smile on her face as she said, "11 years old... I remember back in the day... I had been engaged to your father when I had turned 11 years old..."

"What?" Mo Qing Wu took a step back. She was panic-stricken as she looked at Madam Mo, "Mother... you?"

"The Mo Clan is in a precarious and unstable situation these days..." Madam Mo heaved a deep sigh, "The struggle between your Eldest Brother and your Second Brother is getting fiercer and fiercer. The strength of the clan has somewhat weakened as a result of that. This isn't a good thing for the clan's stability..."

"Therefore, the Great Elder has discussed with your father to see if we can find... a strong and reliable ally for our Mo Clan..." Madam Mo spoke-up with some difficulty.

Mo Qing Wu's complexion turned deathly pale. Her frail body trembled as she looked at her mother.

"So... we want to fix your marriage ... as soon as possible..." Madam Mo helplessly watched her own daughter, "The Meng Clan has approached seeking a marriage alliance with us..."

"Meng Clan?" Mo Qing Wu's pale face turned even more pallid as she mumbled softly. An intense look of hatred flashed in her eyes.

"Yes, the Meng Clan. It's for the brightest young star of the Meng Clan... as well as the Eldest Young Master of the Meng Clan — Meng Luo. Meng Luo has turned 23 this year, but he's already considered the invincible top expert in the younger generation of the Meng Clan. His cultivation has broken through to the King Level." Madam Mo's crooked her lips in a somewhat bitter and agonizing manner.

Meng Luo! Indeed, this Young Master Meng Luo had the cultivation of King Level, and his strength could be regarded as 'outstanding' in the younger generation of the Middle Three Heavens. He could be said to be at the pinnacle of the younger generation!

This young genius was certainly the most eligible 'son-in-law candidate' for most respected clans!

However... Young Master Meng Luo was already married. Moreover, he had wives and concubines! And, the Meng Clan was

basically seeking a marriage alliance to get a cheap bargain.

This was Meng Luo's way to enhance the strength of his Meng Clan. So, he didn't care about his fiancée's status in her clan, or her appearance, aptitude etc. His only goal was to use this marriage as a means to increase the influence of the Meng Clan.

Therefore, Meng Luo had sought a marriage alliance with the Mo Clan after he had found out that the Mo Clan's daughter had lost her innate ability 'Three Yin Meridians'. However, she used to be only nine-and-a-half years old back then. So, his hands had been tied for the fear of being ridiculed.

There would obviously be no such concerns now since she would soon turn 11 years old. Generally speaking... most influential clans would fix the marriage of their useless daughters at this age.

Therefore, Meng Luo had sent a marriage proposal the earliest possible time.

And, this was something the Mo Clan had been eagerly looking forward to. The Mo Clan was indulged in an internal strife at the moment, and was very much in need of such an ally.

"It doesn't matter who he is. I won't agree!" Mo Qing Wu stubbornly bit her lip, "Mother... Father had promised me that he would never force me for marriage! He had promised that he would never turn me into a marriage tool for the sake of the clan!"

"But, when you father had promised you... at that time..." Madam Mo helplessly sighed, and said in her heart, [you used to have Three Yin Meridians in your body when your father had made you that promise. A female with Three Yin Meridians in her body will have limitless future prospects. She would obviously not be married off in haste. But now, you no longer possess...]

"The clan has been very good to me since childhood. So, it was just because of the Three Yin Meridians?!" Mo Qing Wu asked with trembling lips, "So, the clan gave up on me, and turned entirely

indifferent towards me when my Three Yin Meridians were destroyed! I've been raised like a puppy ever since... But mother, even a puppy needs to be gently caressed and stroked at times. It also needs to feel loved from time to time. But, everyone stopped caring about your daughter when she lost her Three Yin Meridians?

"And now, you want to trade this good-for-nothing crippled daughter – who has lost both her value and her happiness – for an ally..." Mo Qing Wu let out a hissing sound, "Why, Mother? Am I not your daughter anymore? Am I not the flesh and blood of the Mo Clan anymore? Why is our Mo Clan being so blatantly heartless and indifferent towards me?

"I already knew that my fate won't be as I desire... but, when the other clans choose a husband for their daughter, and fix the marriage date... they at least do it with the consent of their daughter. Why is it that you are directly declaring everything to me in my case instead of taking my approval?"

Madam Mo had finally stepped forth – this clearly indicated that this matter had already been settled conclusively. Her only task was to use the final persuasion. Mo Qing Wu was young, but she was clearly aware of this.

"But... the Great Elder has taken charge to settle this matter..." Madam Mo helplessly watched her daughter in such a pathetic state, "Even your father is helpless ah."

"Is father scared? Is that's why he readily agreed to this matter?" Mo Qing Wu asked in a sad yet taunting tone.

Madam Mo went speechless for a while. She then spoke-up in a trembling voice, "Little Wu... I also can't do anything about it... we are a family, a family ah..."

"I can't agree on this matter at this moment. I can't agree until I've asked that person..." Mo Qing Wu wanted to say, [over my dead body!] But then, she suddenly thought of that person, and a

ray of light flashed in her eyes. This was the glimmer of hope she needed, "I will agree to a marriage if he agrees that he doesn’t care about me..."

Madam Mo was very sensitive towards the sudden brightness that had appeared in her daughter’s eyes. Her daughter seemed happy all of a sudden. But, it seemed like this was the last glimmer of hope, and her daughter was clinging to it very strongly. Her heart involuntarily tightened as she asked, "Who?!"

Chapter 438: Big Brother Chu Yang, Please Come Soon ah...

"The master of ‘Dreaming of a Gentle Dance’ saber?" the Great Elder Mo Wu Xin muttered to himself. He then rolled his eyes and spoke, "That girl said so?"

"Yes." Mo Xing Chen was sitting upright in a chair, and was rubbing his brows.

"Ha-ha... it seems that the master of ‘Dreaming of a Gentle Dance’ saber doesn’t have the knowledge of divine. To think that he gifted such a precious saber to a little girl as if it were a toy..."

Mo Wu Xin slowly strolled two steps forward, and spoke with a dark smile on his face, "However, Tian Ji had once said that the master of ‘Dreaming of a Gentle Dance’ saber is looking for the divine drug that can treat the damaged Three Yin Meridians of our little girl... and he also said... that this man will be here in as early as one year... or as late as three years, right?"

"That’s correct." Mo Xing Chen’s eyes lit up as he recalled that day when Mo Qing Wu and Mo Tian Ji had returned to the clan, and Mo Tian Ji had spoken these words.

"Our Mo Clan will have one more expert with boundless future prospects if Little Wu’s Three Yin Meridians are to be restored. In fact, I can say for sure that she will become an Emperor level expert. In fact, her chances of becoming one are even higher than Tian Ji and Tian Yun." Mo Wu Xin muttered to himself, "It will be very unfortunate if such a promising daughter ends up becoming a trivial concubine of Meng Luo’s... anyway..."

"Yes, the question is that we aren’t sure whether the master of ‘Dreaming of a Gentle Dance’ saber can genuinely cure her Three Yin Meridians or not. And, we will be missing out on a powerful ally like the Meng Clan if he can’t..." Mo Xing Chen sighed deeply

and said.

"Then, shall we wait for another year?" Mo Wu Xin suggested. It seemed as if he was asking himself, "There shouldn't be any problem taking her young age into consideration. The young females of influential clans are generally considered of marriageable age at the age of 12 – as long as their marriage hasn't been fixed since childhood. So, I believe that the Meng Clan won't have any objection... However, we must pretend as in-laws, and pledge our alliance with them during this phase..."

"That... should work."

"We will plan what to do next if Little Wu's Three Yin Meridians get repaired a year later. After all, it's not like Meng Luo wants to make her his concubine because of her extraordinary beauty or anything. He's only looking for a powerful ally... that's all..." Mo Wu Xin chuckled.

"The Great Elder is right."

"In addition, I'm more curious about the master of the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber... he may not be able to treat Little Wu's Three Yin Meridians... but, he's certainly not an ordinary person; that's for sure. If we can use him somehow..." Mo Wu Xin's eyes sparkled as he said, "This is something to be talked about later. We just have to wait for his arrival for the time being."

"But, what if he doesn't come within a year?"

"Little Wu will become a member of the Meng Clan if he doesn't come within a year! Our Mo Clan is willing to wait for one year for him in-exchange for a gift like the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber. And, we are showing enough benevolence by doing that!" Mo Wu Xin coldly replied.

As if his Mo Clan was doing that stranger a big favor by delaying the marriage of their daughter by a year...

"This matter is decided then," Mo Xing Chen solemnly said.

A trace of smile appeared on Mo Wu Xin's face as he saw Mo Xin Chen going out in a hurry. He then muttered to himself, "A man who can casually gift a precious item like the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber has to have lots of incredible treasures. It doesn't matter even if he's incredibly skilled. Where can he possibly go once he arrives at our Mo Clan? We will obtain powerful treasures from him... or may even manipulate the person himself... the Mo Clan will become very powerful after that. It will be like obtaining a massive gain in one fell swoop. Forming an alliance with the Meng Clan can't even come close to this gain. Clan Lord Xing Chen lacks cleverness after all..."

...

"Postponed by a year?" Mo Qing Wu opened her eyes to look at her father.

"Yes, we will wait for the person who has gifted you the 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber." Mo Xing Chen said, "However, if there's no news of him after a year... then."

"I understand." Mo Qing Wu was extremely intelligent. She had grown-up in an influential clan. How could she not have understood what these words meant?

The juniors of the imperial family know from the age of 7 or 8 that they must struggle against each other, and use plots and manipulation to compete with each other over the throne. Similarly, the concept of putting the family interests above oneself is instilled into the clan juniors from an early age. But, the juniors of ordinary clans might not necessarily gain such awareness even at the age of 20... this was precisely the difference between the two.

How could Mo Qing Wu not understand that her clan had taken a fancy to the master of 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance' saber? Moreover, it was a case of 'benefit from both sides' for them. They would either obtain the resources of the master of the 'Dreaming

of a Gentle Dance' saber, and may as well win him over directly. Or... they would sell her, and become the Meng Clan's ally to gain their support.

However, there's only one key figure in the final analysis. And, that was she herself – a useless person who didn't have any worth or use thus far. However, she had suddenly become a disabled person with value!

Mo Qing Wu suddenly felt every hope turned to dust at this moment!

"I know." Mo Qing Wu gently turned around, and no longer looked at her father.

"Little Wu... we are a family..." Mo Xing Chen sighed helplessly.

"I know. Father, you go back now," Mo Qing Wu coldly replied. Then, she suddenly remembered what Chu Yang had spoken to her once. She couldn't help but turn around. She looked at her father indifferently as she spoke in a low voice, "Clan is Clan, but... when there's no human touch, and only the interests of the Clan are prioritized... then... the fall of the Clan isn't far. And, when the destruction's time arrives — it can't be stopped even if there are 100 daughters to be sacrificed by forcing them into marriage."

"When you turn your own flesh and blood into a tool of the clan..." Mo Qing Wu bit her lip, and said slowly, "Its better not to bear them in the first place!"

Mo Xing Chen's facial muscles distorted as he shouted loudly, "You devil! What nonsense are you talking about?" He raised his hand... as if he was going to slap her.

Mo Qing Wu stubbornly raised her face, and looked at her father. There was endless sorrow in her limpid eyes.

Mo Xing Chen finally lowered his hand, and saw his daughter's limpid eyes. Suddenly, he was deeply ashamed in his heart. He coldly snorted, and then turned around and walked out. He only

left a few words behind.

"There's a buffer of one year only. I hope you understand this clearly! As a daughter of Mo Clan... you must be ready to sacrifice yourself for the clan when the time comes! Otherwise, what's the point of the clan raising you?"

"What's the use of the clan raising me?" Mo Qing Wu stood there powerlessly. She suddenly shouted in her heart, [do parents raise their children for them to be useful in the future? Does the clan raise children for them to be beneficial later?]

[Even the ordinary clans aren't this heartless.]

[I don't wish to be a part of such a clan! I just don't!]

[Big Brother Chu Yang, you come soon... I can't stay here even for a moment... I really want to get out of here...]

Mo Qing Wu's trembling hands clutched her scabbard tightly as she curled-up in a fetal position on the ground.

She felt ice-cold in her heart and body... even in this burning hot midsummer. In fact, there wasn't the slightest touch of warmth in her body...

...

This used to be a three-way intersection of roads, but it had turned into a small town now; it was a small market to be precise.

There used to be a lone restaurant here. It stood here alone, but it still provided a resting place for the pedestrians on journey.

Moreover, it was located at the entrance of the Cang Lan Battlefront. So, it was always bustling with people. And, those who arrived here weren't ordinary people. The ordinary people were unable to come here. It wasn't like each of the visitors were very wealthy individuals, but that also didn't mean that they didn't have family fortunes...

This place only used to have a restaurant in the past. But, it had

slowly turned into an inn. This was eventually followed by a gambling house, a brothel, and so on...

All sorts of businesses began to flourish here with the passage of time. And, this place gradually developed into a marketplace. As long as one could think of something... one could find it here. Even those things one couldn't think of... could be found here!

One could buy and sell, one could trade, one could pawn stuff, and one could choose a variety of ways to relax in this place...

These business places had placed their own flags at their entrances; without exception. This was done in order to indicate the place of origin of these 'businessmen'. And, this would also indicate which forces they were affiliated to.

For example... an inn was named — Black Devil Inn... just these three words. There was also an Eastern Tavern... a Gu Clan restaurant, and so on...

There were obviously two rows of green and juicy bamboos planted in front of the entrances of most places. And, these places often had the most flourishing business too. There wouldn't be any safety without them!

Who didn't know that the Bamboo was the biggest dark organization in the Middle Three Heavens?

There were several markets like this one in the vicinity of the Cang Lan Battlefront. And, the businesses owned by the bamboo organization in those markets were thriving and prosperous.

For example, the most luxurious restaurant in this marketplace had two rows of bluish-green bamboo planted before its entrance.

Chu Yang's black robes fluttered as he strolled into the restaurant. There was still an hour to go before the lunch time. Yet, the restaurant was already overflowing with people.

Most people were savoring fragrant tea, and were engaged in loud discussions. The teahouses and wine-shops are the places

where the news spreads the fastest.

Chu Yang had walked up to the front door, and the people in the restaurant had suddenly felt a surge of chilling aura. Moreover, this chill aura gradually pervaded in the air, and shrouded the entire place.

[Has an expert arrived here?]

These people were the frequent visitors of the Cang Lan Battlefront. So, they all had sharp visions. They felt cold in their hearts. So, they turned their heads to look.

They saw a youth emerging from the stairway. He was clad in a black robe. There was a cold and detached expression on his face. He slowly strode forward, and looked around. His malicious eyes glanced around, and seemed to be looking for a seat.

A waited then approached to welcome him, "Dear customer, please come in. Would you like to drink tea or have a meal?"

"Wine. Food." Chu Yang coldly replied, and casually gave a gold ingot to the waiter. Then, he added, "I want a seat in the middle." The middle seat was a table placed at the center of the entire restaurant. The one who would sit there basically wouldn’t need to use their martial power. But, they would still be able to hear the sounds from all four directions with ease. In short, this was the best seat to gather information.

The general requirements for requesting this spot were – if the person was in need of information... or the person was some kind of detective. This was also a usual practice of the Middle Three Heavens.

Therefore, the waiter immediately understood this when Chu Yang made this request.

"This..." The waiter was clutching the gold in his hand. He somewhat awkwardly turned his head to look at the table in the middle. That spot had already been occupied by two people... A

troubled look appeared on the waiter’s face.

"Don’t worry. You go fetch food and wine. I will take care of this. No harm... you get food and wine; I get this!" Chu Yang solemnly spoke-up. The waiter nodded promptly. Then, a gentle look appeared on his face. This was a look one would only give to ‘an old and regular customer’. He seemed quite relieved as he left.

This was also the convention of this restaurant. After all, it was the restaurant of bamboo. Chu Yang put forward the request, and handed over the gold. This was like giving respect to the bamboo. And, this was also equivalent to using a gold ingot to buy a pass — No one will interfere as long as I’m not crossing the line since the bamboo has received the gold.

Chu Yang’s body seemingly drifted over to that table, and carried his strong and chilling aura along. He arrived next to that table, and insipidly spoke, "Hello, you two. Have you eaten your fill? Had enough to drink?"

It seemed like his strong and chilling aura had found its target. So, it surged forth like a massive wave, and pressed upon those two men!

Chapter 439: The Middle Three Heavens is in Chaos!

The law of the jungle was followed in the Middle Three Heavens! Strength was the ultimate reason. And, Chu Yang had known this point all along.

Any attempt to reason with people would instead make them believe that one was ‘actually’ terrified to take action…

So, he wasn’t planning to use any reason in the Middle Three Heavens this time around.

"We are the people of Black Devil group!" These two people were Revered Martial Artists. They had noticed Chu Yang’s strong aura. So, they weren’t daring to be rash. They neatly revealed their origin to him instead.

"Um, ok. People of Black Devil — leave!" Chu Yang rolled his eyes as he thought, [I wouldn’t have bothered to teach you two a lesson even if you weren’t the people of the Black Devil…]

He unleashed his sharp and murderous aura. The complexions of the two scouts of the Black Devil turned pale. So, they immediately stood up and said, "We present this seat to Your Excellency. But, we’re leaving behind a few words for you – we hope to develop a cordial and warm relationship that lasts forever. "

"Cut the crap! You die if you don’t go!" Chu Yang coldly snorted.

The two men in black clothes looked at him with bitter resentment in their eyes. Then, they went downstairs and left. The waiter swiftly came over, and cleaned the table. Then, Chu Yang sat down in a leisurely manner.

[I must say that this feeling of using power to bully people is really awesome. Especially… while bullying the Black Devil’s people…]

A moment of silence spread in the restaurant.

Chu Yang stood up, and smiled in a gentle manner. He cupped one fist in the other hand as a sign of respect, and showed the gesture to everyone present. Then, he solemnly spoke-up, "I suppose that everyone clearly understands my purpose of occupying this table. I merely wish to learn some recent news... such as the current situation of the Middle Three Heavens... the status of the major aristocratic clans... ha-ha. No need to hold back. I'm all ears here. I certainly understand that you all are very busy. Hence, I won't let anyone down if I manage to obtain some desirable information from your discussions!"

Everyone let out an 'oh' at once. There had been a gloating look in their eyes a moment ago... as if they were taking pleasure in others' misfortune. However, that look had vanished by now.

[This guy arrived and offended the Black Devil right away. He looks like an ordinary youth, but the words he spoke make him seem like an old traveler. Especially that last sentence 'I won't let anyone down if I manage to obtain some desirable information from your discussions'. Only an old traveler talks like that!]

[Moreover, these words also illustrate that the amount of information he needs is huge. And, he's clearly finding it difficult to put emphasis on any one topic. That's why he chose this approach in which we just discuss... and he merely gets to listen to everyone.]

[Fu*k, what kind of an old fox comes up with such a terrific way...]

[However, this person's cultivation obviously isn't low. It's hard to imagine what sort of rewards he would take out if we talk about the content he's interested in?]

"Hey, have you heard? Ji Clan's two brothers have clashed with the Gao Clan. I heard that the Ji Clan's Second Young Master Ji Mo and Gao Clan's Eldest Young Master Gao Sheng are rivals in love.

These two are engaged in a terrible struggle..." a man seated at a nearby table suddenly changed the subject of their previous conversation, and began to talk about the recent anecdotes of the Middle Three Heavens.

Chu Yang raised his eyebrow, [Ji Mo? Ji Mo and Gao Sheng are rivals in love?]

This caught his interest. He flipped his palm over. 'Chink' sounds were heard, and glistening gold ingots fell on the table where those two men were seated. A total of 12 gold ingots!

Those two were pleasantly surprised. They turned their heads to look at Chu Yang. Chu Yang smiled, and nodded his head. His indication was obvious — [Keep talking.]

They were overjoyed at this. They put the gold in their pockets, and began to talk loudly about the history of Young Master Ji Mo and Young Master Gao Sheng as love rivals...

The other people saw this, and their eyes emitted a golden light, [Motherfu*ker, they earned gold for saying a few words? What sort of charity is this?]

The atmosphere in the restaurant immediately turned lively.

"Hey, do you know who are the Eight Big Young Masters of the Cang Lan Battlefront right now?" the person who said this winked at Chu Yang. He was obviously speaking to Chu Yang.

[Eight Big Young Masters?] Chu Yang flipped over his hand, and a gold ingot went flying...

"Yeah, let's talk about the current situation in the Cang Lan Battlefront..."

Chink! Another gold ingot dropped.

"Have you heard about the talented Young Clan Lord of the Gu Clan – Gu Du Xing?"

Chink! Another gold ingot.

"Do you know the Ten Great Experts of the upcoming young generation?"

Chink!...

"Did you hear that the two brothers of the Mo Clan are engaged in a terrible power struggle?"

Chink!

...

[Damn! Where is this guy taking out so much gold from? He keeps throwing gold ingots as if they are mud balls or something.] He had ignited the atmosphere of the entire restaurant!

The extraordinary might of gold had urged everyone to talk about stuff while they tried their best to outdo one another. However, they were still being very discreet. Sometimes, the people – who had raised a topic in advance – waited for the others to finish their talk before resuming their topic. Such patient people received an applauding look from Chu Yang, and also got many more gold ingots as reward...

Chu Yang had a huge stock of gold; he had obviously obtained it by looting the treasury of the Great Zhao Palace. The Nine Tribulations Sword hadn't hesitated to draw out the power of the gold. But, a big pile of gold was still left from the loot...

Besides, there was no other way but to spend lots of money if he wanted to get information on so many aristocratic clans of the Middle Three Heavens in one stroke. After all, all of these clans were noteworthy. Therefore, Chu Yang didn't mind spending the gold.

The people realized that this gentleman would enthusiastically throw a gold ingot over even when some old rumor or anecdote was mentioned. This discovery made everyone ecstatic.

Some people had already earned their second ingot... or even their third.

This restaurant had been turned into a news conference!

The people who came later to have a meal couldn't go inside. Chu Yang continued to throw gold left-and-right like some rich and overbearing person. This had wrapped the entire restaurant in a golden cover...

Everyone was full of excitement. And, they were trying their best to come up with the most interesting talks. Meanwhile, Chu Yang gradually organized his thoughts.

[So, the situation of the Middle Three Heavens is like this ah.]

The Three Stars Divine Clan had wreaked havoc for some time, but had later encountered the united resistance of the forces of the Middle Three Heavens. So, they were somewhat restrained by now, and their influence had been curtailed within the region of the Raging Fire Mountain Range. It looked like the situation had been restored to how it used to be when everyone minded their own business.

However, the major aristocratic clans had already tasted the sweetness of power and resources. The sheer amount of spirit beast cores they had gained this time – irrespective of the quality and quantity of the cores – was several times more than what they had been able to obtain in the past.

This was indeed an enormous wealth!

So, who wouldn't wish to get some more?

The Three Stars Divine Clan had already retreated. So, an internal strife began between the major clans. They began to compete over the resources they had obtained. These were indeed the chaotic times!

Ji Clan, Mo Clan, Gao Clan, Black Devil, Ao Clan, Meng Clan, Gu Clan, Luo Clan, Dong Clan, Xie Clan, Li Clan, Tian Clan, Tu Clan, Zhao Clan, Huyan Clan, Ou Clan, Huangfu Clan, Li Clan...

This stretch of region had turned into a chaotic battlefield for

dozens of major aristocratic clans and hundreds of smaller ones that spread across the Middle Three Heavens!

Several young experts had risen to fame, and had revealed their outstanding talent amidst this endless fighting over resources!

Ao Clan's Eldest Young Master Ao Xie Yun had triumphantly advanced to the Fourth Grade of King Level. He had become the undisputed number one expert in the younger generation of the Middle Three Heavens! Moreover, he had done it in secrecy. He was said to have taken some unusual path, and this path had been very effective. Therefore, people had nicknamed him 'Evil Young Master'!

Gu Clan's Young Clan Lord – Gu Du Xing – had led his clan's forces to fight in one place after another... everywhere from north to south. He himself had smoothly broken through to the Second Grade of King Level. He possessed sword cultivation. So, he was now a Second Grade Sword King. This also proved that his strength ought to be above everyone else. Therefore, he shared the number one spot with Ao Xie Yun. Gu Du Xing was a reserved guy who didn't seem to associate with anyone regardless of their rank or stature. He always preferred to act alone without relying on anyone. Therefore, he had been nicknamed — 'Lone Traveler'.

Mo Clan's Eldest Young Master Mo Tian Yun and Second Young Master Mo Tian Ji had stepped into the King Level as well; that too at the same time. Mo Tian Ji had become extremely clever with his schemes. His plans were foolproof, and he knew innumerable variations of every stratagem. He was called the 'God of Crafty Plans', and was praised for his supernatural skills when it came to formulating plans.

Mo Tian Yun was nicknamed the 'Ninth Heaven Cloud'. He was so aloof and remote that even his limelight on a whole new level.

This wasn't a standalone or accidental occurring. There was another pair of brothers who had made a breakthrough at the same

time. Ji Clan's Eldest Young Master Ji Zhu and Second Young Master Ji Mo had also broken through to the King Level at the Cang Lan Battlefront. People had named them the 'Ji double bears'. These two brothers were called by this name since they were whimsy and lazy like a black bear...

The Dong Clan's Dong Wu Shang had used his incredibly large saber, and had crashed into mighty lineups. He had also broken through to the First Grade of King Level. He was nicknamed the 'Black Saber'! This was because the other saber of the Black Saber Clan simply didn't stand a chance ever since his' had come into being. Dong Wu Shang had also become the Dong Clan's representative figure.

Luo Clan's Eldest Young Master Luo Ke Wu was eagerly waiting to lead the clan. However, the one who made the breakthrough was the Second Young Master Luo Ke Di. He had become a King Level expert, and hence was called — 'Wolf Sword King'.

Xie Clan's Xie Dan Qiong shook the entire Cang Lan Battlefront with his 'Jasper Flower' attack. The rumors said that the Jasper Flower attack is relentless, and causes utter devastation! The Jasper Flower attack had unmatched power, and hence was called 'the concealed weapon of ancestors'. Xie Dan Qiong had also broken through to the King Level, and had become one of the leading figures of the younger generation.

There were others such as Tu Qian Hao, Li Xiong Tu, Ou Du Xiao, Meng Luo, Huangfu Wannian, and Tian Bu Hui. These people had emerged to fame throughout the Middle Three Heavens. It was like the arrival of a new era. The heroes of the young generation were coming forth in large numbers.

The Eight Big Young Masters were – Ao Xie Yun, Mo Tian Yun, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Lei, Xie Dan Qiong, Gao Sheng, Meng Luo, and Tian Bu Hui.

However, there was another list of people known as the Ten Big

Experts. Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang were in it. These sworn brothers of Chu Yang had impressively occupied nearly half the positions!

The current situation of the Middle Three Heavens could be described in one word — Chaotic!

"It seems like these guys are getting along fine," Chu Yang muttered to himself. He held a glass of wine in one hand, and had rest his chin on the other as he wondered. [What's up with these titles – Ten Big Experts and Eight Big Young Masters? They sound so awesome.]

Ji Mo won the support of Dong Clan, Luo Clan and Gu Clan as the struggle between Ji Mo and Gao Sheng went out of hand. These powerful figures then rushed into the tiger's den to seize its tooth. They went together to help him snatch his wife.

Gao Sheng didn't like Huyan Aobo... but, he still couldn't accept the fact that someone was looking to snatch his wife-to-be away. Not to mention that this also involved his family's prestige... Therefore, Eldest Young Master Gao refused to admit defeat, and united with the Li Clan, Tu Clan and Meng Clan to form a strong battle formation in order to be combat-ready.

Chu Yang sprayed wine on the table as soon as he heard this.

[I have yet to see Gao Sheng, but I've met Huyan Aobo... It can be said that I'm much obliged to her. One could say she's a gallant woman with heroic presence. It wouldn't be wrong to say that she will be like a hero in a bridal dress!]

[And... it feels a little weird to see Young Miss Huyan and Ji Mo together...]

Chu Yang recalled Young Miss Huyan's sturdy build, and her tall and burly physique. He also recalled her majestic and tyrannical presence. She looked brave, and was full of power and grandeur. Moreover, the size of her body was quite overbearing. And then...

he thought of Ji Mo's weak and skinny body... it was like that of a chicken...

He repeatedly shook his head, but he simply couldn't link-up these two people in his heart... no matter what he thought of. A bed would come up in his heart whenever he would try to...

A pure big black bear ravages a small white rabbit in the scene that followed after that. Moreover, the small white rabbit is the male of the pair...

The man in-discussion was none other than Ji Mo. And, he was the one who had declared the war. Chu Yang couldn't help but have intestinal spasms when he gave it a thought...

Chapter 440: Botches the Blame onto Someone Else!

"Do you know? That Young Master Ji Mo had said some heroic words at that scene. He had appeared imposing and impressive when he had spoken, ‘It’s rare to find a close friend in this life; especially a young and beautiful female friend. And, it’s even rarer to fall in love with this close female friend! I — Ji Mo — have found my youth, my sweetheart, my soul-mate! I must fight to the very end for my love! That Gao Sheng is a fiend. But, I must rescue my princess from the hands of that fiend!"

That man had narrated this entire scene in an animated manner by changing the cadence of his voice. And, the way he had used the tone of admiration and reverence while narrating Ji Mo’s love declaration… left Chu Yang to collapse on the spot.

This man had a somewhat shrill and raucous voice. So, when he was imitating the various deviations in Ji Mo’s speech… Chu Yang had instead heard…‘It’s rare to find a close ‘chicken’ in this life; especially a young and beautiful female chicken’…

He couldn’t help but choke-up when he realized that he had misheard; moreover, it had taken him a while to realize it.

[What a colorful life this is ah.] Chu Yang was somewhat envious.

Chu Yang wasn’t surprised that Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing had broken through to the King level. However, he was very surprised to find out that Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had become King level experts as well.

However, he got no news about the three people he wanted to hear about the most — Mo Qing Wu, Meng Chao Ran, and Tan Tan!

The lanterns had already been lit by the time this entire ‘news gathering stunt’ ended. A huge influx of information had flooded

Chu Yang's brain. His brain was temporarily in such a state that it seemed as if it had been abruptly filled to the brim. In fact, his mind had gone blank for a moment. He couldn't make-up his mind as to where to start from.

[No matter what I think of doing now... it seems somewhat rash. My brothers aren't currently dependent on my assistance. Each of them has risen to fame, and is growing prosperous. I'm trying to forcefully promote them by using the resources of the Nine Tribulations Sword. But, that's not good for their future. Moreover, these people might imperceptibly develop a psychological dependence as long as I am around. And, that's very detrimental for their long-term growth!]

This dependent psychology had even affected Gu Du Xing. That aloof guy had discovered that he had grown dependent on Chu Yang on his own. So, he had resolutely returned to the Middle Three Heavens. Furthermore, he had made the choice to cast aside the conflicting notion of 'debt of gratitude coupled with duty to avenge' which he had held towards the Gu brothers. This had allowed his heart to remain solitary... like always.

As for Mo Qing Wu... [what kind of attitude does the Mo Clan has towards her? What are they planning to do? What are they thinking?] Chu Yang needed to investigate all of this.

Chu Yang knew that he would get eaten alive by those old foxes of the Mo Clan if he tried to act rashly. But, there would be a big purge after Mo Tian Ji took control of the Mo Clan. In fact, a paradigm shift would occur at that time. And, Chu Yang knew that he needed to be wary of these greedy and cunning people who were currently predominant in the Mo Clan until that time came.

After all, Mo Qing Wu was still a member of the Mo Clan. So, he must plan carefully with this point in mind.

[The Middle Three Heavens is in a chaotic mess. Where should I start from?]

Chu Yang was wining and dining whilst lost in thought. He was trying to find his way out of this tangled mess. He specially bought many dry beef rations after he was done with his meal. Then, he found an opportunity when no one was looking, and put the rations in the Nine Tribulations Space. He leisurely went downstairs after that, and walked out.

It was already dark outside. And, there was no lack of safe lodging places here. However, he unexpectedly didn't wish to stay here.

He chose the mountain forest instead!

The spirit energy was at its peak in the mountain forest during the night time. Hence, this was the most suitable time and place for cultivation. On the contrary, it was obviously somewhat noisy inside the inn. Moreover, the atmosphere there was morbidly polluted with the four cardinal vices – wine, s*x, avarice, and temper...

Chu Yang didn't want to waste his precious cultivation time.

He had just come out of the restaurant when he discovered that someone was tailing him. Chu Yang curled his lip and sneered. He swaggered away from the intersection, and confidently walked along the main road.

Rustle Rustle Rustle... suddenly, the sound of fluttering sleeves reverberated along with an eccentric voice, "Hey, you over there! God of Wealth! Where are you going? Please don't go ha ha ha..."

Chu Yang halted his footsteps. He was then surrounded by 7 or 8 people in the blink of an eye. These people were led by the two individuals whom Chu Yang had driven out of the restaurant earlier in the day.

"Boy, you seem to have a lot of gold. You are quite extravagant ah." A slim guy looked at Chu Yang with a sinister expression in his eyes, "You've dared to mess with us brothers. You seem like you're

quite eager to die!"

Chu Yang gave him a cold glance, "Cut the crap. What do you want? Say it at once. This Young Master's time is precious. I don't have time for your pointless chit-chat."

The crowd separated at this time, and a big guy came out, "Young Master? Ha-ha, a Young Master dares to be so rude and unreasonable in front of my Black Devil Clan. Which Middle Three Heavens' clan do you come from?"

Chu Yang's pupils contracted as he slowly asked, "A King Level Expert?"

That big fellow coldly snorted. His imposing aura made him seem like insufferably arrogant person. He shouted, "What's wrong? Are you scared? Boy, hand over your belongings. Then, grovel before me, and beg for mercy. I might leave your corpse intact if you do that!"

His body shook a little, and released a sharp and eerie aura that filled the air. His dense aura began to condense, and slowly formed a crown above his head.

"You're planning to kill me, aren't you?" Chu Yang asked in a modest manner.

"Why? Do you wish to live?" The King Level Expert of the Black Devil Clan was clearly at the Second Grade of King Level. So, he was obviously giving some ridiculing looks to the youngster who stood in front of him. The boy before him was already in his grasp as far as he was concerned. So, why not tease him a little and have some fun?

"That's good." Chu Yang smiled a little, "I was worrying... that there's no reason to kill you guys." He raised his head, "It takes a lot of time and effort for parents to raise their children. It's not an easy task, you know. So, I first look for a valid reason every time I am about to kill someone! Congratulations to you guys... for giving

me a reason to kill."

The big guy looked at Chu Yang with calm eyes. However, a strong chill arose in his heart out of nowhere. He couldn't help but have a feeling of regret for the first time ever, [this guy seems very uncanny. He doesn't seem like some ordinary and easy target.]

[I should've investigated before messing with him.]

However, it was already too late for him to repent because Chu Yang had moved into action.

His hands moved, and unleashed a killer move!

"One Ray of Cold Light..." Chu Yang let out a long drawn-out chant as he unsheathed his sword with a loud 'clang'. The look in his eyes instantly became sharper than the sword light, "...Pierces Ten Thousand Fathoms!"

A loud 'bang' was heard as the sword light spread around. It carried a fierce and murderous intention, and exploded like gorgeous firework in this dark and gloomy nighttime sky.

That swift and fierce aura specific to a swordsman suddenly filled the air!

That King Level Expert was shocked. His eyeballs nearly popped out as he exclaimed, "Sword King!"

He was frightened out of his wits. He drew his saber in defense as he rapidly stepped back. He knew this clearly that his opponent was a Sword King. His opponent was only a First Grade Sword King, but he knew that an ordinary Second Grade King Level Expert like himself didn't stand a chance!

He was so overwhelmed with fear that he had even forgotten about his regret. And, only one word was revolving in his mind —'Escape'!

The sword light flashed at once. And, that King Level Expert felt a cold sensation in his heart. A long sword appeared before him. It

was as bright as snow. And, a look of panic spread on his face.

He raised his terrified head, and saw Chu Yang's dull and apathetic face. It seemed as if nothing in this world could change his countenance.

"Your Excellency... I have something to say... please hear me out! Let's settle this with a talk." The big guy's forehead was covered in beads of cold sweat. He spoke-up in a trembling voice as the viper-like long sword appeared in his sight.

'Thud' sounds echoed one after another at this time. Those seven people – who had been left dumbstruck on the spot by the sudden appearance of the sword light – collapsed one by one. Then, blood sprayed out of their throats with strong force.

Actually... their throats had been slashed by Chu Yang in just a flash! There was no scope for mercy whenever Chu Yang moved into action!

One sword caused the death of seven people. One man did it!

"You are a member of the Black Devil Clan, aren't you?" Chu Yang asked solemnly in a cold voice. His voice seemed to contain supreme authority.

"Yes..." the big guy replied. His limbs had already gone limp from fear. He held a saber in his hand. However, he simply couldn't bring himself to lift it. [The cultivation of this Sword King is so scary! I am a King Level Expert myself, but I have no strength to fight back. And, his long sword is pointed at my throat!]

"I see, what's your name?" The look in Chu Yang's eyes turned somewhat gentle.

"I am... I am Li Wende..." A glimmer of hope flashed in Li Wende's eyes. [It seems... I won't die for the time being?]

"Li Wende... such a fine name...! Second Grade King Level Expert... you are a courageous fellow, but you're also a useless weakling." Chu Yang nodded his head.

[Useless weakling...? Motherfu*ker, I am not a useless weakling ok? Cough, I just don't want a big bloody hole in my throat...] Li Wende felt like crying.

[I had heard my subordinates say that there's a fat sheep shooting dozens of gold ingots all over the place. Moreover, he had also clashed with two of my men. Hence, there was a fair reason to carry out a vendetta against him. I only wanted to make a small fortune on the side... I had never even imagined that we would end up provoking such a killer.]

[I swear on my mother ah! Seven people died at once right before my eyes...]

"I am a benevolent person in reality. In fact, I am a very kind man!" Chu Yang exclaimed in a melancholic manner.

Li Wende nodded again-and-again like chicken that was pecking rice. However, he cussed angrily in his heart, [you killed seven people in one sword-strike, and you didn't even blink once while you did it. And yet, you call yourself 'benevolent'? If you are a kind man... then I am the kindest man in the entire world...]

"But... the people of your Black Devil Clan and I share a deep enmity!" Chu Yang sighed loudly.

"Deep enmity?" Li Wende went weak in the knees, "Young Master, may I ask who you are..."

"I suppose you still remember the Mo Clan, right?" Chu Yang smiled coldly, "Your clan has done things to Mo Clan in the past... you should be able to remember it easily."

Li Wende's complexion suddenly turned pallid, [so this person is from the Mo Clan?] A chill surged in his heart. [The Black Devil Clan has enemies everywhere. However, the Mo Clan is undoubtedly the most powerful enemy!]

A loud 'clang' sound suddenly erupted out of nowhere. Chu Yang shouted in a cold voice, "Who?" A sword light flashed, and slashed

towards Li Wende immediately afterwards.

Li Wende went all-out at the risk of his life, and lifted his face upwards. The slash went scraping from his forehead to chin. Then, another loud ‘clang’ sounded, but Li Wende only felt a sharp stabbing pain in his chest. After that, he heard Chu Yang shout in an infuriated manner, "Wait! Where do you think you are going?"

The sword light went soaring away with a ‘whoosh’. The clanging sounds faded out as Chu Yang went far away from there...

"Many thanks to the ancestors for saving me boohoo..." Li Wende's face had been badly mutilated. Yet, he was shedding tears of gratitude at this moment. [Someone interfered at this critical juncture, and took this guy away...]

[He would’ve silenced me if he hadn’t been led away...]

Li Wende broke out in a cold sweat. His face had been scraped by a sword. The cut was so deep that even the bone was visible. There were three sword wounds in his chest. The flesh had been left to whirl around in each wound. However, one thing was clear — these three sword wounds in his chest seemed as if the sword’s blows had been obstructed a little at the last moment. Therefore, the sword’s blows could only inflict such superfluous flesh wounds instead of piercing the heart...

[But... who saved me?]

[Forget it. I don’t want this anymore. I am getting out of here as fast as possible. I will first return to the clan, and recuperate for a few years. It’s too dangerous outside...]

Chapter 441: Meets Chu Fei Ling for the First Time

[Ah, I must report the news about the sudden appearance of this Mo Clan's expert to my clan... It seems that the Mo Clan has begun to plot against my Black Devil Clan... boohoo...]

Li Wende appeared to be in a distressed state as he stood up, and somehow made his way out of there. He was scared witless, and had been left to tremble in fear. He didn't even care about the corpses of his men...

Meanwhile, Chu Yang – who had been led away by someone – went into the mountain forest nonchalantly... as if nothing had happened. He sat cross-legged on a hillside, and began to channel the spirit energy into his body for cultivation.

Where was the person who had led him away? That was merely his trickery; that's all. [This is a simple trick of instigation. However, the method of execution was a bit clumsy. As to whether the Black Devil Clan will fall into this trap or not... how's that any of my goddamn business?]

[These two clans already hold a grudge against each other. They are bound to engage in a rigorous battle even without provocation. My trick is only an excuse for them to move into action. As to whether it would actually happen or not... it doesn't matter. And, I let that Second Grade King Level Expert escape because such a trivial expert can be killed at any time. In fact, it won't be a big deal if worst comes to worst, and he doesn't die. But, it will be so much better if this incites a war between these two influential clans...]

"Little brother, do you have a grudge against the Mo Clan?" A simple yet elegant voice sounded all of a sudden. It seemed as if it had originated from right beside Chu Yang's ears.

Chu Yang was startled at first. Then, he got terrified to the extreme. [This voice had shown no signs of emergence. I hadn't even sensed anything beforehand. It's impossible for even a Ninth Grade King Level Expert to achieve something like that. However, this person is capable of something like that!]

[Doesn't this indicate that this person's martial power is far above my own?]

Chu Yang – who was in the middle of meditation – was greatly alarmed in his heart. In fact, he was about to jump up. However, he somehow controlled himself, and solemnly asked, "Who's trying to play tricks on me?"

A mild laughter pervaded in the surroundings as a man in a black robe appeared less than 30 feet ahead of Chu Yang. He was watching Chu Yang in a curious manner.

"Little brother's swordplay is very good." The black-robed man noticed the solemn look on Chu Yang's face. There was no trace of amazement on Chu Yang's face. So, he couldn't help but praise him.

"It's you." Chu Yang's pupils suddenly twinkled in this dark and gloomy night.

"You remember me?" The black-clothed man was somewhat taken aback.

"You had entered the restaurant from behind me when I was trying to find out about the recent news. About a quarter of an hour had already passed till then. And, someone was talking about the Eight Great Young Masters when you came in." Chu Yang calmly continued, "You looked for a window seat after you came in, and seated yourself. You ordered two green vegetables, one plate of peanuts, one plate of beef, and a jug of wine. You only spoke one word while placing each order. But, you ate only a few peanuts and three pieces of beef. And, you drank only half a jug of wine. The entire restaurant was enclosed by me after your

arrival... no one was able to come in afterwards."

Chu Yang snorted loudly. His memory could be said to be unparalleled in the world. Not to mention that he was currently in the Middle Three Heavens. The law of the jungle was predominant in this place, and there was danger at every step. So, how could he not pay extra attention to everything? Even the behavior of that black-clothed man had been correctly stated by Chu Yang.

"Little brother's memory is stunning! You are correct about everything you said." The black-clothed man was astonished as he looked at Chu Yang. He thought, [it is surprising-enough that he remembers me. But, what's strange is that he even remembers what I ate and drank, and in what quantity! I must say that it's not something that's easy to pull off.] He said, "It's surprising that you clearly remember an insignificant person like me among so many people present there."

Chu Yang was sitting cross-legged, and hadn't moved an inch. He insipidly replied, "That's nothing. The question is... have you come here to return the favor for my food?" Chu Yang smiled as he raised his head, "The meal you had in the restaurant was paid for by me! I thought you have come to return the favor."

"Little brother's memory is indeed superhuman. I hadn't thought that I would get to see someone with such mental prowess. This is amazing to see!" The black-clothed man gasped in admiration, "I don't know why... but, a feeling of affection arises in my heart whenever I see you."

"State your purpose in coming here. You definitely aren't here to have a chat with me." Chu Yang smiled mildly. Chu Yang could tell from the appearance of this black-clothed man that his cultivation was far above his own. However, he was having a strange feeling in his heart... [this man wouldn't hurt me!]

Chu Yang had been confronted by such a feeling for the first time in his overall experience of two lifetimes!

Chu Yang felt awfully strange, [Why ah? Why do you think that this man won't hurt you? Chu Yang, you haven't gone insane, have you? You've never met this man. This man can crush you with a finger. You are seeing him for the first time... yet you somehow believe that this man won't hurt you? You have gone crazy, ah!]

However, even his rational thinking couldn't sway this distinct feeling in his heart for some reason.

Therefore, he awakened the Sword Spirit due to such contradiction in his heart.

Sword Spirit had been cultivating inside that strange array formation inside the Nine Tribulations Space ever since. He heard Chu Yang's call at this moment, and came out. But, he suddenly had a scare the moment he came out, "How did you provoke such a monster?"

"Monster?" Chu Yang asked in an astonished manner in his consciousness.

"Indeed; he's a monster!" Sword Spirit replied quite seriously, "This man... should look unfathomable to you!"

"What about you?" Chu Yang snorted and asked, "What's his cultivation level?"

"He has camouflaged his real strength. He's presently a Fifth Grade Saber Emperor... even with his real strength hidden! But, he should be at the pinnacle of Ninth Grade Saber Emperor if he stops camouflaging his strength! He will soon break through to the Saber Monarch level!" Sword Spirit said to caution him, "But, you must pay attention that he's actually carrying a sword at his waist, and not a saber!"

"So... this man has been concealing his cultivation for a very long time." Chu Yang heard the explanation, and appreciated this advice very much.

"Yes." Sword Spirit replied, "You have to be extremely careful

while dealing with him. You must stay alert at all times. I will take control of your body if this man shows any malicious intention, and escape if necessary!"

The look in Chu Yang's eyes turned cold.

[He hasn't recovered fully, but he was able to protect me from the joint all-out attacks of Jing Meng Hun and his several hundred experts back then... The current strength of the Sword Spirit has upgraded by a significant margin with the help of his cultivation within the array formation. So, we should be able to escape even if we can't kill the enemy if he taken over my body, right?]

[However, how powerful and ferocious is this black-clothed man?]

On the other hand... the black-clothed man was actually frowning while these thoughts were flashing across Chu Yang's mind....

He had clearly felt an ancient and desolate aura just a moment ago. It had been powerful enough to frighten him. It had vaguely brushed against his body. Moreover, it seemed as if his camouflage had completely failed to hide his level from this aura!

This obscure aura had flashed only once, and had then disappeared entirely. However, it had still aroused a strong feeling of vigilance in his heart.

"I'm naturally not looking to chat with you. I need your help in reality." The black-clothed man put on a genial smile, "Aren't you curious about my identity?"

"What's the point of being curious? You aren't likely to tell me your true identity since you've appeared so casually before me." Chu Yang coldly snorted.

"Eh? Ha ha ha... your insight is quite good!" the black-clothed man laughed out loud. His interest in this youngster was growing more and more.

He didn’t know why... but he had an intimate and familiar feeling in his heart since the moment he had seen Chu Yang in the restaurant... even though he had seen this youth for the first time. That’s why he had appeared here.

And, the more he got to know about this youth... the more he admired him. At first, he admired the youth’s memory... then his mental prowess, concentration, courage, and style of speech. This youth was faced with a great expert who was far beyond his own level... yet he was neither servile nor overbearing. All of this had left him to admire Chu Yang.

[I wasn’t as good as him when I was his age, right?]

The black-clothed man suddenly took a good look at this youngster, and noticed that the upper half of his face looked just like own young self. [Ah, his facial features vaguely look like mine when I was younger...]

This made him remember something, and he couldn’t help but have a mild heartache...

"You didn’t get scared, or panic; nor did you escape when you saw me. I wish to know why?" The black-clothed man smiled as he sat down cross-legged like Chu Yang.

"Does this also require a reason?" Chu Yang relaxed in his heart as he smiled and replied, "Take the great difference between our cultivations into account. I can’t escape from you if you’ve come to kill me. Therefore, I will only be increasing the thrill of your hunt by getting scared, panicking, or trying to escape. Moreover, you’d be my enemy if you had come to kill me. So, why would I wish to increase your thrill?"

Chu Yang smiled, "The feeling of killing a person who is struggling unceasingly for his life is completely different from killing a hero who has already accepted his imminent death, and waits to embrace it without batting an eye. The hatred in the heart of you — the killer — gets even bigger after you have killed such a

hero. The killer gets more restless after he has killed such a hero. This is human psychology... I'll not give you the chance to be delighted by killing me... especially since I can't run away. That will be my revenge! Why would I escape to give you the thrill of the chase?"

The black-clothed man laughed heartily and said, "Indeed! But, what if I am not here to kill you?"

"Why do I need to be scared, or panic, or escape if you haven't come to kill me... or aren't hostile towards me?" Chu Yang curled his lips and replied.

The black-clothed man was suddenly taken aback by this reply!

[This youngster's has a unique style of conducting himself before others!]

"How old are you?" He asked as he gasped in admiration. Meanwhile, he also thought in his heart, [my son would presumably be this big if he were still around. But, he would never have such achievements...]

"Almost 20 years old." Chu Yang raised his eyebrows. He had made this remark after much consideration. He was actually 18 years old at present. However, it was rarely seen for an 18-year-old to become a Sword King in the entire Nine Heavens! And, he didn't wish to be treated as a monster.

Almost 20 years old gives the illusion to the listener that he's more than 19 years old, and is soon going to turn 20. And, becoming a Sword King at the age of 20 is indeed somewhat startling, and he would be regarded as a top genius for sure. However, the impact would be a lot smaller compared to the one caused by the age of 18...

Some geniuses in the clans of the Upper Three Heavens were capable of having such an accomplishment...

His lie may get exposed in the future, but he could always cast

about a reason in explanation — [I said I am almost 20 years old. I didn't say that I am 19-and-a-half years old, ok? Isn't 18 years old as good as 'almost 20 years old'?]

"Less than 20 years old... So young!" The black-clothed man had anticipated this. He gasped in admiration. A sense of loss flashed in his eyes, [my son should be about 18 years old if he were still alive, right?]

He looked at Chu Yang as he thought of this. And, the look in his eyes turned even gentler than earlier.

This black-clothed man was none other than Chu Fei Ling from the Upper Three Heavens. He had come here in search of the medicine! And, he had directly come to this place since it was located near an exit of the Cang Lan Battlefront in order to make it easier to find the medicine. However, he had felt that something was off after he had come here. He felt as if... someone was looking to cause trouble for him.

This very sense of danger made him temporarily change his priorities even in this crucial time, and he came looking for Chu Yang. This wasn't because he was scared of the enemy. He scared of the fact that it might distract him, and delay his drug-seeking expedition.

Chapter 442: The Path of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master!

"You said that you need my help?" Chu Yang had developed a favorable impression of this black-clothed man for some inexplicable reason. However, both sides had reached a mutual understanding that they wouldn't ask each other's name. [This good natured man isn't willing to reveal his real identity. So, why would I tell him my name?]

The black-clothed man also had similar apprehensions, [how can I expect him to be frank and honest when I am being so secretive?]

"Yes, I noticed that you seemed rather interested in the news about Cang Lan Battlefront. I assume you are going to enter the Cang Lan Battlefront! That being the case... we might as well travel together," the black-clothed man — Chu Fei Ling — suggested with a mild smile.

"Travel together?" Chu Yang knitted his brows. [Why would such a strong person bother to travel with me?]

"Yes... I have been facing some trouble on my travels lately to be honest. I will attract more attention if I try to go too fast. Moreover... there are some people who know that I'm alone out here. This is very inconvenient for me..." A trace of sadness flashed through Chu Fei Ling's eyes.

"Oh, I see," Chu Yang let out an 'oh' in a soft voice. Then, he bluntly said, "But, have you thought that the one who's looking to cause trouble for a person of your caliber has to be a great expert...? I understand that you wish to travel with me... but, the first casualty is bound to be me in case something happens!"

"I am worried about this." Chu Fei Ling greatly admired Chu Yang for being frank and spoke, "Therefore, we will travel together till the Raging Fire Mountain Range. Moreover, I won't allow you

to suffer any losses due to our collaboration. And, I will ensure that you benefit from it. Plus, I will do everything in my power to protect you in case something happens."

"I'm just a ‘cover’ in other words?" Chu Yang frowned.

"Yes," Chu Fei Ling frankly replied.

"But... why would you come to me?" Chu Yang asked in a puzzled manner, "There should be several people more appropriate for job than I am. I’m not a quiet person as you can see... So, you must know that my ability to stir up trouble is not smaller than yours."

"Because... you are very pleasing to the eye..." Chu Fei Ling smiled, and said in his heart, [this can be considered as fate. I barely arrived in the Middle Three Heavens, and then ran into you. I didn’t get a chance to look for another person as a result...]

"I too think that you are very pleasing to the eye." Chu Yang laughed out loud.

Chu Fei Ling wore a warm smile. It was hard to tell how much pressure he had withstood in the last about 20 years. He had been drowned in a myriad of worries. He had dealt with internal disorder, and foreign invasion. He had also experienced a person tragedy. Therefore, he never got an opportunity to smile from the depths of his heart. He had always been depressed, and there was nothing to make him feel relieved. However today, he felt rather relaxed for some reason.

This feeling had surprised him as well. He hadn’t felt this relaxed in a very long time. He couldn’t help but give credit to this youngster for the emergence of this feeling. It was as if there was something mysterious about this youth that was putting him at ease.

And, this mysterious power had made him somewhat infatuated with the youth.

He felt rather strange in his heart, [this boy is a cold blooded

murderer. He doesn’t even blink while he kills people. He’s a very ruthless person. But, why does he make me be at ease?]

However, this was a fact, and couldn’t be refuted.

"Alright then... let's travel together." Chu Yang chuckled.

"Ok. If there’s any trouble on the way, and you’re unable to solve it — I will help you out." Chu Fei Ling offered with a smile. He felt warm in his heart.

"There’s no need for that. I always solve my troubles myself." Chu Yang shook his head and replied, "Getting help from someone... is detrimental for my future development. It’s not good for my own state of mind. And, it’s rather unfavorable for my growth. It might develop into a habit of dependency. And, I won’t be able to go far in my life if that were to happen."

Chu Fei Ling was startled. Then, a look of appreciation flashed in his eyes. He had been taken aback by this reply. He hadn’t anticipated that the youth before him possessed such a profound thought process. [It seems like this boy has very high aspirations!]

"There must be a reason why you are going to the Raging Fire Mountain Range, right?" Chu Yang asked... perhaps intentionally or otherwise.

"Yes. To find an elixir...!" Chu Fei Ling sighed. He thought of his old father. The elderly man had been injured. Chu Fei Ling couldn’t help but burn with impatience at this thought.

"Is it very important?"

"Very important!"

"I see... to rescue a very important person?"

"Yes."

"And, this enemy that you encountered is trying to stop you from achieving your goal... which is to save that person?" Chu Yang casually asked.

"Yes... eh?! How do you know...?" Chu Fei Ling looked at Chu Yang. He couldn't help but think, [this little guy's brain works too fast.]

"Logically speaking, a person like you – who seems to be in a position of power from his temperament, and has such high cultivation level – should be accompanied by an entourage when he comes out to do something. Yet, you are alone. This shows that you are on a secret mission, right?" Chu Yang knitted his eyebrows.

"Right."

"So, it is a secret mission, and someone has come to cause trouble for you. This explains that your enemy knows your whereabouts! This indicates... that your enemy is from your own family, correct?"

"Eh?" Chu Fei Ling suddenly looked up.

Chu Yang continued to state his speculation, "So, there has to be some conflict of interests involved in this if we go by this point of view. Perhaps a bit of struggle for power and position... In other words, that injured person is very important for your family. Otherwise, an expert like you wouldn't have been mobilized. And, since you've been sent out on this mission and an enemy has appeared to deal with you... it can be assumed that there's a fierce struggle going-on behind the scenes!

"This is a power struggle between brothers isn't it?" Chu Yang smiled as he speculated in a solemn manner.

"Brilliant!" Chu Fei Ling had been rendered speechless. [I didn't tell him anything. I only mentioned the enemy, and he managed to speculate so much with so little information?]

"Your kind expression and elegant demeanor gives me the vibes that you are the type of person who takes care of people. That... taking care of people has become a habit for you... Moreover, it is

easily discernible that you're not a servant when one considers your noble temperament. Therefore, you ought to be the eldest son of your family, am I right? Such being the case... the person who wants to deal with you has to be one of your younger siblings..."

Chu Yang chuckled, and then spoke in a ridiculing manner, "In other words, you are a thorn in their flesh, and they wish to get rid of you! Your old father won't be able to get the medicine without you in the picture, and he'll most certainly die. Then, the clan's power will logically fall into the hands of that person since they have been pulling the strings from behind the scenes."

Chu Fei Ling's face turned ashen. He hadn't been shocked to this extent in so many years. However, the reasoning ability of this youth had truly shaken him to his core. This had obviously raised the utmost admiration for this youth in his heart.

He recalled the time when Chu Yang had neatly and efficiently slaughtered those people. He couldn't help but be shocked in his heart.

[Such expertise in martial arts, such intelligence, such wisdom... such decisiveness!]

"Therefore, the look of helplessness and sadness in your eyes reveals that you still haven't made-up your mind. That... you still care about your former affection for your siblings!" Chu Yang callously struck the soft spot of Chu Fei Ling's heart, "Otherwise, there would be a killing intention in your eyes. But no... you only wish to escape. You wish to hide from reality... instead of facing the enemy head-on! Isn't that right?"

Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh. He had been struck by sadness, and couldn't speak a single word. He certainly thought in this manner... After all, it was his blood-brother! Moreover, he was a brother from the same mother. Chu Fei Ling had started to give far more importance to family relations ever since he had lost his son. However, things had evolved out of control, and had reached the

current situation in which there was nothing besides pain and sorrow. He didn't have the slightest idea about what was going-on in his younger brother's mind.

"So, you will sooner or later be killed by your younger brother even if you do find that elixir." Chu Yang bluntly said, "You are such a kind and softhearted person. Yet, your brother still wishes to eradicate you. I can only say that your brother has no humanity, and deserves to die a miserable death!

"Being kind and compassionate while being in a position of power is a deadly combo! You are the Eldest Young Master. You must understand that your kindness and reluctance to make a tough decision will ruin the future of the entire clan! You must know that sometimes you must kill decisively to save your clan — even if you have to kill your own brother."

Chu Yang solemnly continued, "It's late at night. Let's sleep early. We will leave early morning!"

He shut his mouth after he finished this sentence, and spoke no further.

Chu Yang had gone out of his way to teach a valuable lesson to Chu Fei Ling on their very first meeting!

It couldn't be called a 'lesson' since he was merely speculating. However, it was undeniable that his speculation was correct. Chu Yang ended the conversation abruptly by mentioning it was 'late' because he somewhat regretted the fact that he had delved deep in a conversation with a complete stranger. Who talks about these things on their first meeting with a stranger?

However, he had done so on an impulse for some reason. He couldn't endure to see the look of sadness and helplessness in Chu Fei Ling's eyes for some reason. Moreover, his heart was very impatient to help this man get through any difficulty...

"This feels very strange." Chu Yang closed his eyes, and smiled

bitterly in his heart. "Could it be that an Emperor Level Expert has something about his personality that makes him capable of unconsciously impressing others?"

"Most people who cultivate up to the Emperor level experience a change in their temperament. So, it should be rather easy for such an expert to impress you if they desire it." Sword Spirit gently explained in Chu Yang's mind, "The energy field around an Emperor Level Expert can affect the mind and judgment of a person... it's even more obvious in the case of a Monarch Level Expert."

"I see." Chu Yang quietly let out a breath, and felt a little relieved, [I must hone my mind to increase my mental fortitude.]

The Sword Spirit wanted to say something, but hesitated at the last moment and didn't speak. The words that he didn't say were... [An Emperor Level Expert has this ability, but... this man didn't use it on you.]

However, he didn't needlessly complicate things since he realized that Chu Yang felt relieved.

"The spirit energy is far more concentrated in the Middle Three Heavens. But... you must pay attention to one thing. It is said that the path of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master starts in the Middle Three Heavens. Chu Yang, what are you planning to do?" Sword Spirit was obviously most concerned about this topic. So, he raised it in front of Chu Yang.

"The path of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master...?" Chu Yang muttered irresolutely. Then, he asked, "What do I need to do?"

"Conquer!" Sword Spirit replied in a heavy tone, "Conquer the forces you see, and form your own team. Then, prepare to rush to the Upper Three Heavens in one fell swoop like a mighty dragon!

"Form a team? Conquer the Middle Three Heavens?" Chu Yang softly repeated these phrases. He could clearly feel his heart

beating rapidly.

"Yes, the Lower Three Heavens was your starting point! The future subversion of the Upper Three Heavens depends on the team that you form in the Middle Three Heavens! The experts of the nine great ruling clans will be your enemies when you go to the Upper Three Heavens! After all, the entire Upper Three Heavens is under the control of those nine super clans. It's like the entire world is your enemy! No one will help you there. The only help you can draw is from the ambitious clans of the Middle Three Heavens!"

"The nine great ruling clans of the Upper Three Heavens must be removed... and replaced!" Sword Spirit spoke-up in an awe-inspiring voice while he stressed on each word.

Chapter 443: Obey Me, and Prosper; Defy Me, and Perish!

Chu Yang's body shook a little. He quickly immersed himself in his thoughts. The phrase ‘remove and replace’ was unceasingly revolving in his mind.

"Rush to the Upper Three Heavens with the support of the ambitious clans of the Middle Three Heavens... "Chu Yang sneered and said, "This plan doesn’t sound very reliable! The experts of the Middle Three Heavens are at most at the King Level right now. There aren’t many Emperor Level Experts in the respectable clans! But, look at the expert who’s currently with us. He’s already a Ninth Grade Emperor Level Expert! So, just imagine how many Monarch Level Experts and Saint Level Experts would be there in the nine super clans of the Upper Three Heavens? How can we possibly ‘remove and replace’ the super clans of the Upper Three Heavens with the tiny strength of the clans of the Middle Three Heavens?"

"Every generation of the major aristocratic clans of the Middle Three Heavens has harbored the ambitions to rush to the Upper Three Heavens! But, they don’t dare to reveal their ambitions. Do you think that the heritage of these super clans — who have been in power for thousands of years — is going to be small?" Sword Spirit snorted and said, "How many genuine experts do you think are roaming out there in search of such an opportunity? And, what do you think they’d do once they find out that someone is giving them a chance to exterminate the nine ruling clans of the Upper Three Heavens?"

"But, the Gu Clan has just one genuine expert, and even he failed to become an Emperor Level Expert. And, the Gu Clan imprisoned the Clan Lord’s biological daughter named Gu Miao Ling because of that. Moreover, this also confirms that the Gu Clan doesn’t have

an Emperor Level Expert." Chu Yang believed in the story told by Gu Du Xing because there was no reason for Gu Du Xing to lie to him.

"How old is the Gu Clan?" Sword Spirit spoke in a condescending manner, "It's a clan that's maybe a few hundred years or even a few decades old. Is it that strange that they have no Emperor Level Expert?

"You will face a lot of resistance when you start to conquer the Middle Three Heavens!" Sword Spirit slowly explained, "But... you must remember that the more the resistance... the bigger the power!"

"Every previous Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword had to do that?" Chu Yang frowned.

"Obey me, and prosper. Defy me, and perish!" Sword Spirit said solemnly, "This is the main path of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master!" He paused for a moment, and then continued, "You have the correct disposition. Your mind is tempered enough for the job! Your wisdom is also sufficient. The only thing you lack is the 'Way of the Tyrant'– Obey me, and prosper. Defy me, and perish!"

"Exploit the hidden ambitions of the major clans..." Chu Yang's eyes sparkled as he let out a long breath. Then, these eight words completely immersed themselves into his mind.

[Obey me, and prosper! Defy me, and perish!]

[Confronting the innumerable experts of the nine heavens while having the crazed mentality of a world tyrant?! What kind of indomitable spirit must one have for this?!]

Chu Yang sat back, and began to think of those previous Masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword. These masters must have rocked an unmatched heroic bearing while they had conquered the nine heavens with the help of Nine Tribulations Sword. They must've advanced unhindered as they would've followed the Way of the

Tyrant. The thoughts of their outstanding and heroic demeanor suddenly gave birth to a heroic feeling in his heart!

The Nine Tribulations Sword in his Dantian also got infected by this mood. It somersaulted in his Dantian with a sudden ‘clang’ sound. The sword’s majestic energy surged as the Sword Point let out a cry, and then burst into Chu Yang’s Dantian like lighting. It then instantly travelled throughout his meridians!

Chu Yang suddenly felt a tearing pain in his meridians. He felt as if his meridians were being torn to pieces. This unbearable pain suddenly triggered a wave of ominous and fierce wild energy in his body. He nearly raised his face upwards and let out a long and loud scream!

He was incredibly frightened in his heart. He immediately operated the Nine Heavens Martial Technique at its full potential in order to contain the raging wild energy of the Nine Tribulation Sword, and tried to push it back into his Dantian! He used his willpower and his divine sense to forcefully suppress this rampant energy. [I must conquer! That's my job! I don’t need to be ordered around by a sword!]

[I shall conquer the nine heavens with own strength!]

[With my own strength... conquer the nine heavens! Obey me, and prosper. Defy me, and perish!]

The Sword Spirit in Chu Yang’s consciousness sighed, [I don’t know whether I should praise or what! No wonder! It’s no wonder that the ninth master of the Nine Tribulations Sword is like this!]

[It turns out that he’s fundamentally different from the previous eight masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword! He wants to use the Nine Tribulations Sword, but he won’t allow it to take control of everything! The Nine Tribulations Sword is incredibly strong, but he won’t blindly believe in its strength. He only trusts in his own strength!]

The Sword Spirit such reached a revelation while he was thinking of all this. [He's possibly the true master of the Nine Tribulations Sword! Because... only he has truly dominated it!]

[The first eight masters of the Nine Tribulations Sword had been powerful. However, they had enhanced their own strength by drawing support from the Nine Tribulations Sword; without exception! They had dominated the world, but only with the help of the Nine Tribulations Sword!]

[However, Chu Yang is different. He borrows its strength, but he doesn't lose himself in the process! Therefore, this time... the one to eventually dominate the nine heavens will be the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master, and not the Nine Tribulations Sword itself!]

[This is the fundamental difference!]

A bone-chilling cold aura surged out of Chu Yang's body, and rose high up into the sky. Then, an incomparably tyrannical energy burst out of his body with a loud 'bang'!

Obey me, and prosper. Defy me, and perish!

[Did he comprehend the essence of this mysterious way in such a short period of time?] Sword Spirit exclaimed at first. Then, he quietly returned to the Nine Tribulations Space. He was suddenly full of expectations from Chu Yang's future.

[Will this unique Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword let this Sword Spirit get rid of the shackles of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and become a genuine spiritual entity? Will such a sunny day arrive in my life?]

Chu Yang was practicing martial arts, while Chu Fei Ling was immersed in deep contemplation.

He was thinking about the stuff Chu Yang had told him. He had to admit that Chu Yang's suggestion was truly logical.

Chu Fei Ling also knew that the consequences of falling into this

trap would be disastrous. However, he had his own sufferings and sorrows to deal with.

[I am the primary heir of the clan, but I am childless! I lost my son. And, my son is still missing.]

[This the basic difference between my Second Brother and me... He has three sons who can continue the bloodline of the Chu Clan! But, how can my Second Brother be my opponent if I use my iron fist?]

[Moreover... Third Brother's two sons are frail, and lack aptitude. And, Fourth Brother's daughter is perennially sick, while his son is young and won't necessarily grow up to be a capable individual in the future. So, the only promising youngsters in the clan are the three son of the Second Brother!]

[What will happen to the Chu Clan's future if I am to strike down my Second Brother...? Won't I be burdened with the sin of pushing my Chu Clan into a situation wherein it won't have any qualified successors to carry on its undertaking?]

[Sigh...]

He recalled that his wife had been depressed ever since they had lost their son. He wouldn't dare to go and meet his father-in-law anymore. He would always get cussed each time he'd go there. [You good-for-nothing! Who loses his own son...? Why don't you go and lose yourself somewhere...]

Chu Fei Ling had been forced to face such tragic treatment every time ever since.

His father-in-law's complexion would be darker than iron-pot. And, his mother-in-law would always have tearful eyes. Then, this reunion would always develop into a scene of his wife and her mother crying on each other's shoulders...

"Sigh..." Chu Fei Ling sighed deeply. Sometimes, he felt like shouting out loud... [Dammit! You think I wanted to throw away

my son? That's my own son! My own flesh and blood! I am also a human being you know!]

[Was there any other way back then? My wife and I were about to die at that time. We knew that our death was certain. So, we had to temporarily abandon our son to distract the enemy. We had to do that in order give our son a slim chance of survival…]

[Who would've thought that we'd find an elixir in such a desperate situation and survive? What was even more surprising was the fact that… we desperately struggled to rush back to our son, and managed to reach there only a while later. But, our son had already disappeared by then…]

[This… who is to blame for this…?]

[Only the heavens can be blamed for this… only they can be blamed for toying with us. I also wish to cry, but the tears just won't come out. I would certain feel better if I could join you all, you know?]

Of course, he suppressed these words in his heart. In fact, he had been suppressing them for last 18 years. He hadn't dared to speak out! He could only feel aggrieved by himself. He was forced to feel this depression in the loneliness of his solitary heart. He would find his Fourth Brother whenever his emotions went out of control, and he'd drink with him to forget his pain and suffering…

Chu Fei Ling kept sighing again and again. He then looked at Chu Yang, and the look in his eyes turned gentler and gentler. [Ah, if I can find my son… I will treat him as my treasure even if he has become a beggar in this life. I will give it my all. I will make up for the pain and suffering my poor child must've gone through during these last 18 years…]

Eldest Master Chu solemnly thought, [ah, he must've suffered a lot while wandering about for all these years without us. I don't even know whether he's alive or dead…]

The night passed in silence.

The dawn time had approached quickly. Chu Fei Ling's mind suddenly throbbed. He stood up, and saw that something exploded within Chu Yang across him. A tyrannical aura had burst out of his body! This aura contained the 'tyrant way'!

It suddenly spread across... as if to dominate the entire sky!

This aura was full of apathy, indifference, and heartlessness. It gave-off a sense of absolute power and sheer dominance over others' fates! It seemed as if it was telling the world — Obey me, and prosper! Defy me, and perish!

Meanwhile, Chu Yang's aura got severely agitated, and the sword energy went flying about everywhere. This sword energy was invisible, and didn't have any shade. However, it had erupted fiercely, and was extremely swift!

Crash Crash Crash... the trees and boulders in the surrounding area got hit by sword energy. The leaves fluttered about as the stone chips were sent flying in all directions! Small holes appeared in the trunks of big trees in quick succession. These holes had been holed right through the trees, and had made the other side of the scenery visible through the trees' trunk!

And, all this had been caused by the penetration force of the sword energy!

The ground in the radius of 30 feet had been riddled with thousands of crisscross slash marks!

"Breakthrough?" Chu Fei Ling was suddenly startled. [This boy is a god-gifted genius. He has unexpectedly managed to comprehend hegemony overnight. Moreover, he managed to stir up the spiritual strength within his Dantian by drawing support from this hegemony, and has further changed that into Sword Energy. And, that's how he managed to break through to the Second Grade of Sword King in one fell swoop!]

[Hegemony is a type of imposing aura which experts possess. It’s not a martial technique that one can learn. Only those who hold an absolute position of power can have it. Moreover, it also requires one to cultivate a type of absolute self-confidence, and such confidence can only originate from bloody slaughters!]

Chu Fei Ling had spotted the gradual change in Chu Yang’s aura several times since last night. However, he hadn’t thought that Chu Yang could complete the comprehension process overnight. Moreover, Chu Fei Ling had never imagined that this boy would then change his imposing aura into sword energy within his body, and use it to make a breakthrough…

This was simply madness!

But, he had succeeded nonetheless!

The sky slowly brightened up. Chu Yang also got up slowly. They looked at each other. He noticed that Chu Fei Ling was looking at him with a look of concern in his eyes. He couldn’t help but have a warm feeling in his heart as he said, "No need to worry. I just had a little breakthrough."

Chu Fei Ling nodded, but remained silent. [Just a little breakthrough, you say? Brother, you broke through as a Sword King! That’s the most difficult breakthrough in the entire Nine Heavens!]

"Let's go," Chu Yang said with a smile. Then, the two went away from the hillside; they walked side by side as they did. They hurried along on the way. They were moving very fast. They were presently in the peripheral region of the Cang Lan Battlefront, and this region was devoid of human presence. So, they unleashed their agility skills, and dashed about wildly.

They encountered a few obstacles on the road, but Chu Fei Ling never got a chance to act. These obstacles got taken care of by Chu Yang. They ran into several spirit beasts, but they all got slaughtered by Chu Yang.

Chu Fei Ling could feel that Chu Yang was using this opportunity to gradually hone his skills, and was planning to use the harvest to promote his level. Therefore, he tried his best to not interfere, and simply observed from the sidelines. And, he was having an inexplicable feeling of satisfaction in doing so... as if he was looking at his own son having a healthy growth.

They arrived at the Raging Fire Mountain Range on that day itself. The burning hot aura was blowing against their faces. One could clearly see the flames raging in the east as they stained half of the sky with red color.

"We're here, right?" Chu Yang asked.

"Yes." Chu Fei Ling gently smiled since the time to part ways was close. But, it seemed like he didn't wish to part ways.

"Hey, Boss Chu, you have been very slow in getting here. You've made us brothers go through a lot of hardships," a sinister voice sounded. It carried a bit of complacence in it, "Did you know that we would intercept you midway? Is that why you've been biding time and conserving your strength? It seems we have surpassed your expectations, haven't we?"

'Whoosh' sounds were heard as eight masked men in black clothes appeared out of nowhere. Then, their impressively profound and massive auras pressed down like the falling sky!

The Sword Spirit screamed inside Chu Yang's Dantian, "Be careful! Each one of those guys is an Emperor Level Expert!"

Chapter 444: Saber Emperor Wages War!

"All of them are Emperor Level Experts?" Chu Yang quivered as he looked at those eight people in block clothes. He felt a cold sensation in the back of his head as he thought, [Crap! When did Emperor Level Expert begin to gather together in the Middle Three Heavens?]

A loud whistling sound was heard as those eight people moved to either side, and made way in the middle. Then, a masked man in black clothes came floating in the wind from there. His feet didn't seem to touch the ground as he leisurely came out of that group of 8 people, and stood at the front with his hands crossed behind his back. Then, he confidently took a few steps forwards. He casually stroked his sleeves. This action issued a metal clanging sound. He smiled mildly and asked, "Brother Chu, do you recognize me?"

His voice was rather elegant; like a spring gently flowing down the mountain.

Chu Yang saw him, and the corners of his mouth twitched, [this guy is acting like an ultimate pretentious prick! Every action and movement of his' seems artificial. But, it seems he has already reached great heights in martial arts!]

[You have your face covered with a mask, and you still ask such a question —'Do you recognize me?']

Chu Yang genuinely felt like saying... [You Motherfu*ker! First remove your mask. Then, he will recognize you!]

A serious look appeared on Chu Fei Ling's face. He sighed and said, "Brother Ye, right?"

The masked man in black burst into a cold laughter, "Ha ha ha ha, Brother Chu is worthy of his name. He he he he, I expected you to be rather shocked by this development..."

Chu Fei Ling took a deep breath. A mysterious light flickered in

his eyes as he said, "Indeed... I am shocked. Very shocked...!" His complexion turned serious as he looked at that black masked man and said, "Brother Ye, your clan has great power and influence. It rules over the nine heavens. It controls the Upper Three Heavens. It's unquestionably the strongest clan in the world! I have always revered your clan, and I've never been disrespectful. But, why has Brother Ye come here this day?"

'Brother Ye' merely chuckled and replied, "Brother Chu doesn't even know why I've come here?"

Chu Fei Ling sighed and said, "I genuinely don't know what I did to make an enemy out of the Ye Clan! Brother Ye, why did you bother to come here in such chaotic times? Why bother to come here to make things difficult for me?"

Chu Yang was watching from the sidelines. He had a cold feeling in his heart, [so, these nine masked men in black clothes are from the number one clan of the Upper Three Heavens – the Ye Clan?] He thought of this, and couldn't help but recall that hidden sorrow he had always seen in the calm and tranquil eyes of Meng Chao Ran. And, a name shockingly surfaced in his mind — Ye Chu Chen!

[Don't tell me that these people are from the Ye Clan... like Ye Chu Chen?]

"This man is a Sixth Grade Emperor Level Expert!" Sword Spirit's voice sounded in Chu Yang's mind, "The other eight are Third Grade Emperor Level Experts! They've come together to form the 'Serene Night Nine Masters Array Formation' of the Ye Clan! This array formation is incredibly powerful, and very difficult to deal with!"

"Serene Night Nine Masters Array...?" Chu Yang frowned and asked, "Is it really that difficult to deal with?"

"It's a powerful array formation that was taught to the Ye Clan by the previous Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword!" Sword Spirit replied in a serious manner, "Nine First Grade Emperor Level

Experts can together form a deadly array formation, and this formation can trap... and even kill a Monarch Level Expert! And, you ask if it's difficult to deal with?"

"Fu*k!" Chu Yang suddenly had a toothache from all the clenching, [doesn't this mean that we are in big trouble?]

The black-clothed masked man —'Brother Ye'— laughed wildly. His voice sounded like that of an owl, "You don't wish to be enemies with my Ye Clan? Ha ha ha... who do you think you are? Do you think you deserve to be an enemy... of my Ye Clan?"

Chu Fei Ling sighed. The calm look returned to his face. He gently loosened the scabbard on his waist, and put his right hand on the sword's hilt as he solemnly spoke, "Does Brother Ye intend to clash with me by putting our lives on the line?"

"Ha ha ha... Brother Chu, you are completely mistaken about one thing!" Brother Ye put on a strange smile as he replied.

"What's that?"

"You see, I don't need to put my life on the line to clash with you! You will die without a doubt!" Brother Ye laughed wildly.

Chu Fei Ling was silent for a long while. He then replied, "I'm afraid you won't be able to achieve that at your current level, Ye Ran Mo!"

The black-clothed man — Ye Ran Mo — spoke with a smile, "Correct. Our strengths are almost at the same level. However, I have my 8 brothers with me. And, we will gang up on you... do you still think that you have any hope of survival?"

Chu Fei Ling smiled insipidly, "There's still a little hope. But, you will have to attack me to find out. However, I have a small request!"

"What request?"

Chu Fei Ling pointed his finger at Chu Yang and spoke, "There

may be some misgivings between you and me. But, this boy is innocent. You let him go. We can then have a fight to the death!"

Chu Yang's body shook a little. He could feel a genuine sense of concern and care in these words. Even his heart was greatly moved by this.

"Ha-ha, I would certainly let him go if he were an ordinary boy. However, now..." Ye Ran Mo smiled and continued in a sinister tone, "He has been together with Brother Chu for quite some time. I don't know... but it's possible that you may have given him something. And, in case I overlook something vital... that could become a big problem for me later."

His shrugged his shoulders, and said in an artificial sounding regretful tone, "Brother Chu, please forgive me, but I must get rid of the source of any future trouble."

Chu Fei Ling got furious and shouted, "Ye Ran Mo! Your Ye Clan meddling with my clan's affairs is already an outrage! And, now you wish to kill an innocent person. Will you disregard the ten-thousand years of prestige of your Ye Clan?"

"Innocent? Ha ha... he's not innocent if he's with you!" Ye Ran Mo coldly snorted and waved his hand. The eight men separated, and formed a big circle!

Ye Ran Mo laughed out loud, and took a step back. The auras of these nine people suddenly merged, and formed an impregnable screen. It seemed as if this screen had been made with their souls! Chu Yang and Chu Fei Ling were in the middle of this encirclement...

Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh. He was extremely angry in his heart!

[I never thought that Second Brother would seek help from the Ye Clan to deal with me!]

He also had a feeling of deep regret in his heart, [why would I

bring this youngster here if I had known that the enemy would be waiting for me in the Raging Fire Mountain Range? It looks like this young expert with boundless prospects is going to suffer because of me. An innocent bystander will lose his life because of me!]

"Little brother, forgive me for getting you into this mess!" Chu Fei Ling spoke-up. He was visibly feeling guilty. He then suddenly raised his eyes and whispered, "The fight will start soon. You just wait, and don't move. You use all your strength to dash out as soon as I create an opening."

His voice was low and deep, "Don't look back after you get out of the encirclement, and get away from here at the fastest speed. I'll keep them pinned down so that they don't catch you!"

Chu Yang turned around, flashed him a faint smile, and said, "I'll keep that in mind."

Chu Fei Ling nodded his head in a gratified manner.

A sandstorm arose right at that time!

Those nine people suddenly began to circle round and round. Chu Fei Ling and Chu Yang rapidly rushed up. The nine figures then transformed into nine sets of cold breezes in a flash! Loud whooshing sounds reverberated, and the entire sky seemed as if it had turned black!

The power of the nine Emperor Level Experts formed a barrier in the sky over the battlefield!

They had blocked the escape route of these two!

Then, a tornado of energy slowly began to move closer toward the center.

A lightning suddenly appeared out of nowhere; it was as bright as snow. It was actually a saber light, but it had seemed like a bolt of white silk!

Chu Fei Ling shouted loudly, and slashed down his long sword. The clanging sounds were heard multiple times in a flash. Chu Fei Ling's sword and that saber light had collided god knows how many times in the blink of an eye!

A loud sound of someone's stuffy snorting transmitted outwards from the strong winds.

A bunch of lightening-strike-like saber lights simultaneously went towards those two to strike them down immediately-after! The self-satisfied laughter of Ye Ran Mo resounded in the midst of this intensive offensive, "Brother Chu, I have always admired you! But, the time has come to take your head"

Chu Fei Ling's body had turned into blue smoke. He was unceasingly maneuvering around Chu Yang, and was blocking all the attacks!

He did hear the comment that was made on him, but didn't reply. He was focused entirely on blocking the attacks.

The sound of the attacks grew more and more shrill, and resounded through the world. The attacks unleashed by those nine people were getting more and more concentrated, and crazy!

Chu Yang was actually unable to see any person figure. He couldn't even see Chu Fei Ling's figure. He could only see black smoke lingering around him; as if he was in hell. However, there was a bluish-green screen by his side, and that put his mind at ease. It was protecting him at all times by blockings the attacks that came his way.

Chu Yang suddenly had a strange feeling of certainty in his heart, [The sky may fall, but nothing will happen to me as long as this blue shade is by my side!]

Chu Yang finally realized the true extent of the might of genuine Emperor Level Experts! He couldn't even see their attacks in a clear manner. How many moves could he deal with if he were to face

them on his own...?

"This is the power of the array formation!" Sword Spirit said slowly, "However, this guy has nearly been compelled to reveal his true strength!"

"Oh?" Chu Yang closed his eyes, and sensed with his divine sense.

"Brother Chu's cultivation is truly amazing! But, how many attacks can you block with that sword of yours? For how long will your defense last?" Ye Ran Mo laughed wildly as he spoke in his usual sinister voice. The saber lights grew more and more intensive thereafter.

Even the collision sounds grew more intense, and started to issue continually!

Suddenly, a loud explosive sound was heard. Chu Fei Ling let out a loud shout. The sword light turned into a cold star, and went towards those lightning-like saber lights.

"Let's see who's better!" the nine people spoke out loud in unison. A loud bang was heard, and the scene suddenly became silent!

Chu Fei Ling's black clothes were fluttering in the wind. He stood still on the spot. The bodies of those nine people also got revealed. They were standing along the big circle. There was a bright look in everyone's eyes as they watched Chu Fei Ling.

Only a section of the sword remained in Chu Fei Ling's hands. It was riddled with scars, and was chipped all over. It looked like saw-tooth at this time! His sword had been broken!

"Brother Chu, you are a Fifth Grade Emperor Level Expert. I didn't expect you to withstand the first wave of attacks! This was beyond my expectations!" Ye Ran Mo spoke with a bewildered smile on his face.

"A lot of things are beyond your expectations." Chu Fei Ling stood motionless in the encirclement as he said, "Ye Ran Mo, you will soon find out that there are many more unexpected things that you

are completely oblivious about!"

Meanwhile, Chu Yang was rather joyful in his heart, [Fifth Grade Emperor? It seems that this Ye Ran Mo guy thinks that his Brother Chu is just a Fifth Grade Emperor Level Expert! He doesn't know his target's true strength...]

[This is getting interesting ah.]

Chu Yang was also wondering, [what can I do to help? My cultivation isn't enough to be a part of this level of battle! The strength of this black-clothed mysterious man is incredible. And, his real strength is beyond the enemy's expectations. But, the Serene Night Nine Masters array isn't to be taken lightly. He will be exhausted to death in this trap with the passage of time!]

Chu Yang's eyes were glittery. He was lost in deep thought.

"Oh, is that so? But, it's such a pity... Brother Chu. Your sword has broken!" Ye Ran Mo chuckled and said, "Could it be that Brother Chu still wishes to resist like a stubborn fool who's been cornered?"

"The sword broke, but the person still hasn't!" Chu Fei Ling replied solemnly, "And, this person may break at some point. But, you will be the one to break first, Ye Ran Mo!"

Chapter 445: Taking Drastic Measures to Deal with a Situation!

"Ha ha ha..." Ye Ran Mo laughed wildly, "I would like to see how Brother Chu breaks me first!" Then, he suddenly shouted loudly, "Capture and break him for me!"

The nine people simultaneously let out a loud shout. They then raised their sabers to the level of their chest and dashed forward. It seemed as if Chu Fei Ling and Chu Yang were situated amidst the saber-mountains. There was brilliant saber-light as far as the eyes could see!

The saber light flashed, and a congealed saber-mountain ferociously struck from the front side. The saber light flashed again, and another saber-mountain loudly crashed down. The saber lights continued to flash again and again. A total of nine saber-mountains from nine different positions attacked at the same time!

The overall power of this wave of attacks was more than twice the previous one!

The saber light seemingly rained down, and spread all across!

Chu Fei Ling faced upwards, and let out a long and loud shout. He then looked towards Chu Yang. There seemed to be a deep meaning hidden behind that look in those eyes of his'. His tall and straight body was entirely motionless!

The nine saber-mountains closed-in on his body at the same time!

Chu Fei Ling's hand suddenly patted against his waist, and a 'clang' sound was heard. Then, a dazzling bluish-green saber light lased out from his waist!

This Ninth Grade Saber Emperor – who was at the pinnacle of Saber Emperor Level – had finally taken out his hidden trump card!

Chu Fei Ling had lost his son 18 years ago. And, his emotions had been simmering inside his heart ever since. He had deliberately concealed his strength since then. However, his true strength had finally erupted today!

The bluish-green saber light dropped from the sky like a dragon. A long channel instantly opened up within that brilliant saber light. Three stuffy groans were heard in succession, and blood splashed all over!

Chu Fei Ling's silhouette flashed, and gently drifted like smoke to Chu Yang's side. His left hand went around Chu Yang's waist without any hesitation. And, Chu Yang found himself riding the clouds to fly upwards the very next moment!

Chu Fei Ling's body was flying along with him. The bluish-green saber light easily broke through the dense curtain of saber light in the sky, and flew straight upwards for 300 feet. The blue form suddenly rotated once, and severely kicked at the soles of Chu Yang's feet.

The explosive power of this kick was similar to that of a mountainous flash-flood. Chu Yang felt as if he had been propelled forward by the strength of ten-thousand giants at once. His body went darting forward at a lighting speed. The 'chi chi' sound echoed, and it was followed by an explosive sonic boom!

His black robe was visibly exuding smoke because of the intense air-friction caused by moving at such a high speed. His black robe had caught fire as a result!

Chu Fei Ling's kick had managed to throw Chu Yang away by several thousand feet!

This was why Chu Fei Ling hadn't been anxious this entire time. He had been waiting for an opportunity to give the biggest surprise to the enemy in one fell swoop, and would use the resulting trauma to get Chu Yang out of there in that very moment. Then, he'd do his best to pin down the enemy in order to help Chu Yang escape to

safety!

He didn’t care what’d happen to him. But, Chu Yang mustn’t die!

Chu Yang flew out, while Chu Fei Ling's body fell right back into the encirclement. A rage-filled voice resounded at that very moment, "Motherfu*ker! I always thought that he’s a Martial Emperor. I never knew that he’d turn out to be a Saber Emperor! Chu, you motherfu*ker! You were hiding your true power!"

Chu Fei Ling didn’t speak a word in response. His bluish-green saber light flew all around. He had unleashed his overwhelming saber light in this moment. He had been besieged by an array that consisted of nine Saber Emperors. However, he had suddenly turned from defense to offense. His saber light had scattered, and had enveloped the nine enemies like the canopy of the sky!

The nine people shrieked in a bewildered manner. They were feeling greatly ashamed!

They had used the power of nine people to besiege one man. Moreover, they had relied on the Serene Night Nine Masters Array to double the strength of the nine people. However, three of them had been injured in the blink of an eye. The person – whom their target wanted to protect – had also managed to get out safely. Moreover, they had been compelled to gasp for breath by their target’s offensive?!

This was such a great shame and humiliation!

"I don’t care about the little bastard. Focus on chopping Chu Fei Ling to pieces!" Ye Ran Mo’s face had turned reddish-purple with anger and shame behind the mask.

Chu Fei Ling smiled in his heart and spoke, "Ye Ran Mo! A person of your skill can’t deal with this Chu!" He was fully aware of the fact that the combined force of these nine people could suppress him. He would get buried here if he didn’t do well now. However, he was in a very good mood since he had sent Chu Yang out. He

roared madly. And, his blue figure flickered as he launched a violent attack!

He revealed the power of his true cultivation level of Saber Emperor at this moment. He held the saber in his hand, and seemed like the Emperor of the universe as he maneuvered this brilliant and sparkling item around!

"Kill him!" Ye Ran Mo shouted frantically, "Execute the third stage of the great array — Nine Masters Soul Extermination!"

The nine people shouted loudly, and released brilliant saber lights. The dazzling white light began to slowly suppress Chu Fei Ling’s bluish-green saber light.

Suddenly, a loud shout was heard from the distance, "You do not need to worry! That thing you gave me... I will deliver it for you to the Upper Three Heavens! You take care of yourself... Hope to see you again..."

It was Chu Yang's voice!

Chu Yang had yelled out just now. Meanwhile, the Sword Spirit gave him a ‘thumbs up’ in his mind! Serene Night Nine Masters Array — by definition — requires nine masters to display its full might. It wouldn’t be a nine masters array with even one fewer master!

Even a Monarch Level Expert would end up dead if the three stages of the Nine Masters Array were to be executed in succession. The Sword Spirit had even thought of customizing a heavenly saber for Chu Fei Ling in accordance to his level. However, he knew that even a heavenly weapon would prove to be useless inside this Nine Masters Array!

However, Chu Yang’s declaration had proved out to be a good measure to deal with this situation! First, he was already far away from the battlefield. So, the enemy would have to come out of the array to pursue him! Secondly, the enemy would have no choice

but to chase after him when they'd consider the nature of this declaration! In fact, the enemy would be compelled to send at least one individual after him!

Chu Fei Ling wasn't a match for these nine men if they were united. However, he would no longer be in a pinch if this formation were to be broken. Both sides would suffer in that case, but the prospect of escape wouldn't be an issue...

....

Chu Yang had known that this declaration would definitely solve Chu Fei Ling's predicament. So, he felt relieved in his heart. He had also heard the conversation that had taken place between these men earlier. [This Boss Chu is probably from the Chu Clan of the Upper Three Heavens. In other words, there's a big possibility that... he's my family member?]

[He's probably my uncle, or maybe... my own father? I can't say for sure. But, he's a family member in any case. So, I can't let him die here; no matter what!]

[I haven't yet determined that he's someone from my Chu Clan. I currently have no intention to return to my clan and gain their recognition. But, I will still save him! Otherwise, I will regret this my entire life...]

Therefore, Chu Yang had made up his mind that he would meddle in this matter no matter what! [I will help him get out of this mess at the very least!]

....

Chu Yang's voice came from far away, and startled everyone who was in the middle of the fight at the moment. Those ten people dodged the saber attacks, but were left somewhat in a daze. After that, they just stood still with a blank stare on their face.

Subsequently...

"This little bastard!" ten people spontaneously cussed out the

same phrase... and at the same time... as if by prior agreement. Even Chu Fei Ling was one among them. Everyone gritted their teeth, and fumed with rage!

Ye Ran Mo hadn't thought that Chu Fei Ling had made such an unhanded move by preparing a secret note. Everyone got worried, [we may be able to kill Chu Fei Ling. But, a strong backlash will be triggered from the Chu Clan if we allowed this little bastard to escape with that message to the Upper Three Heavens!]

The Ye Clan wasn't afraid of the Chu Clan. In fact, the Chu Clan couldn't come close to the Ye Clan. However, the issue was that the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master had been maturing at a rapid pace. So, the entire Upper Three Heavens was getting battle ready, and all clans were trying their best to avoid any quarrels. That's because it would inevitably become a big nuisance! Therefore, these nine people would get scolded and blamed for this by the clan if that were to happen!

After all, Chu Fei Ling's assassination was supposed to happen in the dark. No one was supposed to find out. The exposure of this matter would definitely cause a storm. These nine men weren't the most important figures of the Ye Clan. So, it was possible that these nine people would become scapegoats if this matter got out of hand by any chance.

An ominous light flashed in everyone's eyes as they thought of this!

Chu Fei Ling was burning with impatience. [You said that you would go away at once, right? What the hell did you shout out of the blue? You think the distance of a few thousand feet is very far? This distance is shit in the eyes of an Emperor Level Expert! He can catch you in the blink of an eye!]

However, Chu Fei Ling also knew that Chu Yang had done so for his own good. [It's just an attempt to lure some people away from the array formation, and get them to go after him. I would be out

of danger as long as even one person gets lured away.]

[I'll still be at a disadvantage while facing the others. But, I should at least be able to attack and retreat at will. Not to mention that I will also have a better chance of making an escape.]

[The idea is good, and I would no longer be in danger. But, he will die without a doubt! He's a Second Grade King Level Expert. He's a Sword King, but he can't stop one strike from a First Grade Saber Emperor! And, these guys are Third Grade Saber Emperors?]

[This kid is trading his own life for mine!] Chu Fei Ling thought of this, and got worried. He also touched by this.

"Little brother, I thank you for your good intention. But, you must escape quickly. Please don't meddle in this matter." Chu Fei Ling shouted with all his strength. His message was simple... he just wanted to tell Chu Yang to get away from here as fast as possible. Moreover, he wanted to tell Ye Ran Mo and his men that the kid's words were false, and that they shouldn't believe him!

However, who was Ye Ran Mo?

Ye Ran Mo was a hardcore man of Jiang-Hu. He had fought his way up, and had distinguished himself among his peers. So, he was bound to be skeptical and ruthless!

More so in this critical situation since it involved such a major event. There so much at stake. So, one would better be more skeptical and suspicious. Moreover, how could he believe Chu Fei Ling? That man was clearly trying to make them give up on the idea of chasing down Chu Yang!

That was absolutely impossible!

"Old Ninth, the eight of us here will kill Chu Fei Ling. You go and bring back that little bastard's head!" Ye Ran Mo decisively issued an order.

"Yes!"

That Old Ninth moved quickly, and proceeded to move out. Chu Fei Ling bellowed, and a saber light dramatically surged towards him. However, Ye Ran Mo and the others worked as one, and blocked Chu Fei Ling's wild and violent attack from approaching Old Ninth from behind.

"Go fast and return quickly!" Ye Ran Mo brandished his saber, and spoke urgently... as if it was going to rain soon... "Go as fast as possible and kill that little bastard. Then, quickly come back to the great array to help us deal the fatal blow to Chu Fei Ling!"

"Yes!" The black-clothed Old Ninth suddenly jumped. The saber light danced in the air, and transformed into a long rainbow. It then flew straight in the direction in which Chu Yang had fled. This black-clothed Old Ninth was one of the three people who had been injured during Chu Fei Ling sudden outbreak a while ago.

Ye Ran Mo had deliberately sent him to kill Chu Yang since he also wanted the old man to take a break. After all, a mere King Level Expert couldn't possibly tire an Emperor Level Expert, could he?

Chu Fei Ling turned pale with fright. He let out a loud shout even though he had remained engaged in a crazy battle, "Hurry up, Little Brother! Get away quickly! Someone's coming to kill you..." his voice sounded like a thunderclap, and spread far and wide. The sense of panic and anxiety wasn't even remotely concealed in the make of his voice!

Chapter 446: What Harm is there in Slaughtering the Entire World? Slaughters a Saber Emperor!

Ye Ran Mo put on an uncanny smile and said, "Brother Chu, don’t waste your time and effort. You think that little King Level Expert can escape the pursuit of an Emperor Level Expert? Brother Chu, I’ve never seen you so panicked in all these years... don’t tell that this kid is someone very important to you?"

Chu Fei Ling thundered, "Shut your trap!"

However, he had some mixed feelings in his heart, [how many years? How many years have passed since my anger has erupted like this? I remember the last time I was this furious... it was when my son had gone missing...]

He thought of this, and couldn’t help but have a burst of intense pain in his heart.

[I won’t be able to see my son even if he comes back looking for me if I end up dying here.]

"Ha ha ha... Brother Chu, I heard you lost your son. Don’t tell it’s this kid... ha ha ha... I must say that he looks a lot like you. Brothers, who could’ve thought that we would come to assassinate Boss Chu, and also get to kill his only son...? He will now die without an heir..." Ye Ran Mo laughed wildly.

"Ha ha ha..." the other seven people also burst into laughter.

"Nonsense! I don’t have any connection with that little brother!" Chu Fei Ling replied furiously, "Ye Ran Mo, don’t treat the innocent unjustly!"

"There’s no relation?" Ye Ran Mo wore a naughty smile and asserted, "If he’s innocent... if he’s not your son... then what’s making you so anxious?"

Chu Fei ling furiously snorted, and the saber light suddenly flashed. The forest-green saber beams started to strike in a continuous manner. Ye Ran Mo lifted his saber to parry the attacks. The two sabers clashed with a loud boom. And, the sparks splattered everywhere!

Ye Ran Mo's body suddenly dodged in a flash. A surprised look appeared on his face. He could feel that Chu Fei Ling's cultivation was far above his own!

He hadn't yet recovered from the shock when a saber hacked towards him. Ye Ran Mo again used his saber to block the attack, and drew back one step. However, the third saber strike had already arrived before him! Chu Fei Ling's complexion looked dark green under the shine of the saber light. His face was densely covered with killing intention! He was giving-off a very strong murderous aura!

The hatred for Ye Ran Mo in Chu Fei Ling's heart was simply immeasurable at this moment! [I must chop this sly bastard with my saber; no matter what!]

Ye Ran Mo withstood nine saber attacks in succession. His complexion had turned deathly pale. He shouted loudly, "Let's fight together!" He needn't say that since the other seven people had already pitched-in. They then started to launch attacks one after another. A loud shout sounded from a distant place at this time!

It was Chu Yang's voice.

"Wa ha ha... already caught up!" Ye Ran Mo exclaimed with a sinister smile. Blood had started to drip from the corners of his mouth.

Chu Fei Ling was burning with impatience. He slashed his saber a thousand times in a row, and the unleashed saber light then clustered together to form a 'saber light screen'. Then, an odd humming sound was heard. The man and his saber had turned into

a radiant beam of light that could destroy the hardest of defenses. This beam of light then rushed forward to collide with the tight encirclement. A black-clothed man screamed, and his tall and burly body was sent spinning out in the sky. This man's body spilled-out rings of blood with each spin.

However, Chu Fei Ling paid the price for this maneuver as well. He let out a painful groan as he got slashed in the back with a saber, and blood gushed out!

However, it seemed as if Chu Fei Ling hadn't felt anything. The man and saber united with a loud sound. Then, he shouted loudly, and madly dashed towards the distant location from where Chu Yang's shout had come!

"Chase!" Ye Ran Mo bellowed in a resolute manner, "I would rather die, but I will ensure this Chu Fei Ling doesn't escape from here! He will sooner or later become a trusted aide of our Ye Clan if we allowed him to go back! I would be in big trouble if that happens!"

He had spoken these words, and not without reason. Chu Fei Ling was 20 years younger than him. So, he had previously thought that Chu Fei Ling should at most be as strong as he was. Moreover, the message he had obtained from the Chu Clan only relayed that Chu Fei Ling was a Fifth Grade Martial Emperor!

However, he had now found out that the hearsay and reality were poles apart!

[Chu Fei Ling is significantly stronger than me! He should at least be a Seventh-Eight Grade Saber Emperor.]

[To think that Chu Fei Ling has been hiding his real strength for so many years... a person with such a strong willpower is extremely frightening!]

[Wouldn't I get in big trouble if I allowed such a person to live and grow...? Especially if he becomes a trusted aide of my clan...?

Especially when I have turned him into a mortal enemy today...?]

Ye Ran Mo thought of this, and cussed in his heart, [Chu Fei Long... ah Chu Fei Long! How dare you trick me, you motherfu*ker! You had mentioned the whereabouts of your brother and the other intelligence in that message that you had provided... but you had mentioned that your elder brother is only a Fifth Grade Martial Emperor!]

[Fifth Grade Martial Emperor my a*s! I trusted your information. Even so, I personally brought 8 Third Grade Saber Emperors along with me on this assassination mission... just to be on the safe side! However, I hadn't anticipated that your elder brother would turn out to be a scary Saber Emperor of Eight-Ninth Grade ah!]

[You've tricked me to death you know! This 'Fifth Grade Martial Emperor' brother of yours has struck my chest. The unbearable pain is killing me. Motherfu*ker, my internal organs have been injured as well... and it's all because of you!]

Ye Ran Mo was left to pray in his heart, [Old Ninth! My dear Old Ninth! You must hurry and get rid of that little bastard as quickly as possible. Then, rush back here so that we can kill this Chu Fei Ling together! Otherwise, I would be in big trouble...]

....

Chu Yang had let out a loud shout shortly after he had sensed turbulence in the air behind him. He looked back, and saw a black-clothed man catching up like the wind itself. He was approaching at an incredibly high speed.

"Holy crap!" Chu Yang cried out, and then turned to escape. In fact, he scurried all over the place as he did that.

The black-clothed Old Ninth looked at Chu Yang running away in panic, and a cruel smile spread on his face... as if he was a cat chasing a mouse. He accelerated and pounced forward violently to get closer and closer. It could be assumed that this was a very easy

task for him!

However, something unexpected happened when he was only 50 feet behind Chu Yang. Chu Yang – who was fleeing in panic – suddenly turned around, and looked at the black-clothed Old Ninth. A smiling expression appeared in his eyes as he looked at this lone pursuer — a man who seemed weak, and whose body was still recovering. In fact, it was almost as if he had come up with a bizarre plot...

"Little bastard! You think you can escape?" Old Ninth burst into loud laughter. He shook his head, and seemed quite pleased with himself.

"Are you going to kill me?" Chu Yang seemed as if he had lost his head out of fear. He was falling back step by step. In fact, he tripped over a stone, and nearly fell down. He jumped in haste to gain his balance, and then looked at Old Ninth. He pretended to be calm and composed. However, an alarmed look was still flashing in his eyes.

"How can I not kill you? You little bastard, you are the reason why I got injured. I won't feel satisfied if I don't kill you...!" The black-clothed Old Ninth calmly crossed his hands behind his back with the style of a true expert. However, he was controlling his breathing to recover his vitality in reality.

That fight with Chu Fei Ling a while ago was very dangerous! He had only made a small mistake, and his belly had been cut open. In fact, the wound on his belly was still bleeding.

[The Boss gave me the opportunity to harmonize my breathing and recover. How can I let it go to waste?]

[Besides, this little guy is too vulnerable. I had thought that it would be quite difficult to catch him. I didn't expect that I'd catch him so soon. He's just a rookie!]

[Dealing with a rookie like him is a child's play for me. It's as easy

as lifting a finger! It isn’t necessary to make a big fuss over such a minor matter.]

"Please don’t kill me, ok?" Chu Yang pleaded in a delicate and pitiful voice, "I will give you that thing if you promise that you won’t kill me..."

"Right! What’s that thing? Take it out quickly!" the black-clothed Old Ninth got excited as he growled in a low voice. [Chu Fei Ling must’ve given this kid an elixir. That can perhaps treat my wound. Damn, I’m so lucky ah!]

"That thing... That thing..." Chu Yang traced the left side of his body... then the right side. An anxious look appeared on his face, "Where is it... Where is it? Where did it go..."

"Are you kidding me?" the black-clothed Old Ninth took a step forward and thundered loudly.

"I..." Chu Yang grew even more anxious, "I wouldn’t dare to trick you..."

"Then why haven’t you taken it out yet?" The black-clothed Old Ninth snorted.

"Found it!" Chu Yang let out a cry of joy.

"Where is it?"

"Here!" Chu Yang extended his right hand with a flattering look on his face. He seemed to be clutching something in the hollow of his palm. However, he seemed unwilling to part with it.

"Give it!" The black-clothed Old Ninth reached out to grab it.

"Here, take your grandmother!" Chu Yang suddenly shouted loudly!

The black-clothed Old Ninth was taken aback when he suddenly got cussed at. He was about to fly into a rage, but saw that there was nothing in Chu Yang’s palm. However, this empty palm suddenly shone brightly, and a long sword appeared in it. Bone-

chilling cold sword energy gushed forth like a raging dragon, and madly surged towards the black-clothed Old Ninth.

The black-clothed Old Ninth wouldn't have expected that a King Level small fry would dare to start a fight with a Third Grade Emperor Level Expert like himself... So, he had held out his hand with a self-satisfied look on his face. However, he had been caught off-guard because the sword light had already arrived very close to his body!

The black-clothed Old Ninth roared in anger. The upper part of his body leaned back as he flew backwards to withdraw. He only felt a cold sensation in his chest. A 'Shua' sound was heard as the sword slashed fiercely in front of his chest. The sword didn't pierce his chest because he had drawn back quickly. Instead, it entered his body a bit lower from the chest; it bore its way into his abdomen, and opened a large hole there!

His pink intestines began to spill out from the deepest parts of his wound...

[This sword is far more deadly than Chu Fei Ling's saber!]

There was hatred and anger in the eyes of black-clothed Old Ninth. He then looked at Chu Yang in disbelief. [That weapon in his right hand... what kind of a heavenly weapon is it? To think that even a lowly King Level Expert nearly killed an Emperor Level Expert like myself with it...!]

He felt a burst of uncontrollable rage inside!

[This is disgraceful! I am ashamed!]

[I have been tricked by a trivial King Level Expert... This is the biggest joke in the entire Nine Heavens.]

However, he couldn't get enough time to get angry since he saw that this kid wasn't done yet, and was giving him an ice-cold look. Then, the kid united with the sword, and transformed into a spectacular dragon. He then rushed straight towards him!

He softy recited in a low and deep voice at the same time — "What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world?!"

His voice wasn't loud. But, it entered the deepest part of Old Ninth's heart, and fiercely wedged itself there!

Black-clothed Old Ninth's heart shook frantically! [What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world? What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world? Is this not... Is this not... the sword move mentioned in the legends...]

This thought shook him to his core, and he lost his ability to respond! [This sword move has existed only in the legends, and it's actually going to come upon... myself?]

[In other words, this sword is...]

The sword light had arrived near his body. He got frightened. His eyes opened wide in alarm. He covered his belly with one hand to stop his intestines from falling out. And, he brandished his saber with his other hand to parry the incoming sword attack. He simultaneously fell back with everything he had!

However, Chu Yang's sword move 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world' had a range of a total of 500 feet at his current level! In other words, this sword attack had the power to destroy any defense within a range of 500 feet!

And, such a move had been unleashed from only 30 feet away. So, falling back wasn't going to save him from this attack.

The long sword collided with the great saber. Old Ninth was already in a seriously injured state. How could he possibly resist the sharpest sword in the entire world – The Nine Tribulations Sword?

A loud 'clang' sound echoed!

The great saber in Old Ninth's hand had snapped into two. And, his saber-wielding right hand got swallowed by Chu Yang's sword light amidst his screams! His flesh and blood flew in all directions.

The intense sword light crushed his entire arm in a gradual manner — starting from his palm. His flesh and blood departed his arm... until only the bone was left. Then, the bone got crushed... inch by inch!

Chapter 447: Who's the Murderer?

The black-clothed Old Ninth screamed, but it sounded similar to wails. He clutched his belly with his left hand, and continued to move back in a frantic manner. Chu Yang's face was calm on the other hand. His gaze was callous. He didn't relax just yet, and chased after him in order to attack!

The sword light was still at it mercilessly. Even the slightest contact with it sent chunks of flesh and blood flying!

Old Ninth's body was still moving backwards, but the sword light was acting even faster! It was eating away at his bones like maggots; and the maggots were spreading rapidly throughout his body.

Poof!

The Nine Tribulations Sword suddenly pierced into the Old Ninth's chest!

The Nine Tribulations Sword's Sword Point, Sword Edge, and Sword Spine were giving off murderous aura because they were about to kill an Emperor Level powerhouse for the first time. In fact, it seemed as if the blood of this powerhouse had brought back the blood-thirst that had been concealed for the last 10,000 years!

The tyrannical sword energy brutally burst into his internal organ, and exploded with a 'bang'. There was an outbreak of countless streams of sword energy within his body. And, his internal organs were turned to soup in a moment's time!

Old Ninth's body shrank like a deflated rubber ball!

However, his neck still stood upright. The bewildered look in his eyes had remained unchanged. He powerlessly stooped down, and saw a dazzling long sword sticking out of his chest. He struggled to raise his head, and looked at Chu Yang. He asked with great difficulty... one word at a time, "You are Nine... Nine... Nine

Tribulations Sword... Master...?"

Chu Yang was startled by this. His cold and limpid eyes stared at the Old Ninth as he solemnly asked, "How do you know?" Chu Yang wasn't afraid anymore since the opposite party had lost the entirety of his life force. Chu Yang was instead curious to know how the opposite party had figured out his identity.

"He he..." Old Ninth gave a mirthless laugh, "What harm is there... in slaughtering... the entire world... Who could have thought that the Nine Tribulations... Sword's Master... will actually... actually use me... as a stepping stone..."

Chu Yang coldly snorted, but he was nevertheless shocked. [The Ye Clan indeed deserves to be called the 'number one clan' in the entire Nine Heavens! They even remember the names of the various styles of the Nine Tribulations Sword!]

[That being the case... I must remember not to call out the names of these moves. Dammit, it's a habit from past life. I didn't know that there could be such a hidden risk in this!]

A mysterious light suddenly lit up in Old Ninth's eyes as he opened his mouth, and shouted, "He's the..."

Chu Yang bellowed. The sword light slashed down from top to bottom, and cleft him into two! His entire body was split into two parts from the middle, and slowly fell down.

The Nine Tribulations Sword's Master had recently arrived in the Middle Three Heaven to rise to glory, but a Saber Emperor had already lost his life to him!

Chu Yang coldly snorted. [This bastard was on the verge of death, but he still tried to shout out my identity!] He waved his hand, and the two broken sections of Old Ninth's saber went inside the Nine Tribulations Space.

[The others are bound to be vigilant of my heavenly weapon if they came here and saw these two broken sections of his saber. So,

I can’t allow them to see this!]

A long and loud shout came from afar. He saw a bluish-green light in midair immediately afterwards. It was coming towards him like a shooting star! Moreover, eight flickering lights were following-after this bluish-green light!

Chu Fei Ling fiercely landed on the ground, and called out, "Little brother, are you okay?" Then, he saw the corpse of Old Ninth lying in a miserable state, and suddenly cried out in surprise. His jaw dropped as he fell two steps back, "You… Did you kill him?!"

His voice was full of disbelief!

Chu Fei Ling had never been this amazed in his life. [There is simply unfathomable! Oh heavens, who will explain to me what’s going on? A Third Grade Saber Emperor chased after a Second Grade Sword King, but got killed instead…? That too before he could use any martial arts?]

[Am I… Am I dreaming or something?]

"Yeah…" Chu Yang nodded with embarrassment.

Chu Fei Ling was left petrified!

Shua Shua Shua. Ye Ran Mo and his men soon landed in the vicinity. They turned their heads to look around, "How come only this little bastard is here? Where’s Old Ninth? Where did he go?"

Suddenly, they all screamed as they spotted the miserable corpse of Old Ninth lying on the ground. These eight people called-out in a trembling voice, "Old Ninth?!"

The others had also discovered the dismembered corpse that lay in a pool of blood. And, it was none other than their own ninth brother!

They cried out in pain as Ye Ran Mo flew into a rage and thundered, "Who killed my ninth brother?! Come out and show yourself if you have the guts!"

The other seven people readied their sabers, and looked around. The look in their eyes was bone-chilling, but it was also filled with grief and indignation.

The surroundings maintained their silence. And, they didn't get any reply. Only a burst of wind came and blew away the yellow sand.

These eight people racked their brains. But, they couldn't imagine that their ninth brother had been killed this shrimp-like Second Grade King Level Kid... because... that was simply impossible!

[How can a trivial Second Grade King Level Expert possibly kill a Third Grade Emperor Level Expert? Even someone as stupid as a pig won't make such a deduction...]

[He couldn't have done it, and Chu Fei Ling arrived here with us. So, there must be someone else!]

[Who's the murderer?]

Ye Ran Mo faced upward, and roared like a madman. He then started to hurl abuses, "Fu*k your grandmother! You dared to kill a person, and don't even have the guts to acknowledge what you did? Come out! You can't hide the truth from us! You shameless villain! How dare you take unfair advantage of somebody's difficulties?! I will chop you to pieces..."

The other seven people also began to rain curses. The hatred and grievance was killing them, and was manifesting itself as an emotional outburst.

Chu Fei Ling opened his mouth, and looked at those eight guys. They had seemingly lost themselves to their raging emotions. Then, he took a look at the murderer... who stood before him with a terrified look on his innocent face... He couldn't help but be totally speechless...

[What nonsense is this?! What the hell is going on here... can't

you see that the murderer is right in front of you? And, you guys are looking for some nonexistent entity?]

The throats of these eight people got tired of cussing after a long time had passed. So, they stopped yelling out loud, but they were still cussing in whispers. Meanwhile, Chu Yang had turned a deaf ear to them. He had remained hidden behind Chu Fei Ling, and had maintained an ever-present ‘frightened’ expression on his face. He looked innocent and pure. He was like a ‘good’ teenager who had never seen a corpse in his life!

One look at his face and any one would think that this boy was pure, innocent, good-hearted, and free of all evils. He looked like an untouched flower that had grown-up in the protected environment of a greenhouse!

Ye Ran Mo suddenly turned his head, and fiercely looked at Chu Yang. "There you are, little bastard! How did my ninth brother die? What did you see? Own up to the facts!"

The other seven people also came to realize, [there’s an eyewitness here!]

Therefore, they immediately looked at Chu Yang in a fierce manner. In fact, their ferocious facial expressions made it seem as if they would swallow Chu Yang whole!

"I... I... I... I... I’m not involved in this matter." Minister Chu was so scared that his legs went limp. Even his voice was trembling...

"Speak the truth!" Ye Ran Mo bellowed, "I will let you live as long as you tell the truth!"

Chu Fei Ling’s facial expression turned even more bizarre. In fact, it got somewhat distorted.

"I... I... I... Actually I..." Chu Yang was trembling, "... I’m very scared..."

"Don’t be scared!" Ye Ran Mo was extremely furious at the moment. However, he would have to lower his tone since he

wanted to know about the murderer of his ninth brother. Therefore, he restrained his anger, and his intense killing intention. Then, he lowered his voice, and spoke in a comforting manner, "Don’t be scared. I won’t kill you if you honestly tell me what happened here. I will give you a reward instead..."

"Reward...?" Chu Yang’s eyes lit up. He stuck-out his tongue, and greedily licked his lips.

"Yes!" Ye Ran Mo said in an amiable manner. He even smiled!

"What reward?" Minister Chu asked timidly.

"This!" Ye Ran Mo’s anger was about to explode. But, Chu Fei Ling was glaring at him like a tiger watching its prey. So, it was impossible to intimidate the boy for an answer. [This nasty little bastard is actually taking advantage of my situation. Isn’t this like looting a burning house?]

However, he had no other choice. He put his hand into his bosom, and took out a purple jade since he was in a state of desperation, "See? This purple jade will be yours as long as you tell me the truth!"

The purple jade that Ye Ran Mo had taken out was fist-sized. Its entire body was glowing with a purple radiance, and it looked crystal clear. It was easy to tell that it was extremely valuable.

Chu Fei Ling also came to Ye Ran Mo’s aid from the side at this time, "Little brother... Brother Ye is asking very sincerely. So, you must tell him. We will solve our internal problems later."

Ye Ran Mo straightened up, and looked at Chu Fei Ling. Several emotions built-up in his heart as he spoke-up in a sinking tone, "Brother Chu is a real gentleman. I admire you very much!"

Chu Fei Ling nearly burst into laughter. He was having too much fun in the secrecy of his heart. Then, he replied with a smile, "Don’t worry about it. This is one matter, and that’s another. These two matters aren’t related. We must deal with a problem

one step at a time. And, finding the murderer should take top-priority right now. We will deal with our problem later. I arrived a bit late, and I'm truly ashamed that I didn't see the murderer..."

He was being sincerely supportive, and was backing Ye Ran Mo with all his might. However, he was on Chu Yang's side with all his heart...

Minister Chu held out his hand, and hesitated a bit. Then, he took the purple jade, and put it in his pocket. He then looked around with traces of fear in his eyes, "I'm afraid that he's still in the vicinity..."

Ye Ran Mo heard this, and immediately understood what the boy was hinting at. He turned around, and gave a series of commands, "Everyone must increase their vigilance! Keep a close watch over everything! We can't allow the murderer to hurt this little brother!"

That 'little bastard' had turned into 'little brother' since he was helping them out!

The seven people complied, and scattered around.

Ye Ran Mo put on a fake smile on his face as he approached Chu Yang. These two were separated by only a few steps at this moment. He benignly spoke-up, "Little brother, you can tell me now." He simultaneously said in his heart, [you tell me, and then I will slap you into meat sauce. After that, I will take back my thing from you.]

Chu Yang nodded; he was still trembling. A look of terror flashed in his eyes as he said, "I don't know what exactly happened back then. I was trying to escape... suddenly a man in black clothes came flying from the sky... and dropped down all of a sudden..."

"What?" Ye Ran Mo's eyes flashed brightly.

"Then, he scolded me. I ran at once. But, I suddenly heard a voice from over there. It said..." Chu Yang's face revealed an extremely

frightened expression. In fact, his small face had turned pale with fright.

"What did it say...?" Ye Ran Mo asked as he narrowed his eyes. He then attentively looked in the direction in which Chu Yang had pointed his finger. [Ah, there seems to be several piles of stones over there. Is the murderer hiding there?]

"He said..." Chu Yang whispered.

"What did he say?!" Ye Ran Mo got impatient. His eyes were paying attention to those piles of stones, while his ears eagerly waited for a response...

"He said that..." Chu Yang mumbled at first. Then, he suddenly roared, "He said fu*k your grandmother!"

That loud shout from his mouth sounded like an explosive thunder, and shook Ye Ran Mo's mind. He sensed utter chaos in his brain. However, Chu Yang didn't hesitate. The Nine Tribulations Sword stealthily emerged in his hand as he shouted. And then, he crazily attacked at the head of this top-class person... the man was unfortunately in close proximity, and was waiting for an answer with his head tilted to one side!

The speed of Chu Yang's limbs' movement was so fast that it seemed as if he had suffered from a fit of spasms.

One ray of cold light pierces ten thousand fathoms!

What harm is there in slaughtering the entire world!

A sharp will buried deep will not change!

Gather wind and cloud to rule over all!

A sword's edge famous for all eternity!

Wind and cloud move unhindered from east to west!

The sun and the moon thunder at my will!

Chopping mountains and breaking peaks under blood red sky!

This spine has existed in this world since eternity!

One must go through the nine hidden hells on this journey!

Cut off the traveler's attachments with worldly affairs!

The sharp edge will reach everywhere and put everything to rest!

In my palm lies a pile of bones as tall as a mountain!

This sword's slash will give birth to a turbulent sea of blood!

The world of mortals originates from the path of ruthlessness!

Don't restrain the blade when beheading the entire world...!

The 16 consecutive sword moves – with the power of each move far surpassing any existing swordplay in the world... whether modern or ancient – had been crazily unleashed by Chu Yang in a split-second like an unstoppable torrent. And, all this power had entirely poured itself down upon Ye Ran Mo’s head... and, the poor man was still waiting for the answer...

The sword light instantly filled the surrounding area in a radius of 30 feet like a great tsunami. It didn’t even spare a single spot...

Damn him! This distance was way too close...

Chapter 448: I'm the Murderer; What of It?!

The sword light erupted like thunder! The sword energy crashed onto the earth like a landslide!

In this moment...

Unaware!

Everyone was unaware!

Chu Fei Ling was unaware. He was on the other side when the kid suddenly cussed out loud to vent his anger, and then jumped behind him to seek his protection. Therefore, Chu Fei Ling also got ready to help out.

The enemy side had already lost a person by now. So, there was no longer a threat of that terrifying array formation. Therefore, there was no need for a Ninth Grade Emperor Level Expert like Chu Fei Ling to be scared of the remaining eight!

However, he had never thought that this guy would suddenly attack without giving him any prior indication! And, that too in such a wild manner!

The remaining seven saber emperors were also unaware. [Crap! How did this piteous little youth transform into the oppressive King of Hell in the blink of an eye?]

And, the person most oblivious to this was obviously none other than Ye Ran Mo – the great Saber Emperor!

This great man was filled with anger and hate. He was ready to hear what the young boy was going to say, and had his head titled to one side in anticipation. In fact, he was so interested in the information that he let his guard down. Therefore, he was completely defenseless, and simply didn't get a chance to defend himself when a raging tsunami of sword energy suddenly erupted upon his head!

And, this was eruption of a real tragedy!

Ye Ran Mo screamed wildly. And, his body unceasingly trembled and convulsed while he struggled within the sword light...

Chu Yang had unleashed the sword arts of the Nine Tribulations Sword. How could they be merciful? It could be said that the Chu Yang of this life — as well as the previous life — had never known what mercy was!

The sword light poured down like rain. 'Poof!' Ye Ran Mo's eyes had been full of intense curiosity to learn about the murderer when the attack began.

Ye Ran Mo yelled wildly, and his voice had barely spread out...

And, the sword moves exploded...

Shua Shua Shua!

Shua Shua Shua!

Ye Ran Mo extended his hand to protect his head. However... shua shua shua, the Nine Tribulations Sword's attacks were very swift and sharp. Ye Ran Mo's arms were reduced to mere bones in a jiffy, and ultimately got crushed...

'Poof' a big hole appeared in Ye Ran Mo's chest. This was done by the sword move 'what harm is there in slaughtering the entire world'.

....

It seemed as if everyone at the scene had been struck by lightning. They were staring at Ye Ran Mo's convulsing body like foolish ducks. His body was being torn, and his flesh was being ripped apart. His head turned into a 'pirate skull' the next moment; there was no trace of flesh and blood on it. Then, his entire body turned into skeleton. And then, he turned into scarlet dust, and scattered everywhere with a 'swoosh'...

Ye Ran Mo had disappeared!

It could be said that Ye Ran Mo – the Sixth Grade Saber Emperor – had been so stuck on finding the murderer that he didn't even get a chance to fight back... In fact, it should be said that the very idea of fighting back never arose in his mind as he lost his life!

Ye Ran Mo would perhaps find out about this in the after-life. He'd get so mad that he might even come back to life if that were to happen... but then, he'd die again from an excess of anger!

The most bizarre thing was... Ye Ran Mo had already disappeared, but the crisscrossing sword light was still ravaging the bits of flesh and blood that floated in the air.

The sword light's eruption finally came to an end...

Chu Yang somersaulted in the air before anyone could come back to their senses, and swiftly reached behind Chu Fei Ling to hide. After that, he gesticulated with his hands to give orders in a bossy manner, "What are you waiting for? Why are you just standing here and gawking? Hurry and kill them!"

Chu Fei Ling was watching with his mouth wide opened. He finally closed his mouth with a 'click', and took a deep breath. Then, he turned around in bewilderment, and looked at Chu Yang, "You, you, you... did you kill him?!"

Chu Fei Ling felt as if there was only chaos in his head!

[How's this possible? How can this be? How can a Second Grade King Level break through the 'energy barrier' of a Sixth Grade Emperor Level Expert? An Emperor of the Sixth Grade knows how to form a body armor of energy around oneself. This is also the reason why Ye Ran Mo dared to go so close to him in the first place!]

[It's impossible for Ye Ran Mo to be killed by him; no matter how I look at it! Yet... it has somehow happened!]

"You don't say...!" Chu Yang snapped, and spoke as he rolled his eyes. He felt as if his intelligence quotient had been assaulted,

[there’s a 99% chance that we have the same origin. Then, why is it that I am so clever, and you are so dumb...?]

"But..." Chu Fei Ling’s brain had stopped working on a temporary basis. So, he couldn’t respond for a while.

"But what ah...? Right now, it’s important to kill them!" Chu Yang helplessly said, "Big brother, how about you first finish up this task and ask this later? Crap! They’ve come back to their senses... I can’t believe that you wasted time, and allowed this chance to slip by..."

Chu Yang had gotten a stomachache from too much anger...

Those seven people obviously issued loud and uncanny shouts! In fact, their painful voices were heartbreaking. It was the sort of pain where they were in denial; they didn’t wish to believe, but they had no other choice, "Big Brother...!"

The blood mist was floating in the air...

"Why are you calling your big brother? Can’t you see that your big brother has turned into dust?!" Chu Yang maliciously scolded them in an evil way, "What are you calling out for? You can’t understand such an obvious fact that your big brother has vanished in a puff of smoke...? Yet, you’re still calling for him..."

"You killed my big brother!" The black-clothed Old Second turned around, and looked at Chu Yang with hatred in his eyes. Then, he suddenly let out an earth-shattering scream, "You bastard! You... You deserve to die!"

"Not just your big brother...! That one over there... I killed him too." Chu Yang cockily puffed-out his chest, "Why? Do you have the ability to punish me?! I’m the murderer. What of it?!"

The black-clothed Old Second got so furious that his vision darkened. He roared loudly in rage, "Kill him! Avenge Big Brother and the Ninth Brother! Kill him aaaa!!"

Chu Yang hurriedly faced towards Chu Fei Ling, and spoke with a

serious look on his face, "Big Brother, now it's your turn to show your great might!"

Chu Fei Ling didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He couldn't help but think in his heart, [Motherfucker, I wonder how inhumane and evil the parents must've been to birth such a buffoon...?]

This unexpected turn of events would've really... left anyone speechless.

Who in their right mind would dare to provoke someone like Ye Ran Mo? However, this little devil had actually done it. Moreover, he was truly lucky that there was a family member he could hide behind...

Those seven people were rushing over in rage at the moment. And, all of them had blood-red eyes.

Facing them head on... wasn't a matter of technique. Chu Yang couldn't pull this off at his current level. He was hardly a match for any of those seven people even if he thought of giving it a try... In fact, he would only end up giving them the revenge they wanted if he tried to confront them...

That was why Chu Yang had taken cover behind Chu Fei Ling. He waved his hand as he ordered in a confident tone, "Charge!"

Chu Fei Ling couldn't help but roll his eyes. However, he had no choice. So, he obediently 'charged'!

Ye Ran Mo – the head of the array formation – was dead. Old Ninth was also dead. The Nine Masters Great Array lacked two masters as a result. Hence, it could no longer be used. As far as the remaining seven 'Third Grade Saber Emperors' were concerned... how could they possibly be a match for a Ninth Grade Saber Emperor like Chu Fei Ling? Their enemy was at the peak of Emperor level!

Chu Fei Ling drew his saber in line with this well-thought-out

notion, and moved forward to face the enemy. However, he was surprised when he clashed with them. This was because he noticed that the pressure had reduced by three-to-four times compared to earlier!

[What's going on?]

[Ye Ran Mo's death was that effective...?]

Chu Fei Ling wasn't the least bit forgiving. He gave-off the aura of a refined scholar, but his saber skills were deadly. The strengths of the two sides were poles apart. He was like a 'tiger entering a flock of sheep'. It was a child's play for him. Boss Chu didn't even need to defend himself. He was only attacking. And, the enemy fled in panic each time he brandished his saber. However, he himself didn't need to worry about their attacks.

The resentment bottled-up within him from the time of the earlier besiege finally erupted without restraint!

The saber lights went flying around like the rain. Chu Fei Ling was singlehandedly suppressing seven Saber Emperors! The entire fighting scene was visually similar to a spherical ball of light. This sphere was brimming with dazzling lights, and was exuding a magnificent brilliance under the sunlight!

Chu Yang stood outside this circle of fight. The serious look on his face had disappeared without a trace. He was in 'learning mode' at present, and was trying to analyze. There were eight people involved in this fight. And, all of them had Emperor Level cultivation! Each had his own unique skill, and each one was worthy of being observed properly.

The Sword Spirit was continuously explaining about the moves whenever they'd be displayed by those experts. The Sword Spirit was patiently pointing out each-and-every fine detail in the moves, and was explaining methods to improve the offensive power of these moves. He also taught the means to defend against these moves, and the various flaws they had...

Chu Yang was listening with great joy, and seemed intoxicated...

He suddenly heard a scream while he was immersed in his imagination inside that mysterious and boundless martial arts palace. A black-clothed man had leapt-up in the air, but had been suddenly chopped into pieces by Chu Fei Ling's saber light in midair...

"Chu Fei Ling's saber attack may have appeared like one strike, but it's actually nine!" Sword Spirit's eyes lit up as he said, "You observe his stance. He flicks his wrist upwards when he brandishes his saber. However, he suddenly tilts the saber sideways when the saber has only gone out halfway. And, he maneuvers the saber downwards when the saber's tip is about to reach its furthest point. This is one set of three movements. Thus, he displays three sets of movements with the help of his wrist to produce nine different strikes. However, the nine saber strikes join together into one attack since there is usually a single target. Therefore, it has a tremendous explosive force, and this force is basically a congregation of the attack force of each strike. And, this accumulated explosive force then blasts as a saber beam. What you are seeing is... a 'must kill' move! It's also the best move to deal the fatal blow!"

Sword Spirit heaved a sigh, and continued, "Don't you think that this is very simple? But, this move is useless for you if you aren't skilled in it and cannot get your saber's tip to the intended spot... or can't maneuver it properly! This move is called 'Yellow Flower Blossoms' in the way of saber cultivation. And, it's called the same in the way of sword cultivation. It's just different methods that lead to the same result! It's hard to imagine that a mere Ninth Grade Saber Emperor is capable of using this move. Only the capable individuals of Monarch Level are able to comprehend this move..."

Chu Yang uttered an 'en'. Then, he carefully thought about these profound points. However, his mind blanked after much

deliberation. And, he couldn’t make any sense of it.

"Your current martial power isn’t enough. So, you can’t use it. In fact, you may end up twisting your wrist if you try to practice this move rashly. You may even break it," the Sword Spirit spoke in a teasing manner.

Chu Yang felt that the Sword Spirit’s attitude towards him had changed since yesterday for some reason. He used to be impolite and rude, but he was being somewhat respectful now...

However, Chu Yang couldn’t understand why such a change had occurred...

Another scream came from the battlefield... and yet another Saber Emperor got killed by Chu Fei Ling’s saber!

Only five people remained at the moment, and their bodies had already been riddled with scars! So, they wouldn’t last much longer. After all, the power of a Ninth Grade Saber Emperor wasn’t something they could withstand!

The black-clothed Old Second bitterly cried out, "Brothers, Same Destination Battle formation!"

The four people complied at once. They then exuded a cold murderous aura from their bodies in unison. An atmosphere of despair suddenly filled the air.

"They wish to cause mutual damage!" Chu Yang was startled in his heart.

"Their target is you!" Sword Spirit exclaimed at once.

The four people bravely dashed on towards Chu Fei Ling with no thought of personal safety. Meanwhile, the black-robed Old Second transformed into a long rainbow with his saber, and streaked past Chu Fei Ling. And, he was fiercely rushing towards Chu Yang!

The move ‘Yellow Flower Blossoms’ has a somewhat dual

meaning... or word-play to be more precise. It's called 'Yellow Flower Blossoms' because the strike blossoms like a flower. But, the characters used for 'Yellow Flower' in Chinese are similar to the ones used for 'Hell/ Yellow Springs'. This attack is a killer move. So, it obviously sends one down to hell.

Chapter 449: What a Coincidence... We Are Both Surnamed Chu...

Meanwhile, those four people were trying to tie down Chu Fei Ling with their own life!

They would all name the same person if they were to be asked whom they hated the most – Chu Yang!

[Too detestable!]

[This despicable villain! This shameless guy! He not only killed our brothers, but he also deceived us. Moreover, he provoked us to the extent that it made us explode with rage and humiliation!]

[We will kill him for sure... even if we die doing it!]

[We won't hesitate to kill him... no matter the cost we have to pay for it!]

This was the common wish of these five people. In fact, they felt that even their deaths at the hands of Chu Fei Ling would be worth it if they could first kill this little bastard!

The saber light came whizzing.

"You can't block it!" Sword Spirit saw the momentum of incoming attack, and spoke in a heavy tone, "Either withdraw, or switch with me!"

Chu Yang snorted. His stance changed, and he flew backwards. A look of appreciation appeared in the eyes of the Sword Spirit. [He won't rely on others as long as there's a glimmer of hope! This is the mentality of a powerhouse!]

Chu Yang wouldn't rely on the Sword Spirit as long as it wasn't a certain-death scenario. He would only rely on himself! One can progress the most during a desperate situation... a situation when there appears a 'life or death crisis'!

He wouldn't progress an inch if he were to rely on the Sword Spirit during every dangerous situation! And, his journey on the road to become a future powerhouse would be greatly affected in case he was to develop even a slight 'dependence habit' in his nature!

Chu Yang's body drifted backwards like a swift cloud. He was using the 'Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement Technique' of the Beyond the Heavens Sect at the moment. And, he was displaying it at its pinnacle!

The black-robed Old Second roared like the thunder. He clenched his teeth, and wished to blow him to pieces in his heart. He swore, [I won't use my saber to hack him up once I catch up with him. Instead, I will pound into this guy, and blow him to smithereens. And then, I shall eat his flesh!]

The blood-curdling screams were coming nonstop from behind. This was proof that his brothers were facing a ruthless slaughter at the hands of Chu Fei Ling! The black-robed Old Second controlled himself with great difficulty, and didn't look back. His mission was to kill the boy who stood before his eyes!

[Kill!]

[Kill!]

[Little brother is in danger!]

Chu Fei Ling got impatient, and let out a loud shout. Golden rays of light erupted from his body. The unleashed saber lights billowed around; layer upon layer. It seemed as if the clouds on the horizon had suddenly encountered a hurricane!

The waves of saber light were billowing and surging without rest or stop!

This was Chu Fei Ling's supreme skill. And, he had kept it hidden for a long time. This killer saber move was known as 'Into the Sea of Reincarnation'! It was a unique skill, and had been created by

Chu Fei Ling. It was to be used as a final blow!

Even the Sword Spirit exclaimed in admiration when he saw this move!

The tumbling sea of saber light engulfed the bruised bodies of the four experts. Their screams sounded endlessly. Their bodies got drenched with blood, and ultimately got chopped into flesh lumps in midair!

The saber light surged up, and formed a dazzling snow-white line. It was so bright that it camouflaged the sunlight. It then went lasing towards Old Second like a shooting star; Old Second was wildly charging in Chu Yang's direction at this moment!

The black-robed Old Second repeatedly roared in sorrow. He could feel the deadly pressure behind him, and he knew that his brothers had already been killed or severely wounded. However, that little bastard was slippery like a loach fish. He had only been a bit away from him on several occasions, but this cunning guy wouldn't stay at one place; he had continually leapt around.

He let out a wild roar, and arrows of blood suddenly flew out from the pores of his body. He had used a secret technique at this juncture. This technique stimulated his own vitality, and doubled his strength in the blink of an eye. His great saber gathered-up strong winds, and formed a huge saber-like flower. And then, he launched this attack – which had an attack radius of 300 feet – towards Chu Yang!

This was also his final attack!

Chu Yang coldly snorted. He couldn't evade this attack even if he wanted to. The long sword in his hand automatically readied itself with a 'clang'. It was necessary to launch the Nine Tribulation Sword move as soon as possible. Being reckless would be unforgivable this time around...

Suddenly, a saber light came flying crazily with a loud whistling

sound, and inserted itself between the two. A man's figure dressed in black clothes appeared in front of Chu Yang along with the saber. He firmly stationed himself before Chu Yang like a mainstay, and blocked the incoming raging waves of energy from reaching Chu Yang!

Chu Yang suddenly felt a burst of inexplicable warmth in his heart. He felt as if this tall and straight figure in front of him would protect him no matter what... that this man would prevent any hardships from coming his way...

However, Chu Fei Ling hadn't relaxed yet. He unleashed the entirety of his strength in order to face Old Second, while Old Second was about to crash into him with a doubly-powered saber light. He shouted, and his great saber transformed into a bluish-green barrier to protect himself and Chu Yang. After that, he flicked his wrist, and unleashed the killer saber move once again — Into the Sea of Reincarnation!

A blood-curdling scream sounded!

The black-robed Old Second was shoved upwards into the sky by the saber energy. Then, his body disintegrated in midair. It turned into bits and pieces of flesh, and blood spread everywhere!

Puff Puff Puff... several of these sounds reverberated. Chu Fei Ling's body shook, but he still stood firm. Blood gushed out of his shoulders, chest, and thighs! This nasty last attack had managed to land some injuries onto his body...

He could've calmly dealt with the enemy if he hadn't been burdened to save Chu Yang. After all, he could always have dealt with these seven people one-at-a-time, and could've beaten them without receiving one scratch on his body.

However, he was unable to control his own outbreak when he saw that Chu Yang was in danger!

He had no regrets!

The smell of blood slowly started to grow weaker. Chu Fei Ling turned around. He had already retracted that awe-inspiring and deadly aura into his body. He looked at Chu Yang with a kind smile, "Little brother, are you okay?"

"I... fine." Chu Yang felt a burst of emotions in his heart, and could barely speak-up as a result. He himself found his response rather strange, [why am I feeling so emotional today?]

"You got injured?" Chu Yang looked at the terrible wounds on Chu Fei Ling's body, and suddenly felt a sharp pain in his heart.

"No worries. These small injuries are no big deal." Chu Fei Ling put the saber back into the sheath that was tied to his waistband. Then, he wore a plain smile on his face.

Then, he took out a medicine from his bosom. He was about to use it when he turned towards Chu Yang and spoke with a smile, "I always carry a medicine with me."

Chu Yang dryly smiled back. Then, he suddenly had an idea and said, "Take my medicine." He then took out an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations Pill, and handed it over.

Chu Fei Ling gawked for a moment. He looked at Chu Yang; the youngster presently had a sincere look on his face. He couldn't help but wear a candid smile as he replied, "Very well! I will use little brother's medicine!"

A strong fragrance assaulted his nostrils as soon as he received the pill. He felt as if his mind had sobered up with just a sniff of this herbal fragrance. He also felt that it had aroused his spirit.

He was incredibly shocked by this. [This medicine is definitely not an ordinary one ah!]

[What's the origin of this mysterious little brother? He's capable of killing a Saber Emperor in spite of being on the Sword King Level. Moreover, he's carrying such a mysterious medicine. It seems as if he has seized the fortune of the world itself.]

[This drug is a priceless treasure!]

Chu Fei Ling clutched the pill in his hand, and remembered his wife in his heart. [My dear wife has been rebuking herself since we lost our son 18 years ago. And, she has been depressed ever since. In fact, she has developed the problem of heartache over time. This medicine... using it to treat my flesh wounds would be a waste. It would be better to take it back for her, right?]

Chu Fei Ling wore a somewhat embarrassed smile as he took the medicine and said, "Little brother, my injury is a mere flesh wound. I can apply a little external medicine that's used to treat incised wounds, and that should be enough. However, I have some other use for your medicine... ha-ha... it's kind of embarrassing to say this... but my poor wife has an old problem of heartache. I wish to give this medicine to her... ha-ha..."

Chu Fei Ling was very embarrassed. [The boy gave you a medicine with good intentions to help you heal. But, you wish to save it up and take it back to your wife?]

He found his own actions quite shameless as he thought along these lines...

"What's wrong in that?" Chu Yang waved his hand, "Do you want me to give you another one?" Chu Yang generously took out one more pill, and gave it to him.

"This... this is very generous..." Chu Fei Ling stared in a stupefied manner. Very generous...? This was a wondrous healing medicine, ok? This was no sugar candy which he could pull out on a whim.

Chu Yang waved his hand, and replied as if this was no big deal, "That's only two medicine pills, okay? Don't worry... I have enough for myself."

To be honest... it wasn't a big deal for him. He had two kinds of nine great herbal medicines in his possession. So, he could make as many incomplete versions of the Nine Tribulations Pills as he

wanted.

"Thank you very much." Chu Fei Ling earnestly expressed his gratitude. [A medicine of this grade is something even the super clans of the Upper Three Heavens may have never seen in their lives. What if it's the drug I am looking for?]

Chu Fei Ling thought of this, and couldn't bring himself to eat it. He carefully put the pills in his pocket. Then, he applied his own medicine on his wound. [I don't wish to eat it. My old father is injured and sick in bed... his body would need nourishment at some point of time.] However, he couldn't say this because the opposite party had already given him two pills. That was equivalent to two huge favors! In fact, Chu Fei Ling would've been too embarrassment to accept another one even if Chu Yang was willing to give...

[Moreover, he's the one who saved me today. This is equivalent to me owing my life to him for saving my life...]

Chu Yang had been rendered speechless. [This person is really something... I gave you two pills, and you didn't even eat one?]

Chu Fei Ling smiled in an awkward manner. He was feeling very embarrassed. His old handsome face had also turned somewhat red. [Cough Cough, my conduct may have been a little strange of late...]

[However, I think that this waste of time was totally worth it... The Ye Clan's assassins are dead. So, I have nothing to fear in the Middle Three Heavens. And, these injuries... will quickly get restored anyway...]

Chu Fei Ling tidied-up himself, and got ready. His wounds had been bandaged-up. He then gazed at Chu Yang with a stupefied expression on his face. The youngster didn't seem to mind getting dirty in the visceral fluids and blood of the nine Emperor Level experts. He was rummaging through the bits and pieces of their flesh. He was in-line with the 'waste nothing' policy. It needed to

be mentioned that these were the remains of Emperor Level Experts. And, such experts were bound to have treasures on their bodies. He obviously found more than a dozen chunks of purple jade...

Chu Yang was somewhat satisfied by this. He had found many elixirs... So, it could be said that the losses had been reimbursed big-time. After all, the Emperor Level Expert wouldn't possibly keep ordinary elixirs on their bodies.

The two talented individuals proceeded with their journey... and the topic of their conversation on the road couldn't be more obvious...

"Um... Big... Brother Chu, there ought be some important matter that has brought you to the Middle Three Heavens, right? Otherwise, so many people wouldn't have been driven to chase and assassinate you. I wonder what that matter is..." Chu Yang called him 'Big Brother Chu' by mistake. Then, he suddenly felt very awkward in his heart, and scolded himself, [Motherfu*ker, why are you calling him Big Brother Chu? Why can't you say Uncle Chu? Fu*k!]

"It's a small matter." Chu Fei Ling's countenance turned serious. He heaved a deep sigh and replied, "My father is injured. I need to find an elixir. Then, I can go back... wait!" He had spoken until here when he suddenly patted his own forehead, and realized something. He abruptly broke into laughter and said, "I'm such a muddle-head. We have been together for so long. And, I've even received favors from little brother time and again. But, I completely forgot to ask one question... Little brother, what's your name?"

"Ha-ha..." Chu Yang's thought about many things at a lightning speed. Then, he finally replied with a smile, "What a coincidence... we are of the same clan. I'm also surnamed Chu. My name is Chu Yang!"

"You are also surnamed Chu..." Chu Fei Ling was startled.

Chapter 450: Isn’t it Just the Mysterious Yang Jade? Thought it’d be Something Great...

"You’re also surnamed Chu?" Chu Fei Ling was startled. [How can there be such a coincidence?]

"Yes. I’m called Chu Yang." Chu Yang's got excited in his heart. He chuckled and said, "It’s such a coincidence, isn’t it?"

"It sure is!" Chu Fei Ling’s heart was set into turmoil. [Could it be that he’s my son?] He secretly released his aura to gain a response from the Purple Jade Essence Pendant that his lost son had possessed. But, he got no response. He only detected a piece of purple jade in Chu Yang’s pocket. This was the same purple jade that Chu Yang had robbed from Ye Ran Mo.

He couldn’t help but sigh in his heart in a self-ridiculing manner. He scolded himself for having such greedy thoughts, [how can he be my own son? That’s just wishful thinking!]

[This young hero is extraordinary. He’s wise and full of tricks. He acts decisively. And, his methods are quite transcendental. Most importantly, he has that kind of incredible air about him. And, it takes a long time to nurture such a top-genius! He obviously comes from some great clan. His origin can never be ordinary.]

[I shouldn’t harbor such a delusion... even though I miss my son. I lost my son from the cradle in the Lower Three Heavens. I don’t even know whether he’s alive or dead. He may have been adopted, but I still don’t know whether he’s living comfortably or not. Perhaps he’s just a young woodcutter who chops wood in the mountains... how can he possibly grow up to be such a young hero?]

[These two are simply incomparable!]

Chu Fei Ling sighed sadly as he thought of this. [I think I'm going crazy thinking about my missing son...]

"What's wrong? Is this medicine very difficult to find?" Chu Yang looked at him, and asked in a deeply concerned manner.

"It's not generally difficult..." Chu Fei Ling gazed at the Raging Fire Mountain Range, and replied in a heavy tone, "If the raging fire mountain range doesn't have it... then perhaps it doesn't exist. It will be an item that only exists in the legends in that case..."

"Oh..." Chu Yang was silent a moment. He then asked, "What is this medicine that's so difficult to find?"

Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh. He thought of the disparity between his son and the young man in front of him. He thought of the cluster of messy situations that had built up in his clan. He thought of his own brother... who was trying to assassinate him. Then, he thought of the tragedy that had befallen his family... and his wife was depressed nowadays... A tinge of sadness suddenly rose in his heart. He spoke, "I will go look for it, ok."

He had unexpectedly avoided Chu Yang's question.

He knew that Chu Yang had asked this question because he had intended to help. However... he already owed Chu Yang many favors. How could he feel right about accepting any more help?

Chu Fei Ling was a person with a proud and lofty disposition. How could he allow himself to owe endless favors to a person?

Chu Fei Ling's figure accelerated, and burst into the Raging Fire Mountain Range. Chu Yang frowned, but followed after him.

The Sword Spirit analyzed the situation in his consciousness, and said, "He has come to the Raging Fire Mountain Range. This means that he's looking for an elixir with a strong fire property. It's very hard for such a medicine to grow. So, I think that the possibility of finding it may not be large."

Chu Yang nodded and replied, "Indeed. Most elixirs grow in the

form of plants. And, even a person would get roasted within half-a-days' time in such a burning hot place. So, its needless to mention the survive chance of plant..."

"Correct." Sword Spirit heaved a deep sigh and said, "I can tell that you are hitting it off well with him, and that you wish to help him out. I suggest that you make use of Sword Point's searching ability... perhaps you will have an unexpected harvest. You never know..."

"Ok." Chu Yang nodded gently.

The Nine Tribulations Sword's Sword Point silently emerged from Chu Yang's fingertip the next moment.

The two people went halfway into the Raging Fire Mountain Range. But, Chu Fei Ling's complexion sank more and more with every passing step. [It's just nowhere to be found!]

Chu Yang suddenly noticed that the Sword Point suddenly vibrated at this time, and pointed eastward. Chu Yang got excited and spoke-up, "Let's go check out that side."

"Alright." Chu Fei Ling nodded.

The figures of these two people seemingly flew-out in that direction. Chu Yang was intentionally or unintentionally in front of Chu Fei Ling. They turned a corner, and a burst of herbal fragrance suddenly reached their noses. Chu Yang got very excited. However, a disappointed look appeared on Chu Fei Ling's face.

It was impossible for the Mysterious Yang Jade Essence and Mysterious Yang Jade to issue such fragrance!

They went close, and saw that there was miraculously a piece of vacant land amidst the raging hot fire. There was a tunnel entrance in the ground, and the herbal fragrance was coming out of it.

An ordinary person couldn't withstand such hot temperature! Even the so-called 'Second Grade King Level Expert' like Chu Yang

perhaps wouldn't be able to withstand it if he didn't have the 'Seven Yin Cold Energy' in his body.

"There's some medicine inside this!" Chu Yang's eyes lit-up.

Chu Fei Ling smiled solemnly and said, "Wait here. I will go in and fetch it. Then, I will give it to you!" He spoke this, and took a step. His palms issued a purple saber light. He grabbed the stone at the cave's mouth. Then, he lifted up this big chunk of iron-like purple-red stone with a loud 'ha!'. The larger cave mouth in the back was revealed as a result.

Chu Fei Ling's figure flashed like lightning, and went in!

Chu Yang only heard a muffled snort that came from inside. This was followed by a burst of fighting sounds. Chu Fei Ling came flying out soon after. He was holding a lump of purple-red soil in one hand. It was giving-off choking hot heat. A mildly purple crystal-like Spirit Mushroom was rooted in this lump of soil. It was sparkling and translucent. It looked quite beautiful. That rich herbal fragrance had been coming from this spirit mushroom.

The Sword Point shook in a rhythmic fashion. It looked very excited.

"Sea of Fire Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom..." Sword Spirit said with a sigh, "It looks like it has been cooked for more than 3000 years. Its value would've been immeasurable if its whole body had turned purple."

Chu Yang laughed in his heart. He knew why the Sword Spirit was sighing with sorrow. That was because this spirit mushroom hadn't matured enough. It was evident that the Sword Spirit would wish to use his accelerated ripening method on it...

Chu Fei Ling held a silver white monster snake in the other hand. It was as thick as the wrist. He had already killed it by cutting off its vital part. "To think that there was such a monster keeping watch over this elixir. Its skins and flesh are quite rugged." Chu Fei

Ling smiled, and handed over the Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom, "Little Brother, I give this to you!"

"You don’t want it?" Chu Yang was stunned as he asked, "Isn’t this the medicine you were looking for?"

"No." Chu Fei Ling replied. Then, he tossed the Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom over to Chu Yang. He skillfully skinned the silver white snake, and scooped its core out. He then said, "This is a rare Star Silver Snake. Don’t let its small size fool you. It’s at least regarded as a Seven Grade Spirit Beast! Its scales are impervious to weapons, and can even evade vital energy attacks. Its inner core has gained a bit of ‘pure yang power’ since it has stayed in the raging fire! It might be of some use in treating my father’s injury. I would like to oblige you, but please let me keep this one, Little Brother."

Chu Fei Ling neatly and efficient stripped the scales, and offered the entire snake body to Chu Yang, "This snake’s meat can incite the source of spiritual power. Consume it every day to increase your cultivation. Moreover, this snake skin can be turned into a small waistcoat that can protect the important parts of your body. It is considered as the most precious asset of a travelling Jianghu person."

Chu Yang bluntly accepted the items. He knew that Chu Fei Ling wasn’t being polite to him. In fact, refusing to accept would seem like an attempt to estrange him.

He accepted these two items. But, Chu Yang finally couldn’t bear anymore and asked, "This Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom is also considered as a priceless treasure. Moreover, perhaps there aren’t many elixirs in this Raging Fire Mountain Range. What kind of elixir are you looking for that’s so hard to find?"

"I have basically reached a conclusion about this Raging Fire Mountain Range after having seen the Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom. That Purple Crystal Spirit Mushroom wouldn’t have

been able to grow here if that item was here." Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh and said, "My father has been poisoned by the cold blood poison of a Monarch Level Expert of the Three Stars Divine Clan. Mysterious Yang Jade is required to treat him... Sigh... it isn't here. It seems that I must go elsewhere to try my luck."

Mysterious Yang Jade! He had 'only' dared to pin his hopes on the Mysterious Yang Jade. After all, wasn't that 'merely' a legendary item?

Chu Fei Ling seemed reluctant to leave as he looked at Chu Yang. He then spoke in a heavy voice, "Little Brother, I have to leave the Raging Fire Mountain Range. So, I must bid farewell to you. Take care of yourself."

"The poison of cold blood...?" Chu Yang opened his eyes wide, "The Mysterious Yang Jade?!"

He suddenly patted his thigh, "Fu*k! Why didn't you say that earlier?"

He had never expected that the elixir Chu Fei Ling had been looking for would 'actually' be in his possession. In fact, he had a big pile of it...

The Sword Spirit's face twitched in Nine Tribulations Space. He gnashed his teeth. [Spendthrift ah! Prodigal ah. You will soon squander all our fortunes...]

[You motherfu*ker! You think managing this Mysterious Yang Jade is easy for me...]

Sword Spirit looked at the pile of Mysterious Yang Jade that lay before him, and sighed sadly. However, he had no choice but to take out two pieces. Chu Yang's voice rang in his thought, "I will take a good one! I want it to be from the center so that it's at least a fist-sized one!"

Sword Spirit's eyes turned moist... [this bastard! His generosity is so over the top.] He endured the heartache as he broke-off a small

chunk from the central position... he felt as if it was a drop of blood from his own heart...

However, he didn't know the feelings in Chu Yang's heart. [I must be careful. This injured person is probably from my grandfather's generation...]

Chu Yang was unsure about his own life's history. Moreover, he was undecided about what he wanted to do in his life... but, he couldn't allow someone to die, and not do something about it!

Not to mention... he didn't know that the person in front of him was being opposed by whom in the clan. However, Chu Yang would be in big trouble if the person opposing this man turned out to be his own biological father... Returning to his birth clan and getting their recognition would be like setting foot on the road to hell if that were the case...

Meanwhile, Chu Fei Ling's face had turned red with excitement. He looked at Chu Yang in disbelief, "Little Brother, you... you..." He wanted to ask, [Do you have the Mysterious Yang Jade?] However, he was extremely scared of disappointment. So, he didn't dare to ask out loud. However, his heart had started to beat faster and faster. In fact, he felt as if his heart would jump out of his throat any moment.

"Isn't it 'just' the Mysterious Yang Jade?" Prodigal Chu spoke-up in a deemphasizing manner... as if it was no big deal. In fact, he seemed like a pretentious prick, "I thought it would be some great stuff... when I saw you worrying about it."

Chu Fei Ling nearly fainted!

[What did he say just now? Isn't that 'just'... Mysterious Yang jade...? How can you talk like that about it? This is the most precious item on the entire Nine Heavens Continent! My little darling!]

"In that case... you... have it?!" Chu Fei Ling cautiously asked.

"I have a Mysterious Yang Jade Core here... don’t know whether it would be of any use...?" Chu Yang overturned his hand. A piece of pink and transparent Mysterious Yang Jade appeared in his palm. It was the size of a fist. The high temperature in the surroundings receded the moment it was taken out. In fact, the temperature had suddenly become warm and comfortable.

Chu Fei Ling eyes straightened up in the blink of an eye! His eyes attentively stared at this piece of Mysterious Yang Jade Core... without even sparing a blink. He had nearly begun to weep! [This... is my old father's life!]

[The Mysterious Yang Jade Core!]

A myriad of feelings welled-up inside Chu Fei Ling’s heart. [I just needed the Mysterious Yang Jade, but this Little Brother took out such a big Mysterious Yang Jade Core!]

[This is such a big favor! This is an enormous display of esteemed kindness and invaluable friendship!]

Chu Fei Ling's eyes had turned moist.

Chapter 451: Became Sworn Brothers?!

"Is this enough? Big Brother Chu...?" Chu Yang called him ‘Big Brother Chu’ in a very affectionate manner.

"It’s enough! Enough! It’s absolutely enough!" Chu Fei Ling’s body somewhat trembled as he replied, "In fact, even a small piece is enough. So, this is more than enough."

Chu Yang thought otherwise and said, "Take the entire chunk. After all, this is a very important matter. So, you can’t be careless. It will be troublesome if it turns out to be insufficient later."

Chu Fei Ling extended his hand excitedly, but then pulled-back his hand abruptly. Then, he spoke resolutely, "Little Brother, this Mysterious Yang Jade Core is a priceless treasure! So, I feel a bit troubled in taking it from you like this! Thus, you state its price, and I will buy it!"

He smiled and looked a bit ashamed as he continued, "Of course, I am willing to pay any price as long as it’s enough to make up for the true value of this chunk of Mysterious Yang Jade Core! Please give me a chance so that my heart can feel a bit at ease..."

"You regard me as an outsider with your words." Chu Yang replied with a smile, "We have risked our lives together. You even stood in front of me to protect me at the most critical moment... We have such a friendship! Yet, you still talk about money and transactions. This breaks my heart..."

Chu Fei Ling was obviously moved emotionally by this. His eyes turned red as he spoke in a hoarse voice, "Thank you very much, Little Brother!" He accepted the Mysterious Yang Jade Core. However, he had secretly decided in his heart, [Little Brother didn’t accept any payment, but I would never treat him unjustly!]

[The cultivators attach great importance to promotion of strength. And, purple crystal plays a major role in it. I don’t have

many, but the Chu Clan has gathered thousands of pieces of purple jade. So, they should be able to provide many of them. And, I can use purple crystals to help Little Brother in the promotion of his strength when the time comes!]

[Paying even thousands of purple crystals will be totally worth it for such a show of good faith! In fact, it will be more than worth it!]

Mysterious Yang Jade Core was already in Chu Fei Ling's hand, but this still felt like a dream to him! [The problem that has been troubling the entire clan... got solved... just like that?]

[Moreover, it was solved by the first person I found after I arrived in the Middle Three Heaven. And, that too when I intended to use him as a cover to trick my pursuers... what a lucky coincidence... that he actually had Mysterious Yang Jade!]

Chu Fei Ling felt that the god of luck was on his side...

The two people traveled together, and moved away from the Raging Fire Mountain Range as quickly as possible. They looked for a cool place to sit down, and rested for a while.

"Little Brother, may I know where you got your training from?" Chu Fei Ling was in a good mood. Moreover, he was also in the mood for some gossip, "Judging from your elegant poise... you must be from some great clan, right?"

"My master is surnamed Meng." Chu Yang chuckled. A complicated and inexplicable look flashed in his eyes as he continued, "As for my clan... it is indeed not small... ha ha ha..."

"I knew that'd be the case. An ordinary clan can't cultivate such an outstanding genius!" Chu Fei Ling sighed with regret. He seemed deeply moved. Then, he spoke in an envious tone, "Little Brother's parents are truly blessed to have such a son."

He had spoken this with a sigh of infinite dejection. He was obviously thinking about his missing son.

"My parents..." It was hard to determine Chu Yang's state of mind. He just let out two hollow laughs.

"Yes. Oh, by the way, Little Brother... You and I became friends at first sight. We treat one another with absolute sincerity. We get along well with each other. And, I also feel that you are an outstanding genius. So, I have an idea. But, I don't know whether I should tell or not?" Chu Fei Ling suddenly got excited.

"What?" Chu Yang curiously asked.

"Wouldn't it be better if we become sworn brothers since we hit it off so well?" Chu Fei Ling suggested in high spirits, "Your future prospects are limitless. So, this big brother of yours must strengthen our bond today itself."

Chu Yang was stunned by this!

[What? Sworn brothers? You and I... can ... become sworn brothers?]

Chu Yang swallowed his saliva with great difficulty, and gave a hollow laughter, "This... doesn't this seem wrong? After all, you... you are an Emperor Level Expert... a great person..."

"Little Brother, I will get mad if you talk like that!" Chu Fei Ling's face became stiff as he said unhappily, "Could it be that you don't like me?"

"No, no, no... definitely not..." Chu Yang waved his hand hurriedly, "I didn't mean that..."

"Do you think I am a burden?" Chu Fei Ling feigned an angry look.

"No, no, no..." Chu Yang was stuttering. His forehead was covered in sweat. [Sir, can you not joke with me like that? Oh god, what do you want me to do.]

"Then, you tell me the reason why you don't wish to swear brotherhood with me?" Chu Fei Ling asked persistently.

Chu Yang didn’t know what to do, [Oh God, ah, what does he want me to say?] Chu Yang had never felt this awkward in his experience of two lives. And, he had never been stuck in such a dilemma...

"There’s no reason...? Then, what scruples do you have?" Chu Fei Ling wore a relieved smile, "Moreover, it is just between us two brothers. It has nothing to do with your clan. Of course, you can come and visit the Chu Clan in the Upper Three Heavens if you think highly of me... when the time is right..."

Chu Yang’s entire face turned black. He had been rendered speechless.

Chu Fei Ling acted fast on the other hand. He had already scooped up soil to make a table for the incense stick. Then, he patted Chu Yang on his shoulder, and laughed out loud, "Brother, come!"

Chu Yang had let his guard down, and got patted into kneeling down on the ground as a result. His heart was a total mess. Why couldn’t he give any reason? This feeling was very strange.

"There’s Heaven above, and Earth below. Today, Disciple Chu Fei Ling swears brotherhood with Chu Yang — a Chu from a different family name... cough... we hereby become sworn brothers. We will share our joys together hereafter. I’ll take it upon myself if my sworn brother is in danger... The Heaven and the Mother Earth are witnesses to this..." Chu Fei Ling looked serious.

Chu Yang had already started feeling dizzy. He was completely confused, and didn’t know what he was doing. Chu Fei Ling saw the absent-minded look on his face, and merely patted his back. Chu Yang got knocked out of his trance state, and stood up. He saw that Chu Fei Ling was looking at him with a gratified look on his brotherly face, but seemed like a father instead...

The feeling of dizziness in Young Master Chu’s head disappeared, and he sobered up. [Crap! This can’t be happening...]

He wanted to cry but had no tears to shed. [This... what the fu*k is this?]

"Brother!" Chu Fei Ling looked at him, and seemed deeply concerned, "Your complexion looks bad."

"He he he he..." Chu Yang was neither crying nor smiling. He was merely grinning.

Chu Fei Ling was in an extremely good mood. He smiled a bit and said, "It can be said that today is the luckiest day of my life. I not only found a good brother who is worthy of becoming friends with and we both treat one another with absolute sincerity. But, I am also deeply indebted to this brother for giving me the most precious item in the whole world – the Mysterious Yang Jade Core – for the treatment of my old father. This has lifted a big stone from my heart!"

He heaved a long sigh and continued, "I won't hide this from you brother, but I haven't been this happy in the last 18 years... Alas, I find it unbearable to recall those past events. It feels like my heart is being sheared by a knife when I recall that time..."

He recalled his bitter experiences of the last 18 years, and a myriad of emotions welled-up in his heart. The entirety of those worries had remained buried in his heart this entire time. He had never had a chance to pour out his emotions before someone. However, his emotions had been stirred up because he had found a brother today. And, this brother clearly had no connection with his clan. So, he wanted to pour out his grievances... without holding back.

"Eh..." The dull look in Chu Yang's eyes suddenly changed, and got replaced with a shocked one as he asked, "Don't tell me you... still have some hidden trouble that's hard to mention?

"A hidden trouble that's hard to mention... A hidden trouble that's hard to mention... ha ha..." Chu Fei Ling let out a desolate laugh. He shook his head and replied, "I won't hide it from you

brother. My life has been worse than death during these last 18 years...! A dream often haunts me at midnight. And, I always feel like a knife is being twisted in my heart... sometimes it feels as if my soul will break into pieces..."

Chu Yang apparently sensed something. His mouth twitched as he asked, "I would like to hear the details..."

"I am about to unburden my heart and tell you what had happened back then, brother..." Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh and said, "This painful matter has been bugging my heart for past 18 years. I haven't been able to forget about it... even for a second..."

He exhaled a deep breath. His eyes seemed to have turned vacant, "I remember, my Chu Clan had encountered a big crisis 18 years ago! My child had just been born at that time... the child's maternal grandmother wanted to see her grandson. So, she invited us to come. I took my dear wife and child to spend some leisure time with them..."

Chu Yang opened his eyes wide in a stare, and issued a weird sound from his throat. He complained in his heart, [fu*k fu*k fu*k, what the hell is this... how can there be such a damned matter in this world... He and I just became sworn brothers... and now this comes up...]

Chu Fei Ling had fallen into the sad recollection, "I and your sister-in-law were returning from my father-in-law's home with bodyguards a month later. She held the baby in her bosom. However, we suddenly encountered a powerful enemy besiege midway! The two bodyguards got killed on the spot. They had gone all-out to protect us. After that, we fled for our lives, but the enemy chased us down...

"We couldn't go back to the Chu Clan because the enemy had dispatched a huge lineup to assassinate us. We'd probably have gotten killed on the way if we had rashly returned to the clan!" Chu

Fei Ling sighed, "So, the two of us fled all around with the child with us in our desperation. We hid whenever we could. But, the enemy kept chasing us, and there was no way out! We were in imminent danger when we happened to come across the Nine Heavens Portal. We were forced to take our child to the Middle Three Heavens.

"But, the enemy was in hot pursuit, and kept chasing us no matter where we went. We fought several fierce battles, but we weren't strong-enough to deal with the enemy. We were desperate and tried our best to rush out... and finally escaped to the Lower Three Heavens... That was a windy and snowy night..." Chu Fei Ling's vision was blurred by the glistening tears.

Chu Yang could feel the chill of that 'windy and snowy night', and his soul shivered...

"My wife and I were chased to the ends of the earth on that cold night. I was seriously injured, and was going to die soon. And, my wife had also suffered serious injuries at 7-8 places on her body. Her left leg was broken..."

Chu Fei Ling sighed with sorrow, "We knew that it'd be difficult to escape this tragedy. But... how could we let our child suffer the same fate?"

"However, we were in the Lower Three Heavens at that time. We were alone, and didn't have anyone to rely on. It was already late at night. We were escaping without knowing where we were going. We just kept running in the mountain forest... and, we eventually saw a ruined temple. We were already on the verge of death... we hid our child in that ruined temple since we had no other option... Then, we wrapped a stone in cloth and embraced it as our fake child. We then continued to escape in order to lead the enemy away from our son... to give our son a slim chance of survival..."

Chu Fei Ling's voice trembled with grief and sorrow as he spoke. He was trembling... It seemed as if he had returned to that cold

snowy night from eighteen years ago...

Meanwhile, Chu Yang was listening to this, and could feel an ache in his heart. He had a burning sensation in his nose. Two steams of tears fell down...

"The two of us continued to escape in order to distract the enemy. And, we jumped down from a hundred-thousand feet tall cliff with that piece of stone in our hands..." Chu Fei Ling smiled bitterly. He then continued, "As they say... heaven never seals off all exists. We had fallen for only a few hundred feet when we got caught-up in a large net of vines. Such a vine takes a long time to form... And, it saved both of us. Furthermore, we surprisingly found a wonderful treasure growing on the cliff-wall. It was Magnificent Snow Lotus Herb..."

Chapter 452: A Gift for the First Meeting

"Magnificent Snow Lotus Herb..." Chu Yang muttered subconsciously.

"Yes, the Magnificent Snow Lotus Herb. And, there were two flowers in that plant. One black, and one white — a Yin and a Yang. And, its Yin and Yang elements complemented each other to generate a wondrous effect that could cure incurable illnesses, increase martial power, and even help one make a breakthrough!" Chu Fei Ling explained. He then added, "My wife and I took one flower each. Our injured bodies unexpectedly made a complete recovery overnight! Moreover, our martial powers increased dramatically, and both of us broke through to the Second Grade Emperor Level..."

"Your misfortune truly turned into a blessing." Chu Yang sighed deeply.

"Misfortune turned into a blessing...? Ha-ha..." Chu Fei Ling laughed bitterly and said, "My wife and I sensed that our injuries had healed. So, we immediately rushed back. We killed our way back through the enemies. In fact, we killed dozens of pursuers; left and right. We didn’t even have time to interrogate our enemies or force an oral confession out of them. We rushed straight back to that ruined temple... but..."

"Our child was already gone by then..." Chu Fei Ling spoke in an extremely painful voice.

"The child... had already disappeared..." Chu Yang was at a loss for words. He felt as if that deeply buried hatred that he had harbored in his heart towards his own parents for abandoning him had vanished in thin air right this moment...

"The two of us had nearly gone crazy. We searched for our child unceasingly. We even searched the wolf lairs and tiger caves in several nearby mountains, but we couldn’t find him... We

helplessly returned to the Upper Three Heavens after a long time. However, our poor child's memory has been ever-present in our hearts like a steadily growing thorn. My wife misses our son, and longs to see him again day and night. Her appearance has grown wan and sallow. Her martial power hasn't advanced one bit in the last 18 years. Instead, it has dropped from the Second Grade of Emperor Level to the First Grade. She has also developed a deep-seated illness of chest pain..."

"The entire family treats us as a laughing stock... my in-law family have treated me and wife as if we are their enemies... all these years ..." Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh with sorrow, "... all these years...'distress' is the word that can sum up our state... "

Chu Yang was already completely stupefied.

[There's no doubt that this person before my eyes — the one who has just become my 'sword big brother'— is my own biological father!]

Chu Fei Ling turned his head once he was done sighing over his misfortune. But, he was surprised to see that there were tears streaming down Chu Yang's face. He was startled by this. So, he asked, "Brother, what happened to you?"

"Boo hoo hoo... this story has touched me..." Chu Yang wiped his tears, and exposed a smile uglier than his cry...

Chu Yang was greatly conflicted in his heart! He had a strong impulse to throw himself and embrace this man who had been suffering for so many years. He wanted to tell him that... [I'm your son! I'm your son who went missing 18 years ago!]

[But... Damn! I can't!]

That's because... they had just become sworn brothers. Moreover, he had been semi-forced into it by Chu Fei Ling. [He would perhaps be ashamed to death if I tell him the truth right now... he may not even get enough time to be pleasantly surprised

on having found me...]

[Oh God, I forced my own son to swear brotherhood with myself...?]

[Who can withstand such an insane matter?]

[More importantly... I am also shouldering my own responsibilities... such as the responsibility of the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword, the responsibility to save Little Wu... My birth clan would obviously find out about the things that I've done to unify the Lower Three Heavens if I go back to gain their recognition. And, they would get to the heart of the matter if that happens. Perhaps my identity as the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword might get revealed.]

[Of course, I trust my father and mother. But, the problem is... the Chu Clan isn't united at present! God knows who harbors evil intentions in the clan? It doesn't matter who does it, but the entire Chu Clan would get implicated, and would disappear without a trace once my identity as the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword gets leaked out!]

[It wouldn't be a matter of great happiness if I am to gain recognition as the son, but the clan gets destroyed in the process. That'd be a great tragedy instead!]

[Moreover, my parents would probably swallow me whole to keep me in a safe space if I don't tell them about the things which happened in the Lower Three Heavens... they would send a group of experts to protect me at the very least. But, how can we hide the facts from the eyes and ears of the nine great ruling clans if the experts of Chu Clan are to be mobilized? This is no small matter. It can't be hidden easily...]

These conflicted feelings were killing Chu Yang.

"Sword Spirit, is there a way to permanently cure... the problem of chest pain?" Chu Yang asked the Sword Spirit in his mind. He

looked a bit worried.

"Chest pain...?" Sword Spirit snorted disdainfully, "What's so great about this ailment? It happens when a person has been longing for someone. The resulting depression leads to their meridians getting blocked. That's all."

"I see... can the complete Nine Tribulations Pill cure it permanently?" Chu Yang asked with anticipation. [I haven't seen my mother, but I still want her to get well...]

"Big Brother... that's not necessary, got it?" Sword Spirit screamed loudly, "The incomplete version of Nine Tribulations Pill is good-enough to cure this ailment. The usage of the complete Nine Tribulations Pill is a brute 'overkill'. It's a complete waste of valuable resources. This treasure is potent enough to help one enhance an entire level... You mustn't throw away our precious wealth like that. Our wealth is certainly very profound, but it won't last long if you keep squandering it left and right..."

Sword Spirit was so distressed that he nearly cried, "This is the most precious wonder-drug in the entire Nine Heavens! It's not some cabbage that grows on the roadside! Even a Supreme Level Expert would witness a big effect if they were to eat it ah ah ah..."

"Enhance an entire level?" Chu Yang's eyes lit-up, "That's awesome. That's enough to help my mother increase her self-preservation ability..."

Sword Spirit slapped his own cheek several times in remorse. [I am such a 'big mouth'! Why did I have to say that...?]

"It enhances an entire level... Why didn't you tell me earlier?" Chu Yang asked in a puzzled manner.

"It can only help the powerhouses of Emperor Level and above in enhancing their level! It will heal your wounds, and will store-up as medicinal efficacy if you eat it at your current level. But, it will only be turned into a lump of shit besides that!" Sword Spirit

snorted in anger. He was clearly in a bad mood.

"Eh..." Chu Yang excitedly raised his eyebrow, and suddenly thought of something. [Well, how about I also let my old man enhance his level? Otherwise, I won't feel relieved if I take into consideration how he's in danger every day.]

"Can you give me two Nine Tribulations Pills?" Chu Yang asked.

"There won't be any left for Mo Qing Wu if I do that." Sword Spirit rolled his eyes and thought, [this guy has become addicted to squandering our wealth.]

"Nonsense!" Chu Yang got furious, "We have Jade Snow Spirit Ginseng, Mysterious Ice Jade Paste, Mysterious Yang Jade Essence, Vitality Spring Water, and so many other elixirs. We also have Sea of Fire Purple Crustal Spirit Mushroom. We should be able to produce many Nine Tribulations Pills, right? How can there be an inadequacy of materials?!"

Sword Spirit seemed to be distressed. His whole body trembled, "I call you Great Sword Lord, do I not? Listen to me, oh Great Sword Lord! This is an enormous waste of resources! This is an unforgivable sin..."

"You listen to me, and prepare the pills at once!" Chu Yang used the Way of the Tyrant and spoke with an authority which couldn't be questioned.

"I can at most prepare one! The Mysterious Ice Jade Paste and Mysterious Yang Jade Essence can only be used a little bit..." Sword Spirit bargained with a resolute look on his face. In fact, he didn't yield an inch, "Otherwise, I would rather go on strike!"

"You have a quarter of an hour to prepare one pill." Minister Chu surrendered.

"Is there anything else you want?" Sword Spirit saw that this guy was about to say something, but had stopped abruptly. So, he couldn't help but ask angrily.

"Actually... I have to give them two weapons so that they can protect themselves..." Chu Yang spoke with a salivating face, "You have also seen that his saber is soft and dull. It doesn't have much use..."

"I have prepared that already!" the Sword Spirit said grumpily, "I knew that you would come to annoy me the moment I saw you crying like a kid. So, I already prepared the weapons for you. Here, take them away," he threw out a sword and a saber with a 'ding' sound.

"You are a very good guy!" Minister Chu was moved to tears as he said, "I would have devoted my life to you if you were a woman. In fact, I would have taken you as my wife."

"... Get the hell out of here!!" The Sword Spirit had goose bumps over his entire body. He only possessed a spirit body, but he still felt creeped out...

"One more thing... Can you make a few pills which can conceal one's strength to perfection so that others can't see through one's cultivation... that sort of pills..."

"I live to serve you..." The Sword Spirit faced upwards and heaved a deep sigh.

Chu Yang triumphantly exited his sea of consciousness.

He opened his eyes. He saw that Chu Fei Ling was right in front of his face, and was carefully examining him. There was a look of deep concern on his face, "Brother... wake up. Brothers, how are you?"

[What happened? How did my brother suddenly lose consciousness? And, I am calling him out, but he won't wake up...]

Chu Yang came to his senses, and woke up with a jolt. He awkwardly coughed a few times. He again heard several heartfelt cries calling 'brother' to wake him up. However, Minister Chu only felt discomfort in his whole body... including in his pants...

wherein his eggs had been clutched, and were being pulled...

[You can't wake someone like this... this can kill me, father...]

"Um, I was thinking... your present strength should be at the Ninth Grade Saber Emperor Level, right?" Chu Yang smacked his lips and asked, "How come you never thought of making a breakthrough to the Saber Monarch Level?"

"Break through to the Saber Monarch Level?" Chu Fei Ling shook his head and replied, "You think it's easy to make a breakthrough to the Monarch Level? Brother, the breakthrough from Emperor Level to Monarch Level isn't as simple as the breakthrough from Revered Martial Level to King Level. It depends on the world's elementary power, one's cultivation efficiency, lucky coincidence, and one's mental state to achieve enlightenment... Not a single one of these factors is dispensable..."

"Hm, hm, hm..." Chu Yang nodded again and again. Then, he sincerely said, "Then... today... you know... since you have recognized me as... you know... Little Brother... So, I have something to give it to you... as a gift... for meeting you for the first time..."

Chu Yang didn't know how to say this directly. [What should I call myself? How should I address him? This is the problem! In fact, it's the biggest problem!]

[Should I call him Big Brother? Should I refer to myself as Little Brother?] Chu Yang felt leg cramps as he thought about these things. So, he obviously couldn't speak them out loud.

It was indeed true that Minister Chu was a maverick, and an 'out of control' guy. However... he didn't dare to be sloppy in such a serious issue! [This is not... a fu*king joke...]

"You still want to give me 'first meeting' gift?! I should be the one who should give you a first meeting gift, Little Brother. You are making me feel ashamed by saying this." Chu Fei Ling waved his

hand. He felt strange in his heart strange, [did this unlikely brother stutter?] He then spoke with sincerity, "Brother! Dear Brother! You gave me these things... this is enough for this big brother of yours. I probably won't be able to repay for this kindness in my whole life..."

"Well... I can make you break through to the Monarch Level today..." Chu Yang hardened his heart, and took the decisive action in this complex situation.

"What?" Chu Fei Ling was shocked.

"Eat it!" Chu Yang took out a pill. In fact, he had already stuffed it into Chu Fei Ling's mouth before the man could see what it looked like. The pill entered his mouth, and filled his mouth with fragrance. He felt comfortable in his limbs and bones. Then, a cold stream formed a mutual spiral with a hot steam, and surged jubilantly within his Dantian.

Meanwhile, a cold sensation suddenly appeared in his mind. He had never really touched upon the meanings of the great dao principles. But, they suddenly stormed into his mind, and began to churn around in his thoughts...

Chapter 453: Your Son is Definitely Handsome, Confident and Dashing...

The meridians throughout his body suddenly opened wide. Wave after wave of tyrannical but warm spirit energy crazily burst into his body through the pores. It seemed as if a giant magnet had formed within his body, and it was constantly attracting the spirit energy in the surroundings to gather inside his body. Moreover, the impurities in his body were violently expelled out in this moment...

Chu Fei Ling turned pale with fright. He hastily calmed his breath, and sat down cross-legged in a Daoist meditative posture. He began to strive to digest this sudden influx of great fortune. Meanwhile, he was conflicted in his heart. He didn't know whether to laugh or cry. [This little brother is very impatient. He directly stuffed something into my mouth.]

However, he also knew that this was purely an act of kindness on Chu Yang's part. [I would have probably declined his offer if he had taken it out to give it to me. I wouldn't have accepted such a precious gift!]

[This is an... unheard of... and the most precious treasure in the world!]

The spirit energy and medicinal efficacy surged together like a raging sea, and madly rushed towards the bottleneck of the Monarch Level.

Chu Fei Ling had tried to break this bottleneck of Monarch Level many times in the past, but he had failed. However, he suddenly felt that the impregnable bottleneck of Monarch Level had surprisingly loosened up. He didn't get enough time to be pleasantly surprised because the raging waves dashed against the bottleneck with incredible force, and opened it wide!

Afterwards, the spirit energy rushed unhindered and unimpeded throughout the meridians like a jubilant tide that was breaking through the embankment.

[Breakthrough?!]

[Did I just make a breakthrough? I have always yearned for this breakthrough... even in my dreams... but it came so suddenly... and I wasn't even prepared for it?]

Chu Fei Ling opened his eyes wide. The spirit energy had started to become more and more turbulent after the breakthrough. It was surging more and more, and was becoming far more energetic than before. It flowed within his meridians at a lightning speed, and made 99 laps before it finally charged into the bottleneck of Second Grade Monarch Level!

[Crap!]

Chu Fei Ling's old and handsome face had turned deep red with excitement! [Isn't this surprise simply too big?]

Even the bottleneck of the Second Grade Monarch Level couldn't withstand the impact of that violently surging spirit energy. And, it fell apart! However, the spirit energy continued to circulate within the meridians after that as well. Meanwhile, the medicinal efficacy was crazily surging within the Dantian to form a new force...

Chu Fei Ling had been rendered speechless by the shock!

Third Grade...

Fourth Grade!

His cultivation rushed straight to the pinnacle of Fourth Grade before it came to a stop. His Dantian returned to its normal state soon after... and, it suddenly seemed as if nothing had happened...

Chu Fei Ling spat out a mouthful of impure energy, and got up. He took two steps, and shook his arms. A burst of energy gushed

out from his body, and turned the layer of impurities on his body into dust. He then gave a slight jerk, and the powdered impurities fell to the ground.

Breakthrough was over! Moreover, Chu Fei Ling obviously sensed that the pill he ate this time not only made him break through, but also made him understand the meaning of several points of great dao principles. What was even stranger was... [my mental state has been promoted by an entire level!]

[It has been promoted an entire level!]

[That is to say that my original mental state used to be that of Ninth Grade Saber Emperor. However, it is that of a Ninth Grade Monarch Expert at the moment!]

[What does this mean?]

Chu Fei Ling was so excited his entire body started to tremble. [This means that... I only need to accumulate martial power. Then, I can smoothly move up to the Ninth Grade Saber Monarch level! Moreover, I won't encounter any bottlenecks in the process!]

He turned his head to look at Chu Yang. His eyes were brimming with emotions. He suddenly bowed, raised his clasped hands, and spoke-up with the utmost sincerity, "Brother, I can't explain what a big favor you have bestowed upon me! This Elder Brother is really... unable to put in words how grateful he feels..."

Tears glittered in Chu Fei Ling's eyes as he said this.

[Indeed, no words can express what a great favor and act of kindness this actually is. Mere words can't convey the great importance of this friendship ah!]

Chu Yang was shocked to watch his dad stick his butt out and bow in front of himself. His mind had been blown away by this. He quickly dodged aside and spoke in an incoherent manner, "This... what is this? What are you doing?"

Chu Fei Ling straightened up, and patted Chu Yang's shoulder.

He took a deep breath, and tried his best to suppress the emotions in his heart. Then, he spoke in a heavy tone, "You are such a nice brother!"

Chu Yang grinned with embarrassment.

"Yeah. Oh, by the way... that pill you ate just now... isn't the gift I wanted to give." Chu Yang reached out with his hand, and pulled out a saber and a sword from his black robe, "These... I give these to you..."

The saber was slender. It had a sharp blade that was exuding cold light. He placed them on the ground, and it went halfway into the ground. One must know that this ground was extremely hard. It had been hardened by the raging fire that had continued to burn here for millions of years! Moreover, the saber was reflecting thousands of rays of cold light under the sunlight!

The sword was tender-looking, comparatively smaller, and gracefully shaped. It was similarly inserted in the ground, and was obviously tailored for a woman.

"How can I take these...! Absolutely not!" Chu Fei Ling waved his hand again and again. In fact, he was blushing hard in anger, "I will leave if you go on like this! I won't have the face to stay..."

He had been moved to the extreme. [This righteous little brother is too nice! But... this much enthusiasm is a bit too much, right? It looks like he's emptying his family belongings without giving it a thought. One would rather die, but wouldn't toss away these world-class treasures...]

[He shouldn't be this generous even if we are sworn brothers... right?]

Chu Fei Ling also wanted to take out something as a return gift. But, he saw each of the gifts taken out by Chu Yang... and, he had a sad reminder that anything he'd take out would be shoddy and too embarrassing to show... regardless of what he'd take out...

He was too ashamed!

"Both of these aren’t for you. What are you getting anxious for?" Chu Yang rolled his eyes and said, "This saber is for you... As for the sword... the sword is for... it’s for... it’s for... for..."

He continued to utter 'it’s for' for a long time, but couldn’t bring himself to say that "it’s for elder sister-in-law".

He wanted to say..."It is for my mother..." but, he was even more afraid to say that.

"It’s for... the lady..." Chu Yang’s forehead was sweating profusely.

"What? You even want to gift her something..." Chu Fei Ling gasped in admiration, "Brother, you are too thoughtful," he spoke this, and his complexion became firm, "In that case, I can’t accept this... even more now!"

"Why? You are looking down on me?!" Chu Yang bluntly spoke-up in a rough manner, "Either you accept these or... you accept you don’t recognize me as your... don’t recognize me as your..."

Minister Chu felt like slapping his own mouth a few times. [Damn it! It’s getting too difficult to speak today! I used to have a tongue like a reed back in those days when I was a minister. No one could stand up to me when it came to a duel of words! Today, I’m unable to even speak a complete line...]

"Very well." Chu Fei Ling was emotionally moved as he sighed. [Anyway, I’m a louse who is already under so much debt. Having a few more debts won’t kill me...]

"That’s great... Also, I don’t know whether this sword will be to the liking of... you know... what to say... yes, the lady," Chu Yang had clearly developed the problem of stuttering.

"Why are you calling her ‘lady’!" Chu Fei Ling rebuked him, "That’s your sister-in-law!"

"Eh... uh uh..." Minister Chu was sweating profusely. He repeatedly wiped-off his sweat. His small face had already turned green...

"Brother, are you feeling hot?" Chu Fei Ling asked. He seemed concerned.

"Uh... yes, yes, it's too hot... the weather is too hot ... ha ha ha too hot..." Chu Yang was in a distress...

"Yeah. My job here is already done. I should go back now." Chu Fei Ling looked at Chu Yang. He seemed reluctant to leave. However, his heart was set on speeding back home. After all, his old father lay sick in bed. How could he not be worried?

Besides, he couldn't even stand in front of this little brother at the moment. Chu Fei Ling clearly felt himself to be a bit shorter in stature. [I just accepted so many gifts from him... but, I didn't even ask about his problems...]

[It's very strange and mysterious that I am carrying back a big pile of heavenly armaments and world-class treasure which usually aren't even found in the Upper Three Heavens. However, I unexpectedly came across them in the Middle Three Heavens...]

" Wait a minute!" Chu Yang hastily called out to stop him. [My filial piety towards my aging mother... you didn't take it away. Take it with you. Why are you in such a hurry?]

"Is there still something that matters?" Chu Fei Ling looked at him and asked. He was flabbergasted.

"This." Chu Yang took out a small vial from his bosom. It was made of purple jade. There was a pill inside it. And, that pill was spinning round and round, "This is an elixir customized for the treatment of chest pains... you take it back with you. It can eliminate the illness from the root. Moreover, it can also increase the cultivation... just like the one you ate... Cough Cough, I wanted to give you a few, but I don't have many more left with me..."

Chu Fei Ling was startled. [Another one?!]

[But this one... is actually required... After all, it is related to the health of my wife. I must accept it no matter what! But, this medicine is so precious...]

"Please tell... Madam, that... there's no need to worry. Tell her to be relaxed in her heart. You will eventually find your son. Maybe her son is also a young hero with brilliant and outstanding bearing... cough..." Chu Yang spoke shamelessly, "Let me say that the younger generations will do just fine on their own... This might as well be a part of ups and down in his life. The key point is – the one who endures his way through these hardships becomes the top dog... I can't say for sure when... but maybe her son will return home himself..."

"I hope so..." Chu Fei Ling heaved a deep sigh. He then said, "If only that 'puppy' of ours... can be half as good as you brother... Ah, I and my wife will have no regrets in our life if he can be even a fraction of what you are..."

['Puppy'?] Minister Chu's mouth twitched.

"Uh, of course he will have boundless future prospects... And, I'm sure that he's handsome, confident, and dashing. He's a promising young talent with grace and class. Girls go crazy about him when they see him..." Young Master Chu's face turned red as he continued to boast in a fluent manner.

Young Master Chu was constantly hypnotizing himself while was saying these words. [I am Tan Tan, I am Tan Tan...]

"Thank you very much for your auspicious words brother!" Chu Fei Ling carefully put the purple jade vial in his bosom. He held the saber in one hand, and the sword in the other. The Mysterious Yang Jade Core and two incomplete Nine Tribulations Pills were also safely kept in his bosom. So, he was fully prepared to return home from this rewarding journey...

"Wait a moment..." Chu Yang seemed wistful, "You must remember to keep these things a secret. Don’t tell anyone..."

"I know, ha ha..." Chu Fei Ling put on a clever smile, "Wouldn’t I put my brother in trouble if I told someone about this? Don’t worry. This will stay between you and me. No one will know... expect the heaven."

"That's great then. That’s great." Chu Yang was relieved.

"Brother, I must go back now." Chu Fei Ling firmly clutched Chu Yang's hand, and shook it forcefully, "You must visit the Chu residence whenever you come to the Upper Three Heavens... do not forget. You must come and visit your elder brother..."

"Definitely, definitely!" Chu Yang nodded again and again. Hearing the terms ‘brother, elder brother’ had nearly given Chu Yang a cancer.

"One more thing... this medicine... it can shield your energy core. So, the others can’t make out your cultivation..."

Chu Fei Ling would take one step forward. Then, he’d turn his head three times to look back. He was clearly reluctant to leave. However, he finally disappeared.

Young Master Chu’s entire body suddenly collapsed, and landed butt-first on the ground...

Chapter 454: A Timely Meeting with the Second Master Ji!

Chu Yang didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. He threw himself onto the ground, and fiercely pounded the ground with his hands, "My mother... my father... you may be gone... but it’s still suffocating me to death... And, what’s with this thing of calling ‘Big Brother’?"

Young Master Chu was stuck in a chaotic loop of crying, laughing, and shouting to no end. He vented out his frustration for a while. Then, he eventually got exhausted. He got up, and looked at the surrounding scenery. He surprisingly felt strange, and unpleasant. In fact, he felt as if his heart was empty a split-second later.

He felt as if something was missing. However, he also felt as if he had obtained something. In short, his mood had become awfully odd!

He continued to sit there for a long time with his hands supporting his chin. He seemed in a daze. His mental state was a chaos. It seemed as if thousands of things were wandering around in his mind at the same time. But, there was no definite thought present therein...

"You are finally complete." The Sword Spirit heaved a deep sigh in his thought, "Congratulations, the Great Lord of the Nine Tribulations Sword. Your inner demon has completely disappeared! Only some obsessions remain now..."

"I am complete?" Chu Yang reacted involuntarily in bewilderment.

"Yes. Being abandoned by your parents had always been your inner demon... You’ve never said it... but, this deep resentment has always been in your heart. You may have not noticed it, but

you always got jealous each time you saw others with their parents! So basically... you were jealous of everyone!" Sword Spirit mercilessly continued, "This is also the reason why you didn't accept Wu Qian Qian..."

"No one could've removed this resentment from your heart... except your parents! And, this inner demon of yours would've burned you to ashes if you had maintained this resentment by the time you had entered the Saint level!" Sword Spirit continued to speak in a delightful tone, "But, even I didn't expect that the inner demon in your heart would get eliminated so early."

"I see. Sword Spirit, tell me... was it right to not acknowledge my parents now?" Chu Yang had been troubled in his heart this entire time. [My parents have been suffering for my sake for the last 18 years! My mother has been suffering with chest pains over the past 18 years. Even 10,000 Nine Tribulations Pills can't possibly heal that...]

Chu Yang felt sad when he thought about the misery of his parents' life during the last 18 years.

[I am far more fortunate than my parents in this regard. And, that's because I at least had a teacher even though I was an orphan! Moreover, I was always full of hate about this matter!]

[Being full of hate is undoubtedly far better than being full of desperation and hope... especially the one that's driven by love.]

[My loving mother's heart must've been constantly torn to shred because of experiencing these desperations and hopes for 18 years straight. Her heart must've and bled all the time... how can an ordinary person endure that kind of pain?]

"Right! This is absolutely right!" Sword Spirit spoke-up in a certain manner, "Don't feel psychologically pressured because you feel like an un-filial child for not acknowledging your parents. In fact, returning to your birth clan and recognizing your ancestors would be the biggest un-filial piety on your part!"

"Filial piety... un-filial piety..." Chu Yang murmured with a vacant look in his eyes.

"You are the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword! You are the only one in the entire Nine Heavens. This means that you can't throw away this responsibility. You may not wish to bear this responsibility, but fate will push you to it." Sword Spirit spoke slowly, "You don't have the ability to protect your clan at the moment. Let's presume that you return to your birth clan and recognize your ancestors. You then eat, and peacefully wait for your death. But, someone will inevitably look up the origin of the Eldest Young Master Chu even if you don't get involved in anything.

"At that time... everything about you will be dug out... including about you being a disciple of Beyond the Heavens Sect. And, the fact that you were originally an orphan who later took the form of King of Hell Chu, and then jumped from Martial Master Level to Sword King Level within one-and-a-half year...

"At that time, the nine ruling clans would be searching for the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master, and you will end up being the top suspect!" Sword Spirit continued, "They may not be able to determine that you are Nine Tribulations Sword's Master. But, consider the decisive temperament of the nine super clans... they would rather kill ten thousands innocents, but they won't miss this particular target! That's because the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master is too big a threat to their influence... Therefore, they won't mind destroying the so-called innocent Chu Clan."

Sword Spirit gently continued with a sigh, "You haven't been in touch with the nine super clans. So, you still don't know how dreadful and huge your opponent is. I only ask you this — Diwu Qing Rou was only a person sent by one of the nine super clans... namely the Zhuge Clan. Was he not hard to deal with?"

"He was very hard to deal with!" Chu Yang nodded in acknowledgement. His mood got serious immediately-after. [Diwu

Qing Rou was incredibly hard to deal with. Saying that he was just ‘hard to deal with’ is a blatant understatement.]

"So... find the fourth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword as soon as possible." Sword Spirit said, "You promote your strength quickly, but only after you’ve found the fourth fragment... After that, you must shield your true strength... and take each and every step very cautiously."

Chu Yang pondered for a while. He then spoke slowly, "I want to know... what will happen if I go back to my birth clan and recognize my ancestors... and then live my life peacefully until I die... if I give up on my responsibility as the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword — what will happen in that case?"

"You can’t give up. Because... the consequences of doing that will be... the nine super clans will destroy the Chu Clan, and massacre all your clan members. That would force you set forth on the vengeful path of the Nine Tribulations Sword’s Master. These are the two available roads. You must choose one," Sword Spirit sneered and replied.

Chu Yang was stunned for a long while. Then, he fiercely spat his spittle and spoke, "Fu*k it! I will hand over the Nine Tribulations Sword if worse comes to worst! Can’t I even quit being the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword?"

"You say that you wish to hand it over. Then, why don’t you do it at once?" Sword Spirit snorted in a ridiculing manner, "What are you waiting for? Do it if you really want to! The Chu Clan still won’t survive though. You ought to be the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword! Otherwise, your only option is to die again..."

Chu Yang was absolutely horrified at first. Then, he hung his head dejectedly, "Forget about it then. I won’t recognize my ancestors for now..."

"The key is strength..." Sword Spirit gracefully said, "You can recognize them if you have the strength. But, you hold back if you

don’t have the strength... And, you will have to hold back for the time being, oh Great Sword Lord!"

Chu Yang was unable to restrain his anger. He glared at Sword Spirit and said, "I would beat the sh*t out of you if I weren’t holding back...!"

"You would beat the shit out of me... but only if you can, right?" Sword Spirit chuckled twice. He was quite distressed because Chu Yang had given away so many treasures today. How could he not take advantage of this situation to hit a person who was already down... and that too even more maliciously?

Chu Yang coldly snorted. He patted his buttocks, and stood up. Suddenly, he was in a good mood for some reason.

He paid no attention to the Sword Spirit after that, and moved forwards in big strides. In fact, he nearly floated all the way. He seemed light as a feather, and drifted away using clouds as his mount. He continued to speed to forward while singing at the top of his voice. The song was ‘The Road of Jiang Hu’!

"On this road, there’s no fear of mountains of blades and oceans of fire;

On this road, Jiang Hu has nine chances of death and one chance of life;

On this road, we laugh at all under the heavens,

On this road, go straight to the Nine Heavens without turning back.

On this road, don’t mind the heavens, but fight it;

On this road, let life escape fate!

On this road, I will hold Qing Wu’s hand and laugh at life,

On this road, I will certainly overturn the Nine Heavens!"

Chu Yang scraped past the earth like a gust of wind, and he sung loudly the entire way. He finally saw a jungle up ahead. He got

excited, and proceeded inward... singing loudly on his journey...

Suddenly, someone cussed in a broken gong-like voice, "Ahwooh... Dog Aunt! Who's this stupid cu*t that's howling? Motherfu*ker... has disturbed Second Master Ji's mood to take a dump. This man is courting death..."

Chu Yang was startled at first. Then, a profound and smiling expression appeared on his face. And then, he suddenly flew into a rage...

"Ahwooh... Dog Aunt! Motherfu*ker... this Second Master Ji is already depressed over the fight to snatch the wife... and here comes a punching bag... just in time..." a strange shout was heard. Then, a thin guy rushed out from the woods. He was pulling his pants with one hand, and was holding his waistband with the other. He was walking proudly with his noise pointing towards the sky. His golden saber was dragging against the ground, and had made a long trail in the middle of the road. He suddenly barked loudly, "Ahwooh... who's that su*ker?!"

Chu Yang grunted as he slowly walked over. He put on a fake smile on his face as he said, "Oh ho, isn't that Second Master Ji? Second Young Master Ji, you are surely tyrannical..."

"Ahwooh... Of course! It's only natural! Second Master Ji has always been famous in the Middle Three Heavens... uh... eh?!" Ji Mo spoke disdainfully with his nose still pointed towards the sky. But, he suddenly felt something was off. He felt that this voice seemed a little familiar. He quickly opened his eyes, lowered his head to look straight ahead, and suddenly let out a scream. His feet abruptly convulsed, and jumped up from the ground. It seemed as if he had received an electric shock or something, "What the! Fu*k my mother... Why are you here?!"

"It is precisely me, why?" Chu Yang crossed his arms and sneered eerily, "Could it be that Second Master Ji has come out to investigate why I have disturbed his mood of taking a dump?"

"Oh sh*t, damn it ah..." Ji Mo’s face turned red as a melon. A myriad of juices squeezed out of his nose and eyes. He rolled his eyes. Then, he immediately wore a flattering smile on his face, and trot over with jolting buttocks...

He nodded his head and bowed. Then, he said in a flattering manner, "Oh my fu*king god... I am still thinking who can sing in such a nice and pleasant voice. It was like the voice of an angel...! A voice that’s seldom heard in the mortal world! Ah... I'm enchanted. I am truly and madly intoxicated..."

He rocked his from side to side... as if he was truly in an enchanted state. Then, he continued to flatter, "I was so shocked that I hurriedly come out to meet with this almighty being... my mind was totally blown away...!"

Ji Mo put on an expression that made it seem as if he was shocked to the extreme. His expression made it seem as if he admired Chu Yang to the extreme... it also conveyed that he had messed up to the extreme, "I was truly baffled at moment ago. Wow, it’s actually my Big Brother! My Dear Big Brother... Oh... Big Brother Chu! Your little brother really admires you. I admire you so much that I prostrate myself in admiration. My admiration for you is endless like an everlasting river..."

Then, he immediately pretended to look unhappy and continued, "But, Big Brother is too much... how can you be mysterious to such an extent? I would never have been lucky enough in my whole life to hear such a beautiful and elegant voice if I hadn’t fortunately heard you singing! Your voice is filled with vigor, and it also has a heroic feel to it..."

He then approached him rubbing his hands, and continued enthusiastically, "Big Brother... oh... I missed you so much that I thought I would die. My Dead Big Brother..." Chu Yang suddenly got goose bumps all over his body. That creepy feeling then crawled under his skin, and left him to tremble. He soon had a nauseating feeling. The muscles in his thigh convulsed as a result.

He couldn’t help but lift his leg to kick maliciously…

It took time to describe, but it happened very quickly. Second Master Ji had already turned around and stuck out his buttocks with a look of flattery on his face, "Big Brother, you must cool your temper… kick here… I have wiped my ass just a moment ago… it’s very clean… he he…"

Chu Yang smiled wryly at first. Then, he put down his foot down, "Forget it, I forgive you! Motherfu*ker, this is so disgusting!"

Ji Mo cheered up. He threw himself at Chu Yang, and clung to his neck as he spoke cheerfully, "Wa ha ha ha… Big Brother, you finally came! And, that to at such a crucial time…! I am fighting to win over my wife at this critical juncture… this is indeed a timely assistance… Dog Aunt…"

Chapter 455: Ji Mo's Romantic Outlook and Love Affair

"Let go..." Chu Yang wasn't happy. So, he suddenly threw him to one side and asked, "What's the matter?"

"He he..." Ji Mo released his hands from clinging around his neck. But, he then held Chu Yang's arm in an affectionate manner. His face was filled with excitement. He obviously hadn't recovered from the pleasant surprise of meeting Chu Yang after a long period of separation. He giggled for a while before he finally managed to recover...

"Big Brother, when did you come?"

"I've arrived recently... not more than four or five days ago." Chu Yang glared at him. He felt creepy over his entire body. So, he tried to pull his arm away. [This guy is holding too tight. I can't even pull my arm away.]

Ji Mo was still holding his arm. He led Chu Yang to walk steadily, and excitedly. His held his head high the entire way, and continued to giggle the entire way.

"You still haven't said..." Chu Yang used the entirety of his effort, and struggled to break free. And, he eventually managed to pull his arm away. [Motherfu*ker, my skin has turned red from his grip.] "What's this 'snatching the wife' thing? I heard you wish to snatch Gao Sheng's wife? Is that true...?"

"Yes. It's true!" It seemed as if Ji Mo had suddenly been awakened from a dream. He recalled that incident, and then jumped to the front of Chu Yang with a 'swoosh'. He stood in a bow-legged manner, and then raised his hands and let out a strange cry, "Ahwooh... Dog Aunt! Big Brother, I've found my youthful spring! Waa..."

Chu Yang was left speechless. [This guy is beyond saving at this

point. I can’t bear see him like this. He looks like a ‘monkey in heat’...]

"Found your youthful spring...?" Chu Yang recalled the burly, tall, and strong appearance of the valiant Huyan Aobo. And then, he looked at this skinny guy Ji Mo... Ji Mo looked like a scurrying chicken. Chu Yang compared the two in his mind, and couldn’t help but feel dizzy. He even found it hard to swallow his saliva, "That Young Miss... Huyan?"

"Right!" Ji Mo excitedly clapped his hands, and they issued a loud 'clap' sound. He seemed radiant with delight. Even his eyes showed that he longed for something, "Big Brother, remember that you once said that when you see your beloved girl... your heartbeats will go faster... you will even find the cold wind intoxicating... the sunshine will look brighter and beautiful... the world will become more colorful, and the flowers give more fragrance... I experienced the same things..."

Ji Mo was full of a poet’s bearing as he gasped happily, "I met her, and I finally understood that true love actually exists in this world! Love! What a sacred word it is! Ah...! My love! Ah...! My youthful spring! Ah...!"

Chu Yang had been driven beyond the limits of forbearance. He kicked that guy on his butt, and sent him flying above the clouds, "Get lost! You are making me sick!"

Ji Mo screamed as he went flying into the sky. Then, he fell flat on his face on the ground. However, he quickly got up with his saliva smeared over his face. He rushed back and complained, "Big brother! You can't get rid of my persistent pursuit of love! That's inhumane!"

Chu Yang looked up to the sky, and heaved a deep sigh...

"I shall persevere even if you use violence to obstruct me, and I shall still struggle for my love till the end!" Ji Mo clenched his fist, and made a solemn vow.

"Well..." Chu Yang shook his head helplessly... "That Young Miss Huyan..... what about her appearance?"

Ji Mo's eyes suddenly lit up when he heard the words 'Young Miss Huyan'. He began to drool as he literally roared out, "Beautiful! Very beautiful!"

In fact, his body shook vigorously with each word he spoke!

Chu Yang once again recalled her in his mind... Then, he lowered his head, and helplessly asked, "Beautiful... in what way?"

"Beautiful in every way! Just beautiful!" Ji Mo opened his eyes wide. He was breathing deeply. His two eyes narrowed as a look of fascination appeared on his face. This clearly showed that he was lost in recollection, and was yearning for that Young Miss Huyan...

"Big Brother... you don't know..." Ji Mo narrowed his eyes as described in a dream-like tone while making gestures with his hands. He opened-up his ten fingers, made two big bowl shapes with them, and covered his chest with them, "Huge here..."

Then, he slid his hands down from his chest. His hands slowly went to his hips with a supple and graceful movement. He wriggled his waist like a snake as he wiggled from side to side, and gently caressed and fondled his buttocks, "... big and round here..."

Chu Yang looked at him with disgust. [It’s really unbelievable that this guy is making such gestures. I would’ve thrown up if it weren’t for my excellent mental strength...]

Ji Mo was still in that enchanted state, "Moreover... I feel safe when I am with her..."

Chu Yang shook his head helplessly. He retched once. Then, he turned around and walked away.

"Big Brother... Big Brother Chu... Why are you going away?" Ji Mo quickly jumped in front of him to block his path... He bitterly looked at him, "This reaction of yours is hurting my heart... a heart that’s deeply immersed in love..."

Chu Yang closed his eyes... He seemed very much at a loss as he replied, "Second Master Ji... You may not know, but I was hurt by you today.... When you first cried out loud about your love and spring..."

"I have changed!" Ji Mo resolutely raised his hand, "Changing me any further is out of the question..."

Chu Yang sighed, and walked forward. He tried to dig deeper and said, "What the hell happened? Tell me. And, you better not provoke me again, you cu*t. Be careful, or I will unite with the other brothers, and set you straight!"

"Please don't... please don't..." Ji Mo suddenly panicked, and followed after him. In fact, he continuously begged for mercy, "I haven't seen you for quite a long time. So, I obviously got excited when I saw you today... And just look at me! You look at me, Big Brother! I'm at the King Level! King Level ah..." He said this, and then curled up his arms and bulged his muscles. He beamed with joy as he shot a series of coquettish glances at Chu Yang.

Chu Yang was completely helpless... [Motherfuc*er... why did I have to become sworn brothers with such a guy...? I have never met such an unvirtuous guy...]

"Explain in a decent manner!" Chu Yang was driven beyond the limits of forbearance. So, he shouted violently!

"Eh... it happened like this..." Ji Mo complied as instructed, and began to tell about his love affair.

It turned out that the Eldest Young Master Ji Zhu had fought several battles ever since Ji Mo and Ji Zhu had led their troops to the Cang Lan Battlefront. And, he had managed to occupy an advantageous position as a result. After that, he had set up the barracks, and had committed himself entirely to the sickness called 'laziness'.

Ji Mo would see his elder brother picking his feet every day,

getting drunk, and sleeping the entire time. He would get drunk even after he'd wake up. Ji Mo was totally helpless. Ji Mo was also lazy in his own merit, but he was still marginally more diligent than his elder brother... Moreover, he couldn't stand to spend every day with his disgusting elder brother.

Therefore, he had volunteered for military service, and had intended to move out for hunting spirit beasts for the convenience of honing his martial arts.

Ji Zhu had shouted at that time, and had spoken in a drunken state... [then, you get lost at once...]

Thus, Ji Mo 'got lost' right away.

Second Master Ji went out alone. In fact, he made a big name in the Cang Lan Battlefront. However... he ran into the 'Fair Sex Corps' of Huyan Aobo's right before he was about to hunt a sixth grade spirit beast.

And, both sides fought endlessly to compete over the sixth grade spirit beast.

Second Master Ji got surrounded, and was attacked by hundreds of beautiful women. He lost in the end, and got captured... Ji Mo seemed quite embarrassed after he had explained until here. He then raised his face to look at Chu Yang with an ashamed smile, "Big Brother, I brought you shame. I was actually captured by a group of women. But, those women were very strong. Motherfu*ker, each of them was as tough as a man..."

"Fu*k! Keep talking!" Chu Yang's face turned black as he twisted his brows and shouted.

"Yes, yes." Ji Mo complied. He wiped his sweat, and then continued to talk.

The Second Master Ji got captured, and Huyan Aobo realized that this extremely lazy and naughty fellow wasn't pleasant to the eye at all. So, she decided to teach him a lesson. Anyways, she

hadn’t planned to release him from the start.

However, Second Master Ji was heroic and unbending. He continued to cuss day and night; nonstop. And, the females of the Huyan Clan had been deeply troubled by this…

Huyan Aobo looked tall and sturdy, and seemed just like a man. But, it didn’t matter what the others said about her. She was still an unmarried virgin girl, and the eldest daughter of a big clan. She was the real deal…

Therefore, her anger erupted. She burst into the place where Ji Mo was being kept hostage, and ruthlessly put him in order. However, the more Second Master Ji got hit… the more enthusiastically he cussed and roared. His entire body was covered with bruises and cuts, but his mouth hardly stopped…

Young Miss Huyan got tired of beating him up, and was left to gasp for breath. The Second Master Ji suddenly begged for mercy at this time, and put forward a condition… [I am thirsty. I won’t cuss as long as you give me enough water to drink…]

Chu Yang heard till here and smiled. [I wouldn’t give him water if it were me…]

However, Huyan Aobo felt that this guy was the Second Young Master of the mighty Ji Clan… and yet, he was feeling apologetic. She saw that Ji Mo had the tendency of admitting defeat, and she decided to give him a helping hand… So, she gave him some water to drink…

However, she hadn’t thought that Ji Mo would unexpectedly make good use of the throat that he had moistened just now, and would start to cuss even more intensely right after…

Huyan Aobo had always been proud of her wisdom and competence. She was always used it to rival those of men. But, this guy had tricked her well. She flew into a rage out of humiliation, and tortured him even more… literally to the point of death.

However, Second Master Ji's stance was as follows... [it doesn't matter what you do to me. I will keep abusing you as long as you don't cut off my tongue!]

[And, I will beat you up if you let me go!]

However, Huyan Aobo couldn't dare to kill Ji Mo since he was the Second Young Master of Ji clan. So, she merely had fun beating him up to her heart's content... However, the more she hit him... the more fiercely he cussed...

And, the two of them eventually got exhausted!

However, Huyan Aobo still didn't let him go, but she had come to admire his toughness and unyielding attitude very much by now. [The so-called 'pampered sons of wealthy clans' have been pampered since childhood. But, how many of them are as tough as Ji Mo? I've been engaged to Gao Sheng since childhood. But, even my own fiancé didn't dare to take responsibility, and escaped...]

These two were already tired and muddleheaded by then. So, they no longer cussed or hit each other. And then, Huyan Aobo began to tend to Ji Mo's wounds...

Ji Mo nearly fainted from happiness. The opposite party had beaten him up for cussing, and didn't seem to care much about him until a while ago. But, she was being good to him now... He enjoyed this treatment very much. He remained there for several days... under the kindness of this 'beautiful' woman... Then, that inexplicable incident finally occurred one day...

The Second Master Ji was enjoying the service of 'Great Beauty' Huyan that day, and couldn't help but speak in a pleased manner, "It feels good. I will feel blessed if I get to marry you in the future. Not only will I get a beautiful companion, but I will also have a sense of security."

He hadn't expected that Young Miss Huyan would give this reply to his complement for some inexplicable reason, "Do you wish to

have this blessing?" After that, Ji Mo had replied, "I earnestly wish for it..."

These two were startled by this. They then gave it a thought together, [Crap! This thing... is possible ah!]

Afterwards, Young Miss Huyan told him everything about her engagement with Gao Sheng. Second Master Ji heard her story, and waved his hand bravely as he said, "Fu*k that guy. Don’t you worry! I'll deal with him! You just wait to be my wife now..."

Thereafter...

Second Master Ji made a public appeal... and caused a mess. Furthermore, it was going to create a bigger mess...

Chapter 456: Noisy and Chaotic…

Young Master Gao Sheng of the Gao Clan had always been dissatisfied with his proposed marriage. In fact, he hadn't even hesitated to revolt against his clan for this reason. He had fled to the Lower Three Heavens to hang out with Diwu Qing Rou because he didn't wish to accept that he had such a fiancée…

Therefore, Gao Sheng should've felt relieved after finding out that Ji Mo had taken a fancy to Huyan Aobo. More so since this attraction was mutual! This should've removed a heavy burden from his heart at the very least.

However, this assumption would be grossly mistaken!

[I can't accept my own fiancée… and that's one thing since it's something I don't wish to do. However, allowing someone other guy to snatch my wife… is something I can't allow even if I die!]

Moreover, this marriage also involved the issue of alliance between the Huyan clan and the Gao Clan. And, this alliance obviously wouldn't exist if Huyan Aobo married Ji Mo. Then, the Huyan Clan would wish to be allied with the Ji Clan instead.

Moreover, Gao Clan and Ji Clan had never seen eye to eye to make matters worse… Wouldn't this become the reason behind the creation of two formidable enemies?

Also, Young Master Gao couldn't afford to lose face. There was a rumor buzzing around in the entire Middle Three Heavens at the moment… [Wow! Holy cow! This is awesome! The Second Master Ji – Ji Mo – is going to snatch Gao Sheng's wife… she's Young Miss Aobo of the Huyan Clan…]

What sort of a fu*king rumor was this? Things hadn't even begun to take shape between these two. She was merely his fiancée; that's all. However, all hell broke loose upon Young Master Gao when this rumor spread around…

[This won't bring extraordinary shame and humiliation to me alone... but also to my clan! And, that's intolerable!]

Young Master Gao got furious!

Then, he issued a declaration: [She's my fiancée in name... even if I don't want her! Ji Mo, why are you poking your nose where it doesn't belong? You and your Ji Clan are trying to humiliate me. How can I possibly 'take things lying down'? I must clarify the fact before the world heroes that I wish a face-to-face apology! In addition, I also want the Ji Clan to compensate for the loss of my honor and moral integrity...]

Ji Mo obviously didn't agree. And, the two sides found themselves in a deadlock. However... one mustn't forget that there were many spectators to this show!

And, the spectators were mostly wishing to stir up trouble. Therefore, a buzz spread everywhere, and incited everyone. It said that these two men were going to fight a decisive battle...

Then, an extremely crucial character appeared at the most crucial moment! This turned to be the figure that reversed the entire situation. Moreover, it was also a person who wanted for the entire world to be in chaos. Moreover, this character was undisciplined and 'out of control' by his very nature — Luo Ke Di!

This Second Young Master Luo openly stood-up in support of Ji Mo. He got drunk in a restaurant on a certain day, and announced loudly — [What! This Gao Sheng doesn't know how to appreciate someone's kindness! Ji Mo has taken a fancy to your wife... that's to give you face! But, this still isn't enough for that unforgiving cu*t! He needs to be spanked! I shall be the first one to slap him if he dares to make such impractical demands! In any case, Ji Mo will sincerely pursue his love with the utmost dedication, and I have decided to give him my complete support. In fact, I won't hesitate to beat the crap out of that jerk Gao Sheng if I have to...]

Luo Ke Di's proclamation detonated across the entire land!

Luo Ke Di had recently made his fame as the 'Wolf Sword King'. Moreover, he had also been included among the top ten experts of the younger generation. Luo Clan's influence had also increased in accordance to it. His remark had made one thing very clear — the Luo Clan was supporting the Ji Clan!

Gao Clan's anger obviously exploded because of this. In fact, even the people of the Luo Clan got so angry that their visions darkened. [Isn't this the fu*king decision of the clan! The clan hasn't even discussed on this matter to reach a resolution, and Second Young Master Luo has taken the decision on his own... as if he represents the entire clan!]

The Young Master Meng Luo of the Meng Clan came forward in support of Gao Sheng immediately-after. However, that was followed by the strong emergence of Dong Clan's Dong Wu Shang. He brandished his black saber to indicate his standpoint to the world — [I support Ji Mo!]

Li Clans' Li Xiong Tu had always burned with jealousy, and had always desired to take revenge on Dong Wu Shang. So, he also joined-in when he heard that Gao Sheng's wife was going to be snatched... especially since that extremely arrogant and hot-headed Dong Wu Shang was among the snatchers.

Thereupon, six influential clans had gotten involved in this!

Gu Du Xing made an unexpected appearance at this key moment. He emerged like a dark horse, and coldly announced to the world, "Who dares to go against my brother's quest to get his wife? Gao Sheng's wife is going to be snatched because he isn't matured enough. Why would you people wish to follow that guy?"

The Middle Three Heavens had flared up!

Gu Du Xing had emerged as the representative of this young generation, but he had a rival named Tu Qian Hao. His old rival Tu Qian Hao obviously didn't hesitate to join Gao Clan, Li Clan etcetera's camp. His motive could be distinctly put in a few

words… [I have come to deal with Gu Du Xing!]

Now, Middle Three Heavens was left to boil through and through.

The eight big clans reached an agreement on a certain day… the two sides would assemble atop the Dingjun Mountain in Cang Lan Battlefront as per this agreement, and would decide ‘whom the beauty belongs to’ thereupon! A total of eight battles would decide the outcome. The eight clans would each send two people to have a fight with the opposite side. And, the final battle would take place between Ji Mo and Gao Sheng!

This drama had initially been about two Young Masters of aristocratic clans rivaling each other for the affection of a woman. However, it had unexpectedly engulfed the entire Middle Three Heavens…

Because –

Because of Young Master Ao Xie Yun, Young Master Xie Dan Qiong, Young Master Ou Du Xiao, and Young Master Mo Tian Yun… These four people were unwilling to be left out. They also joined-in. Anyway, there was nothing significant happening in the Middle Three Heavens. Three Stars Divine clans had also drawn back for the time being, and there were no signs of the emergence of any significant disturbance in the foreseeable future. So, how could these young masters be willing to remain silent?

These four young masters remained neutral, but they worked as one to arrange a big gambling joint — bet on Ji Mo and Gao Sheng. Who will win and who will lose! Make a choice if you’re interested, and place the bet. It doesn’t matter how much you bet. All amounts are accepted here!

And, the people of Dark Bamboo had also taken advantage of this opportunity to establish an underground betting house. Young Master Yu had personally assumed command like a great hero looking disdainfully on this world…

Thereupon, the Middle Three Heaven began to boil even more thoroughly!

The day of battle was still half-a-month away at present...

The world heroes would surely gather on the Dingjun Mountain at the appointed time. And, that would surely be a lively gathering! The clan of assassins – the Black Devil Clan – had also started to dispatch their assassins since many assassination targets would appear over there. So, they might make lots of money...

Ji Mo and his elder brother had already set out to go there, and had arrived near the Raging Fire Mountain Range on the second day itself. But, Ji Mo had an urgent need to answer the 'call of nature'. So, he found a patch of woods, and went in to finish the job. And, he ran into Chu Yang when he came out...

Ji Mo spoke until here, and his explanation came to an end.

Chu Yang's entire body twitched after he had heard all of it. In fact, his belly was full of cramps. [So, it was all true?]

"How many of you have agreed to meet there?" Chu Yang had a warm feeling in his heart. He hadn't anticipated that several of his brothers would be involved in this farce.

"Everyone is walking towards the Dingjun Mountain. It has been agreed that we'll meet at the foot of the Dingjun Mountain. However, it is certain that we'll come across several people on the way... and, those people can be friends or enemies." Ji Mo laughed heartily in a carefree manner.

"I see. Is there any news about Rui Bu Tong?" Chu Yang asked.

"I heard that the Ninth Grade Spirit Beasts have appeared in the Ice and Snow Wilderness located in the extreme north. Many King Level and Emperor Level experts of the Middle Three Heavens have been killed by the Ninth Grade Spirit Beasts. These Ninth Grade Spirit Beasts have become the biggest threat ever since the Three Stars Divine Clans have made their temporary retreat...

Stealing God and Thieving Ghost, and the other high-level experts have rushed there. In fact, we have gathered troops under the pretext of this duel. But, we will also rush there after it's over."

Ji Mo spoke with a dreamy look in his eyes, "Big Brother, a Ninth Grade Spirit Beast – if caught – will make an excellent mount, right...? It will be very eye-catching."

"Yeah! It will be eye-catching indeed. It will just turn its head, and swallow you whole. Not even the dregs of your body will remain afterwards!" Chu Yang nodded, and replied. Meanwhile, he thought about the 12 influential figures of this generation of Middle Three Heavens... [Black Devil, Dark Bamboo, Lone Traveler, Poison Spirit, Heavenly Secret, Li Xiong Tu, Black Saber, Qian Hao, Young Master Xie, Meng Luo, Jade Flower, Tian Bu Ru...]

[Nine of them are already involved in this event at present. The only remaining three mysterious characters are... the Black Devil Clan's young representative – Young Black Devil, the leader of Dark Bamboo – Jun Xi Zhu, and the one placed at the bottom of this list – Tian Bu Ru.]

[It's indeed a grand gathering.]

They chatted as they moved ahead, and eventually caught up with the Ji Clan's troops. After that, Chu Yang found out that there was a carriage in this procession! And, it was being pulled steadily forward by eight horses...

"My elder brother's inside it... Cough Cough, my elder brother doesn't wish to walk..." Ji Mo shamefully introduced his brother.

A lazy sounding voice came from the carriage at this moment, "Second Master Ji, are you back from your 's*it break'?"

"Elder Brother, I brought back a VIP with me!" Ji Mo's face turned black as he replied.

A rustling sound transmitted from inside the carriage. This was

followed by the curtains being raised...

Ji Mo vigorously jumped to the side at a lightning speed...

However, Chu Yang didn't know what was coming. He was still waiting for Ji Mo to initiate the introduction. However, a thick 'foot stink' suddenly blew over, and choked him once the curtains were raised. It stirred-up his stomach in an instant, and he nearly threw up. His face had already distorted from disgust...

Meanwhile, Ji Mo's schadenfreude laugh sounded from the side.

Two incredibly stinky bare-feet stretched out first. And then, Eldest Young Master Ji Zhu appeared outside the carriage. His hair looked like chicken's nest. His half-open lapel was revealing a bunch of black chest-hair. His pants were rolled up, and were revealing his two furry legs. He had gotten off the carriage in this manner...

"This is..." Ji Zhu looked at Chu Yang with blinking eyes. He couldn't see properly. So, he reached out with his hand, and broke-off the eye-crusts from the corners of his eyes...

"This is my Big Brother!" Ji Mo jumped over from the side, and waved his hand to issue commands, "You all, step aside, step aside, don't block the wind... let the stink blow away from here..."

"Myself Chu Yang." Chu Yang reluctantly revealed a smile.

"Hello... Hello... Oh my..." Ji Zhu gripped Chu Yang's hands warmly, and shook them repeatedly, "So, this is the famous Big Brother Chu... nice to meet you..."

Chu Yang was dumbstruck. He felt something greasy and sticky in his palm...

Ji Mo was dumbfounded as he looked at his elder brother, "Elder Brother, what do I always tell you... not to be too friendly, right?"

"I don't see why not?" Ji Zhu replied in a dismissive manner, "You are bound to become famous in the future since you've

already become their Big Brother!"

Chu Yang remained silent, and merely bowed his head.

Ji Zhu quickly slipped back into his carriage after he had exchanged conventional greetings. The wind was strong outside. So, he must take good care of his skin... the curtains closed with a ‘snap’ sound. Chu Yang still hadn’t turned around. He could still smell the lingering stink. He looked all around, but couldn’t spot the direction from which this stink was coming. Then, he raised his hand and sniffed it. After that, he turned around and retched. His two hands were full of foot stink...

"That’s my elder brother's habit..." Ji Mo said shamefully, "He likes to pick his feet..."

Chu Yang retched for a while... then, he raised his leg, and kicked that bastard to one side. Then, he hurriedly took out a water sack, and scrubbed his hands with all his might. He looked bitterly at that carriage and thought, [This elder brother of Ji Mo’s... is a very talented person! Ah... fu*k fu*k fu*k...!]

....

Mo Clan’s backyard.

Mo Qing Wu was in her room. She hid several gold leaves in her pocket. She raised her small head to ponder. Then, she untied the bowknot from her hair, and placed it next to her bosom. She again pondered for a moment. Then, she took-off her red dress, and put on a black dress...

"Scabbard... you wait here at home ok... I will come back to pick you up when I have free time..." Mo Qing Wu pasted her small face on the tattered scabbard. Her crystal-clear teardrops rolled down...

Chapter 457: Mo Qing Wu Leaves Home

[Leave the clan!]

This had been Mo Qing Wu's persistent desire for more than a year. And, Mo Qing Wu had completely lost hope a few days after the 'marriage proposal' matter.

[I won't get any blessings here! I will only end up getting used as a tool.]

Mo Qing Wu had been naively expecting that her father would change his mind this past year, and that her clan would become amiable to her.

[After all, it's not my fault that my Three Yin Meridians got destroyed. I'm the victim instead! I don't expect my clan to train and nurture me like it used to before. However... at least treat me like a child of this clan...]

[I hadn't offended anyone even when the clan used to put effort into training me back in the day. I would always greet everyone with a smile. Everyone used to praise me for being well-behaved. Then, why are they ignoring me now?]

She had been hoping for a year. But, she had only received despair in return.

The arrival of marriage proposal from the Meng Clan had extinguished the last source of brightness in her heart.

Now, she only wanted to get away from here.

[I must leave here, and go to the Cang Lan Battlefront. Elder Brother Chu Yang's brothers are present there. Everything will be fine as long as I find them. Then, I'll wait there for Elder Brother Chu Yang...]

[But... I can't leave without doing a thorough planning for the journey...]

Therefore, Mo Qing Wu spent several days in planning and making some inquiries. She didn't plan to take away anything that belonged to the clan. Firstly, these things belonged to the Mo Clan. So, she didn't wish to take them away. Secondly... she might get busted if she tried to take anything...

In fact, she even had to leave her most beloved scabbard behind. The Mo Clan's people knew that it was the most beloved treasure of Mo Qing Wu's. So, she wouldn't leave as long as this scabbard was still here.

She thought for a long duration of time. And, she tried to think as far as possible in order to make a thorough plan. She pondered over this matter in her little heart, but she didn't discuss it with anyone...

She looked around the interior of her room one last time... then, she placed a pillow on top of the scabbard. Afterwards, she walked out without showing any signs of being reluctant to leave.

"Mother, I want to go out to play and have fun..." Mo Qing Wu looked at Madam Mo, "I've been rather bored these days..."

"Good, that's good! I will dispatch someone to keep you company when you go out on a stroll." Madam Mo was very pleasantly surprised. She had been anxious in her heart because her daughter was getting more and more depressed lately. Moreover, her little daughter was becoming more and more silent. But, she had finally heaved a sigh of relief now that her daughter had arrived with a request to go out. [At least, her mood will get better...]

"There's no need for that. I'm just going to the nearby meadows to see the flying kites... then, I want to go to the 'Alighting Geese' River to see the flowing river, and play in the water... and, I can also catch some fish while I'm at it!" Mo Qing Wu wore a jolly smile, and pretended to be lively.

"Naughty girl!" Madam Mo replied angrily, "You're such a big girl, but you still wish to play in water and catch fish..." She

pondered for a moment. Then, she said, "Well, alright then. Go, but don't forget to come back before breakfast time."

"It's all right mother... I have a few copper coins on me. I will buy something to eat." Mo Qing Wu took out a few dozen copper coins, and shook them in her palm.

"Ha-ha, go go." Madam Mo also didn't take this seriously.

"Alright... Mother, your daughter is going..." Mo Qing Wu looked at her mother and spoke in a soft voice.

Madam Mo didn't know that the sentence 'Mother, your daughter is going' was her daughter's way of bidding farewell to her for a long time to come. So, she merely caressed her daughter's hair, and replied in a sentimental manner, "Go and have fun... Little Wu, there are things that you must do even if you don't wish to. But, you can't be forced to do them against your will... so, you will have to understand the clan..."

"Yes..." Mo Qing Wu lowered her head. No one saw that the last bit of light in her eyes had quietly extinguished in this moment...

[Understand the clan? By sacrificing myself...? I want to understand the clan but... what should I do?]

She thought for a while with her head lowered. Then, she walked out. Madam Mo sighed gently behind her... Madam Mo had been married-off at an early age because of her poor aptitude. She used to think that her daughter would lead a happy life because she had the inborn 'Three Yin Meridians'. However, she hadn't thought that her daughter... would ultimately meet the same fate as herself...

Mo Qing Wu cheerfully walked out of the small courtyard. Her small face looked bright and lively. She greeted everyone she saw on her way out with a sweet smile.

Then, she went out of the Mo Clan's front-gate.

In fact, she even hugged the two guardian lion statues for a while

as she walked out of the front gate. Then, she jumped to climb on the head of a stone lion, and stood on tiptoes to look in the direction of her home...

The bodyguards on guarding-duty smiled slightly when they saw this. [Young Miss is already 11 years old. She's a big girl now. Yet, she's so naughty...]

"I'm leaving..." Mo Qing Wu waved her hand at the guards with a smile on her face. Then, she turned her head, and cheerfully ran away...

Mo Qing Wu's eyes had turned red in the moment she had turned her head. She bit her lip with the entirety of her strength; she was trying her best to not burst-out crying. Then, she raised her head, and looked at the morning sun that had risen a moment ago. The beautiful sunlight was falling on her floating hair, and had turned her hair pale golden in color.

She walked cheerfully, and arrived at the garden that was located behind the Mo Clan. Mo Qing Wu rested her chin on her hands, and spent a while looking at the 8 or 9-year-old children playing there. Then, she headed east and went to the Alighting Geese River's bank. She lay on her stomach to lean her head over the river... as if she was looking for something...

After that, she quickly smeared something on her face when no one was looking. And, her beautiful, cute and small face immediately turned black because of the black paint she had just applied on it.

She saw that a boat was leisurely sailing over from afar. A few people stood on the prow of the boat. Their hands were crossed behind their back, and they seemed to be enjoying the scenery on both sides...

Afterwards, Mo Qing Wu jumped and went up to the riverbed. She looked at the people on that boat with rapt attention at first. Then, she felt somewhat relieved, and exerted her strength to

beckon the boat.

The boat stopped, and an old man walked out. He had a square-shaped face, and big ears. His beard and hair were white in their entirety. He looked rather surprised to see her, "Little girl, you..."

"I want to go home..." Mo Qing Wu said with a sad look on her face and reddened eyes, "My home is located there. I must go along the river to get there... Grandpa, would you please give me a ride? I will give you money..."

She said this, and took out a broken piece of silver tael. After that, she pitifully looked at the old man...

One must never expose one's valuables to the others. Mo Qing Wu had learnt this point well-enough.

"Poor girl, have you separated from your family?" The old man sighed in sympathy, "Come on up, I will give you a ride, little girl. I don't want any money from you..."

"Thank you Grandpa..." The cute-little Mo Qing Wu courteously moved forward, and cheerfully embarked the boat. Then, her small body got concealed in the hold of the boat...

"My home is located 100 Km or 50 Km away from here... towards the Willow River Town..." Mo Qing Wu blinked and innocently said, "My daddy does business. I followed after him to play. But then, I saw a monkey and followed it to play with it. But, I couldn't find daddy afterwards..."

"Willow River Town ah..." This old man was obviously a very kind-hearted man. Moreover, he seemed to adore children. This was also the reason why Mo Qing Wu had dared to embark on this boat...

"Next time... you mustn't run around on your own, ok? There are lots bad people out there... poor girl." The old man sighed and stoked her head, "Would you like to eat something, little girl? You must be hungry, right?"

"Yes..." She nodded in a timid manner.

The old man was just an ordinary merchant. So, there was no need to be worried. However, Mo Qing Wu would habitually insert her hand into the bowl each time before she ate or drank... there was a ring on her finger. It seemed like an ordinary ring, but it was actually a Poison Testing Ring.

She was extremely cautious despite the fact that she was so young... [I will never be able to see Brother Chu Yang if I got nabbed by someone on the way...]

She secretly looked from inside the hold of the boat towards the Mo Clan's territory; it was getting farther and farther away. A determined look appeared in her eyes as she bit her lip... [I might have regretted leaving my home earlier... but now, I have no choice but to leave.]

[Mo Clan... it will no longer have the person named Mo Qing Wu.]

[Mother, take care of yourself!]

They eventually reached the Willow River Town. Mo Qing Wu politely bid farewell to the old man, and came ashore. She waved her hand in good bye. Then, she disappeared into the willow forest... The old man watched her as she walk into the distance. The look on his face clearly showed that he didn't wish to part with her. He had spent a very short period of time with her. But, his heart was already full of love for this cute little girl...

"Senior, this Young Miss... has been intensely vigilant the entire journey," his bodyguard stepped over from behind him, and warned him.

"That doesn't matter. This little girl is away from her home. She is bound to be vigilant," the old man replied in a disapproving manner. Then, he gently stroked his beard, and said with a smile, "If only this old man could have such a granddaughter..." he

muttered and heaved a deep sigh.

…. ….

Mo Qing Wu found a market in the Willow River Town. She bought a set of grey clothes for men. Then, she changed clothes, put on a hat, and dyed her face bronze. Her immature and fragile body – that hadn't begun to develop yet – suddenly began to look like the lean body of a typical young master of some random clan…

Then, she inquired around, and found a stable of horses and mules. She paid 12 silver taels, and hired a horse-drawn carriage. She then travelled east. She ate and lived in the carriage itself…

Mo Qing Wu got off the carriage three days later. She paid a gold leaf, and bought a horse from that carriage. She got on the horse, and rode forward. Her small figure slowly disappeared on the horizon…

She was already more than 500 Km away from the Mo Clan at this moment…

She had been cautious the entire journey. She had silently contemplated about a million things in her heart. However, so far, she still hadn't come across any danger for some unexpected reason… But, she would still have to cover thousands of kilometers to reach Cang Lan Battlefront. There was a long journey ahead. But, she was completely ignorant, and didn't know what lay in-wait in her future…

She didn't know that a little kid like her… traveling alone on such a long journey… would come across many dangerous situations, spirit beasts, wild animals, wicked people, bandits, thieves…

She only knew that she had to go to the Cang Lan Battlefront! That's because that place was her only hope…

Mo Qing Wu had to run away from her home because of a 'forced marriage' scenario in her previous life as well. And, she had

embarked on this road even in this life as well… However, it had happened two years earlier in this life…

Another difference was… Cang Lan Battlefront wasn't her goal in her past life. So, she had to look for a place to hide while despairing all the while after she had left her home…

However, she — at the very least — was hopeful in her heart in this life. Moreover, she had a goal in her mind…

…

Mo Clan had already spiraled into chaos by now!

Mo Qing Wu had gone missing.

Madam Mo had felt strange when Mo Qing Wu didn't come back by evening. So, she and Mo Xing Chen went to examine Mo Qing Wu's small courtyard. They opened the door, and saw that the room was in order. Like always, that shabby scabbard was kept under the pillow like a treasured object… half exposed…

So, they felt relieved.

After all, the Mo Clan's domain was spread in the surrounding radius of hundreds of kilometers. Nothing could happen to Mo Qing Wu. However, they realized that something was wrong when the entire night passed and she didn't return…

They slowly went up to the riverside the next day. They made inquiries on the way, and finally determined — [Mo Qing Wu has left home!]

Mo Xing Chen flew into a rage!

Chapter 458: I'm Called Jun Xi Zhu!

"Go quickly, and search for her!" Mo Xing Chen roared loudly, and set the entire Mo Clan in motion.

[Let's make a general hypothesis... where could an eleven-year-old girl go? She wouldn't have covered more than a few dozen kilometers even if she had run away... In fact, running a distance of several hundred kilometers would be considered incredible for an 11-year-old junior of an influential clan...]

Therefore, the people of the Mo Clan were quite relaxed from the start, didn't take this seriously.

However...

Everyone's face turned dark after they had searched for three days. They had searched every nook and corner of the entire Mo Clan's domain, but Mo Qing Wu was nowhere to be found!

Mo Xing Chen thundered furiously!

Great Elder Mo Wu Xin seemed unconcerned. He had a blank look on his face as he watched Mo Xing Chen rebuke his subordinates. Mo Xing Chen waved his hand after some time, and ordered everyone to get the hell out of there! Then, he sat down in a sulk.

"Little Wu was probably determined to leave the clan," Mo Wu Xin solemnly said, "So, I think she has already gone out of the Mo Clan's domain."

"How can you be so sure?" Mo Xing Chen opened his eyes wide in bafflement, "She's a little girl. Shouldn't she be staying in the clan for her own good? How can he she just 'up-and-go' so heartlessly?! She's a very disobedient and unfilial daughter! Has our Mo Clan treated her unjustly? This is very frustrating for me!"

Mo Wu Xin's eyes flashed as he spoke, "A woman is born to leave her family. This has been the norm since ancient times. And, this

point hasn’t changed since ancient times! Little Wu, she... ha-ha! Xing Chen, keep this matter confidential. Don’t let anyone find out about it! Send your men to look for her in secrecy... Our alliance with the Meng Clan can’t be interrupted. We must keep the engagement intact. That... is more important."

"Yes." Mo Xing Chen was extremely mad. But, he was also worried, "But, Little Wu is bound to come across many dangers if she has really run out of the Clan’s domain. The Jianghu people are very sinister and dangerous."

"Danger... in what way...? Mo Qing Wu is already crippled. So, what are you getting anxious for? She has lost the means to bring benefits to the clan..." Mo Wu Xin coldly spoke, "The key point is that you must see the interests of the clan! Little Wu may never come back. But, has Meng Luo seen what Little Wu looks like...? We can easily find someone to replace her; that’s all. There should be many girls her age in our Mo Clan..."

"I understand your meaning, Great Elder," Mo Xing Chen went silent at once.

"Good. You must begin preparations now itself if you wish to find a replacement for a probable contingency." Mo Wu Xin’s skinny face revealed the trace of a smiling expression, "Doing that at the last moment won’t be good."

"Understood."

"Xing Chen, I must say that there’s a serious problem in the way you’ve brought-up your children," Mo Wu Xin heaved a deep sigh, and spoke in a resentful manner. In fact, it seemed as if Mo Xing Chen had failed to meet his expectations, "Look at your sons, and look at your daughter... Your two sons are engaged in a deadly struggle for power and prestige. And, your daughter didn’t even care about the gracious upbringing that she had; nor did she care to return the favor to the clan. She simply left the clan as soon as it became a little unfavorable for her..."

He heaved a deep sigh after he had spoken this. Then, he turned and left abruptly.

Mo Xing Chen remained seated for a while with a blank mind. Then, his face suddenly twisted. He raised his palm, and pounded it on the table! The red sandalwood table turned into a pile of dust with a thunderous noise. Then, he muttered to himself, "So what if my two sons are engaged in a deadly struggle for power? This shows that both my sons are outstanding! Other people also struggle for something they desire! Don't they? And, how can you talk like that about my daughter? My daughter suffered injuries at a young age. So, she fell from heaven to hell in your eyes! But, you still wish to pull her out of hell, and exploit her at the cost of her entire lifetime... who would wish go through that... who would like to be subjected to such cruelty?"

"She is my daughter, you motherfu*ker! I'm her father... who do you think you are to be talking trash about her!" Mo Xing Chen's face twisted, "Its fine if I scold her. But, it's unacceptable if others talk trash about her! Humph..."

He was obviously afraid to speak out these words.

"Humph! I know your hardship, but daddy will have to teach you a proper lesson once you come back!" Mo Xing Chen muttered. Then, he also stormed away.

....

Mo Qing Wu had been going at full-speed ever since she had started to ride the swift horse. She was scared that her clan members might catch her, and take her back. Hence, she had been going as fast as possible. She would only take the necessary rest; nothing else.

She hastened-on with her journey at the maximum speed.

Six days passed soon enough, and the surroundings got more and more desolate. The pedestrians on the road also got fewer and

fewer...

However, how could Mo Qing Wu's delicate body withstand riding on horseback for so long? She was trying her best to endure, but the flesh on the inner side of her thighs had been badly wounded by friction. She could no longer ride the horse like that as a result. And, she had to rest for a while. She bandaged her wounds, and switched to walking thereafter. However, she took a step, and frowned...

"They always said that 'leave home to wander the world like a person of Jianghu'... but they never said it would be this tiring." Mo Qing Wu wiped the sweat off her forehead, and muttered with her small mouth, "They told us stories about the people of Jianghu as if they are iron-blooded people, but also have tender feelings. But, who could've imagined that such wasn't the case... Humph, I won't believe their words again..."

She wrinkled her nose, "They haven't seen anything. There are so many mosquitoes out here... and, I feel so lonely..."

She made haste with her journey, but continued to complain along the way...

Dust and smoke started to billow behind her sometime later. A group of cavalry soldiers were rushing over like a hurricane. These riders were clad in black helmet, black armor, and black clothes. And, they were approaching wildly like a massive black cloud!

Mo Qing Wu quickly pulled-over her lean horse to hide at the roadside.

The caravan of horses went past her with a loud rumbling sound. The riders didn't even glance at her from the corner of the eye, and passed-by like a strong gale. A gorgeous carriage appeared immiadeitely-after. It was being pulled by eight amazing black steeds. The hair of these horses was fluttering-about as they dashed past.

The carriage passed from Mo Qing Wu's side... However, someone suddenly exclaimed 'stop' from inside the carriage at that precise moment...

The speeding soldiers stopped as soon as the command resounded. After that, their horses turned around, and rushed back. They had soon returned to the spot where Mo Qing Wu stood with her horse, and had formed a tight encirclement around them!

"You... what are you going to do?" Mo Qng Wu looked at them. She was frightened.

Creak Creak! The carriage sped back as well, and stopped in front of her.

Mo Qing Wu clearly felt a powerful aura pouring out from the carriage. She could also feel that a pair of sharp eyes was watching her from inside the carriage.

The riders and the horses were absolutely silent at this time!

A good while passed. Then, an ice-cold voice slowly sounded from the carriage compartment, "An 11-year-old Martial Master? Quite amusing... I must say."

Mo Qing Wu's body tensed up. She somehow overcame the fear in her heart, and meekly asked, "Who are you?"

"Who I am..." the person in the carriage laughed coldly. Then, they suddenly replied in a harsh tone, "I'm the one asking questions at this time. Who are you? What's your name? Where have you come from? Where are you going...?!"

Her voice was callous, and contained absolute authority. This clearly showed — [give one wrong answer, and the heads will roll!]

Mo Qing Wu had been intimidated by that powerful aura of deterrence, and couldn't even lift a finger as a result. It was as if she her mind itself had been imprisoned. She felt as if she had no choice but to tell the truth.

However, a deep feeling of resentment suddenly surged in her chest at this moment. [I was bullied in my clan. No one gave me respect there. I have come out now, and I've randomly bumped into someone. But, will I allow this stranger to bully me on a whim? Was I – Mo Qing Wu – born to be bullied by people all the time?]

Suddenly, an intense sense of rebellion rushed up in her mind. This awakened her from her frightened state. She replied, "My surname is Chu... My name is... Chu ... Xiao Yang..."

"Chu Xiao Yang?" the voice in the carriage didn't change. However, it seemed to carry an inexplicable sense of ridicule as it further asked, "Where are you from?"

"Willow River Town..."

"Where are you headed?"

"I am going to... Cang Lan Battlefront..."

"Why are you going there?"

"To find someone," Mo Qing Wu suddenly felt that she was replying more and more fluently.

"Who are you looking for?"

"I am looking for my elder brother..."

"Who is your elder brother?"

"My elder brother is called Chu Da Yang ..."

Suddenly, the person in the carriage sneered and calmly replied, "Good, very good. A little pre-teen kid has managed to lie in front of me... and that too so fluently..."

"I didn't..." Mo Qing Wu panicked, "I didn't lie..."

"You didn't lie?" the person in the carriage laughed indifferently. They then asked, "Oh, so you haven't lied...? Then, let me ask you something... tell me... are you a male or female?"

"Male..." Mo Qing Wu replied as her small face turned pale.

"Male?" The person in the carriage snorted. Then, they suddenly commanded in a stern voice, "Someone! Come here and strip his clothes to confirm whether he's a man or a woman!"

"No no... I'm a woman... woman... woman..." Mo Qing Wu grabbed her lapel tightly, and suddenly crouched to the ground as she cried out loud.

The person in the carriage suddenly burst into laughter. They then spoke coldly, "So, you were lying. Weren't you?"

Mo Qing Wu's lips quivered as she lowered her head.

"You aren't named Chu Xiao Yang... You aren't from Willow River Town. And, you aren't looking for Chu Da Yang..." the person in the carriage solemnly continued, "However, you are going to the Cang Lan Battlefront to find someone – this part is correct."

Mo Qing Wu had gotten goose bumps all over her body by now.

"And, the person you're looking for..." the person in the carriage calmly guessed, "Must be known as Mo Tian Ji, isn't it? Am I right, Young Miss Mo Qing Wu?"

Mo Qing Wu was absolutely terrified. [This person even knows my identity?] She screamed... as if the person in the carriage was a ghost or something, "Who are you?"

"Humph..." The person in the carriage didn't answer her question, "I had heard that the Mo Clan's daughter has run away a few days ago. But, I didn't expect to see her here today... I really hadn't thought that an 11-year-old little girl would manage to cover a distance of 2225 Km on her own! This isn't an easy thing..."

Then, the person went silent. It seemed as if they were thinking about something. After that, they commanded in a blunt manner, "Bring her up! She will be coming with us. We will deliver her and make some easy money. How can we pass on such an easy

opportunity? Let this search operation die down. Then, we will send people to find Mo Tian Ji and Mo Xing Chen, and we'll take ransom from each of them. The base price shall be 20 million!"

Another voice sounded from inside the carriage, "This is improper... After all, this is just a child. And, that too such a pitiful one... We should send her back home since we've found her..."

The person with the cold and stern voice decisively replied, "That's out of the question! Mo Xing Chen is a nobody! So, why must I send back his child for free? I don't need to lose a penny to join hands with someone like him. He doesn't deserve that! Mo Tian Ji doesn't have such qualifications either!"

That person snorted and added, "Anyway... giving something for free isn't our style!"

Mo Qing Wu was carried over into the carriage by some people. She saw that the carriage compartment was rather broad, and snow-white bear fur had been spread everywhere. There was one side table placed on either side. A zither was placed on one of the side tables. A gentle-looking maiden was seated in the nearby seat. She had star-like intoxicating eyes.

A woman in black clothing was seated opposite to her. She was about 30-40 years of age. She had long eyebrows, starry eyes, and black hair. She would've been called a 'stunning beauty' if she were still young. However, there was an ice-cold expression on her face, and her gaze was sharp like a knife. She wouldn't need to move to choke a person. Her incredibly heavy aura could easily leave a person to gasp for breath.

Her ice-cold eyes were sizing up Mo Qing Wu at this moment. She then spoke-up in a dense voice, "Young Miss Mo may have heard my name. My name is Jun Xi Zhu!"

Chapter 459: It's Impossible? Even For a Supreme?!

"Jun Xi Zhu!" Mo Qing Wu was so startled that she nearly jumped up. She couldn't help but widen her small mouth. She had been left dumbstruck!

[This woman is Jun Xi Zhu?!]

One couldn't blame Mo Qing Wu Do for being so surprised. This was mainly because this name was far too famous in the Middle Three Heavens!

The one at the helm of the Dark Bamboo!

The chief force of the underworld of Middle Three Heavens!

Jun Xi Zhu!

This name's meaning exuded an elegant atmosphere; as if it were the name of a hermit. However, it was the symbol of terror in the Middle Three Heavens!

The Mo Clan was wealthy and very powerful. But, it had always maintained a respectful distance from the Dark Bamboo, and had always minded its own business. In fact, the Mo Clan would always cower back whenever there was any clash of interests.

It never dared to provoke the Dark Bamboo!

There was a rumor. There used to be a big gang named 'The Wan Le League'; the name had literally meant 'The Ruined League'. Its chief was surnamed Wan, and was called 'Wan Le Dan'. However, the abrupt rise of Jun Xi Zhu to a towering position had led to the utter destruction of the Wan Le League! And, the 'Wan Le League' had literally turned into 'The Ruined League'...

The entire strength of the Wan Le League roughly amounted to tens of thousands of people at one point in time. However, they had been uprooted, destroyed, and systematically obliterated

within 6 month by the Dark Bamboo! It is said that this massacre had shook the entire Middle Three Heavens!

However… it's even more surprising that Jun Xi Zhu hadn't personally moved into action! The top expert under the command of Jun Xi Zhu had gone into action in that instance — Young Master Yu! Young Master Yu had taken care of this matter by himself; whether it came to planning the mission, or leading the troops!

Young Master Yu was a mysterious character. In fact, he wasn't necessarily second to Jun Xi Zhu!

There was another rumor regarding this matter. It was said that Young Master Yu had single-handedly raided the headquarters of Wan Le Dan, and had chopped an Emperor Level expert like him into pieces. He had then killed nearly 30 King Level Experts. Then, he eventually got bored of killing people. So, he reduced the entire headquarters of Wan Le Dan to rubbles… while there were still people in there. Then, he had walked out of there in a leisurely manner… as if nothing had happened.

He had ordered an all-out attack after he had walked out of the headquarters. The Wan Le League was without a leader at that point of time, and had lost rather easily at the end! The Dark Bamboo had gained the status of the 'undisputed overlord' of underworld after that war!

Mo Qing Wu had heard the distinguished name of Jun Xi Zhu dozens of times. So, she was familiar with this mysterious and formidable person's identity.

However, she felt that this woman was 'far more magnificent' in-person now that she had come to meet her!

[This woman… is truly amazing!]

Mo Qing Wu was sealed-up in a carriage on such a hot day. However, she surprising felt a faint trace of chill since she was

seated next to Jun Xi Zhu... even though the Jun Xi Zhu hadn't used her martial powers...

"Young Miss Mo, I have caused inconvenience to you." Jun Xi Zhu looked coldly at Mo Qing Wu, and gently shook her head, "I'm not very fond of children who lie."

"But I..." Mo Qing Wu suddenly recalled that the opposite party was talking about kidnapping her for ransom. So, she couldn't help but plead, "But, I don't wish to return to my clan..."

"It's not something that I can decide upon. Your father and your elder brother have the final say in this matter!" Jun Xi Zhu gently leaned back, and indifferently replied, "I'm demanding 20 million taels from each. That makes it a total of 40 million taels. So, they will have to spend this sum of money if they want you to return. But, you will stay with me in all safety if they don't."

Then, she inadvertently asked, "But, you are the eldest daughter of the Mo Clan. So, why don't you wish to go back?"

"Boo hoo..." It seemed as if Mo Qing Wu had been struck by the mention of some painful affair. Big and clear pearls-like tears began to roll down, "I don't wish to go back, boo hoo. They will force me to get married if I go back... because the clan needs an ally... but, I don't wish to get married..."

Mo Qing Wu burst out crying. She seemed to be broken-hearted.

"Get married?!" Jun Xi Zhu was obviously a bit startled. Jun Lu Lu was seated on the opposite. She also widened her eyes in astonishment. [Get married?] She looked at this little girl whose small body hadn't even started to mature. [Such a little girl... the clan wants to marry her off to rope in an ally?!]

A trace of sympathy surfaced in the beautiful eyes of Jun Lu Lu. She extended her hands, and embraced Mo Qing Wu in her arms to comfort her, "Don't cry. Don't cry..."

Jun Xi Zhu's complexion turned from white to blue. A trace of

anguish appeared in her eyes. In fact, it seemed as if she had been touched by some painful memories from the past. Her complexion turned pale as she pounded her palm on the small table that was placed in front of her. Then, she began to rain curses, "*** Mo Xing Chen! He has gone as far as to force his own 11-year-old daughter to get married! He doesn't have the least bit of humanity! *** Mo Clan! They are a bunch of trashes! "

A loud 'bang' sound was heard, and a palm-shaped cavity appeared in the small table. In fact, this palm-shape force went straight down, and made a palm-shaped hole in the carriage compartment's floor.

The carriage was moving forward as a rapid pace, and one could see the ground moving in a backward direction from the newly formed cavity in the carriage's floor.

Jun Lu Lu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. She rolled her eyes as she looked at her elder sister. Her elder sister had revealed her true temperament in this moment by cussing out loud... and that too like a man...

Jun Xi Zhu's face had turned ice-cold. Her chest was rising and falling. The matter that Mo Qing Wu' had just mentioned had clearly made Jun Xi Zhu furious.

The Mo Clan only wanted her to get engaged in reality. And, that was totally different from getting married. However, how could Mo Qing Wu know this now? But, the Mo Clan had become worse than trash in Jun Xi Zhu's eyes...

[Forcing a little girl who isn't even 11-years-old to marry... what does it mean? It is needless to say that this is inhuman! Moreover, this is the biological daughter of the Mo Clan's Lord Mo Xing Chen. The father is forcing his own eleven years old daughter to get married for the family's benefit?]

[He's a bastard of the highest level!]

"Elder sister, you do something..." Jun Lu Lu's heart was flooding with compassion. She could feel Mo Qing Wu's fragile body tremble in her embrace. So, her desire to protect this little girl had grown even more passionate.

"Humph!" That raging wave of anger receded within Jun Xi Zhu's eyes. She insipidly replied, "I will also add Mo Tian Yun into the original plan of action! I will make Mo Xing Chen, Mo Tian Ji, and Mo Tian Yun spend 20 million taels each! I will tell them that I won't be accepting ransom from one person alone. I need all three of them to pay! And, I will kill the hostage if even one fails to deliver the sum!"

"Eh?" Jun Lu Lu was shocked.

"Have her wash her face. I want to see it." Jun Xi Zhu's eyes focused on her, "Wash it off properly. What sort of makeup has turned a little doll into something like this?"

Mo Qing Wu washed her face and came back. The trace of a stunned look flashed in Jun Xin Zhu's eyes, "She's a very beautiful girl... ha-ha. Hm?" then, she suddenly noticed Mo Qing Wu's eyebrows while she was speaking that sentence, and was taken aback.

"Young Miss Mo, come over here. Let me have a look at you." Jun Xi Zhu beckoned her.

"Ok..." Mo Qing Wu replied in a timid manner. Then, she obediently walked over. She was young, and had been nabbed. But, she still had a distinct feeling in her heart... [these two women won't hurt me...]

"Ah..." Jun Xi Zhu examined her face, and nodded with satisfaction. Then, she again felt somewhat strange, "It's strange. The peaks of the eyebrows are gathering into a cloudy shape. No doubt about it... this is a Three Yin Body. There must be 'Three Yin Meridians' in her body. Are those people of the Mo Clan blind or something? Are they all fu*king dotards? They actually wish to

marry off an eleven year old genius who possesses the Three Yin Meridians? I just can’t fathom what those fu*kers are thinking..."

"My Three Yin Meridians have already been damaged..." Mo Qing Wu timidly replied.

"Damaged? Nonsense!" Jun Xi Zhu was taken aback by this. And, she immediately chided her loudly.

"It’s genuinely destroyed... see here..." Mo Qing Wu extended her hand, and pointed at the spot, "I had been slashed here with a saber by a person of the Black Devil Clan. My Three Yin Meridians were destroyed as a result..."

"What? But, why are the peaks of your eyebrows gathering into a cloudy shape if your Three Yin Meridians have been destroyed?" Jun Xi Zhu pulled her over, and grabbed her wrist. She activated her martial power to inspect, and couldn’t help but nod her head in agreement, "The Three Yin Meridians have genuinely been destroyed... no wonder the Mo Clan has given up on you... but ... why is it so strange?"

She withdrew her hand, and knitted her brows. She had immersed herself in deep thought, "This shouldn’t happen. The Three Yin Meridians have been destroyed. So, the cloudy shape of her eyebrows’ peaks ought to have dissipated as well. This must happen without exception! But, why hasn’t hers dissipated yet!?"

She grabbed Mo Qing Wu's hand to examine it once again after she had deliberated upon the matter to some extent... And, she felt it very carefully and slowly this time. A long time passed. Then, she suddenly withdrew her hand at a lightning speed, and moved backwards. She sucked in a mouthful of cold air, "Has someone treated you?"

"Yes..." Mo Qing Wu naively blinked her eyes.

"Who?"

"Elder Brother Chu... said that the man was called Du Shi Qing..."

Mo Qing Wu nearly said ‘Chu Yang’.

"Du Shi Qing?" Jun Xi Zhu rolled her eyes, "He hasn’t done it. But, who did?"

"He hasn’t..." Mo Qing Wu was also astonished. But, she merely blinked her eyes. [He really hasn’t...]

"Something is wrong..." Jun Xi Zhu frowned as she pondered.

"Elder Sister, what's wrong?" Jun Lu Lu smiled and asked.

"Someone has put an unusual power in her damaged Three Yin Meridians. And, because of this strange power... the Three Yin Meridians are still intact in spite of being damaged. This will certainly make her feel a lot more pain, but there will be an immediate restoration of her peerless talent and aptitude once she gets cured!"

She knitted her brows in bewilderment, "Her Three Yin Meridians would’ve remained destroyed forever if it weren’t for this mysterious power! But, the existence of this power has clearly retained a glimmer of hope for a recovery... even though this ‘hope’ is rather slim..."

"So there’s hope?" Jun Lu Lu was puzzled.

"It’s equivalent to ‘no hope’... Anyway, my knowledge and experience fails to think of a possible means. The nine great wonderful medicines could be piled-up for her treatment, but it would still be useless..." Jun Xi Zhu twisted her brows, "But then... why would that person keep such a glimmer of hope? A great powerhouse like him ought to know that this is absolutely hopeless..."

"A great powerhouse?!" Jun Lu Lu was so startled that she almost jumped. This was the first time that she had heard these two words from her elder sister’s mouth. Jun Xi Zhu would prefer death to humiliation. She had never acknowledged anyone as a ‘great powerhouse’ in the Middle Three Heavens. However, she had said

these two words with a willing heart at this juncture.

"Yes. A great powerhouse!" Jun Xi Zhu solemnly explained, "The person who has left behind a glimmer of hope for her has used his spiritual power to do this! This is fundamentally different from the world's elemental energy. Moreover, talking about the extent of the spiritual power of this great powerhouse..." Jun Xi Zhu took a deep breath, and further continued, "I could cultivate for a thousand years, but I would still fall short of this entity!"

[Cultivate for a thousand years, but still fall short!] Jun Lu Lu was shocked. She knew what level her sister was currently at. However, she had gone as far as to say that 'I could cultivate for a thousand years, but I would still fall short of this entity'!

Therefore, one could very-well imagine the might of the 'great powerhouse' who had left behind a glimmer of hope for Mo Qing Wu!

"Supreme?!" only this word had remained in Jun Lu Lu's heart.

"Not necessarily! It isn't necessarily a Supreme Expert!" Jun Xi Zhu solemnly replied. Then, a doubtful and uncertain look flashed in her eyes. She then spoke one word at a time, "This kind of... spiritual power... perhaps... even a Supreme Expert... can't... have!"

"Poof... cough cough cough cough." Jun Lu Lu nervously choked on her own saliva when she heard this, and began to cough severely as a result...

Even a Supreme Expert can't...

These words were... simply inconceivable!

Chapter 460: The Best Treasure of the Nine Heavens?

"Little girl, you aren't deceiving me, are you?!" Jun Xi Zhu narrowed her eyes and looked at Mo Qing Wu. She suddenly had a sense of fear in her heart as she looked at the pitiful appearance of this little girl...

[This little girl isn't ordinary...]

What kind of importance did spiritual power hold? The spiritual power was the base of everything for a powerhouse!

However, a great powerhouse who was even above the Supreme Level had wasted his own spiritual power in order to leave a glimmer of hope for this little girl. This in-itself was thought-provoking.

Jun Lu Lu was dumbfounded. Even Jun Xi Zhu was overwhelmed in her heart!

"You think about it carefully. Has no one else treated you?" Jun Xi Zhu stared into Mo Qing Wu's eyes.

Mo Qing Wu blankly shook her head with an innocent look in her limpid eyes.

Jun Xi Zhu got overpowered by this limpid look in her eyes, and leaned back in her embroidered couch. She rubbed her eyebrows, and thought aloud, "Anyway... it's the work of such a powerhouse. So, she wouldn't remember this if he didn't wish for her to know. Even her attempts to remember it would be pointless. We've hit the dead-end..."

"Elder Sister, I have thought of a possibility." Jun Lu Lu's coughing had finally stopped. She gasped for breath, knitted her eyebrows, and thought deeply. Then, her eyes suddenly lit up.

"What possibility?" Jun Xi Zhu asked in a sinking tone.

"I suspect... that this unparalleled and extraordinary person must've been passing-by at the time Little Sister Mo had sustained injuries. And, he must've come to her aid!" Jun Lu Lu made an analysis and said, "But, this extraordinary person must've discovered that her Three Yin Meridians had been destroyed. So, even he must've been rendered powerless... So... in order to save his face..."

"I see. He didn't reveal himself because it would've brought him a bad name..." Jun Xi Zhu knitted her brows and pondered. This simple explanation had clarified every doubt in one go, "Similarly, the issue of losing face and the unwillingness to admit defeat must've compelled this extraordinary person to leave his spiritual power behind. And, he himself must've gone to the ends of the earth to find the solution... In that case... he will come back to help her in order to treat her Three Yin Meridians once he finds a solution, right?"

"I also think so." Jun Lu Lu nodded to give her affirmation.

"Well... I think it's a logical explanation." Jun Xi Zhu looked at Mo Qing Wu and suddenly asked, "Miss Mo, you don't wish to return to your clan. Is it possible that you don't agree to your clan's decision to marry you off?"

Mo Qing Wu tightly pursed her lips. A look of hatred flashed in her eyes.

"Do you hate them?" An even more profound look appeared on Jun Xi Zhu's face.

"I..." Mo Qing Wu suddenly remembered the heartlessness of her father, her mother's helplessness, her own persecution at the hands of her eldest brother, the great elder's cold attitude towards her... and the piercing pain of her having her treasured saber being snatched away... And, she couldn't stop herself from bursting into tears. 'Hate'— she was unable to say this word out loud, but the look in her eyes had explained everything.

"Tell me everything..." Jun Xi Zhu's countenance turned gentle. Jun Lu Lu got even more affectionate. She embraced Mo Qing Wu in her arms, and whispered words of comfort.

Mo Qing Wu's eyes turned red. She couldn't help but sob. She felt the good intentions of Jun Lu Lu. However, she had been overwhelmed by the pent-up grievances of her heart. She barely managed to stop herself from hyperventilating, and unburdened herself off these strong emotions. She stammered as she told them everything.

The more Jun Xi Zhu heard... the more her complexion turned strange. Afterwards, she held her belly, and began to roll about...

"Ha ha ha ha..." Jun Xi Zhu looked at Mo Qing Wu from top to bottom. It seemed as if she was sizing her up. It appeared as if she had found an exceptional treasure. She eventually couldn't bear it anymore and suddenly burst into loud laughter.

"Elder Sister, why are you laughing?" Jun Lu Lu was puzzled. But, her words were those of rebuke. She had listened to the tale, and loads of sympathy had welled-up in her heart. Even Mo Qing Wu was shedding tears. However, Jun Lu Lu hadn't thought that her elder sister would suddenly burst into laughter... as if she was having a great time or something.

[This little sister is so pitiful. You just listened to her bitter and cruel experiences... yet, you're laughing out loud? Don't you have any compassion?]

Mo Qing Wu's cheeks bulged up as she angrily glared at Jun Xi Zhu.

"Ha ha... I'm not laughing at you... I'm laughing because... Ha ha ha, I can't help it..." Jun Xi Zhu laughed for a good while before she finally came to a stop.

Jun Lu Lu and Mo Qing Wu had been watching her as if they were looking at a freak this entire time.

"I'm laughing because... this time... the Mo Clan has knocked against the wall called ‘regret’! Ha ha, Mo Wu Xin... that old tortoise thinks he’s the cleverest man alive. He spends his days making plans. But, he can go and shove his plans up his own! That Mo Xing Chen carries an even shrewder look on his face. It seems as if he is self-conscious of his unparalleled wisdom, and that no one in the Middle Three Heavens is worthy of looking him in the eye..."

Jun Xi Zhu was laughing and rocking back and forth. She had laughed so hard for the first time in a long time. And, this wasn’t for show either. The fact was that this matter was far too hilarious, "... those two fu*kers obviously wouldn’t have thought that their ‘well-calculated’ plan would lead the Mo Clan away from the opportunity to rush up to the Upper Three Heavens! They’ve forced away the number one treasure of the entire Nine Heavens!"

Jun Lu Lu thought for a while. Then, she also giggled up.

Jun Xi Zhu’s words had indeed made sense!

An incredible person had left his spiritual power behind ... this obviously wasn’t for show! He didn’t wish to admit defeat in the face of such an incurable condition. And, he obviously couldn’t explain his purpose of leaving his precious spiritual power behind!

So, there ought to be only one purpose. And, that was — he had taken a fancy to Mo Qing Wu! Or, perhaps he had taken a fancy to Mo Qing Wu’s innate ability!

Therefore, he would inevitably come back! And, it would be a perfect ending as long as he’d come back.

The Mo Clan would’ve gained a fortune upon the return of that great person if they had continued to dote on Mo Qing Wu! After all, he would’ve rewarded great benefits to the clan for carrying off its bloodline. He would’ve done so out of respect for the clan. And, considering a person of such high skill... even something that had leaked-out from the seam of his finger would’ve been enough for

the Mo Clan to cherish forever...

Moreover, one must take this person's old affection and the tender love for his little disciple into consideration... It would've been very easy to manipulate this highly skilled and outstanding individual!

A person whose strength had surpassed a Supreme Level Expert could wantonly roam-about in the Upper Three Heavens. In fact, he could merely raise his hand, and be declared invincible thereafter. He would need a few words, and the Mo Clan could become one of the super clans of the Upper Three Heavens!

The Mo Clan could've become an equal of the nine super clans of the Upper Three Heavens because of Mo Qing Wu! Moreover, Mo Qing Wu's cultivation journey would've been problem-free and less time consuming with the help of such an incredible teacher!

And, the Mo Clan would've established itself as a jumbo clan in the entire Nine Heavens as a result! In fact, they would've become a force which no one would dare to mess with!

And, the root cause of all of this would've been one person alone — Mo Qing Wu!

Mo Qing Wu was genuinely worthy of being considered as the number one treasure in the entire Nine Heavens from this point of view! Jun Xi Zhu had made no exaggeration as far as this statement was concerned!

However, the Mo Clan had ruthlessly offended this piece of treasure even though it had originally belonged to them! They didn't give her the least bit of comfort after the destruction of her Three Yin Meridians. Moreover, they even tormented her when she was already suffering. In fact, they even snatched her treasured saber...

Jun Xi Zhu was fully convinced that Mo Qing Wu's saber was the best heavenly weapon in the entire Nine Heavens! [How could it be

a poor weapon when such a mysterious and great powerhouse had gifted it to her? That saber was clearly meant as an indication from that mysterious and great powerhouse to the Mo Clan — you will get many more rewards as long as you take good care of Qing Wu!]

[This is a very obvious thing! Why else would anyone give a little girl such a universally shocking precious saber?]

[It's such a pity that those people of the Mo Clan didn't even detect the existence of this spiritual power in her. Moreover, they didn't even bother to take such an obvious hint. They got blinded by greed on top of that, and snatched her precious saber…]

[These old motherfu*kers are trying to commit suicide. It's like they are impatient to die, and are deliberately asking for trouble…]

[And, to make things even worse… they forced this eleven-year-old Mo Qing Wu to get married…]

[The Mo Clan could possess a hundred lives, but even that wouldn't save them from getting eradicated if that great powerhouse found out about this!]

It must be said that Jun Xin Zhu's speculation was completely opposite of what had come to happen! The so-called 'unrivaled great powerhouse' in her speculation was non-existent in reality! The spiritual power left behind in Mo Qing Wu's body belonged to the Sword Spirit. He was the one who had left behind a trace of his power to preserve her Three Yin Meridians' natural endowment. Mo Qing Wu didn't know about this. Even Chu Yang didn't know of this!

This was Sword Spirit's doing in its entirety. It was an attempt on his part to protect the Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword from harboring the same regret in this life again. Especially… because Mo Qing Wu was the person Chu Yang held dearest in his heart. In fact, this Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword had even taken rebirth for Mo Qing Wu!

How could the Sword Spirit ignore this fact?

However, Jun Xi Zhu's speculation was correct from a certain perspective! Because... Chu Yang was the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master! Would Chu Yang treat his wife's clan unfairly if they had treated her well?

The Mo Clan would've surely gained acknowledgement... and a place for itself in the Upper Three Heavens at the time of the transformation of the Nine Heavens! However, the current state of affairs was different. Chu Yang wouldn't exterminate the Mo Clan in order to give face to Mo Qing Wu. But, giving rewards to the Mo Clan was simply out of question.

In fact, even the extermination of more than half of the Mo Clan would be 'barely enough' to vent Chu Yang's anger if his disposition was taken into account...

Therefore, it wouldn't be false to say that Jun Xi Zhu had accidentally hit the bull's eye!

"I am thinking... what kind of faces would Mo Wu Xin and Mo Xing Chen make if they found out about this matter?" Jun Xi Zhu laughed wildly, "Mo Wu Xin would die on the spot from an excess of anger! The look on Mo Xing Chen's face would also be incredible... It's such a pity that I won't be around to see their expressions!"

She laughed for a moment. Then, she touched her chin as she looked at Mo Qing Wu. She then spoke with a gentle smile, "Such a treasure has fallen right into my lap from the skies above. How can I let it go...? In fact, the very thought of letting her go is unthinkable!"

These words had sounded like a scheme. Moreover, they should never have been spoken in front of Mo Qing Wu. However, Jun Xi Zhu didn't seem to have the slightest scruples. Therefore, she had declared her view in a straightforward manner.

Even Jun Lu Lu had been startled by this point...

"This little girl may look very pitiful. But, the fact is – she's very clever. You think that she wouldn't have guessed it if I hadn't said it openly? We would've appeared insidious if I hadn't said it... It would be better to be honest from the get go. So what if I plan to profiteer from an association with somebody? This is a fair and honest affair. Why must I do it stealthily?" Jun Xi Zhu chuckled mischievously. She then looked at Mo Qing Wu, "Young Miss Mo, what do you say? Am I right?"

Mo Qing Wu was enthralled when she heard this. It was an unexpected occurrence. She couldn't help but nod her head as she replied, "Right!"

However, Jun Xi Zhu had burst into laughter right after she had finished talking. In fact, she hadn't even waited to hear Mo Qing Wu's answer.

Mo Qing Wu had indeed thought that way in her heart. Jun Xi Zhu had made the analysis in front of her. And, Mo Qing Wu was an extremely intelligent girl. So, how could she not understand the gravity of the situation? In fact, she would've felt very uncomfortable if Jun Xi Zhu hadn't spoken that out aloud. But, Mo Qing Wu felt a lot more relaxed since Jun Xi Zhu had declared her views in such a straightforward manner.

Chapter 461: My Principle is to Make a Profit!

A real villain isn’t dreadful because each of his plans is a hidden conspiracy. In fact, most of their plots are overt. But, hypocrites are the most dreadful ones of all!

Jun Xi Zhu was also without choice in this regard. She also desired to get rich in a silent manner. [It might be very easy to hide the truth from Mo Qing Wu today. However, that great person would return someday. And, he would obviously possess incredible experience and wisdom. Wouldn’t he be able to see through my scheme? So, that would end-up being a self-defeating plan! Perhaps, this might even lead to the destruction of the Dark Bamboo!]

She had thought over this for a long time. And, she had finally decided to be frank thereafter.

"We’re an underworld force. Isn’t this the way the underworld forces operate?" Jun Xi Zhu spoke in a matter of fact way, "This is how I operate. Those hypocrites can go and cry in a corner."

"Young Miss Mo, you have nowhere to go for the time being. How about you stay here with me?" Jun Xi Zhu asked with a smile.

"Actually... I have to go to the Cang Lan Battlefront," Mo Qing Wu widened her big and round eyes.

"No problem. We are also going to the Cang Lan Battlefront!" Jun Xi Zhu chuckled, "Let’s travel together. No one will obstruct us. By the way, you’re going to the Cang Lan Battlefront to find Mo Tian Ji... aren’t you?"

"No!" Mo Qing Wu recalled the most helpless moment of her life. Her second brother had merely stood with his mouth shut, and his head lowered. He hadn’t even bothered to look at her; nor had he spoken to her. A pain suddenly arose in her heart, and her eyes

turned red, "I’m not looking for him!"

"Oh?" Jun Xi Zhu was a bit startled, "Then... who are you looking for?"

"I'm looking for Elder Brother Gu Du Xing, Brother Ji Mo, Brother Luo Ke Di, Brother Dong Wu Shang, Brother Rui Bu Tong..." Mo Qing Wu counted them on her fingers... one by one.

"Uh..." Jun Xi Zhu hadn’t expected that this little girl would have such a wide circle of friends. [Four among these names are included in the list of newly-emerging top-ten young prodigies. And, the fifth one is the sole successor of the Stealing God and Thieving Ghost...]

"Who are they to you?"

"They are my Elder Brother Chu’s brothers!" Mo Qing Wu gave an affirmative reply, "I will find them. Then, I will wait for Elder Brother Chu’s arrival."

"Elder Brother Chu?" Jun Xi Zhu’s brows wrinkled as she suddenly remembered the names ‘Chu Xiao Yang’ and ‘Chu Da Yang’. Mo Qing Wu had mentioned these two names a while ago. She suddenly thought of something, and asked, "This Elder Brother Chu of yours... is it Chu Yang? The famous King of Hell Chu... the man whose name shakes the Lower Three Heavens...?"

Mo Qing Wu blinked her eyes. Her intelligence and sharpness from her former days had already left her. She replied, "Yes! That’s my Elder Brother Chu Yang!" [Humph! You surely won’t dare to harm my Elder Brother Chu since I’m now an important figure in your eyes.]

"King of Hell Chu is going to come to the Middle Three Heavens..." Jun Xi Zhu’s complexion turned heavy as her eyes gently turned towards Jun Lu Lu. She contemplated for a good while before she asked, "Ah Lu, you and King of Hell Chu... have friendly relations, right? I’ve heard that this King of Hell Chu

helped you in breaking through the barrier of the ‘Heavenly Zither Melody’. Isn’t that right?"

"Yes." Jun Lu Lu had always been grateful to Chu Yang for that. So, she replied as soon as she heard the question, "King of Hell Chu a.k.a Chu Yang... is indeed the world’s rarest and most remarkable man when it comes to having both civil and military skills!"

A flash of pride exploded in Mo Qing Wu’s eyes! It seemed as if her small face had also begun to exude radiance at this moment! In fact, her delicate body had started to tremble because of an ‘excitement overload’.

[My Elder Brother Chu Yang!]

[Elder Brother Chu Yang!]

[He’s the world’s rarest and most remarkable man when it comes to having both civil and military skill! This is other people's assessment of my Elder Brother Chu Yang!]

"Did Elder Brother Chu Yang teach you to play zither?" Mo Qing Wu curiously looked at Jun Lu Lu.

"Yes," Jun Lu Lu replied with a smile, "It’s all thanks to him."

Mo Qing Wu suddenly felt a suffocating sensation in her heart. She glared at Jun Lu Lu with an intensely hostile look in her eyes!

Mo Qing Wu didn’t know anything about love at her current age. She was basically clueless in this regard. But, she didn’t know why she felt this animosity in her heart. In fact, this was making her very uncomfortable.

"Humph!" She furiously turned her small face away.

"Oh my..." Jun Lu Lu pointed at her in an amazed manner and laughed, "This little girl... is jealous ha ha..."

Mo Qing Wu pouted. In fact, she seemed to be sulking!

Jun Lu Lu was deliberately teasing her. She continued further, and it seemed as if she was lost in fond recollection, "Also... Chu

Yang looks so handsome! His voice is very pleasant to hear, and he also plays the zither so well... Little Wu, have you heard your Elder Brother Chu Yang play the zither?"

"Humph!" Mo Qing Wu grunted even more loudly. She felt extremely wronged, [I still haven't heard it... boo hoo. Elder Brother played zither for this woman, but he didn't play it for me... Boo hoo... I'm so sad.]

Chu Yang would've also felt wronged if he were here. In fact, he would've spouted a fountain of blood from his mouth...

[I don't even know how to play the zither!]

[And, who'd listen even if I did play it...? This isn't fair. I'm being accused very wrongly...]

"He he..." Jun Lu Lu giggled mischievously. She looked like a chick that had stolen food to eat.

"Alright, that's enough. Little Wu, just make Chu Yang play the zither for yourself when you see him next." Jun Xi Zhu stepped-in to mediate. She obviously felt that Chu Yang's zither-playing skills should be good if he had given zither lessons to Jun Lu Lu. Shouldn't playing zither to coax a little girl be a piece of cake for him?

She didn't know that this suggestion of hers had entrapped King of Hell Chu in an awkward plight with no way out.

Mo Qing Wu's eyes lit up.

"Well, Elder Sister... should we stop with our plan to extort the Mo Clan since things are this way...? Should we cancel the original plan?" Jun Lu Lu glanced at Mo Qing Wu and stopped laughing. Then, she turned towards Jun Xi Zhu and asked.

"Huh? That's out of question!" Jun Xi Zhu flatly rejected the idea, and replied in a chilling voice, "We've always been an underworld force. And, we mustn't lose our position as a force of the underworld!"

"Eh?" Jun Lu Lu blinked her eyes. She was completely perplexed. Mo Qing Wu blinked her eyes in confusion as well.

"But... wouldn't we have to hand Little Wu over to them once we've received the ransom amount... And, they would force her to get married if she goes back," Jun Lu Lu said somewhat anxiously.

"Sigh... Ah Lu, you've followed me for so many years... How can you be so unsure of our status?" Jun Xi Zhu helplessly frowned and said, "Who do you think I am? I am Jun Xi Zhu!"

"Eh?"

"Do you think I will let the Mo Clan take away the hostage after we've taken money from them? How can things be that simple?" Jun Lu Lu gently embraced Xiao Wu in her bosom. And, she listened while her elder sister giggled mischievously, "Little Wu is like a treasure! How can I possibly hand her over to them? That's just a pipe dream!"

"What?! You won't return her... Are you planning to con 60 million out of them?" Jun Lu Lu was stunned, "Isn't that wrong?"

"It's because we are the underworld! What's the underworld? This is the underworld!" Jun Xi Zhu replied in a profound manner.

Jun Lu Lu was obviously a little confused and disoriented upon hearing this, "Elder Sister, but aren't you the one who often says that even thieves have principles..."

"Indeed, even thieves have principles. And, this is precisely my 'principle'!" Jun Xi Zhu scowled at her, "My principle is to profit! Why? Go and ask around in the Middle Three Heavens... and tell everyone that I – Jun Xi Zhu – have said that this is my way. Who would dare to call it wrong?"

Jun Lu Lu had been rendered speechless by this reply. [It seems like Elder Sister is dead-set on conning-out 60 million from the Mo Clan...]

"This shall also be considered as taking a revenge for Little Wu.

Humph! Those cruel bullies have mistreated Little Wu. How's it fair to let-them-off without paying a price?" Jun Xi Zhu abruptly changed the topic, and declared her view with an extremely far-fetched reasoning to support it.

However, Mo Qing Wu's eyes lit up. In fact, she even felt that Jun Xi Zhu was somewhat amiable.

Jun Lu Lu had been left stupefied.

"Talk about King of Hell Chu. Little Wu also seems quite interested to hear about him," Jun Xi Zhu said with a smile. Mo Qing Wu's eyes immediately lit-up as she thought to herself... [this big sister looks vicious, but she's a good person in reality. She even knows what I wish to hear about...]

"King of Hell Chu?" Jun Lu Lu was momentarily stumped for words. Then, she recalled stuff about Chu Yang, rearranged her train of thoughts a little, and began to talk.

Jun Xi Zhu was listening calmly. Then, she suddenly interrupted and asked, "So, Chu Yang has five sworn brothers — Gu Du Xing, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, Dong Wu Shang, and Rui Bu Tong... isn't it?"

"Yes," Jun Lu Lu thought for a second, and gave her affirmation.

"Well... these people have risen to prominence of late. They certainly have a bright future ahead... But... haven't you noticed that three among these brothers of Chu Yang's are the Second Young Masters of the major clans. And, Rui Bu Tong is the sole disciple of Stealing God and Thieving Ghost. Those two men are considered freemen in the Middle Three Heavens. Moreover, Gu Du Xing used to be a lowly member of the Gu Clan when he had sworn brotherhood with Chu Yang, but he became the Young Clan Lord of the Gu Clan after the accidental deaths of Gu Clan's two young masters..."

Jun Xi Zhu's eyes shone brightly, "All these people have a similar story... but why?"

Jun Lu Lu was taken aback. She genuinely hadn't thought of this point before.

"King of Hell Chu... it seems that he has no small ambitions. His ambitious... are very big..." Jun Xi Zhu spoke in a very heavy and cold tone.

However, this speculation was somewhat unfair to Chu Yang because these people had been roped-in by Gu Du Xing...

"That may not be the case. After all, King of Hell Chu's strength is still very weak. His brothers may have become famous in recent times, but they would vanish into thin air overnight if we were to deliberately deal with them..." Jun Lu Lu pondered for a moment and replied with uncertainty.

"Not necessarily!" Jun Xi Zhu was also contemplating.

Jun Lu Lu fell silent. Mo Qing Wu was blinking her eyes. Her mouth still had an aftertaste of what Jun Lu Lu had just told about Chu Yang. [Elder Brother Chu Yang... King of Hell Chu used various thunderous means to establish the great rule of Iron Cloud. He even rushed to the Continent Center by himself. He singlehandedly brought about a change in the world...]

[Elder Brother Chu Yang is very powerful! Elder Brother Chu Yang is the most powerful!]

Mo Qing Wu's eyes were sparkling. She felt infinitely content in her heart. It seemed like these world-shaking affairs surrounding Chu Yang had happened to her instead. They made her feel extremely glorious, extremely proud, and extremely honorable.

Jun Xi Zhu snorted, and sat cross-legged. Then, she closed her eyes to meditate. She was pondering in her heart... [Ah, two people are likely to benefit the most whenever that mysterious great expert comes. One is that King of Hell Chu who is about to come from the Lower Three Heavens. And, the other one is... undoubtedly going to be 'me' as long as I operate properly and

manage to win over Little Wu.]

[But… how should I deal with that Chu Yang? As an opponent…? Or as an ally? This is the main issue.]

[That Chu Yang isn't ordinary by any means.]

Jun Xi Zhu had quickly begun to make her calculations. [What will be the consequences if I kill Chu Yang? And, what will be the consequences if I maintain good relations with Chu Yang?]

The aura of her body would turn somewhat cold and murderous for a while. Then, it would become as warm and soft as the spring breeze for a while. In fact, the flavor of her aura was making numerous transformations within an instant…

Mo Qing Wu was also vividly making her own plans. [It seems like there's no danger for the time being…]

[This Dark Bamboo Organization looks fearful and scary. But, it seems very kind to me. Moreover, she also seems to have a plan of her own. But, I don't know whether I should ask her to help Elder Chu Yang or not?]

[After all, Elder Brother Chu Yang will be unfamiliar with the people and the place after he arrives in the Middle Three Heavens… but, he will have to bear lesser pressure if the Dark Bamboo is willing to help him…]

Mo Qing Wu was blinking her eyes as she thought about this stuff…

Chapter 462: I Must Ask Elder Brother Chu Yang...

The carriage was travelling forward at full speed; the wind was blowing and whistling outside.

There were three women in the carriage. And, they were all lost in their own thoughts.

"Reporting to Minister Jun, the three sealed letters have been sent out to the Mo Clan," a voice sounded from outside.

Jun Xi Zhu nodded indifferently, and replied with an ‘ok’.

A long while passed. Jun Xi Zhu opened her eyes and said, "Ah Lu, transmit this order to Young Master Yu – Let him tweak the compensation for loss-rate in the underground gambling house a little. The compensation rate shall be 1-5 for those who bet on the victory of Ji Mo’s side."

"What?" Jun Lu Lu was stunned, "So high?"

"Yes." Jun Xi Zhu gently nodded. She thought for a moment and said, "Find a method to bring people’s attention to this change in the underground gambling after the compensation rate is adjusted. And, let Young Master Yu resign from the post of the gambling banker. Then, let those four spendthrift fools Ao Xie Yun, Ou Du Xiao, Mo Tian Yun and Xie Dan Qiong act as chief bankers."

She again thought for a while and said, "Allow him continue to bet on the side of Ji Mo’s victory after he has resigned. In short, the higher the odds... the better!"

Jun Lu Lu scratched her head, and got even more confused.

"The chances of the victory of Ji Mo and his men aren’t high to begin with. And, you’re putting even more pressure on them. This is even worse than tidying them up openly. The gambling bankers would make a huge profit if they got defeated. So, why are you

willing to hand over such a huge profit, Elder Sister?"

Jun Lu Lu was at a loss. This was the centralized grand gambling, and it involved all influential clans of the Middle Three Heavens! So, the profits were going to be unimaginable. However, Jun Xi Zhu was unexpectedly going to abandon it?

"Why hand over such huge profits?" Jun Xi Zhu snorted and replied, "Because I can? Why are you so sure that Ji Mo and the others will be defeated?"

"Is there any suspense to it?" Jun Lu Lu's forehead had started to sweat a little, "Gao Sheng's side has genuine first successors of the great clans! But, Ji Mo's side is basically a group of second young masters. Also, these people are named in the list of top-ten young and emerging prodigies. So, the victors and losers are practically obvious at a glance!"

"Ha ha..." Jun Xi Zhu laughed insipidly and spoke, "Also, assemble 500 million silver taels. And, bet them entirely on Ji Mo's win on the closing day of the gambling houses!"

Jun Lu Lu nearly fell-off her chair.

"Elder Sister, have you gone insane?" Jun Lu Lu called out in alarm.

"I know what I am doing," Jun Lu Lu smiled a little. She then said, "This is Dark Bamboo's grand gift to the brothers of King of Hell Chu! I wish to see whether they are able to receive it or not..."

Jun Xi Zhu suddenly made a firm decision. [I must make good friends with King of Hell Chu at any cost!]

However, there was a necessary perquisite for Jun Xi Zhu to do so... [Ji Mo and the others will have to win! It would be a case of 'a dead loss' if I pay such a big price and Ji Mo and the others still lose. It would be a bad deal. Moreover, I would also suffer major financial losses. Not to mention that this would turn me into their enemy.]

[A grand gift!] Jun Lu Lu was shocked to the point that she was unable to speak. [From where has my elder sister brought such strong confidence?]

[She withdrew her gambling house banker. And, now she wants to bet 500 million silver taels. And, she's also betting on the side that has a lesser chance of winning... this is doubly counterproductive. It's equivalent to throwing away a lot of money!]

[I know that my elder sister has always been courageous, but her courage has gone off the charts this time.]

Jun Xi Zhu shook her head when she saw her younger sister in doubt. She then spoke in a consoling manner, "Relax. Ji Mo... is going to win!"

Jun Lu Lu was suddenly taken aback.

"Elder Sister... Ah Lu, where are we going?" Mo Qing Wu tilted her head and asked. Her sharp ears had gone erect after she had heard Ji Mo's name.

"We are going to the place where you wish to go." Jun Lu Lu smiled gently, "All your brothers are present there."

"Ah," Mo Qing Wu's face lit up with excitement.

"But Little Wu... you must be clear about one thing before you go. Mo Clan's important people will be present over there. And, your brothers... can't protect you," Jun Xi Zhu frowned.

"They can't protect me?" Mo Qing Wu had set her heart on finding them so that they could assist her to escape. But, she had never thought of this point. So, she got somewhat frustrated once she heard what had been said.

"Yes, they can't protect you." Jun Lu Lu also sighed, "After all, you are the Mo Clan's daughter. You are an important person of the Mo Clan. It's a principle of righteousness. In fact, they will be guilty of a taboo if they refuse to hand you over. Besides, they are

merely the second young masters. Thus, they hold no real power in their respective clans. So, their clans won't forgive them for offending a huge force like the Mo Clan!"

Mo Qing Wu's complexion suddenly turned pale.

These few sentences were absolutely true!

Mo Qing Wu had believed, [my brothers would do anything to protect me as long as I can get there. However, my brothers won't be able to resist the pressure if my clan showed up. That would be too much if it's coupled with the pressure of various other major clans...]

[I would implicate hem instead if that happens...]

"Stay here with me!" Jun Xi Zhu solemnly said, "All the respected clans of the Middle Three Heavens can come and look for my important guest, but I can shoo them away with these words — beat it!"

Mo Qing Wu hesitated.

Jun Xi Zhu had offered this with a certain sense of purpose involved, but what she had said wasn't wrong! [I am afraid that my elder brothers won't be able to protect me once the news leaks out. So, the only one who can keep me safe is...]

"I wish for you to stay here. We are all women here. I can teach you some things. I can also help you gain experience of the Jianghu. Moreover, I can also block all the trials and hardships for you. I can keep you safe and sound until... your Elder Brother Chu Yang arrives!" Jun Xi Zhu solemnly offered.

She had firmly decided to help Mo Qing Wu since the moment she had heard that Mo Qing Wu had been forced to get married by her clan. This had nothing to do with her personal interests...

In fact, even the speculation about the revival of her Three Yin Meridians came later...

"I want to think about it." Mo Qing Wu wrinkled her brows. She seemed somewhat undecided.

Jun Xi Zhu smiled, and no longer spoke. She knew that such problems and choices would seem rather esoteric when placed in front of such a little girl. However, Jun Xi Zhu believed that Mo Qing Wu was capable of comprehending them.

[It must've been her plan to decide which course to follow on the journey. Otherwise, it is impossible for a girl who of 11 to be able to flee for 2000 Km alone. This takes courage. But, it also needs wisdom!]

[This seemingly delicate girl has been steeled-well by her clan. She has been toughened deep down to the marrow of her bones!] Jun Xi Zhu appreciated this point very much. She also wanted to find out, [To what extent would this adorable little girl grow once she receives my teachings?]

[Perhaps she'll grow even stronger than me?]

A noise came from the front. The troops seemed to have slowed down.

"Minister Jun, the people of the Huang Clan are journeying ahead, but they are somewhat slow. I have sent some people to make them get out of the way," a respectful voice reported from outside.

"I see. Massacre them if they don't clear the way within the count of three breaths!" Jun Xi Zhu didn't even bat an eye. She then indifferently spoke, "Who dares to block my way in the Middle Three Heavens? Do you even have to come and ask me about such things? Song Chang Wu, have you sold your brain or what?!"

"Yes. Yes! This subordinate will go handle this matter at once!"

The voice went far away rapidly. Then, the same voice fiercely sounded from afar, "The people of Huang Clan — pay attention. You all shall be killed without amnesty if you don't clear the road

within the count of three breaths! One Two "

Someone shouted in a sharp and frightened voice, "Ah... how can you people be so unreasonable..."

The first voice laughed fiendishly in reply, "We are the reason! Motherfu*ker, you wish to reason with the people of Dark Bamboo... this is the first time I've run into such a cu*t! Three! Are you moving or not?"

A sudden burst of commotion resounded as those people rushed sideways towards the ditch. Dark Bamboo's troops went full speed ahead once again. In fact, they howled like a crazy dragon as they passed by.

Mo Qing Wu couldn't help but open the front curtain of the carriage to peek out. She saw that there were precipices on both sides of the road. And, those people of the Huang Clan were standing at the edge of the cliffs on both sides with a look of anger and humiliation on their faces. The heels of their feet were even protruding outside the edge of the cliff. They were standing straight with the muscles in entire body taut tightly... for the fear that they would fall off.

The cavalry troops of Dark Bamboo flamboyantly swept past in front of their faces. In fact, their robes fluttered in the wind and slapped against the faces of those people. But, the cavalry men laughed wildly without giving any fu*ks about it!

Several pitiful screams sounded. It seemed like several people had been struck off their feet, and had fallen off the cliff.

However, no one dared to shout curses; nor did they dare to rebel...

Mo Qing Wu pulled down the curtain, and heaved a sigh.

Jun Xi Zhu was sitting in a meditation with her eyes closed. She opened her eyes, looked at Mo Qing Wu, and softly said, "You saw that? No need to sigh over it. This is Jianghu! And, the status of

this Elder Sister is what most people of Jianghu struggle their whole lives to achieve!"

She somewhat wearily rubbed her brows and continued, "Everyone wants strength, and everyone wants to become a powerhouse!"

"The powerhouse need not be sympathetic in this world. The weak aren't worthy of sympathy." Jun Xi Zhu spoke slowly, "Therefore, the word 'sympathy' is practically worthless in this world! Either you let him bully you to the extreme... or you bully him to make him serve you out of sheer fear."

"That's so cruel..." Mo Qing Wu sighed gently. A look of contemplation flashed in her bright and beautiful eyes.

"The ancients have said that the womanly compassion makes it difficult to accomplish any major feats! They have said this about us women!" Jun Xi Zhu coldly said, "But I – Jun Xi Zhu – refuse to accept this verdict! Why do the women give such impression to people? Womanly compassion...? It's ridiculous! Could it be that we women are naturally built to be belittled?

"This is a disgraceful view of women! This is a world of men. The meaningless 'benevolence', and the so-called 'righteous benevolence'... these terms have been birthed by men! The so-called 'etiquettes and morality' have been birthed by men as well! So, why must the women bear this bad reputation?" Jun Xi Zhu further added in a cold voice, "I shall let these so-called 'men' witness that even women can make the world tremble!"

"So, I – Jun Xi Zhu – use my woman's body and rule the Middle Three Heaven with an iron fist. I have forced them into submission with the deterrence of my underworld gang in the Middle Three Heavens! Even the so-called outstanding warlords bow their heads to profess allegiance when Dark Bamboo orders!" a cold light flashed in Jun Xi Zhu's eyes as she said, "I make these stinky men witness that this is the true power of the so-called 'weak women'.

And, they have no choice but to bend their knees and kneel before us!"

"Woman, man..." Mo Qing Wu sudden began to tremble with excitement. It must be said that this speech of Jun Xi Zhu's was truly powerful enough to incite the power of women! It was overwhelming and blood boiling!

"This..." Mo Qing Wu's chest was burning with anger. She wanted to say, [I would also like to do so!]

However, she suddenly got discouraged when she was thinking of giving an answer. She rolled her eyes, and said, "About this... I want to ask my Elder Brother Chu Yang..."

Jun Xi Zhu was stupefied.

Jun Xi Zhu had seen a genuinely determined look in the glittering big eyes of Mo Qing Wu right before she had said 'I want to ask my Elder Brother Chu Yang'.

Jun Xi Zhu suddenly choked. Then, she coughed repeatedly. In fact, she had been nearly stirred to spew-out a mouthful of blood by these few words. This little girl had been impassioned to the extent that the change in her facial expression was visible. She was visibly burning with anger and her blood had bubbled-up to the brim in that very moment. However, the entirety of that burning passion had unexpectedly disappeared the very next moment... along with these worthless words.

Chapter 463: I Don’t Feel Any Regret Deep down!

This speech was Jun Xi Zhu’s sharpest weapon, and she had used it to subdue several strong women under her command! A woman would begin to flare up as soon as she’d hear these words...

Jun Xi Zhu was about to introduce Mo Qing Wu to this aspect. However, she hadn’t thought that this brilliant method that had worked perfectly on all sorts of women thus far would unexpectedly fail to work on this little girl...

How could this not be depressing?

Jun Lu Lu was giggling on the side lines.

Jun Lu Lu saw that her elder sister’s flawless rhetoric had deflated in front of a little girl. And, she couldn’t help but find this funny...

"Sigh... it’s my fault!" Jun Xi Zhu felt frustrated, "You’re a girl. You’re not a woman yet... you won’t understand these things..."

Mo Qing Wu innocently smiled, "I will do whatever Elder Brother Chu Yang tells me to do."

Jun Xi Zhu heaved a deep sigh. She was at the end of her wits. She no longer knew what else to say. So, she had to close her eyes tightly.

[Something can’t bother you once it goes out of your sight! This is frustrating... I don’t know what great ability that Elder Brother Chu Yang has that has made this little girl ‘head over heels in love’ with him.]

The wheels were rolling-on, and horses’ hooves were beating intermittently. The distant Mt. Dingjun was getting closer and closer.

Jun Xi Zhu closed her eyes. And, the train of her thoughts had

floated to some another aspect. [Ice and Snow Wilderness... Ninth Grade Spirit Beast? Won't my cultivation go a step further if I can refine the inner core of such a spirit beast?]

Jun Lu Lu was thinking, [Elder Brother Yu is now at Mt. Dingjun. He must be having a great time. He must be having fun. This guy... it has been so long, and he hasn't even written a letter. I will teach him a proper lesson when I see him again...]

Mo Qing Wu was thinking in her heart, [Elder Brother Chu Yang... Elder Brother Chu Yang, please come quickly. I miss you boohoo... My saber was taken away. I had to leave the scabbard at home too... your Little Wu is so pitiful... boohoo...]

...

Lower Three Heavens...

Tie Long Cheng and Wu Kuang Yun were still waging war on all fronts. The domain of the Iron Cloud Nation was getting bigger and bigger. A great celebration had already started on in the Iron Cloud Citadel. The government affairs had also fallen into the right place.

The Bu Tian Pavilion was established prominently in the Iron Cloud Citadel after the expansion. It had since become a unique emblem of the Iron Cloud Nation.

Wu Qian Qian was clad in a black robe inside King of Hell Chu's secret chamber. She had a stern bearing. She had a golden mask on, and seemed grim because of it. She was reading a confidential document at the moment.

A secret door moved slightly in the deepest part of the secret chamber. It then started to slide-open slowly. A bright yellow silhouette emerged slowly, and walked in.

"You came?" Wu Qian Qian asked in a soft voice.

"Hm..." Tie Bu Tian walked towards Wu Qian Qian and sat across her. She was dressed in a very wide robe. She looked at that golden

mask, and her eyes filled with tender feelings.

"How are things? Do you feel anything?" Wu Qian Qian stood up. She curiously walked up to the front of Tie Bu Tian's body.

"It has only been two months. How can there be any feeling?" Tie Bu Tian gave her a blank look, and spoke, "I have read in the books. It says that it would take at least five or six months to feel him move..."

"It would take so long?" Wu Qian Qian opened her pretty eyes wide. She was amazed.

"But, I can feel him grow every day..." Tie Bu Tian smiled. She caressed her belly gently with her hand. She had a tender look on her face.

"I want to touch..." Wu Qian Qian moved close to her. She was about to hold out her hand. However, she felt that the mask on her face was in the way. So, she reached out with her hand towards her face in order to take it off.

"Don't..." Tie Bu Tian grabbed her hand midway. Then, her eyes exposed an appealing look, "Minister Chu, don't take off the mask."

[Don't take off the mask. You are my Minister Chu. My fantasy would cease to exist if you take off the mask...]

Wu Qian Qian was startled to look at the appealing look in Tie Bu Tian's eyes...

She stared blankly for a long time. But, the look in her eyes eventually returned to normal. She held out her hand, and caressed Tie Bu Tian's face. She then spoke in a soft voice, "My lovely wife... you must be suffering a lot."

Her voice had impressively changed into Chu Yang's voice.

Tie Bu Tian's body trembled. She closed her eyes, and gently grabbed that hand. She stuck it close to her face as she listened to this familiar voice. This voice had appeared so many times in her

dreams. There was a delightful look of peacefulness on her face. She softly replied, "I'm not suffering because I bear Minister Chu's child..."

The emotion in her voice was as deep as an ocean. However, a strong sense of having no regrets was leaking out of her voice. But, there also seemed to be a strange hollowness to it. In fact, it seemed as if this sentence had passed through time and space, and had traversed towards her beloved man... the man who had already left.

It seemed that the atmosphere in the secret chamber suddenly froze up.

A long while passed in this fashion. Then, Wu Qian Qian wiped her eyes and spoke, "There's one thing. I think I should let you know."

"What?" Tie Bu Tian seemed to have recovered her original voice. A sense of loss flashed on her face.

"You should take a look... at this piece of information." Wu Qian Qian drew out a thin paper from the file.

Tie Bu Tian looked at it. Her body couldn't help but shiver fiercely. Then, teardrops started to stream down from her eyes.

Only a few sentences were written on it —"Reporting to the Minister. A stone cliff suddenly caught fire on the outskirts of Beyond the Heavens Sect. Then, something unusual happened. The entire cliff was cut by someone, and five big words were carved on it... Tian Tian... Little Tian Tian... There was no other mark apart from this."

Tie Bu Tian was startled by this!

"Tian Tian... Little Tian Tian..." Tie Bu Tian read these words. In fact, she literally whispered them to herself. She had a messy look in her eyes.

[Chu Yang was right here in front of me on that day... he stood

there stupefied...]

...

On that day –

Chu Yang heaved a long sigh, and asked in a hoarse voice, "What... was her name?"

[Name?]

Tie Bu Tian took a deep breath as her eyes turned somewhat moist. She replied in a muffled voice, "I don't know her surname. I only know that she was called 'Tian Tian'. She had told us that her father loved her very much, and used to call her... Little Tian Tian..."

"Tian Tian? Little Tian Tian?" Chu Yang's voice was low and deep. It was hard to tell what kinds of emotions were raging in his heart.

Tie Bu Tian suddenly felt a sharp pain in her heart when she heard Chu Yang call her name. She felt congested in her chest. She hastily turned her head to one side, and tears began to well-up in her eyes...

"Little Tian Tian... Little Tian Tian..." Chu Yang wore a tragic smile and said, "I had never thought that I – Chu Yang – will ever fall into such a spiral of emotional debt!"

"She's buried there?" Chu Yang took a deep breath...

"I will leave tomorrow morning. But first, I will go to the Beyond the Heavens Sect. I will go and take a look at Little Tian Tian... the woman who sacrificed everything for me..."

...

Tie Bu Tian's body was on the verge of collapsing. But, her eyes suddenly emitted a joyful expression. She felt dizziness in her head. She mumbled, "I must go and take a look... I wish to go and take a look at those words!"

She bit her lip in excitement, and raised her face, "That's my man! He carved my name!"

"I have to go now!"

Wu Qian Qian also bit her lip. She enviously watched the happiness that brimmed in Tie Bu Tian's bright eyes. She only felt endless bitterness in her heart.

[She has... she has everything... she has your child... you wrote her name... you have given her a status in the society... But, I have nothing... I don't even have myself... I'm just a substitute! I have even substituted you, and I am taking care of your woman in your stead. I'm taking care of your child... couldn't you have given me at least one memory to cherish?]

[It has been so long... you haven't hugged me...]

[I am very jealous, you know?]

Tie Bu Tian had already stood up. And, she seemed to have regained the demeanor of an Emperor in this split second. She took a few steps to walk out of the door. Then, she solemnly commanded, "I'm issuing a decree. Make preparations to ride out of the palace!"

She had come here via the tunnel, and shouldn't be here at this moment. However, she had no qualms in showing herself.

Wu Qian Qian remained there in a daze for a while after Tie Bu Tian walked away. That massive secret chamber suddenly felt empty. But, it also seemed to be very crowded at the same time. That's because... it was jam-packed with someone's shadow. In fact, it was full of it...

[Here, Chu Yang used to lie down here and sleep. Here... Chu Yang used to read here. Here... Chu Yang used to pace back and forth here while he'd think. Here...]

[That black robe... ah!]

Wu Qian Qian's tears continued to fall nonstop. She caressed the black robe on her body, and a hint of satisfaction appeared in her eyes. She muttered in a soft voice, "Chu Yang, perhaps you don't know... I'll always be by your side as long as you're wearing my black robe... until the Middle Three Heavens, the Upper Three Heavens..."

Then, she stood up, wiped away the tears in her eyes, took deep breaths, and slowly walked out. The black robe she was clad in appeared gloomy and eerie. Her eyes were cold and sharp, and they were overflowing with murderous intention!

...

The imperial troops rushed full speed ahead on the order of the Emperor!

The troops were moving on the main road. The almond-yellow banners were fluttering in the wind. A soaring golden dragon was imprinted on the banner.

They had arrived in front of that steep cliff in a few days' time. It was located outside the Beyond the Heaven Sect.

Tie Bu Tian stepped out of the imperial carriage. She then stood below that steep cliff, and continued to stare at it with an upturned face for a very long time. She was looking at the top of the steep cliff... at those five words that had been carved by Chu Yang's sword. A tremendous wave had surged up in her heart. And, the tides in her heart were moving up and down. She missed him so much that she wanted to cry loudly. But, she also wanted to laugh out loud in excitement...

She was having bitter thoughts of longing in her heart. It seemed as if her heart was being twisted in order to make a cup of intoxicating wine. A myriad of emotions had welled up in her heart at this moment. She was feeling sour, sweet, bitter, and spicy... all at once.

Chu Yang was facing thousands of horses and thousands of soldiers when she had seen him for the first time. He had seemed like an immortal who had been banished from the heaven as he had rushed towards them. And, it had seemed like a miracle when the gazes of these two people had met!

The second time they had met was in Chu Yang's Heavenly Armament Pavilion. She had turned herself a young girl, and had gone to see his sword. The third time, Chu Yang had shared his deep feelings with her at the lakeside outside the Bu Tian Pavilion.

...

Scene after scene of past events poured into her mind like smoke and clouds. And, Tie Bu Tian stood there disappointed and frustrated.

[That night... that night... Chu Yang was seriously hurt. His body had been affected by the lust poison, and he was unconscious. I didn't hesitate to use my virgin woman's body to detoxify him... Who can know... who can possibly know... how shameful that is for a woman?]

[This is... what kind of dedication!]

[But, I have no regrets.] Tie Bu Tian spoke within the silence of her heart.

Her bright yellow robe was fluttering-about in the wind. And, she stood there like a statue... motionless. [Chu Yang, do you know that I'm Tian Tian? I'm Tian Tian... your Little Tian Tian.]

[These few words written by your hands – Tian Tian – look so good...]

The black-robed Wu Qian Qian stood behind her, and she looked sinister and gloomy. And, the golden mask... it looked eerie and fearsome. She was also looking at those few words that had been carved on the surface of the cliff. But, there was a sense of deep envy in her eyes.

The army was stationed at a distant place. A gust of wind passed by, and fluttered the sleeves of the robes of the two people. The yellow sand was swept-about freely by the gust of wind. They seemed to be very lonely in this setting... solitary...

It seemed that only these two people were left in the world...

The people who were witnessing this scene also felt an overwhelming sense of loneliness. In fact, it seemed that this feeling had struck their hearts like lightning.

It was a type of desolate feeling that had crept up unbidden.

...

However, two other people were watching this scene from the mountain-top at this moment.

The figures of these two people were slender, graceful, and feminine. The face of one of them was covered with a black muslin mask. And, the face of the other one was covered with a white muslin mask.

The eyes of the black masked person lit up. She spoke with a smile, "It seems like these are the imperial guards. Perhaps your junior sister-apprentice has also come. Ruo Lan, you needn’t worry. I will ask her to assist you in finding it."

Chapter 464: Whose Child Is It?

The white-masked woman replied somewhat joyfully, "Such a fine coincidence. Then, I would trouble you, Master."

The black-masked woman somewhat bitterly looked at her as she sighed. She floated down the summit, and spoke as they descended side by side, "Your junior sister-apprentice has a physical foundation that's far better than yours. You have a 'Jade Bone' constitution whereas she has a 'Delicate Icy Heart' physique."

"Delicate Icy Heart?" the white-masked woman's tender body trembled as she joyfully replied, "Congratulations, Master."

The black-masked woman snorted and spoke, "Your Icy Heart Jade Bone Saintly Technique had already been cultivated to a critical moment twenty years ago. You were only a step away from attaining the highest level. But then, you got enticed by Chu Fei Ling, and went crazy for him. You even... lost your virginity! You shattered your Master's life-long dream. I hated you so much back then. I felt like killing you with my own hands on so many occasions! Unfortunately, I couldn't hurt you because of the deep affection between us master and disciple..."

The white-masked woman shivered slightly as she replied, "Yes. Master trained me with hope. But I – Ruo Lan – have failed to live up to the Master's expectations by committing such a sin. I deserve to die ten-thousand times as punishment..."

"Forget it, ok. It's all in the past now. Would talking about the past do any good?" the black-masked woman sighed and continued, "I felt as if someone was twisting a knife in my heart on your wedding day. I had sent someone to deliver the congratulatory gift to you. But, I couldn't bring myself to go in-person to congratulate you. Instead, I had set out to travel the Nine Heavens alone."

"I arrived in the Lower Three Heavens that day. Coincidentally, Iron Cloud's crown principle had taken birth on the same day. So,

the entire nation was in celebration! It was very lively. I was also curious. So, I went to see. But, I accidentally discovered... that the crown prince who was wrapped in swaddling clothes turned out to be a baby girl. Moreover... she even had the peerless physique of ‘Delicate Icy Heart’. I was so overjoyed!"

There had been a trace of relief in the tone of the black-masked woman as she had spoken this part.

"Master genuinely possesses an all-seeing mind. But, my junior sister’s luck is also the reason. And, this is also the heaven’s way of compensating the Master," the white-masked woman spoke sincerely, "It’s truly fortunate for me that Master found the junior sister. Otherwise, I would have felt guilty my entire life..."

"Humph! Humph! You better not talk about that, girl. Aren’t you the one who deceived me into being overjoyed, and then ran away with someone else in the end?" the black-masked woman snorted, "Anyway, the Iron Cloud Nation’s Emperor was regarding ‘her’ as the ‘crown prince’ because he had only fathered daughters one after another...

"So, this little girl turned into a ray of hope in those desperate times.

"So, I found the-then Emperor, and showed him a few martial art tricks. Then, I took the little baby girl and returned to the sect. I even granted her the ‘Secret Unfathomable Phantom Jade’ pendant!" The black-masked woman heaved a sigh of relief.

"Master seems to have taken a lot of trouble for the junior sister." The white-masked woman couldn’t help but feel excited. [Even a Supreme Expert can’t see the depth of one’s cultivation once that 'Secret Unfathomable Phantom Jade’ is worn on the body. Master has always carried this treasure on her person. It’s difficult to find another one in the entire Nine Heavens. Yet, Master gave up such a treasure, and gave it to junior sister.]

"In addition, I didn’t hesitate to violate my own rules, and acted

in secrecy to guard against any probably contingencies. I destroyed the fertility of Iron Cloud Nation's Emperor Tie Shi Cheng..." the black-masked woman spoke with some guilty conscience...

"What? Master!" The white-masked woman's tender body shuddered. She looked at her Master in disbelief.

"Tian Tian is the only heir to the throne as the matter stands. In addition, there's also the 'Secret Unfathomable Phantom Jade' pendant. On top of that, she has the imperial status, and that keeps her deep in the palace. She basically can't get in touch with many men. So, I don't have to worry about her getting emotional entanglements..." the black-masked woman heaved a long sigh and said, "It's just that I can't help but feel sorry for the Iron Cloud Nation's Emperor..."

The white-masked woman was speechless. She thought to herself, [you only feel 'sorry'? You made the man die without grandchildren...]

They two of them floated down the mountain, and continued to talk along their descent. The black-masked woman exclaimed in amazement, "It's her! But... what is this silly child doing just standing there and staring blankly?"

The white-masked woman heard this, and looked on. She saw two solitary figures standing within the army protection. They seemed spellbound. Both of them were completely motionless, and were merely looking up.

These two women seemed to have well-coordinated movements. They simultaneously flew over in that direction, and landed on the ground.

"Who are you people?!" a guard shouted loudly, "Protect the Emperor!"

The imperial soldiers immediately moved into action. And, they nocked the arrows on the bows in unison!

Countless experts swiftly jumped out to the front!

However, the two ‘shadows’ showed-up like ghostly apparitions. They saw those two figures, and their bodies suddenly shook. They shouted without a moment’s hesitation, "Don’t release the arrows! These people are on our side!"

Meanwhile, Tie Bu Tian also saw these two figures, and a complicated look appeared in her eyes. Then, she regained her calm, slowly raised her hand, and commanded, "Don’t shoot the arrows!"

The imperial soldiers stood still. The countless experts – who had jumped out to protect the Emperor –fell back.

It took longer to describe this, but those two women had already arrived in front of Tie Bu Tian by now. The black-masked woman looked at Tie Bu Tian, and a look of satisfaction appeared in her eyes. She nodded her head and asked, "Tian Tian, how are you?"

"Master..." Tie Bu Tian stepped forward to greet her master respectfully.

"Let’s go to your main camp. There are too many people here. After all, you still have to maintain the dignity of the Emperor." The black-masked woman suggested in an understanding manner.

"Yes."

The four people arrived in the tent. It was strictly ordered to forbid anyone from entering the tent. The two shadows stood guard outside with a look of worry on their faces.

Wu Qian Qian wanted to stay behind because she knew that Tie Bu Tian was in a big danger at the moment. However, Tie Bu Tian requested her to go out. [Master will get furious as soon as she finds out about this matter. And, Wu Qian Qian will inevitably become an innocent victim of the disaster of my doing if she stays here.]

"Master, you haven’t visited in a long time," Tie Bu Tian

personally came over to serve her.

"I missed you. So, I came to see you," the black-masked woman smiled and said, "Besides, your senior sister-apprentice has something she needs to do. I want you to help her."

"Eh? This is my Senior Sister?" Tie Bu Tian looked at the white-masked woman, and hurriedly bowed to salute.

"Easy there, junior sister," the white-masked woman quickly helped her up, and spoke-up in an affectionate manner, "My name is Yang Ruo Lan. You can you call me Elder Sister Lan... or simply call me 'Sister'. Ha-ha, there's no need for such formalities between us sisters."

"Yes, thanks Sister."

"There's no need to thank me. Instead, I should be the one to thank you for inheriting the legacy of Master. You made her wish come true," Yang Ruo Lan spoke with a smile.

Tie Bu Tian repeatedly said 'yes-yes', but had a strong guilty conscience underneath. She couldn't help but be in a dilemma.

"Take off the Phantom Jade. Let me see how much your cultivation has progressed," the black-masked woman gently said, "Considering your aptitude and diligence, you must've met my requirements by now. Ha-ha."

Tie Bu Tian was startled. And, she stayed like that for a long time. Then, she suddenly knelt down and spoke, "Master, please forgive me! Your disciple has..."

"What's wrong?" The black-masked woman was taken aback. She soon realized that something was wrong. The smiling expression on her face slowly receded as she asked in a heavy tone, "What's the matter? What sin did you commit?"

Tie Bu Tian mustered her strength, and took off the 'Phantom Jade' pendant. Then, she lowered her head and stood in front of the black-masked woman.

Her cloud-like luxuriant hair, her large eyes, her peach-like cheeks were the mark of a charming girl with peerless beauty and elegance. [Such a stunning beauty!] Yang Ruo Lan was going to say these words of praise, but suddenly seemed to discover something. She suddenly opened her small mouth, and nearly exclaimed in surprise. But, she hastily covered her mouth with her hand.

The black-masked woman jumped up abruptly from her seat with a ‘teng’ sound, and stood-up fiercely! Even her chair got knocked over to the ground with a ‘bang’!

In fact, the chair had been knocked over by her mere cultivation. So, it could obviously be seen that the vibrations in her heart had reached the extreme extent!

"What the hell happened?" the black-masked woman asked one word at a time. Her black mask silently turned to dust. And, a burst of dreadful murderous aura engulfed the entire Beyond the Heavens Mountain Range!

The thousands of troops stationed outside trembled with fear. And, their hearts began to beat like drums. They felt as if the weather had transformed from blistering hot summer to cold winter in a split-second!

"Master... I..." Tie Bu Tian said in a plaintive voice. She was still kneeling on the ground.

"Don’t call me Master!" the black-masked woman bellowed. Her voice condensed and burst out like a great thunder. It obviously didn’t resound within the tent. But, the sound waves burst out of the tent with explosive power.

Several horses in the surroundings neighed miserably as they collapsed on the ground. They bled profusely from all orifices on their heads, and died soon after! The hundreds of imperial guards who were guarding the Emperor’s tent bled out from the seven orifices of their head, and collapsed.

Even the two shadows were left to tremble to some extent. Their faced had already turned deathly pale.

"Master... calm down..." Yang Ruo Lan looked at Tie Bu Tian in a concerned manner, and quickly stepped forward to mediate.

The black-masked woman's mask had already crumbled, and had revealed her old yet still graceful face. There were wrinkles on her face, but they weren't obvious. This face was usually calm and gentle. In fact, it was normally full of genial grace and elegance. However, a cold frost-like look had taken over her face at this time. She was fuming with anger, and her murderous aura was going out of control. A seemingly uncontrollable feeling of rage had shrouded her entire body.

"Your... eyebrow peaks have dissipated. Your skin has stretched, and your waist and hip have changed in shape and size. You no longer have the body of a virgin!" the black-masked woman lowered her voice and clenched her teeth as she spoke one word at a time, "Icy Heart Jade Bone, Icy Heart Jade Bone... where's the scope for icy heart once your heart gets taken over by lust? How can it exist if that happens?!"

Tie Bu Tian's entire body trembled. She couldn't speak.

"Who did it!?" the black-masked woman asked sharply in a loud voice.

"Master..." Tie Bu Tian repeatedly kowtowed, "Please forgive your disciple..."

"Forgive you..." The black-masked woman's body flashed. She suddenly grabbed her wrist, and used two fingers to examine. The expression on her face became even more shocked as she suddenly faced upwards and let out a wild laughter. Her voice sounded mournful, "Good! Very good! It's superb! I – Lan Mei Xian – am the Icy Heart Plum Immortal, and I've genuinely received an excellent disciple. She has practiced Icy Heart Jade Bone Saintly Technique, yet she has a bastard child in her womb!"

Yang Ruo Lan’s tender body shook fiercely at this time. She looked at Tie Bu Tian in disbelief. [I would’ve never thought that this junior sister would turn out to be so audacious! She has clearly surpassed the ‘me’ of those days several times over…]

[She hasn’t only destroyed the Icy Heart Jade Bone Saintly Technique, but she also has a child in her womb…]

"Whose vile spawn is it?!" Lan Mei Xian fiercely asked as her graceful face twisted.

Tie Bu Tian kept her mouth shut.

"Whose child is it?" Lan Mei Xian asked furiously, "Who got you pregnant?!"

"It’s…" Tie Bu Tian clenched her teeth. Then, she suddenly determined herself to fight back. She raised her head with a firm look on her face and replied, "Master, you don’t have to ask. This is the child of my man… I beseech you to consider the fact that there’s a fetus inside me. Kindly spare your disciple’s life for the time being… for old time’s sake. I’m willing to accept whatever punishment the Master deems fit once the baby is born!"

"You dare to talk back instead of giving an answer?" Lan Mei Xian was so angry that her chest was moving up and down in a fierce manner. Suddenly, a frantic murderous intent flashed in her eyes as she spoke in a stern voice, "You think that I won’t dare to kill you?! I will kill you right now!"

She raised her palm. Her murderous aura welled-up crazily, and struck down towards the top of Tie Bu Tian’s head like a lightning!

Chapter 465: Such a Silly Girl!

The palm pierced the air, and issued a loud ‘xiu’ sound. Then, a faint white smoke pervaded in the air!

Tie Bu Tian closed her eyes. She tightly covered her lower abdomen with her hands. A trace of guilt and remorse flashed on her face. And, two streams of tears slowly slid down her face.

[Chu Yang, I couldn’t protect our child...]

"Master!" Yang Rou Lan had been through such a situation in the past. So, she knew that her master would do something because she was furious at this moment. Therefore, she was already prepared to protect her. She hastily took a single step, and used hers hands to block Lan Mei Xian’s palm. And, she shoved away Tie Bu Tian’s body with a kick at the same time. And, Tie Bu Tian’s body went sliding away as a result.

"Please show mercy!" Yang Rou Lan only had enough time to speak these two words.

Lan Mei Xian raised her foot, and kicked towards Yang Rou Lan. She then spoke in a stern voice, "You’re not qualified-enough to advise me to show mercy," she smiled bitterly and continued, "I only took two disciples my entire life. The first disciple lost her virginity while she was unmarried, and gave up the Icy Heart and Jade Bone Saintly technique halfway. And now, the second one... the second disciple also got pregnant before getting married! This is even more..."

"This has been my lifelong wish, ah! But, everything has changed into soap bubbles!" Lan Mei Xian felt a suffocating feeling of anger surging in her heart. Then, she spat out a mouthful of blood with a pop sound. She then said ferociously, "How would I vent the anger and hatred in my heart if I don’t kill you...?"

"Master... you must ask her what came to happen before you

punish her... Maybe, junior sister is a victim of something. Perhaps she was forced..." It was already too late for Yang Rou Lan to stop her. So, she shouted out loud with the entirety of her strength.

"Huh?" these words made Lan Mei Xian's mind clear. So, she stopped midway. She then looked at Tie Bu Tian, "What the hell happened?"

"Master..." Tie Bu Tian took a deep breath. She looked up and said, "Your disciple did it willingly..."

"Sl*t!" Lan Mei Xian angrily cussed, "What good are those stinky men huh? Why... why you are you like this... it keeps happening again and again..." she couldn't speak further because of grief. Her fingers were also trembling.

"Junior sister, tell us what happened?" Yang Rou Lan walked towards Tie Bu Tian, and asked in a gentle voice.

Tie Bu Tian lowered her head. She hesitated for a long time. But then, she felt the kindness of Yang Rou Lan. So, she whispered softly, "My man... it was the man I love... he was trying to help me, and he got affected by the poison of a lust dragon. And, he only had me by his side at that time..."

"The poison of a lust dragon..." Yang Ruo Lan and Lan Mei Xian exclaimed in unison.

"I didn't think that I'd end up conceiving a child... but, I don't regret it. Instead, I am very satisfied," Tie Bu Tian lowered her head. But, her voice was very firm, "I know I failed to live up to your expectations, Master. I'm very guilty for I betrayed your expectations, Master... but..."

She raised her head, and looked at Lan Mei Xian. She then spoke in a soft voice, "Master... please forgive your disciple. But, if such a thing happens again — I will still save him! Moreover, even if there would be some other woman by his side — I... I would never let her do it!"

Teardrops dripped down her spotless face. She even blushed while she spoke about this matter. However, she still spoke her heart out, and without the slightest of hesitation.

"Oh dear!" Lan Mei Xian let out a deep sigh. She closed her eyes, and her entire being seemed to have aged a few decades in this moment!

She had been born in a large and respected clan. Her innate aptitude had been exceptionally good since her childhood. So, she was received by a great and talented individual as their disciple. And, she had practiced the Icy Heart and Jade Bone Saintly Technique from that day onwards. But, her aptitude was limited. So, she hadn't been able to cross the final level; no matter how much she had tried...

She had reached this bottleneck 40 years ago. But, she hadn't been able to cross it. She knew that she would probably never cross it in this life. Therefore, she had received Yang Rou Lan – who had the Jade Bone Physique – as her disciple. But, she hadn't expected that Yang Rou Lan would end up falling in love with Chu Fei Ling after she matured... and that too before she had entered the highest level of the marital technique that she had been practicing!

Lan Mei Xian attached great importance to passing-on her heritage, but she also understood the difficulties of her disciple. After all, remaining unmarried throughout one's life wasn't something every woman could endure. So, she allowed Yang Rou Lan to get married and start a family. But, she was depressed. So, she had gone out to travel around the world in order to soothe her troubled heart, and had found Tie Bu Tian thereafter.

She was again tempted to receive an apprentice... But, she had never expected that Tie Bu Tian would also walk the same road!

The entirety of her hopes had suddenly turned into dust!

[The lover of my disciple was affected by the lust poison. Moreover, it was the most overbearing poison of the lust dragon.

How could she have helplessly watched her lover die like that? How could she not save him when she knew she could?]

Lan Mei Xian asked herself whether she would've done the same thing or not...

[What else is there to say in this case?]

A long while passed before she spoke in a dull voice, "Get up. The Master isn't lucky enough. That's all. That's why I couldn't keep such priceless disciples in my care..." she spoke out this sentence. She had also come to terms with the situation in her heart. Things had already gotten this far. So, what else could she say? What would be the use of speaking any further?

What good would killing Tie Bu Tian do?

What's more... two lives would be taken away in one corpse if she were to kill Tie Bu Tian...

"Thank you very much, Master... I'm sorry, I'm sorry... I'm sorry... boohoo..." Tie Bu Tian tapped her head twice on the floor. She knew that her Master's lifelong dream had been shattered by her actions. But, her Master had still forgiven her. So, she couldn't help but feel even guiltier. She saw that her Master was in pain, and she felt as if a knife was being twisted in her heart.

Yang Rou Lan had seen Tie Bu Tian for the first time. But, she knew that the Master would've also felt regret her whole life if Tie Bu Tian had been killed by the raging palm of the Master. She knew that her master's heart would've been encumbered by an unbearable sense of guilt if that had come to happen...

After all, the unborn child was innocent...

Yang Rou Lan had also lost her child. And, she had been suffering with heartache ever since. In fact, she hadn't been able to forget it for even a moment's time. How could she not understand the feelings of a mother towards her child?

No treasure in the entire world could replace these feelings!

"Sigh... it must be hard for you..." Lan Mei Xian let out a sigh. She suppressed her own sense of loss in her heart and spoke, "You are the Emperor — a man in disguise. Moreover, you're pregnant... this is..."

After much deliberation, she had realized that her disciple was in a very difficult situation.

"What about that man?" It seemed that wrinkles had been piled up on the face of Lan Mei Xian. She waved her hand in a weak manner, and spoke, "Call him here. I will teach him a lesson... you have sacrificed so much for him... he can't disappoint you now... otherwise, I swear on my life that I will kill him even if the heavens would wish to protect him."

"The man..." Tie Bu Tian foolishly looked at her master. She again felt sad in her heart. And, she again felt guilty. She was obviously very terrified as well. She stammered, "He... he..."

"What about him?" Lan Mei Xian snorted, "Relax, I've already forgiven you. So, why would I be interested in hurting him?"

"He's not here..." Tie Bu Tian had to muster a great amount of strength to speak out.

"What?" Lan Mei Xian frowned and snorted in annoyance.

"Actually... he isn't here. He... he has left," Tie Bu Tian replied.

"He has left...? Where did he go?" Lan Mei Xian got annoyed and asked, "Doesn't he know that his woman is here? Moreover, his woman is carrying his child...? And, he has gone away at such a time?"

Yang Rou Lan also felt resentful in her heart. [How can this man be so irresponsible? This man is simply disgraceful!]

Tie Bu Tian was stammering. She didn't know what to say. At last, she somehow squeezed out a sentence, "Please Master. Don't ask... I... I'm willing to do anything, but this..."

"Don’t ask?" Lan Mei Xian snorted. A cold expression flashed through her eyes. She then said in raised voice, "Shadows... both of you... come in!"

Tie Bu Tian’s complexion turned deathly pale.

[Shadows... there’s no way they can hide the truth from Master.]

The two shadows heard the voice, and came in. They saw that Tie Bu Tian was in good health. So, they let out a long sigh of relief.

"Do you know about this matter?" Lan Mei Xian pointed her chin towards Tie Bu Tian, and spoke in a strict voice, "Now, don’t tell me that you don’t know what I am talking about!"

The shadows become agape and tongue-tied.

These two hadn’t thought that she would ask them about this troublesome matter.

However, they owed Chu Yang a lot. And, they had a good relationship with him. So, how could they betray him?

"Huh?" Lan Mei Xian coldly snorted. She raised her head in anger.

[Everything has been very strange today. My disciples disobeyed my orders. But, there was a reason behind it. So, it’s excusable. And, it’s understandable. But, I didn’t expect that these two would also disobey me.]

"Actually..." the shadow’s forehead was full of cold sweat. He replied, "Old Ancestor, we don’t know about this matter in much detail..."

"Tell me!" Lan Mei Xian was burning in anger. She slammed the table, and the entire tent bounced-up from the ground.

"Master, let me say it..." Tie Bu Tian knew that she couldn’t hide this thing for long. And, she could see that the shadows were feeling uncomfortable. So, she stood up and calmly said.

Everyone’s eyes turned to her.

"He is surnamed Chu... he’s called Chu Yang," Tie Bu Tian started in a soft voice.

Yang Rou Lan was startled. [Surnamed Chu?]

Tie Bu Tian cleared-up the train of her thoughts. She then talked about when Chu Yang had come to the Iron Cloud Citadel. She told about his journey, and how he had defeated the entire Golden Horse Riders Department. After that, she narrated how he had brought-about the victory of Iron Cloud...

"So, you are saying... he doesn’t know yet???" Lan Mei Xian was shocked!

Her disciple had sacrificed so much. Moreover, she still had no regrets or complaints. In fact, she was even waiting to give birth to the child. However, the perpetrator merely patted his buttocks, and went away unfettered. And, what made matter even worse... was the fact that he didn’t even know anything!

"I... I really..." Lan Mei Xian looked towards Tie Bu Tian. She felt resentful towards her for failing to meet her expectations, "this old woman has lived for 358 years... I am seeing your kind of a fool for the first time... you foolish girl! You, you... you are so foolish that your foolishness has gone off the charts!"

"Master... this disciple also wants to be with him. But, I am the Emperor of Iron Cloud. So, I am destined to not be with him. Also, he loves someone else in his heart. I... I..." Tie Bu Tian spoke-up. But, her eyes met the ice-cold eyes of Lan Mei Xian, and she lowered her gaze. She spoke no further.

"Humph! He loves someone else?!" Lan Mei Xian snorted and said, "King of hell Chu... King of Hell Chu... Humph! The one who thinks its okay to have thoughtless s*x first... and then abandons the girl later... King of Hell Chu!"

"He wouldn’t have abandoned me after having thoughtless s*x..."

Tie Bu Tian explained in a meek manner.

"You are a fool! When will you stop being such a dumb girl?!" Lan Mei Xian scolded angrily.

The atmosphere became a bit dense at this moment. Then, a group of smoke started to appear in front of Yang Rou Lan. That bundle of smoke condensed, and gradually turned into a few words.

Lan Mei Xian snorted. She again felt dizzy in anger, "Yang Rou Lan, you're also incredible! First, you wasted the Icy Heart Jade Bone Saintly Technique. Then, you went so far as to allow the connection between your heart and the world to break. And, your accumulated 'Icy Heart Jade Bone Power' also dissipated as a result of that. You are great! You're genuinely great! You are truly worthy of being called my disciple!"

Yang Rou Lan's complexion turned a bit awkward.

However, she ignored her Master's taunt on her. And, she read the words that had just appeared before her. She couldn't help but be pleasantly surprised, "Master, it's been found! Fei Ling has found the Mysterious Yang Jade Core."

Chapter 466: Ruo Lan, Go and Teach That Bastard A Lesson!

"What? It’s been found? So quickly...!" Lan Mei Xian knitted her eyebrows.

That writing only had two lines — Mysterious Yang Jade Core has been found. Return... there’s an important matter!

"Thank god! It’s been found... Now father-in-law is going to get better." Yang Ruo Lan joyfully clapped her hands. But then, she frowned, "But, why call me back with such urgency?"

However, others weren’t infected by her joyful mood. There was still a heavy atmosphere in the tent.

Lan Mei Xian was mourning in her heart. In fact, she felt like dying.

This blow had been too cruel for her!

"That’s it. I’m done... you can do whatever you want," Lan Mei Xian listlessly spoke, "Your Master is the one at fault. It seems that this Icy Heart Jade Bone Saintly Technique... will have to end here. As a Master, I... don’t wish to suffer a third blow. I’ve suffered enough. Everything is over now..."

Tie Bu Tian and Yang Ruo Lan felt the heaviness of her mood. And, they felt extremely guilty.

"This Phantom Jade... I request Master to take it back," Tie Bu Tian bowed. Then, she respectfully held the Phantom Jade in her hands, and handed it over to Lan Mei Xian.

Lan Mei Xian looked at Tie Bu Tian with a complicated look in her eyes. Then, she heaved a deep sigh. She recalled, [I had received her as my apprentice since her infancy. I personally helped build her physical foundation until she was three years old. I cleared her meridians. After that, I would come to see her every

year. And, I would stay with her for some time every time...]

[I stopped coming often until recently... when she became capable of having breakthroughs by herself.]

[It can be said that my footprint is present in every stage of this disciple's growth. Since she could only speak babbling language... and right up to the present. Isn't she far more than just an apprentice in my heart?]

[I can't ever have a child in my life since I've cultivated the Icy Heart Jade Bone. But, I've always treated Tie Bu Tian as my own daughter. I've taught her at my own expense. I've done my utmost to give her the best possible care...]

She was sitting quietly with a load on her mind. A long time passed before she slowly stood up. Then, she walked up to Tie Bu Tian, and replied in a warm voice, "There's no need. You are the Emperor of a nation. You need this item... I give it to you. It won't be of much use if it stays with me."

She took it, and hung it around Tie Bu Tian's neck with her own hands.

Tie Bu Tian choked with emotion. And, tears started to stream down her face. She sobbed and said, "Master..." Then, she threw herself into the arms of the Master, and hugged her tightly.

Lan Mei Xian sorted out the jade token for her. Tears welled-up in her eyes as she spoke with a smile, "Silly child... You're such a silly girl ah... I don't know how your life would turn out to be... alas!"

Suddenly, a startled look appeared on her face. She asked, "What's this?"

Lan Mei Xian had unexpectedly smelled a very subtle but an extremely pure 'medicinal fragrance'. And, her heart had turned pale with fright!

She flicked her finger, and a purple jade bottle jumped out from

Tie Bu Tian’s bosom.

She then looked closely at that sealed purple jade bottle. A subtle medicinal fragrance was somehow coming out of this sealed bottle. Lan Mei Xian’s complexion changed drastically. She waved her hand, and ordered, "You two go out."

The two shadows went out as instructed.

Lan Mei Xian facial expression had turned serious. She slowly unscrewed the bottle’s cap. And, a strong medicinal efficacy gushed out in the form of fumes as she unscrewed the cap halfway. She sniffed it, and suddenly too two steps back. She stared at the purple jade bottle in her hand in disbelief. Then, she screwed-back the bottle’s cap at a lightning speed. And, she gripped it tightly in her hand. Her body shuddered, "Who gave it to you!?"

Her eyes had looked very luminous and somewhat scary when she had asked this question...

"It... It was a stranger... because I helped him once... um, saved his life..." Tie Bu Tian saw the scary look in her Master's eyes. So, she didn’t mention Chu Yang’s name.

"Stranger... what sort of a stranger?" Lan Mei Xian clicked her tongue, and inquired aggressively.

"His appearance was ever-changing. So, I don’t know his real appearance," Tie Bu Tian got even more apprehensive.

"You should thank them properly..." Lan Mei Xian stared at her for a while before she heaved a long sigh. Then, she burst into a joyful laughter.

Tie Bu Tian obviously didn’t wish to tell, but Lan Mei Xian had let-off this topic very easily. Moreover, she had let out a profound laughter for some reason...

She put the purple jade bottle back in Tie Bu Tian’s hand, and laughed gently. The more she laughed... the jubilant she became...

"Master, what happened to you?" Yang Ruo Lan and Tie Bu Tian panicked, and asked. [Could it be that Master couldn't withstand such a blow, and lost her sanity thereafter?]

"I am laughing... laughing because you have turned your misfortune into a blessing!" Lan Mei Xian laughed heartily. It seemed as if she had been freed from her worries. In fact, she had become radiant with delight. But, Yang Ruo Lan and Tie Bu Tian were baffled. [The Master looked so dejected a moment ago. So, it's hard to imagine why has she suddenly become so cheerful...?]

[What can be the reason behind this?]

Then, Lan Mei Xian rejoiced and asked, "Tian Tian, you are expecting the child in eight months, right?"

"Yes." Tie Bu Tian blushed and lowered her head.

"Ha ha ha... good!" Lan Mei Xian laughed and said, "I will visit with your Senior Sister to congratulate you at the scheduled time! Meanwhile, there's an important business I must tend to!"

She solemnly looked at Tie Bu Tian, "Remember this... your Icy Heart Jade Bone Saintly Technique has been wasted, but you mustn't let the Icy Heart Power disperse; no matter what happens! This is something that concerns your life. You must bear my words in your mind!"

She paused after she spoke these words, and became extremely serious!

Tie Bu Tian was obviously very puzzled in her heart, but she still agreed like a well-behaved child and replied, "Yes. I will be waiting respectfully for Master and Sister."

"Ah... this isn't right," Lan Mei Xian paced back and forth several times as she said, "This matter is of great importance. Shall I return? It's hard to say how many stupid things this silly girl will have done by time I return. She may end up ruining everything! I can't go back now. I will stay here, and I will keep watch over you."

Tie Bu Tian and Yang Ruo Lan looked at each other in dismay; they were stupefied.

"Ruo Lan, I won't go back with you at this time. So, you must be careful on the way," Lan Mei Xian made up her mind and addressed Yang Ruo Lan.

"Yes."

"In addition... that business I have in the Upper Three Heavens... let's set it aside for the time being!" Lan Mei Xian snorted and continued, "It's only a little loss. It doesn't matter."

Yang Ruo Lan's heart skipped crazily. [Only a little loss...? Master has staked a total of 10,000 purple crystals. Moreover... the final moment has already arrived. And, those 10,000 purple crystals will be gone in case she loses! This is equivalent to the overall stock that had been accumulated by all the previous generations of a small clan of the Upper Three Heavens!]

[And, Master said that she doesn't want it?]

One must know that Tie Bu Tian was going to deliver after eight months. Lan Mei Xian could travel back and forth more than a dozen times in this time period, and she would still have a lot of spare time on her hands. So, there was no rush. But, she was surprising going to give up on that wealth to wait for Tie Bu Tian's delivery...?

This was very strange!

Yang Ruo Lan was about to get to the heart of matter when she heard a fine sound. It seemed like that of a mosquito. [The technique to congregate sound into a thread?!]

"Ruo Lan, you will pass through the Middle Three Heavens on your way back. So, teach a ruthless lesson to that King of Hell Chu! Don't beat him to death. But, you must break the bones in his body and leave him crippled!"

It was the voice of Lan Mei Xian, "He dared to have an illicit

se*ual relation with my disciple, and he abandoned her after that. He can’t be forgiven that easily!"

Yang Ruo Lan moved her lips in reply. She couldn’t use this ability like her Master could. She then slanted her vision, and looked at the lower abdomen of Tie Bu Tian.

"Don’t tell him anything! I shall personally settle this account with him someday!" Lan Mei Xian coldly snorted, "Leave that bastard alive. We can’t allow him to disturb your junior sister’s mood for now!"

She paused, and then further said, "Don’t even let your junior sister know about this!"

Yang Ruo Lan nodded. She also cussed in her heart with her entire strength... [That a*shole! How can he be so irresponsible?! How can he just pat his buttocks and leave like that? He can’t be forgiven for such a crime! I would’ve taught him a lesson even if the Master hadn’t asked me to!]

An invisible storm had silently taken birth...

Lan Mei Xian went with Tie Bu Tian, and returned to the Imperial Palace. It appeared like she had made up her mind that she would stay by Tie Bu Tian’s side. It seemed as if she had decided, [there’s no other matter that can be as important as my poor little disciple since she has already lost her entire cultivation! I must stay with her, and I must take care of her.] Even Tie Bu Tian was amazed by this development, and was unable to conceal her happiness.

... ...

Chu Yang was presently approaching Mt. Dingjun! It looked like a giant stone stool when looking from afar. It was tall and straight like a towering mountain peak. However, it seemed to have been struck by an insanely powerful attack. It seemed as if someone had sliced it across the middle with a knife, and had chopped it in half!

It was a great mountain, and was more than 10,000 feet tall. Yet, it unexpectedly turned out to be a giant platform!

The entire upper half of the mountain was missing!

"There's a legend about Mt. Dingjun. Supreme Expert 'Morning Wind' and Supreme Expert 'Drifting Cloud' had fought a battle here a long time ago. The Supreme Expert Morning Wind had used the entirety of his power into a saber strike. Supreme Expert Drifting Cloud had dodged the attack. And, the unstoppable saber energy had destroyed the entire upper half of Mt. Dingjun! The rubbles had scattered down the mountain, and formed the rock field below Mt. Dingjun."

Ji Mo was standing at the foot of Mt. Dingjun, and was gazing at it. He continued with infinite reverence, "That's how Mt. Dingjun became like this. Its summit is as flat and smooth as a mirror! The later generations gave a little finishing touch to it. And, they raised the four sides a bit higher. So, there's a vast flat land in the middle now. It has become a natural arena because of that!"

Chu Yang looked at this Mt. Dingjun, and tried to imagine how that remote battle would've taken place back then. [To think that the battle between two supreme experts would be so devastating that a saber attack could destroy such a great mountain...! Such formidable power is genuinely fascinating.]

"Of course, this is merely a legend," Ji Mo smiled and said, "No one knows whether it's true or false."

"This isn't a legend," Sword Spirit suddenly informed Chu Yang, "Morning Wing and Drifting Cloud really did exist. And, this battle had indeed taken place..."

Chu Yang nodded.

Ji Mo still wanted to stay here and say something more. However, Ji Zhu walked over lazily while yawning and rubbing his eyes. Then, he sluggishly asked, "Why are you two idling here?

Why haven’t you gone up already… what are you waiting for?"

Chu Yang genuinely felt like beating him up as soon as he spoke these words! [Motherfu*ker, you should be the last one in the world to make a comment about ‘idling’! How could you have the guts to say that?!]

Ji Mo rolled his eyes. He didn’t turn his head, and simply dragged Chu Yang away from there. The two of them didn’t look back, and the reason for that was… [The food we ate a while ago with great difficultly will go to waste if we turn around and see this bastard Ji Zhu pick his feet.]

They moved forward on that road. They were about to turn a corner to go over to the foot of the mountain in order to enter the uphill road… but, they heard a long cry from the front. This cry echoed, and shook the mountains!

A majestic voice roared loudly, "Meng Luo! I’m only asking you this – you will hand her over or not?"

Chu Yang and Ji Mo glanced at each other, and saw the answer in each other’s eyes. [This is Dong Wu Shang’s voice! But, why he is confronting Meng Luo… that guy is one of the Top 8 Young Masters?]

They were about to increase their pace when they suddenly heard a strange howling of a wolf, "Ahwooh ~~~ Meng Luo, you motherfu*ker! Ahwooh ~~~ will you hand her over or not you grandmotherfu*ker? Ahwooh~~ Trust me… I will kill you with my fart this instant! Ahwooh~~…"

Chu Yang nearly burst out laughing. [There’s no need to guess who the owner of this voice is. No one besides Luo Ke Di can produce such sounds!]

Ji Mo’s body quivered as he blurted out, "Dog Aunt! Fu*k me! My brothers are here!"

Chapter 467: Brothers Reunite!

Ji Mo and Chu Yang accelerated their footsteps to rush forward. Ji Zhu followed after them, but was left to pant heavily. And, the ten experts of the Ji Clan he led had no choice but to follow.

They took a turn, and saw that two groups were in confrontation.

Dong Wu Shang stood on the top of a prominent mountain rock. And, his face seemed like black ice. He was dressed in a black robe. The hilt and a small part of his black saber were exposed from behind his back. There was a sharp look on his face. He seemed like a majestic mountain that was overlooking the world of mortals beneath!

Dong Wu Lei and ten experts of the Dong Clan stood behind him.

Lou Ke Di stood beside him in a snow-white robe. He had a golden crown above his head. He looked very handsome, elegant, and graceful. He also had a folding fan in his hand; the fan had a golden outline. He was waving it, and seemed to be very relaxed whilst doing so.

This was the appearance of an elegant young master. But, Lou Ke Di's facial expression was obscene, and his gestures looked wretched and arrogant. Anyone who'd see him wouldn't regard him as an elegant young master. Instead, they would think that he was a young ruffian who could do any imaginable misdeed!

The manner in which this guy was shaking his shoulders at this moment was particularly annoying. His body was constantly convulsing, and it seemed as if he was trembling in excitement or something. And, this left the onlookers with a strong desire to slap him wildly in order to make him stop!

There was a young master on their opposite side; he wore an embroidered robe. He was also quite handsome. His eyes were as

bright as stars, and his facial features were delicate. He was elegant and graceful. He looked like a typical young master since his overall bearings were very graceful.

This youngster was the eldest young master of the Meng Clan – Meng Luo. And, he was leading ten King Level experts of the Meng Clan!

However, the facial expression of Young Master Meng Luo seemed very indignant at the moment. He was glaring at Dong Wu Shang, and it seemed as if he would shoot fire from his eyes. In fact, it seemed as if he would bite him to death.

Several other people also stood in the surroundings. They were clearly enjoying the sight of this confrontation.

These three clans stood in a state of mutual hostility, and seemed ready for a battle.

The matter was this – the Second Young Master of the Luo Clan, Luo Ke Di, had been strolling idly in a carefree manner. He arrived here, and saw that the people of the Meng Clan were already on Mt. Dingjun. He didn't care much at first. However, Second Young Master Luo had very sharp eyes. And, his sharp eyes spotted that Meng Luo was holding a little leopard in his hands. But, it didn't seem properly tamed as of yet since Meng Luo had been hastening-on with his journey. But, he was diligently trying to train it nonetheless. In fact, he would occasionally allow it go on a hunt by itself...

However, the Second Young Master Luo got jealous when he saw this!

[Crap! This is the cub of a Storm Leopard! It's a seventh grade spirit beast, ah! This is such a treasure.] Spirit beasts were generally captured at a young age because an adult spirit beast was impossible to tame. However, adult spirit beasts would kill their own cubs to prevent them from falling into the hands of humans and being enslaved thereof if they were to be cornered!

The Cang Lan Battlefront was the only place in the entire Middle Three Heavens where innumerable spirit beasts could be found. But, they were only killed for their furs and inner cores. Therefore, only a few people possessed a decent spirit beast as a pet!

In fact, cubs under the third level were only used as play-objects once they were caught!

The Second Young Master Luo hadn't expected that this wretched Meng Luo would have a Storm Leopard's cub – a seventh level spirit beast! [This is the kind of treasure is hard to come by. It is almost impossible to obtain, ah!]

Second Young Master Luo had become jealous in an instant.

However, Luo Ke Di also felt a bit regretful. [I had slipped out to have fun on my own. And, I don't have any attendants on my side because of that. Moreover, this Meng Luo's strength isn't inferior to mine. After all, he's also a top-class King Level expert.]

[I can neither outsmart him, nor overpower him! How's this fair?] The Second Young Master Luo anxiously turned around.

However, he saw Dong Wu Shang coming over from the other side at this time. Moreover, he was leading a mighty team of the Dong Clan. Consequently, the Second Young Master jumped-up in excitement. It seemed as if he had found his savior.

Meng Luo looked at the approaching outsiders, and hid his Storm Leopard cub. He didn't wish the others to know that he had this kind of a treasure....

Meng Luo and Dong Wu Shang came face to face. So, they had no other choice but to greet each other. They stopped their footsteps, and exchanged a few greetings. They were about to go on different directions, but Luo Ke Di ran over crying with 'grief and indignation' on his face. He held Dong Wu Shang and said, "Fourth Brother, you must do justice for me, ah!"

This sentence left everyone startled all of a sudden.

Meng Luo was also somewhat flabbergasted. [What's going on in the mind of this Wolf Sword King?]

Dong Wu Shang became extremely angry and asked, "Who bullied you?" [My brother got bullied by someone? Who could dare to do that?]

Meng Luo also got a little curious. However, he was also taking joy in other's misfortune. So, his ears got erected to listen instead of leaving the place in a hurry.

However, Meng Luo hadn't expected that Luo Ke Di would actually wail out, "Fourth Brother, it is this goddamned Meng Luo!"

Dong Wu Shang and Meng Luo got extremely shocked! This was totally unexpected...

Meng Luo felt that he was being wronged, [When did I fu*king bully you, huh? Is this some kind of a joke?]

"What happened?"

"Fourth... I suffered a great untold hardship a moment ago. But, I somehow managed to kill those two Storm Leopards. And, I was very pleasantly surprised to find a Storm Leopard cub. But, this goddamned Meng Luo snatched it from me..." Luo Ke Di narrated in a loud voice as he shed some tears.

Dong Wu Shang squinted at Luo Ke Di. [I know that this guy is using me. He wants to snatch away Meng Luo's treasure...]

[The matter is pretty obvious – the white robe on this bastard's body is spotless. His hair isn't disheveled either. What did he say, 'I suffered a great untold hardship a moment ago. But, I somehow managed to kill those two Storm Leopards'...? Motherfu*ker, those are seventh level spirit beast. You shouldn't even be able to face one by yourself. Yet, you dare to brag so much?]

[But... this is my brother, ah!]

[Moreover, this Storm Leopard is a precious treasure! How can I leave this in the hands of this scum Meng Luo? Luo Ke Di may not get it, but this must at least belong to me – Dong Wu Shang...]

Therefore, Dong Wu Shang 'flew into a rage'. Then, he ruthlessly looked towards Meng Luo, and roared, "Meng Luo! Hand over my brother's spirit beast!"

Meng Luo angrily crooked his mouth as his eyes slanted!

[What the fu*k is this? How did things suddenly come to this point? How did the story-line change so quickly?]

A dozen or more King level Experts of his clan had worked hard to kill that Storm Leopard couple. And, they had coincidently found a cub. Meng Luo had come to cherish this cub as his own life. [How could Luo Ke Di take credit for this? How could he be so shameless?]

[But, it's clear that Lou Ke Di has accidently seen the Storm Leopard cub, and has become envious. Greed has taken over his heart...]

[But... when did Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang become brothers?]

"Brother Dong, you are wrongly accusing the innocent!" A mountain of anger had bubbled-up inside Meng Luo. He spoke in a sullen tone, "Do I – Meng Luo — seem to be that kind of a person?"

"You are not?" Dong Wu Shang snorted and didn't budge from his stance. Then, he spoke in a rude and unreasonable manner, "I don't care whether you are that kind of a person or not... I want that Storm Leopard! Give it back to my brother!"

"This Storm Leopard is mine!" Meng Luo got so angry that he nearly spat out blood, "Luo Ke Di, how can you be so shameless? You say it's yours? Do you even have the ability to kill a Storm Leopard?"

Lou Ke Di shrugged his shoulders and replied, "Humph! It's

indeed mine! You've snatched it from me!"

Everything went dark before Meng Luo's eyes.

Dong Wu Shang shouted loudly, "Meng Luo, I'm only asking you this once – are you handing it over or not?" he had deliberately channeled his vigor out of his body as he had spoken this sentence. Therefore, his majestic aura had submerged into his powerful male voice, and had rushed towards Meng Luo in order to oppress him!

Chu Yang and Ji Mo had also heard this sentence very clearly.

"Ha ha..." Meng Luo laughed grimly. He wasn't a good man to begin with. Moreover, he had always held a powerful status. In addition, he was the kind of person who wouldn't refrain from doing any unimaginable deeds either. His eyesight was also very keen. So, there was no way that he would be deterred by Dong Wu Shang.

He replied in an unstrained and frank manner, "Dong Wu Shang, do you wish to advocate for Luo Ke Di?"

"So what if I do?" Dong Wu Shang narrowed his eyes. He looked rather dangerous.

"This Storm Leopard cub is mine! You don't need to try to cover up this fact. Everyone here knows whether Luo Ke Di is speaking the truth or lying," Meng Luo spoke-up in an eerie voice, "Dong Wu Shang, could it be that you are trying to commit waylay-looting right now?"

"So what if it's waylay-looting? So what if you are getting robbed?" A mischievously laughter was heard at first. It was soon followed by an arrogant voice.

Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and Meng Luo turned their heads around in unison. They then looked towards the other side of the mountain road, and saw that a few people were approaching them.

Ji Mo!

The protagonist of Mt. Dingjun had arrived!

However, Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di's gazes fell on the man who was walking beside Ji Mo. And, they couldn't hold back the feeling of excitement from showing-up on their faces!

That man's black robe was fluttering in the wind. His stature was tall. He was walking on the mountain-road. Yet, every step of his' made it seem as if he was strolling leisurely in a garden. It seemed as if the King of Hell himself had suddenly appeared in the mortal world. And, it seemed as if he had brought clouds of worries and mists of cruelty with himself...

Every step that he took made people feel like he was stepping on the dark clouds of hell.

He looked at Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di, and a faint smile appeared on his face. This made both the men feel warmed-up in their hearts... as if his smile had been a spring breeze instead.

They spontaneously took a step forward to greet him. They were about to do as they had intended, but they saw that Chu Yang slightly shook his head before they could.

Therefore, the two of them had to swallow their words back down to their bellies. However, they still felt an inexplicable feeling of excitement welling-up in their hearts.

It wasn't that Chu Yang didn't wish meet and greet them. He simply didn't want them to recognize him in front of others. He himself didn't care. But, the public disclosure of their brotherhood would be tantamount to the revelation of the alliance between the Ji clan, Luo clan, Dong clan, Gu clan and Stealing God and Thieving Ghost!

And, this would be enough to cause a great uproar in the Middle Three Heavens!

Chu Yang didn't know what consequences this would lead to. But, he feared that other aristocratic clans may start to feel

insecure. And, it would perhaps lead to a disaster if the people with high aspirations were to stir things up. Therefore, Chu Yang wanted to wait and watch for the time being.

He feared nothing in the world when it came to himself, but he had to think for his brothers as well.

Ji Mo was proudly approaching the scene with big strides. He had the gait of a dragon, and swiftness of a tiger. He held out his hand, and pointed his finger, "Meng Luo! Dog Aunt! Quickly hand over the Storm Leopard. Otherwise, we brothers will snatch it from you by force."

Luo Ke Di issued a loud ‘Ahwooh’ howl, and jumped up, "Ahwooh! Ha ha ha... Ahwooh... Meng Luo, hand over the Storm Leopard!"

Meng Luo clenched his teeth. He suddenly faced upwards, and started to laugh, "You people will rob me? Ha ha ha... Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo! You three, come on together! You want this Storm Leopard? No problem! Defeat me, and this Storm Leopard is yours!"

He suddenly shook his arms. The embroidered robe on his body shook with a thunderous noise, and the lapel of his robe was split-open from the vibration. Then, something floated out like a cloud. He extended his right hand, and revealed a multi-colored leopard. That leopard was squatting on his palm, and was squeaking in an inconsiderate manner.

Meng Luo flicked his hand, and the little leopard was sent out flying. It fell into the arms of an old man who stood behind him. Then, he took three giant steps forward, and took an awe-inspiring stance! He clapped his hands, and a metal clanging sound echoed. Then, he raised his eyes, and looked towards the three men with a strong desire to fight them.

Chu Yang’s black robe was fluttering. He took a step out, and covered a distance of seventy to eighty feet in a single step. He had

stepped onto the boulder Dong Wu Shang had been standing on... in merely one step!

"Big brother... you are at King Level?" Dong Wu Shang's jumped-up in surprise as he asked in a low voice.

"A trivial Second Grade Sword King. That's all," Chu Yang touched his nose, and replied in a modest manner.

Dong Wu Shang almost fainted!

[It hasn't been too long since we met in the Lower Three Heavens. He used to be a few dozen levels below us back then. We meet again today, and he's on the same level as everyone... This... this is practically impossible.]

"Is this Meng Luo?" Chu Yang looked towards Meng Luo with some dignified expressions. And, he recalled the memories from his previous life. [Meng Luo, Jasper Flower, Tian Bu Ru... He's one of the twelve famed figures of the Middle Three Heavens.]

Chapter 468: Battles Meng Luo!

"Yes. It's him!" Dong Wu Shang snorted and said, "Meng Clan's Eldest Young Master Meng Luo. He lives a life of dissipation – wining, dining, whoring, and gambling. And, he is particularly lecherous! This guy is a typical playboy!"

It was clear from his voice that he didn't have any respect for Meng Luo since his character was despicable.

Chu Yang frowned. [Looking down on his character is fine, but his strength mustn't be underestimated. Dong Wu Shang he will surely end up paying bitterly if he maintains this mentality while confronting Meng Luo.]

"You mustn't underestimate the enemy!" Chu Yang warned him, "His current strength may not be beneath yours!"

"Are you serious?" Dong Wu Shang sneered loudly. His current strength had progressed greatly. He had been cultivating with the black saber by his side at all times. That's how he had progressed very rapidly! Moreover, the black saber had made him practically invincible. No one besides Gu Du Xing could cause trouble for him in the younger generation. In fact, even Ao Xie Yun didn't look him in the eye anymore.

So, there was no way he would take a trivial guy like Meng Luo seriously.

Chu Yang carefully observed Meng Luo, and spoke in a lowered voice, "What you are seeing is merely a façade of this Meng Luo... He has practiced 'Gather Yin to Supplement Yang Technique'."

"Eh?" Dong Wu Shang opened his mouth wide, "An evil technique?"

"Moreover, Meng Luo also has a special physical constitution. He has also practiced the 'Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique'. It's been handed down from generation to generation in the Meng

Clan, but no one has ever been able to practice it. You'd have to be careful against him even if you and Du Xing were to fight him as one!" Chu Yang whispered.

"Yeah, but our Coyote wants his Storm Leopard. And, we must snatch it since we've already decided to block his way and rob him!" Dong Wu Shang narrowed his eyes and said, "I will go deal with him!"

Meng Luo was still in the field after he had issued the challenge. He had wildly challenged three enemies at once, but he obviously knew, [These three individuals would never join hands to deal with me under the gazes of so many people. Their status won't permit them to!]

[And, I have nothing to be afraid of if they come to fight independently! In fact, I am confident that I would be able to defeat Dong Wu Shang if he comes. I wouldn't even need to use the 'Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique'... Anyway, I've never displayed that technique before anyone!]

Meng Luo had absolute confidence in himself.

So, he had nothing to fear!

Chu Yang squinted as he watched Meng Luo in the field. Then, he solemnly spoke, "You've never dealt with Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique. So, it'd be better that I go."

"You?" Dong Wu Shang was somewhat bewildered. [I haven't dealt with it, but have you?] But then, he saw the confident look that was brimming in Chu Yang's eyes. He knew that his Big Brother always makes a proper strategy first. And, he moves into action only then. So, Dong Wu Shang couldn't help but nod his head involuntarily.

Only Chu Yang could make him behave in such an obedient manner. Even Gu Du Xing wouldn't be able to make him behave this way... let alone someone else.

That’s because Chu Yang had brought about a miracle... the sort of which he would’ve never been able to achieve! Furthermore, it was a martial art miracle!

What's more... even his brothers had also managed to accomplish something they couldn’t have achieved on their own. And, it was all thanks to Chu Yang’s assistance!

Chu Yang solemnly said, "You must closely observe how I compel him to reveal his ‘Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique. Then, you must inform the other brothers about it. They need to be prepared as well."

Chu Yang naturally knew that the current chaotic situation was the most favorable to him. [My brothers would inevitably suffer a loss if Meng Luo managed to escape from this chaotic situation and bumps into my brothers in the future!]

[Besides, Ji Mo’s battle to snatch the wife is going to happen soon. And, Meng Luo will certainly enter the battlefield when the time comes. Moreover, it will most likely not be me who will be dealing with him in that case!]

[Therefore, it will be most advantageous to compel Meng Luo to reveal his hidden trump at this time!]

Dong Wu Shang nodded his head and replied, "Don’t worry! I will be the one to destroy his technique if he dares to use it again!"

Ji Mo was raining curses, while Luo Ke Di was jumping greedily. Suddenly, a cold voice said, "We are trying to rob your Strom Leopard. So, we obviously think highly of you! Meng Luo, you should be honored."

Meng Luo flew into a rage!

[Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, and Dong Wu Shang are more or less at the same rank as me. I can bear if they call me a few names. But, who is this person who made this comment?]

He raised his eyes to look, and saw a black-robed youth standing

beside Dong Wu Shang. This youth’s hands were crossed behind his back. He floated down from the boulder, and looked at Meng Luo with a cold expression in his eyes.

Meng Luo was about to cuss out loud when he saw that the black-robed youth extended his right hand with a ‘swoosh’. His empty palm then unexpectedly issued a loud 'clang' sound. A dense mass of bright shadow dispersed out of his body along with this sword cry, and took shape of a magnificent crown high above his head in the air!

This crown was different from the others. The shadow of a long sword was placed above this crown, and it was pointing straight towards the heaven!

"Sword King!" Meng Luo cried out in fear. He looked towards Chu Yang again. The look in his eyes had already changed. [This youth is clearly a few years younger than me. However, he has managed to become a Sword King at such a young age!]

[This accomplishment had made Meng Luo feel dreaded in his heart. [He is the Young Master of which clan? How has he never appeared before?] However, Meng Luo was somewhat relieved to see that Dong Wu Shang hadn’t come out.

"Who are you?" Meng Luo asked, "Sir, why get involved in this mess?"

"My surname is Chu," Chu Yang smiled a bit and replied, "This is my brother. My brother wants the Storm Leopard! Meng Luo, you seem like a clever person. So, I suggest that you hand it over before it’s too late!"

"Surnamed Chu..." Meng Luo repeated it once, and searched his memory. But, he couldn’t find anything relevant. Then, he suddenly grinned fiendishly and said, "You want to fight with me?"

"I don’t want to fight with you," Chu Yang replied to correct his notion, "I just want you to hand over that Storm Leopard."

"Ha ha ha..." Meng Luo laughed uncontrollably. Then, he abruptly stopped and said in an eerie voice, "I bet my Storm Leopard. But, what are you going to bet? This Young Master doesn't fight a battle that doesn't have benefits involved."

"I will give you this if I lose." Chu Yang flipped over his hand, and a sword appeared with a 'swoosh'. It appeared like the dazzling sun as it suddenly issued ten thousand rays of cold light!

Meng Luo was standing 30 feet away. Yet, even he felt a burst of chill blowing against his face as soon as the sword appeared.

"I must remind you that this sword can cut iron like mud. It can also cut through any metal and jade. And, it can cut through the strongest defenses!" Chu Yang casually tossed the long sword. It flew out of his hand, and went somersaulting. It gently floated in midair like as a feather, and then came falling down.

Chu Yang once again tossed a block of black steel, and it landed at the spot where the long sword was about to fall. 'Clang' the sword's edge landed on top of the black steel, and cut right into it... as if it were a block of butter.

Meng Luo's eyes opened wide in amazement! And, a greedy look flashed in his eyes.

Chu Yang lifted his foot, and kicked that block of black steel even though the long sword was still buried in it. The sword's blade vibrated and issued a buzzing sound as a result.

The block of black steel fell near Meng Luo's feet.

Chu Yang had performed these actions very gracefully in a very natural and unrestrained manner. He looked far more confident than Meng Luo.

Luo Ke Di asked Ji Mo in a low voice, "Why isn't Big Brother afraid that Meng Luo will take the sword and run away?"

Ji Mo got annoyed and replied, "Meng Luo would've grabbed it and ran away if he were a retard like you! But, the issue is that he

isn’t!"

Luo Ke Di hiccupped twice. He was embarrassed, and spoke no longer.

Meng Luo wasn’t stupid. He was certainly feeling greedy at the moment. However, he’d have to face the joint besiege of Luo Clan, Dong Clan, and Ji Clan if he took it and ran away. In fact, he wouldn’t even be allowed to explain himself if that came to happen. This was the established rule. So, he would have to die along with the people who had come here with him in that case. He couldn’t possibly commit such a stupid mistake.

Chu Yang chuckled in his heart. [This is my sword — Chu Yang’s sword. Who can ‘just’ take it and run away? Sword Spirit’s power is attached on it. So, the sword will break into two parts as soon as he’d activate his intention…]

Meng Luo had been stunned.

He took out the sword that had easily cut into the black steel. And, a piece of steel flake fell off from it. Then, he took a sword from an attendant. After that, he merely clashed the two swords without applying any strength to it. But, his attendant’s sword got cut off into two parts like a log of wood.

However, Chu Yang’s sword didn’t even get a single scratch!

Meng Luo’s hands began to tremble a bit. Even his lips began to quiver. He was clearly reluctant to part with this sword. He looked at Chu Yang, and spoke somewhat eagerly, "Do you genuinely wish to bet this sword in our gambling match?"

"Why? You don’t want to? Forget it if you don’t want it." Chu Yang spread out his hands to take back his sword.

"I want to! Why would I not want to? The bet is on!" Meng Luo’s eyes lit-up.

[Storm Leopards are good, but the one I have with me is just a cub. It will take decades for it to become a full grown adult. But,

this sword is an incomparably sharp weapon. Something like this is rarely seen in the world! Its value is even higher than a fully grown storm leopard!]

[This guy is unexpectedly betting such a sword. I am getting a big bargain considering the value of the betted items. This is simply like he's gifting this treasure to me.]

"Meng Luo, you c*nt. Don't you have any sense of shame? You weren't willing to hand over the Storm Leopard's cub a while ago. But, you suddenly want to bet it against a peerless treasure-sword?" Luo Ke Di scolded in a loud voice, "Is that your face or butt? Fu*k! How come it hasn't turned red already?"

Luo Ke Di's provocative words pressed Meng Luo's buttons to the point that he couldn't take it anymore. Luo Ke Di had only intended to provoke Meng Luo, but he hadn't expected that Meng Luo's face would turn red as soon as his voice would fade.

Luo Ke Di was left dumbfounded by this result. He held out his hand to point at Meng Luo, and turned to excitedly look at Ji Mo. Then, he turned his head to other side to look at Dong Wu Shang, "Did you see it? Fu*k me! Meng Luo is actually blushing. Motherfu*ker, Ahwooh... this is breaking news for the Middle Three Heavens!"

Meng Luo's face flushed with anger. He shouted, "Shut the fu*k up! You are the ones who bet the sword. It's not like I insisted on betting this sword! Could it be that you agree to the fact that you blocked my way to rob me?"

Chu Yang smiled insipidly. Then, he waved his hand and said, "You guys stand guard here for me! See how I teach a lesson to one of the Top 8 Young Masters!"

Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Dong Wu Shang were thinking the same – they didn't need to act unless Chu Yang would ask them to. This was because Chu Yang would certainly have assurance of victory since he had made the choice to fight! After all, Chu Yang never got

involved in a matter he had no assurance of.

Ji Mo jumped and loudly clamored, "Beat him down! Trample him! Ravage him...!"

Luo Ke Di also shouted at the top of his voice, "Get him! Mess him up! Fu*k him up! Ahwooh~~~~"

Chu Yang suddenly began to sweat!

A trace of intense murderous intent flashed on Meng Luo's face as he glared at Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo. Then, his vision shifted back to Chu Yang. And, he became vigilant in his heart. [This guy isn't a known name, but how is he able to deal to with these two famous troublemakers so easily?]

[I can't underestimate him.]

"Please begin!" Meng Luo thrust his wrist forward, and the long sword released a white magical light as it went flying towards Chu Yang.

Chu Yang dodged to the side, and skillfully used his two fingers to grip that sword's hilt. And, a sword light suddenly burst out of it. The issued sword shadows seemed as if a peacock had spread its tail. Then, hundreds of shadows of the long sword began to revolve around him!

However, he had firmly grasped the long sword's real body in his hand. The Sword Point had indicated Chu Yang to do so in advance. Chu Yang looked affectionately at the sword's blade. He felt as if there was a close connection between him and this long sword. There was burst of emotion in his heart, and the sword energy surged out in abundance!

Nine Tribulations Sword's Sword Point, Sword Edge, and Sword Spine dashed out of his Dantian with a whistling sound. The long sword's blade flashed strangely, and began to exude a cold murderous aura in all directions. This aura then aggressively pervaded everywhere!

Meng Luo felt that formidable aura from the other side, and didn’t dare to neglect it. He immediately jumped up, and a strangely shaped folding fan appeared in his hand. He opened the fan with a ‘bang’ in midair. And, eight Meng Luos appeared in the air at the same time. Each of them had a smile on their face. And, each of them looked graceful and elegantly as they swung their folding fans. Then, all of the eight Meng Luos fell down like lightning towards Chu Yang!

A splendid and brilliant crown appeared in the sky!

Chu Yang sneered, "Come then!" his body spun. The sword light turned into a meteor, and darted forward like an arrow. He didn’t dodge, nor did he evade. He was going for a head-on collision!

To firmly shake Meng Luo!

Chapter 469: Force You to Reveal Your Hidden Trump!

Two people's shadows came in slight contact for an instant. Then, they suddenly exploded like bomb. And, they changed into countless shadows that scattered in all directions.

The two people's figures had already transformed into two bright shadows in the middle of the field — one black and one white. And, these figures were twisting and twining together. In fact, they had interwoven into a Yin-Yang pattern!

The two crowns in the air trembled with a rustling sound!

Chu Yang used Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement Technique to move around swiftly. His long sword appeared everywhere like snowflakes. It seemed to go forward, and also seemed to go backwards at the same time... It seemed to be moving, and also seemed to be still. His figure was faintly visible even though it was ever-changing.

Meng Luo's agility skill was very fast and precise. The folding fan in his hand was continuously changing in unexpected ways. It could act as a sword, a saber, a club... but, all forms it would change into seemed to have some kind of connection...

Moreover, there was a strange design on the surface of the fan. And, this design could leave people with a dazzling feeling.

Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di – three people were intently watching the battle. And, they exclaimed in admiration in their hearts.

They had been very startled by the skill and ease with which Chu Yang was handling Meng Luo's dangerous attacks. [He was struggling at the bottom several months ago. But, he's giving peer competition to a Second Grade King Level expert today!]

[Moreover, Meng Luo is no ordinary King level expert.]

Meng Luo was a hedonistic son of rich parents and a pervert in the eyes of Dong Wu Shang, but he wasn't someone who could be defeated by an ordinary Second Grade King Level expert! After all, he was one of the Eight Big Young Masters. So, each of his moves had infinite might. And, he was repeatedly revealing the cards in his hand. Therefore, one would need to skip levels in order to challenge this guy!

Meng Luo's eyes seemed to be like that of starving wolf when he looked towards Chu Yang's silhouette. He slowly accelerated his speed. Then, he slowly increased his power. He wanted to defeat Chu Yang in very short time... and with the least expenditure of strength!

However, he was surprised when he discovered that Chu Yang also slowed down his speed when his own offensive was slow. And, the opponent also managed to increase his speed whenever he'd increase his attack speed. Moreover, Chu Yang was doing this despite being under constant pressure!

Consequently, they had been evenly matched ever since the battle began!

A cold light flashed in Meng Luo's eyes. And, the folding fan's attacks got more and more concentrated.

He didn't wish to reveal his hidden trump!

However, Chu Yang was dead-set to force Meng Luo to reveal his Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique!

The onlookers were hooked to every development of the fight. Even that lazy Ji Zhu was staring with eyes wide open. And, he was watching the fight between these two people without blinking. [No wonder Ji Mo calls this guy 'Big Brother'. He's very skillful, ah...]

The spectators could best describe this battle as 'pleasing'.

The two youths were in the middle of a battle; one was dressed in a black robe and the other in a snow-white one. One had a

charming and elegant appearance, and the other one was tall and handsome. In addition, both of them had graceful figures. Their movements were smooth and easy. It seemed as if immortals were floating in the air!

Whenever one of them would strengthen his attack — and the other would immediately begin to attack accordance with this development. And, the other one would also begin to defend whenever one of them would slightly restrain his offensive...

Therefore, this didn't look like a decisive battle. Instead, it looked like two fellow brothers were merely testing out each other's martial skills. It seemed as if two strangers had mutually agreed to dance together. And, their dance-steps were elegant and graceful. They didn't look identical when observed closely. However, their movements seemed so flawless that it seemed as if both of them were unintentionally synchronizing with each other!

Ji Mo and Lou Ke Di were looking at the scene. And, Dong Wu Shang had already arrived behind these two men.

"Big Brother hasn't revealed his hidden trump yet." Luo Ke Di whispered. Chu Yang was handling a butcher's cleaver with ease. So, it was obvious that Chu Yang hadn't shown his full power yet.

"Nonsense!" Dong Wu Shang scolded him with no trace of politeness and said, "Idiot! Meng Luo hasn't revealed his hidden trumps either. So, how can boss show his cards? Your brain is defective!"

Luo Ke Di hiccupped, and replied in a low voice, "What I said is the truth..."

Ji Mo was anxiously watching the fight, "It's too fast! Such a fast showdown must be draining their physical strength and martial power. Wu Shang, how do you read the situation?"

"Big Brother has things under control," Dong Wu Shang replied with confidence, "They are only probing each other right now. But,

they are also trying their best to keep their true strength hidden. The fight seems intense, but the moment when the outcome of the battle would be decided hasn’t yet arrived."

Then, his tone suddenly became serious, "You two, keep your eyes wide open and look closely! Big Brother is doing this to make Meng Luo demonstrate his full strength to you. So, don’t speak impractical bullshit right now."

Ji Mo’s eyes-balls froze due to anger, "Hey, I’m your elder brother!"

Dong Wu Shang didn’t pay any attention and turned around.

Chu Yang was making clear-cut calculations in the field. [Meng Luo has already altered between a dozen or more types of agility skills. So, this is the time to disrupt the sequence and wreak havoc...]

Chu Yang coldly snorted in his heart, and the sword light suddenly rose in a dramatic fashion. [One ray of cold light pierces ten thousand fathoms!]

Ten thousand rays of cold light suddenly whizzed, and madly rushed forth!

Meng Luo was gob-smacked. He was just reading his opponent’s potential. And, that was when his opponent had suddenly taken him by storm! So, he was caught off-guard for a moment. He shouted loudly, and used his full strength to defend himself with his folding fan!

Shua Shua Shua, Knock Knock Knock...

The weapons of the two men hadn’t clashed since the fight had begun. So, this was the first time that it happened. Meng Luo’s folding fan continuously faced the sword attacks of Chu Yang, and it seemed like lotus leaves were being blown away by the wind. It appeared as if raindrops had started to pound on banana leaves!

The cold light would always find a flaw in his movements... No

matter how many times he changed his agility skills. Then, the sword attack landed on the surface of this special folding fan. And, numerous sword-holes appeared on the surface of the fan!

This folding fan of Meng Luo's was manufactured of natural ice silk that had been mixed with rainbow-colored jade threads. So, it was invulnerable! It also had a special a function — it was tailor-made for the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique!

However, this fan had suddenly sustained a lot of damage. And, Meng Luo felt a twisting heartache as a result of this!

The fan had the capability to restore itself into its original form even though the sword's tip had pierced holes in it. But, Meng Luo was certain that each hole made by the sword had weakened the 'spring dream power' of his folding fan by a bit. So, he couldn't help but fly into a rage!

A black-cloud-like silhouette suddenly soared up in the field in front of the eyes of the people who were watching the fight! And, the darkness instantly spread out in all directions. However, the white shadow of Meng Luo only remained like a small dot in the middle of the field. In fact, it was only faintly discernible within that devastating darkness!

One of the Eight Big Young Masters – Meng Luo — had been forced into a situation of absolute disadvantage by the attack of this man with an unknown background! In fact, even defending himself was getting very strenuous for him!

The fact was that Chu Yang was also shaken by this. [I haven't used the move 'one ray of cold light pierces ten thousand fathoms' at its full power. I have only used sixty percent of it. But, the Ninth Grade King Level Expert Jing Meng Hun had been forced into a difficult situation when I had used this move on him. However, Meng Luo has managed to defend himself without getting hurt!]

Chu Yang coldly snorted and spoke, "Nice agility skill you got there! Then, face it one more time!"

He again launched ‘one ray of cold light pierces ten thousand fathoms’. But, he used seventy percent of its power this time!

Meng Luo issued a stuffy groan. His white shadow went flying backwards, and traced a white line in its wake. But, Chu Yang’s black shadow closely followed behind it. He had retained the sword move, and didn’t issue it out as he chased Meng Luo. They took dozens of laps of the field in an instant!

The people who were watching the fight clamored!

[One of the Eight Big Young Masters – Meng Luo — is unexpectedly running away like a mouse from this man. And, the other man keeps chasing him relentlessly, and is unwilling to let go?]

The experts of the Meng Clan tightly knitted their brows. Their faces exposed expressions of worry. [It would be a major blow to the reputation of the Meng Clan if Young Master gets defeated in this fight...]

Meng Luo ran for more than twenty laps in a row. And, his handsome face had already turned purple.

Luo Ke Di had smiles of exultation on his face. He jumped out and shouted, "Good! Good! Spank him! Drill into his a*shole. It would be the best if you carve these two words –‘stupid c*nt’– on his butt."

Meng Luo roared wildly. And, his eyes became bloodshot. He fiercely closed his folding fan. And, it turned into a short club. Then, he suddenly turned around, and shot it with the entirety of his power!

Bang! Chu Yang’s black robe fluttered as he stood in the field. But, Young Master Meng Luo went rolling like a ball on the ground. His white robe had been riddled with holes. It was all ‘torn and tattered’ now. A silver glow was exposed from the holes...

"Silver Wind Jade Armor!" someone from the crowd exclaimed

out loud in surprise. Everyone was dumbstruck, and turned pale as soon as they heard this.

Silver Wind Jade Armor! It was a legendary treasure in the Middle Three Heavens. It was said that it was immune to all sorts of metallic weapons – whether sword or saber. Wearing this on one's body was equivalent to having more than one life. It was unexpected that such an unusual treasure would be present on Meng Luo's body!

Meng Luo slowly stood up from the ground. Blood spilled over from the corner of his mouth. He held out his hand, and slowly wiped-off the blood. He looked towards Chu Yang with a fierce look on his face. He then spoke bitterly, "Chu, you have compelled me to do this!"

Chu Yang became stunned, "Crap! Young Master Meng, we've been fighting for so long... and you still couldn't tell that I had been trying to force you all along? Did you think that I have invited you to have a meal or something?"

Ji Mo suddenly burst into laughter.

Dong Wu Shang's expressions became tensed. He knew that Chu Yang was deliberately provoking Meng Luo. And, Meng Luo would probably show his hidden trump the next moment — as per expectation.

Meng Luo chuckled once. He suddenly opened his folding fan. Then, he waved it with a 'swoosh' sound. After that, three clones of Meng Luo appeared on the left side of his body. All of them were waving their folding fans with smiles on their faces. He again waved the folding fan, and three more clones of Meng Luo appeared on his right side!

Seven Meng Luo clones were standing side by side in an orderly fashion.

Each of them waved their folding fans at the same time. And,

they all smiled at the same time. After that, each of them opened their mouths, "Chu, I must get this sword of yours." All seven clones had even spoken at the same time. However, this gave a very disorderly feeling in contrast. Then, the seven Meng Luos took a step forwards at the same time...

The entire space seemed to distort. And, the surroundings seemed to be filled with spring moist. The spectators felt as if their mind had been sent into a trance; even Dong Wu Shang was no exception. No matter what their eyes saw or what the bodies felt... they felt that spring had suddenly arrived!

The air became more and more moist. It seemed that the spring breeze was blowing and caressing the earth. Myriads of things began to bloom. Some people had already started to feel as if the dried up peach branches had slowly started to grow flower-buds...

The seven Meng Luos moved forward in unison, and this feeling of ‘spring-time’ became more and more distinct.

Someone shouted out in surprise... it almost seemed as if this individual was talking in his sleep, "Wow! The willows are turning green so quickly... look, ah... peach has blossomed on those trees... the flower buds are turning more and more pink..."

However, it was all a mere illusion!

Dong Wu Shang was greatly surprised. Even he had felt that this illusion was real. He felt bitter in his heart. He ruthlessly bit his own tongue. A burst of pain sneaked into him, and his mind sobered up!

Dong Wu Shang was aghast and turned pale!

[I never knew that Meng Luo had this kind of skill up his sleeve. Fortunately, I’m only watching from the sidelines. I would’ve already lost after being trapped in the trance if I were present on the field...]

[He’s capable of seizing the minds of everyone — without any

movement, and without any sign. In addition, he's able to cover such a wide range. Moreover, he's able to seize the minds of people regardless of their level. In fact, there's no exception. What kind of a world-shaking and evil technique is this?!]

He realized that Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had also been bewitched by this blooming spring. He couldn't help but become more startled as a result. He pushed the back of their heads with both of his hands at the same time. An ice-cold energy bubbled up, and entered into their brains. And, they regained their senses as a result of this. Then, they looked at each other, and their faces paled...

[This evil technique is extremely terrifying!]

Chapter 470: Breaking the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique!

Chu Yang's pupils contracted at once! And, his extraordinary spiritual sense activated. He clearly felt that a strange energy was pouring into his body through the sweat-pores in his body.

Meanwhile, each step Meng Luo took, every action and movement his', every time he swung the folding fan, even the gentle smiling expression in his eyes, and the warm and tranquil look on his face – all these aspects were giving people a beautiful yet hazy sensation of a spring-like dream.

Meng Luo had already made 14 clones by now. They had assumed a semicircular formation, and were walking towards Chu Yang.

This hallucination was a compilation of light and shadow, and it was trance-inducing in nature. The spring-like atmosphere was getting more and more concentrated with every passing second. In fact, everyone could seemingly smell the sweet fragrance of the spring garden. And, they felt as if the world was full of vitality. Many people had already lain down on the rugged ground even though it had lots of oddly shaped rocks spread all over. However, they appeared comfortable since warm smiles had appeared on their content faces. It was as if they were lying down on soft grass that was brimming with life and vitality... this was the season of spring inside their dream...

Moreover, there were several first-rate King Level experts among these people!

However, there was anger burning in Chu Yang's heart at the moment! A burst of hatred!

Others might not know this, but he clearly knew that this technique of Meng Luo's had been developed with the help of 'gathering yin to supplement the yang method'. He had extracted

the ‘primordial yin’ energy of countless young girls of 15 years of age or below in order to practice this technique to such an extent. He had exploited the emotion of ‘first love’ of young and naïve girls to practice his Spring Dream Divine Technique!

In fact, this trance was basically the manifestation of the most beautiful feelings of ‘yearning’ and ‘longing’ which these young maidens had experienced their whole lives. It was precisely the manifestation of these girls’ purest dreams...

He would employ a sort of extreme pact on these girls in order to gather these dreams. Then, he would mercilessly destroy the dreams of these girls. After that, he would use a tripod furnace to refine the world’s purest and most beautiful feeling of love. This was precisely the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique!

And, the vivid dreams of the girls shattered in this spring dream. So, this so-called ‘spring dream’ was devoid of spring in reality. Instead, the beautiful dreams of countless young girls were shattering all over. Shattering the vivid dreams of young girls... was the price of spring dream!

This was true the origin of the name of 'Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique'.

This was the most inhumane and despicable technique.

Meng Luo had already practiced it to such an extent! Its influence was so big that it had already gone beyond Chu Yang’s expectations!

[Hundreds of girls have been ruined by him... at the very least!]

A strong killing intent suddenly surged within Chu Yang’s heart! And, his strong murderous intention seemingly broke through the enclosure of this spring dream!

He wanted to kill this scum! But then, he realized that he had arrived in the Middle Three Heavens very recently. So, his foundation wasn’t stable yet. Moreover, the Meng Clan was one of

the top and most respected clans. He would certainly manage to vent his anger if he were to kill Meng Luo at this time. But, that scenario would be extremely unfavorable for him in the long run!

Keeping a sorcerer like Meng Luo alive is the most effective weapon to deal with the Meng Clan!

Chu Yang was unaware that Meng Luo had sent a marriage proposal to his beloved Mo Qing Wu. He probably would've killed this 'piece of trash' with his sword if he knew about that. In fact, he wouldn't have given two sh*ts about the matters of paramount importance even though he was the Master of Nine Tribulations Sword!

However, he was completely unaware of that situation at the moment.

Meng Luo sensed Chu Yang's murderous intention, and his whole body shook. He ferociously urged the spring dream, and made it more vigorous. The smile on his face grew even more intoxicating as a result. And, his appearance turned even more chic and elegant. He appeared very handsome and refined... like the God of Wind himself. In fact, he appeared like a young hero who was briskly walking in the spring breeze.

A young woman who hadn't yet experienced her first awakening of love would've definitely fallen hard in love with him if the poor girl was present at this scene! This dreamy youngster had nearly gathered the entire world's attractiveness within himself...

Who knew that the gentle and refined looking young man in this fantastic illusion was a vicious and hungry wolf in reality?

Meng Luo's clones had expanded to 27 by now!

The atmosphere within the spring dream was getting richer and richer. He was also about to arrive in front of Chu Yang. However, Chu Yang still hadn't moved into action. Therefore, a complacent look appeared in Meng Luo's eyes. And, it was accompanied by a

trace of looming killing intent...

Dong Wu Shang burned with impatient as he saw this scene. Meanwhile, he also activated his martial power in order to forcefully resist the invasion of spring dream on himself. He was about to shout in order to warn Chu Yang... when...

Chu Yang let out a loud shout, "Wu Shang! Watch clearly!"

He suddenly backhanded his sword, and stabbed his own left arm. And, his own blood spurted out with a ‘puff’ sound! After that, Chu Yang operated his martial power, and turned the blood into blood fog. And, this blood fog spread everywhere...

Meng Luo’s complexion changed drastically in an instant!

Then, Chu Yang wielded his sword to attack! The sword light flashed and stabbed Meng Luo’s wrist. ‘Thud’ his folding fan fell to the ground! ‘Shua Shua’, the sword slashed twice and stabbed the both of Meng Luo’s legs. Meng Luo screamed, and knelt to the ground with a ‘thump’. Thereby, he was left to kneel in front of Chu Yang!

The spring dream illusion disappeared in an instant!

Everyone regained their consciousness at this moment, but saw one of the eight big young masters – Meng Luo – looking distressed. In fact, both his knees were on the ground, and he was kneeling in front of Chu Yang!

[He may have been defeated... but, there’s no need to kneel down, right? What is this Young Master Meng Luo doing? Is he begging for mercy?]

Other people hadn’t seen what happened in reality... except for a handful of superb King Level experts!

Chu Yang went on like ‘oh my’ and continued, "Young Master Meng, what are you doing? This was only a friendly match between two experts. How could I possibly kill you over this? You, you, you... What are you doing? Get up quickly! Why are you

kneeling down before me? Come on... I won't kill you. Trust me, I won't kill you..."

These words had been spoken in a loud and resounding voice!

A few among the onlookers had seen the truth. However, a look of contempt appeared on the faces of everyone else. [Meng Luo, you are the heir to a top clan. You are also one of the eight big young masters of the Middle Three Heavens. You may not take note of your status, but you're still a King Level expert... How can your self-respect and moral integrity allow you to kneel before the enemy and beg for mercy?]

[This is simply disgraceful!]

[This is so despicable!]

Dong Wu Shang's jaws dropped. He had never imagined that things would turn out so dramatic. Meng Luo had a complete upper hand a moment ago, while Chu Yang had merely stood there motionless. However, Chu Yang had suddenly brandished his long sword in an awe-inspiring manner the very next moment. Moreover, those sword strikes weren't even swift or fatal. In fact, Dong Wu Shang knew that he would've managed to dodge with a little bit of effort if he were in Meng Luo's place. However, Meng Luo had fallen prey to the strange sword attack, and had knelt down in front of Chu Yang thereafter!

Such a baffling and unexpected change in the situation had left Dong Wu Shang to believe as if he was still in that spring dream. So, he rubbed his eyes in disbelief...

Meng Clan's ten King Level experts blushed with shame! Meng Luo's front was facing them, and Chu Yang's back was turned to them. Chu Yang's black robe was fluttering, and it had blocked their line of sight. They had only seen a flash of sword light as a result, and Meng Luo had heavily fallen to his knees after that!

So, he was kneeling in front of this black-clothed youth as far as

they were concerned!

[What the hell is this? Why is Young Lord kneeling in front of the enemy and begging for mercy... and that too before such a large audience?]

Chu Yang helped Meng Luo to his feet in a very cordial manner.

Meng Luo's eyes were absolutely empty. In fact, it seemed as if he was looking into the void. His mind had gone blank too. He suddenly spoke-up in a manner that made it seem as if he was sleep-talking, "How do you know?"

Chu Yang coldly looked at him, but didn't answer his question. He simply stated, "You lost!"

"I lost... I lost..." Meng Luo muttered to himself. Then, he suddenly let out a long and loud cry. He turned around and took a few steps. Then, he turned around again and asked, "State your name! I will come to look for you!"

"The person who defeated you is called Chu Yang!" Chu Yang proudly raised his face, and looked at him disdainfully, "The person you just knelt before is also known as Chu Yang!"

Meng Luo let out a scream. He opened his mouth, and spouted a mouthful of blood! After that, his figure flashed as he leapt back to his own team. Then, a frightened whimpering sound was heard as a small figure was tossed away by Meng Luo the very next moment.

Chu Yang caught it, and saw a pair of frightened 'black and white' eyes looking at him. This was the Storm Leopard cub! Meng Luo hadn't gone back on his word.

He couldn't dare to go back on his word!

"Let's go!" Meng Luo gave an order, and walked away with his tail between his legs.

The ten King Level experts of the Meng Clan glared at Chu Yang.

It seemed as if they were trying to remember this person's face properly. However, they didn't say a word, and followed after their young lord.

Not only the experts of Meng Clan, all the experts present nearby (/in the surroundings) were looking at Chu Yang. There was shock as well as doubt in the eyes of all. They were trying to guess... [When did such a stunning Young Master appear in the Middle Three Heavens...?!]

"Young Master Chu, please heed to this old fogy's presumptuous request. I request you to clear up a doubt that's bugging me. I don't know whether you'd be so kind to help me out...?" the one who had spoken this was a blue-clothed old man. This was a Ninth Grade King Level Expert. He had been lucky that he was far away when Meng Luo had implemented his attack. So, he hadn't been enchanted into the dream. Else, he would've really made a fool of himself...

This is exactly what Chu Yang had wanted. So, he replied, "Senior, I wouldn't dare to be pretentious before you."

The old man in blue immediately got happy and smiled. He was very satisfied with the fact that Chu Yang had showed a friendly attitude towards him. He felt proud and appreciated Chu Yang for that. He leisurely stroked his beard and asked, "Young Master Chu, the mysterious technique that Young Master Meng Luo displayed was very fierce and difficult to deal with. Young Master seems to be a Second Grade King Level Expert at present, but he knows a martial technique which even I would find hard to contend against. But, I don't know the technique he implemented?"

He had asked what technique it was, but he hadn't asked Chu Yang on the possible methods of cracking it. He was obviously scared to offend the Meng Clan.

Chu Yang would've explained even if no one had asked him to. Not to mention that someone had asked him to explain in this case!

Let’s say that he wanted to doze off, and someone actually came with a pillow. Would he be willing to let the pillow go?

"I will gladly explain to everyone since the senior has asked. This would perhaps save everyone from falling into this trap in the future," Chu Yang put on an innocent smile. In fact, he seemed to be some kind of a magnanimous and openhearted guy...

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo trembled from head to foot. [Someone comes across bad luck each time Chu Yang exposes such an innocent smile. It seems like the Meng Clan is going to meet with some bad luck this time...]

"This martial technique is called Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique... it’s extremely difficult to deal with!" Chu Yang lowered his voice, and explained in a spooky manner. Everyone’s curiosity had been aroused by him in the process. So, they erected their ears to listen closely. They were paying such close attention that they would’ve been able to hear him clearly even if his voice were two times lower than its present volume...

"This magical ability is extremely scary. Forget about King Level expert... even an Emperor Level expert will find it difficult to escape death if they aren’t aware of it in advance!" Chu Yang explained in a serious tone, "One needs to extract the ‘primordial yin’ energy from several young girls under the age of 15 in order to practice this evil technique. Furthermore, one must have a compatible cultivation method to be able to practice it..."

"What!?" No one had expected that this question would bring out such a sensational matter!

"Not only that... a young girl – after getting her yin extracted – loses her mind completely. Her intelligence gets destroyed, and she ends up becoming a zombie-like plaything from then on. This is the so-called ‘gathering yin to supplement the yang method’..." Chu Yang explained slowly in order to provide people with enough time to digest the details...

"The Meng Clan unexpectedly has such a heinous martial technique?" everyone shouted angrily. They felt very indignant at this injustice!

[Gathering yin to supplement the yang is already evil enough. This Meng Luo has gone even further by specifically targeting young girls. This is the most heinous crime! It is already beyond the point of insanity!]

"This evil method involves the extraction of the ‘primordial yin’ of pure young girls... as well as their happiest fantasies. Those elements are then refined to form this unique magical ability. This attack can make the enemy plunge into a beautiful illusion of spring once it is executed. Then, one can slaughter the enemy on a whim!"

Chu Yang explained slowly.

Everyone got furious! [Such an insidious martial technique... such an evil method... he’s the public enemy of the Middle Three Heavens!]

Chapter 471: Terrible Rumors

"This is a true fact. Gentlemen, you can use any method to verify it. Or, you can check ancient records if you like." Chu Yang said solemnly, "I don't have anything to do with this matter because I can break it! So, whether you believe it or not is not of much concern to me. But, for you people... ha ha ha..."

An impatient man asked, "How did you break it?"

Chu Yang amusingly looked at that man and said, "This is something... that's related to my principal cultivation technique."

"Uh..." that man felt embarrassed.

"Anyway, thanks little brother for exposing this sky-shaking secret! Moreover, you exposed the true colors of this sinister Meng Clan. This isn't a trivial matter. We must go back and report this to our clans," the old man in blue clothes greeted with serious expression on his face. Then, he leapt up, and left.

Everyone else cupped their fist in the other hand as well. They too had serious expression on their faces as they left.

"I suppose that Meng Luo is going to be in big trouble this time." Luo Ke Di put on a smile. He spoke with a schadenfreude look on his face, "Damn! This bastard keeps looking for girls from small and medium-sized clans for marriage. He seeks to marry these young girls under fifteen years of age, and makes them his concubines. Many clans marry off their daughters to him in order to make good relations with the Meng Clan. In fact, there should be more than thirty daughters of middle and small clans among his concubines... The strength of the Meng Clan is so tremendous. But, I suppose these clans will be the first ones put Meng Luo in order once this matter is exposed... ha ha ha... that would be so satisfying. Motherfu*ker, this is making me so happy... Ahwooh~~~"

"Yes. These families have never taken their daughters seriously. But, the Meng Clan would be subjected to sanctions once this matter would spread, and all the big clans would join hands to suppress it. After all, the existence of such an evil technique is an extremely dangerous thing for the top experts of every big clan. They may not do it to give vent to their anger about their daughters, but these clans will definitely draw a dividing line between themselves and the Meng Clan in order to avoid any future calamities. And, this matter about their daughters would become a reasonable justification for doing that..."

Ji Mo was also from a big clan. How could he not understand this point?

However, Dong Wu Shang was pondering about another matter. He took a look at the people who were walking away. Then, he asked, "There is something that I don’t understand."

Chu Yang smiled, "I understand what you don’t understand."

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di got confused. This exchange was very awkward-sounding.

"You are wondering how the overbearing Meng Luo and his mighty Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique got defeated so easily by me, right?" Chu Yang said with a smile, "In fact, I had deliberately slowed down the speed when I was stabbing him with my sword. I had done that in order to let you see and understand things clearly."

"Yes, this is exactly what I don’t understand." Dong Wu Shang said, "Anyway, Meng Luo mustn’t have been defeated so quickly, ah."

"Well... there are two very important reasons." Chu Yang extended his two fingers, "Number one, the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique is an evil technique that Meng Luo uses to create an illusory sensation of infinite pleasantness and joy in one’s mind! But, this relaxed state of joy has a fatal weak-point. That is...

blood!"

"Blood..." Dong Wu Shang silently thought in his mind. And, it seemed as if he had realized something.

"But, blood won't work alone. It must in the form of blood fog," Chu Yang explained, "Furthermore, it is necessary that the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique is displayed to a certain level if one wants to defeat the enemy. And, one should use the blood fog to break the technique only once that has happened."

"I see..." Dong Wu Shang nodded. Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di also nodded one after another.

"The second point is to seize the right timing. Meng Luo's strength won't suffer any damage if he launches the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique and it gets broken by the blood fog immediately-after. So, he can still use other techniques to fight you in that case." Chu Yang slowly explained, "So, wait until he divides himself into more than twenty phantom clones. Then, he won't have much of his spiritual power left. In fact, his entire spiritual power would be nearly exhausted by then!"

"Therefore, you would be able to defeat him if you attack at that time!" Chu Yang concluded in a soft voice.

"So, that's how it is. Apparently, this evil technique is somewhat mediocre, ah!" Luo Ke Di said in a mocking tone, "I will defeat this bastard in one strike if I face him on the next occasion."

"You think you understand everything, huh?" Chu Yang glared at him, "You may have understood... but, can you resist it when the time comes? Such a powerful spiritual attack is something even a Ninth Grade King Level expert can't guard against. What chance do you stand?"

Dong Wu Shang became shocked. He said, "Yes, that is the problem."

"This problem has a key." Chu Yang said, "My cultivation method

is special. So, I'm not affected by his spiritual attack. But, you people are different. Therefore, you have to pay with something... for example pain."

"Pain?"

"Correct." Chu Yang explained, "You would have to hide some needle or any pointed object in your hand before you come to face Meng Luo. Then, just stealthily prick yourself as soon as you start to feel the spring illusion after he uses his Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique. It is necessary that you prick yourself in order to break the illusion," Chu Yang continued in a serious tone, "Remember, you must tighten your grip to prick yourself. This is the key point. The blood will flow, and it would make you feel some pain. And, that will keep you clear-headed. Then, you must wait for the enemy's attack to reach a certain extent. After that, you can defeat the enemy in one fell swoop! Remember, you would be screwed if you were to get enchanted by this technique! You must remember this by all means!"

Luo Ke Di and the other two nodded with solemn faces.

Suddenly, someone asked in a puzzled manner, "What did you call me out for?"

The four of them raised their heads in amazement. They saw that Young Master Ji Zhu was laid down against a rock. He was in a daze. He opened his drowsy eyes, and looked at Chu Yang. He then spoke in a resentful tone, "What is it that I must do by all means? What is so important? Disturbing a man's dream is very immoral! Don't you know that?"

Chu Yang became flabbergasted.

All four of them suddenly recalled Chu Yang's last words — [Remember! You must remember this by all means! That word has strangely sounded very similar to the pronunciation of his name...]

Luo Ke Di issued a "puff" sound, and started to laugh in a wild

manner as he slowly lowered himself flat on his back. Ji Mo's whole body twitched. It seemed as if his body was shaking because of laughter. However, the fact was that his face had turned black from embarrassment. He felt humiliated, depressed, and ridiculed when he saw his elder brother. He wanted to go up to him so that he could beat him up!

However, it was a rare sight to see Dong Wu Shang laughing so heartily.

Chu Yang's face twitched, "I say that you two brothers have got your names based on your personalities, right? These can get mixed up at times... but suits you well."

Ji Zhu replied in a matter of fact way, "I will have to go and ask my dad about that. That lazy guy's naming sense is very lame."

Everyone laughed out loud.

[This kind of a son is very rare to come by.]

Chu Yang nodded. He thought, [No wonder these two brothers are so lazy. So that's how it is. So, there was a determining factor behind it, ah...]

That Little Storm leopard had been pitifully hiding in Chu Yang's sleeves ever since Meng Luo had thrown it. Its little body was continuously shivering. It would occasionally raise its head to look at Chu Yang, and would softly issue woo-woo sound. Its black and white eyes looked lovely, but pitifully sad...

[This man looks more ferocious than that other man, woo woo...]

"Don't you want this? Take it." Chu Yang handed over the Storm Leopard to Luo Ke Di. Luo Ke Di beamed with joy as he received it. He held it as if it were a precious thing, and started to comb its hair. He spoke with a kind face, "Good boy. Do as I say and I will give you meat to eat."

The little leopard curled up shivering, and looked at him. Then, it stuck out its tongue and licked his hand. Luo Ke Di felt very

happy. So, he held the little leopard in his bosom. Suddenly, he cried out and his complexion turned pale.

Everyone quickly looked to see what had happened. They saw that the little leopard had opened its mouth, and was sucking that small dot on Luo Ke Di's chest. The Second Young Master Luo had been caught off-guard... and was being sucked... on that vital point... he had become limp and numb as a result. He was obviously very startled. In fact, he felt as if his head would explode.

"Fu*k me! Second Young Master Luo is breast-feeding!" Ji Mo cried out. This remark made everyone burst into laughter, "Crap! You even have this ability!"

"You have this ability?!" Luo Ke Di flushed with anger. He wanted to move the mouth of the little leopard away. But, the leopard was sucking very firmly... and wasn't letting go. It issued pitiful woo woo sound, and it seemed as if it was pleading... Second Young Master felt rather helpless at this...

Dong Wu Shang brought some food. He boiled it in water to make thin porridge, and gave it to the little leopard as food. This temporarily prevented the embarrassment of the Second Young Master Luo.

Everyone was laughing out loud. Only Luo Ke Di frowned. He scratched his head as he looked towards that little leopard. He touched his ears and scratched his cheek since he didn't know what to do. [I thought that I would snatch this since it is a treasure. But, I didn't expect that it would turn out to be such a big trouble.]

[[This little leopard wants to suck breasts. But, where do I bring that stuff from?]

[How is this fair?]

Luo Ke Di immediately thought of returning this little leopard to Chu Yang. But, Chu Yang firmly refused... [Are you kidding? What

would I do with this little leopard? Pet it? Be its nanny?] In fact, Chu Yang would sell it off if it fell into his hands...

Seventh Grade spirit beast cub! Everyone thought that it was rare... but, Chu Yang had never given it any importance. In fact, he was currently immersed in some other ideas, [If I can have a ninth grade spirit beast... or even higher...]

Everyone joined their forces, and climbed up the mountain. But, they saw that the road was already abuzz. They looked at all the people who seemed to be whispering and discussing about something.

"Hey, have you heard? That Young Master Meng – Meng Luo is an obscene criminal in reality? He has raped five-thousand-eight-hundred-and-eighty-eight girls!" A man smiled in exultation.

Everyone became flabbergasted as they heard this sentence. Luo Ke Di spurted out a mouthful of saliva with a 'puff'. He was feeding the little leopard. So, it got sprayed on the body of the little leopard. And, the little leopard looked at him with an aggrieved expression in its eyes...

"Yes! Yes! I heard that Meng Luo likes to eat the heart of young girls... Also, he eats them uncooked..." Another man added oil to the fire.

"He's indeed a beast, ah! I heard that the entire Meng Clan practices this evil technique... it's so cruel! They are all very good at Gathering Yin to Supplement the Yang method..." one man spoke-up in a spooky manner.

Another man added in a pensive manner, "No wonder, ah! Most men of the Meng Clan march majestically to the brothels. I saw it earlier..."

"Really...? They are bulls! Tsk tsk, they all go together? Could it be that they also compete on their endurance ability apart from practicing their martial art?"

"Maybe, they all shout out the worker's chant as they go together. He he..." a man laughed obscenely.

"This is nothing... Young Master Meng Luo forcibly took a girl form the brothel the last time. He endlessly quarreled with another man. In fact, a fight was about to break out between the two parties. However, he saw the face of the other person, and realized that it was his own father... I see... it was all because of the 'Gathering Yin to Supplement the Yang'..." a man spoke-up while he pretending to be earnest.

"Crap! What happened after that?! Who won afterwards? Did the father win... or the son?" Another gossiper's eyes shone.

"Maybe, the son and the father won together..." another gossiper added.

"This is like going to war with your own relatives. The father and son would be going to battle against each other... ah..." everyone sighed as they lamented.

Chapter 472: Whose Victory Are You Betting On?

Chu Yang and the others walked along. They laughed so much on the way that their bellies began to hurt.

However, everyone was clear about thing — the Meng Clan was perhaps done for. It might not get exterminated in its entirety, but its strength had been damaged for sure.

And, Chu Yang's speech was the main reason behind all this.

Ji Mo and the other brothers were full of admiration and reverence. Dong Wu Lei and Ji Zhu were observing Chu Yang with fear in their eyes. [This Big Brother Chu... is an extremely scary character!]

[He only spoke about the horrors of this evil technique, but didn't explain the methods to crack it. He made the people of Jianghu feel insecure. He also made the major clans vigilant. He has virtually eliminated the Meng Clan via complete isolation...]

[He has cut off the roots of the Meng Clan in one clean strike, and has managed to injure it very seriously!]

[His grasp of the will of the people is too accurate. Moreover, the effect of such gossips and slanders would be dozens of times more than that on ordinary days because the Middle Three Heavens is going through very chaotic times right now.]

[The Meng Clan's fate is already sealed.]

Chu Yang continued to walk while listening to a myriad of news along the way. Meanwhile, he also kept analyzing in his heart. He was very interested in this contest to 'snatch the bride'. This was no small matter. Nearly all respected clans would be gathering here.

This battle would fully manifest the big factions of the Middle

Three Heavens. And, this was exactly what Chu Yang needed. This would help him decide the place he ought to start his journey in the Middle Three Heavens from.

After all, hearsays are never as good as witnessing with one's own eyes!

Chu Yang looked at Dong Wu Lei and Ji Zhu, and somewhat lamented in his heart... [the eldest young master of each of these major clans aren't ordinary in reality...]

Ji Zhu looked clumsy. In fact, he was very sloppy, but Chu Yang felt that this man was pretending to be slow-witted! [He acts and thinks like a clumsy person, but he's not stupid!]

[Moreover, being sloppy and lazy acts as his best camouflage. He ought to be the kind of person who disguises himself as a pig to eat the tiger...]

[Dong Wu Lei's plans are profound-enough. Moreover, he has a very suspicious nature. He is poles apart from Dong Wu Shang, who is always frank and straightforward. Of course, this is exactly what has determined his position in the clan. After all, his appearance is that of a typical young master of some aristocratic clan.]

[Moreover... Dong Wu Lei is very afraid of me at the moment!]

Ji Zhu and Ji Mo were on intimate terms among these two pairs of brothers. However, the relationship between Dong Wu Lei and Dong Wu Shang was hard for Chu Yang to grasp. [Perhaps, Dong Wu Lei's way of thinking is beyond my comprehension?]

[He not only feels warm and cordial brotherly emotions for his younger brother, but he also feels threatened for his own position. Yet, the sense of crisis can't suppress his true brotherly feelings. However, those brotherly feelings can't replace his sense of crisis and desire for power...]

[Dong Wu Lei must be having conflicting feelings in his heart

right now...]

Chu Yang sighed.

He looked at Dong Wu Shang's majestic mountain-like body. The Young Master was walking beside him. There was a calm look on his clear and square face. Chu Yang was somewhat sad and worried for him. [Does he know what is going through his elder brother's mind?]

[Dong Wu Shang is a big-hearted character. He attaches importance to justice. Perhaps he doesn't know, and that's why he works so hard to handle the clan's matters. Perhaps, he acts like a trailblazer to solve the troubles for his elder brother. But, he would probably still do it even if he knew. So, this would unlikely change anything.]

[This is precisely how Dong Wu Shang is!]

They reached the top of the mountain. There was a big basin there, and it stretched as far as the eyes could see. It looked something like a soccer field...

Many people had gathered here.

...Especially, on top of an enormous platform that was located at the entrance to the arena. That area was even more bustling and lively.

"I want to buy! I place my bet! I bet on Ji Mo's loss, 1000 taels!" a man hopped-up as he raised the silver money, and roared loudly. He seemed anxious. In fact, his forehead was even sweating.

"I also bet on Ji Mo's loss, 10,000 taels!" another individual shouted.

"I bet on Gao Sheng's win, 10,000 taels!" a big man shouted.

"Me too..."

...

Ji Mo seemed very embarrassed by this. He couldn't help but

mutter to himself, "Motherfu*ker, you people wait to see the people I have recruited..."

Chu Yang held out his hand, and grabbed a guy who was hastily running by and asked him, "What is going on?"

"Fu*k me! You let me go! I must hurry up and place the bet! Ji Mo's winning rate has already reached 1 to 5. Fu*k, the price will rise again if you keep me held up here for a while..." This man struggled to break free.

Chu Yang was stunned by this. So, he let go of his hold. And, this man disappeared in an instant. He had rushed away to go and raise the stakes. In fact, he didn't even have enough time to see who had grabbed him...

"Ji Mo, you look confused. This popularity of yours... is truly..." Luo Ke Di heaved a strenuous sigh, "Too bad! No one's betting on your win..."

Ji Mo gritted his teeth, and glared at Luo Ke Di. It seemed as if he would eat Luo Ke Di alive, "People aren't betting on my win... but what about you? On whose win would you bet? You are going to go on stage to fight, right?"

Luo Ke Di beamed with joy and replied, "Of course, we are brothers after all. I would obviously go on stage to fight. But, whose win I will bet on to make money is something that's unrelated, right? It's like you have opened the gamble house, correct? The money I am going to make isn't something you are going to compensate for, right?"

He took out a bundle of silver notes from his bosom after he said this, and dashed over at once, "Get out of the way. Step aside! Make way for this Young Master! This Young Master wants to bet!"

The noisy crowd saw the Wolf Sword King coming over, and tactfully stepped aside to make way for him. The guy at the forefront was still leaning over the table, and filling the gambling

bill. He exclaimed in excitement at this time, "Ji Mo is going to lose this time! Wa ha ha! The compensation rate isn't high, but... I can finally make some profit! Wa ha ha..."

However, Second Young Master Luo Ke Di saw this, and roared in anger. He grabbed that guy's scalp, and shoved him on the ground. Then, he fiendishly asked, "Fu*ker! What did you say?"

How could that person not know the Wolf Sword King? His face suddenly turned pale. And, he started to beg, "Young Master Luo, I didn't see you. I made a mistake..."

Luo Ke Di angrily roared, "Motherfu*ker, you are unlucky that you bumped into me! Say, how much were you going to bet on Ji Mo's loss?"

"5... 5000 taels..." that man replied in an awkward manner. Everyone knew that Luo Ke Di was in Ji Mo's gang. So, wasn't betting on Ji Mo's loss equivalent to betting on Luo Ke Di's loss? And, getting caught like this... was truly this guy's misfortune...

"Fu*k your uncle!" Luo Ke Di angrily said, "What made you bet on Ji Mo's loss? Bet on his win! Faster! Or I will break your neck!"

That man screamed loudly, "Young Master Luo... Young Master Luo, ah! This isn't fair. You can't bully me into betting against my will... it's not easy for me to make money..."

"Clang!" Luo Ke Di unsheathed his sword. He pressed it on the man's neck, and fiercely asked, "Are you betting or not?"

That person's life was in danger. So, he had to give in. He changed his betting bill with tears and nasal mucus over his entire face.

Ji Mo was deeply moved by this. And, He kept singing praises about Luo Ke Di to Chu Yang, "That's how a brother should be. Ah, take a look at the Coyote. He's so loyal, and he follows the code of brotherhood." Chu Yang merely curled his lips in response.

Luo Ke Di waited for that guy to make the changes. Then, his

turn came. He laughed loudly, and then ‘Bam’! He slammed a stack of silver notes on the gambling table, "I am betting 50,000 taels! I bet on Gao Sheng’s win! I must earn some pocket money. I am broke..."

Everyone fainted! They all collapsed to the ground... one by one...

Ou Du Xiao was sitting on the other side of the gambling table. And, even he was taken aback by this, and met with an accident as a result. The two iron stamps silently fell from his hands, and pounded on his own feet. The look on his face remained unchanged, and it seemed as if he hadn’t awakened from the shock as of yet. He was still looking at this rude and unreasonable tyrant Luo Ke Di with a look of disbelief in his eyes, "You said you will bet on whom? Say it again...?"

"I would obviously bet on Gao Sheng! Fu*k! Was there really a need to ask this question?!" Luo Ke Di got impatient, "Hurry up! Faster... what are you looking at? Have you not seen a bold person like me betting 50,000 at once? Fu*k! Be quick. Faster! Can’t you see that I am in a hurry...?"

Ou Du Xiao’s heart palpitated in bafflement as he asked, "But... aren’t you going to help Ji Mo and go on stage to fight for him?"

"There’s no relation between my fight and my gambling ahwooh..." Luo Ke Di rubbed his hands in glee and spoke with a nasty smile on his face, "Money, he he, money..."

Ji Mo simply went berserk outside the gambling house. He wanted to rush over, but he had been clutched by Dong Wu Shang. But, Ji Mo was struggling desperately to break free. He had even gone bare-chested in the process of breaking free. He had managed to free his hands, and was scratching the air. His feet had left deep marks on the ground. A strong guy like Dong Wu Shang was unable to hold him down. Ji Mo roared in an extremely grieving manner, "Luo Ke Di... Luo Ke Di! You... You and I can’t live under

the same sky... I won't forgive you... You and I can't exist together... You and I... You and I... You have really infuriated me aaa..."

Luo Ke Di beamed with joy as he came out holding the gambling bill. He walked while blowing air on the bill from his mouth to dry the ink. Then, he kept it in his pocket in a satisfied manner...

He raised his head, and saw Ji Mo looking at him. In fact, Ji Mo was gasping viciously like a monster. Luo Ke Di couldn't help but let out a strange scream. Then, he turned around and ran.

Dong Wu Shang timely loosened his hands, and Ji Mo's body dashed forward. And, he went chasing with all his might. In fact, it seemed like an arrow had been released from a bow. He gnashed his teeth and bellowed, "Bastard! Bastard! Don't you run away... I will tear you apart while you're still alive..."

Luo Ke Di was desperately running away at a lightning speed, "Only a fool wouldn't run away..."

They disappeared from there in an instant, and started to play the game of cat and mouse.

The guy who had just been forced to change his bet by Luo Ke Di wanted to cry, but had no tears to shed. [You betted on Gao Sheng's win, but put a sword on my neck and forced me to bet on Ji Mo...? How is this fu*king fair...]

"On whose win are you going to bet?" Dong Wu Shang turned to look at Chu Yang and asked.

"You need to ask? I will obviously bet on Ji Mo's win!" Chu Yang rolled his eyes and replied.

Dong Wu Shang let out an 'um' sound, and spoke with a smile, "I also think that Ji Mo will win! People don't know the strength of us brothers, but I know clearly. This move of Luo Ke Di is very clever, but it's extremely cruel. God knows how many people got tricked by him..."

At this moment, the sound of beating gongs and playing drums suddenly came through, "The Meng Clan has withdrawn! The competition has turned from a ‘8-matches’ competition to ‘7-matches’. A team would need to win 4 matches to win the competition. Ji Mo's winning odds have changed to 1 to 3... Gao Sheng’s winning odds are 4 to 1..."

People started to make a racket!

[Why did Meng Luo withdraw?] Gamblers here were obsessed with gambling, and didn’t know about this matter. Many people stamped their feet and sighed deeply after they found out that Ji Mo’s compensation rate had fallen. They were regretting that they didn’t bet earlier...

Cough Cough, here is an example. Saying that there’s a compensation rate of 1 to 3 basically means that if you bet 1000 taels on Ji Mo’s win, and he wins... then the compensated amount would be 3000 taels. Saying that there’s a compensation rate of 4 to 1 basically means that if you bet 4000 taels on Gao Sheng’s win, and he wins... then the principal amount of 4000 taels would be return along with the compensation amount of 1000 taels...

Dong Wu Shang stamped his feet, and spoke in a somewhat upset tone, "We were one step late at betting."

"We’re not late." Chu Yang smiled, "The compensation rate will be adjusted. I will tell you why the seven matches are as good as the eight matches... Meng Luo has withdrawn, but he has never been regarded as a powerhouse before if one considers his former martial power and competence. In short, it can be said that the other side has semi-abandoned one fight. And, their chances of winning are instead greater among the seven fights. This adjustment is only a trick; nothing more."

Dong Wu Shang thought for a moment, and replied, "So that’s how it is..."

The people of the Ji Clan and the Dong Clan had found their own

locations to settle down. Only Chu Yang and Dong Wu Shang had remained here. They were simply sitting on a rock, and were watching this bustling and noisy scene from the sidelines. However, they made it seem as though there was no one else present there.

Meanwhile, below the mountain, about 50 Kilometers away

A team of black cavalry was rushing towards Mt. Dingjun like a tornado! The lively crowd on top of the mountain didn't know... that the overlord of the underworld of the Middle Three Heavens – Jun Xi Zhu – was coming!

Of course, an extremely important and cute little girl was also coming with her...

Fortunately or unfortunately, we managed to finish our preparations a bit ahead of scheduled time. So, the link to the Patreon Page isn't available down below at the moment.

But, you can type https://www.patreon.com/TTNH in your URL if you wish to help in increasing the pace of the novel.

Love,

Novel Saga.

Chapter 473: Wow! I Want to See Elder Brother Chu Yang!

Inside the carriage...

Mo Qing Wu curiously lifted the curtain of the carriage. Then, she looked outside, "So many people are gathered her. It seems as if they have come to a fair..."

"This is a big matter of the Middle Three Heavens! How would it not be lively?" Jun Xi Zhu smiled. She had developed an increasingly favorable impression of this gentle and melancholic little girl in the past few days.

[This girl looks far more sensible, adorable, and intelligent than ordinary girls of her age. In fact, some of her thoughts can be regarded as very mature. She has attained commendable inner strength after going through lots of troubles in her life. One would harbor a deep and favorable impression of her when they'd see her for the first time. And, one would feel endless pity towards her...]

Jun Xi Zhu had been frequently taking to Mo Qing Wu in the past few days; she had obviously teased the little girl quite a bit. Regardless, they had chatted endlessly. She would also check the knowledge of this little girl by her probing her reactions.

However, Mo Qing Wu's reactions had made her very amazed. And, she concluded that this little girl wasn't merely quick-witted, but some of her talks had substance as well. Let's say she came across an issue that she didn't understand. Then, she would simply blink her eyes, and frankly say, "Elder Sister Jun, I don't understand this."

Jun Xi Zhu admired her because of her attitude of not pretending to understand what she didn't. Therefore, Jun Xi Zhu would explain the said-matter to her in detail. And, Mo Qing Wu would nod her little head repeatedly...

The two women would feel a sense of accomplishment after Mo Qing Wu would grasp the meaning of the things that she didn't previously understand. And then, they would continue to carry out the discussion in depth...

Jun Lu Lu would also participate in the discussions on occasions. Various Jianghu facts, the circumstances of aristocratic clans, tangled and complicated relationship between all the clans, some rumors and anecdotes... they carried out discussions and assessment on a myriad of subjects.

It could be said that Mo Qing Wu had a special grasping ability! In addition, she had encountered a good mentor in Jun Xi Zhu since the woman had in-depth knowledge of worldly affairs. And, more and more things could be deduced from each discussion as a result.

As the saying goes — a good teacher must have a brilliant student. The teacher would feel depressed if only they are good, and the student wasn't brilliant-enough. But, if both are at par... then the teacher wouldn't feel depressed, and the student wouldn't feel tired. And, everything would seem full of enthusiasm to them.

These three women didn't feel the passage of time over the past few days, and time just went by. Jin Xi Zhu thought as they arrived, [how good it would've been... if I had a little sister or a daughter like her?]

Even Jun Lu lu had become somewhat jealous. [Elder Sister is so good towards this little girl. She would always beat me and scold me when I was young. But, she is unexpectedly so patient with this little girl ever since she has met her. And, she isn't being artificial either...]

An invisible falcon came flying. The sound of flapping wings sounded outside the curtain of the carriage.

Jun Xi Zhu held out her hand, and grabbed the invisible falcon. She seized the message, and read it. And, she couldn't help but sighed in surprise...

"What happened?" Jun Lu Lu asked.

"The compensation rate of Ji Mo didn’t drop. Instead, it went up. And unexpectedly ... this has happened because..." Jin Xi Zhu slowly clenched that slip of paper in her hand. After that, she looked towards Mo Qing Wu, "...the person you’ve been waiting for has arrived!"

"The person I’ve been waiting for... has arrived?" Mo Qing Wu was startled. She carefully thought for a moment. Suddenly, her entire body shook. She jumped up, and her little head bumped into the ceiling of the carriage. It issued a ‘bang’ sound. Then, she fell down. But, she paid no attention to the pain as she shouted in joy, "Elder Brother Chu Yang has arrived?"

Jun Xi Zhu sighed and nodded.

"Yay! Wonderful! Wow! I want to see Elder Brother Chu Yang!" Mo Qing Wu’s began to dance in joy. She wreaked havoc in this small carriage until the dizziness took over. Then, she sat down at once. She sat for quite a while in a daze. Then, her small mouth slowly became flat in sadness, and her eyes slowly turned red. Suddenly, she threw herself on the floor, and burst into tears. Apparently, whatever grievance she had suffered in the past one year had been unburdened from her chest in this moment!

"Elder Brother Chu Yang... you have finally come, boohoo..." Mo Qing Wu cried in grief. Her mind had become inexplicably relaxed all of a sudden. It seemed that she was pressed under a burden as heavy as a mountain before... but, this burden had disappeared without a trace in this moment.

"Hey, why are you crying right now?" Jun Lu Lu smiled and consoled her, "You won’t be able to cry when you would see your Elder Brother Chu Yang!"

"I want to cry right now." Mo Qing Wu replied while she sobbed, "Elder Brother Chu Yang doesn’t like when someone cries. I only want to smile at Elder Brother Chu Yang when I see him. He would

feel unpleasant in his heart if I cried."

"I will cry my heart out now itself. And, I wouldn't need to cry when I see Elder Brother Chu Yang in that case, boohoo..." Mo Qing Wu said as she wiped her tears.

Jun Xi Zhu sighed in her heart. These were the words of a child, but they contained deep feelings. How could she not heed?

"However, you must be prepared, Little Wu. Your Elder Brother Chu Yang may not be able to protect you," Jun Xi Zhu spoke in a soft voice.

"No! Elder Brother Chu Yang will protect me!" Mo Qing Wu replied with confidence.

"He may want to protect you... but, he might not have that kind of strength, ah." Jun Xi Zhu tried to convince this stubborn little girl.

"Elder Brother Chu Yang will find a way!" Mo Qing Wu had a confident look on her face, "The people of the entire world may not be able to find a way, but Elder Brother Chu Yang will always find a way! I'm sure of it!"

She tightly clenched her small fist to express the incredible confidence her heart had on Chu Yang!

Jun Xi Zhu sighed. She silently raised her head, but she didn't speak anything. [I will let this little girl hit the wall. Then, I will let her Elder Brother Chu Yang suffer a little setback. Otherwise... she wouldn't realize that she is truly the safest when she's here with me...]

The carriage sped along the road. But, Mo Qing Wu's heart had already floated away from this place. It had already flown to Mt. Dingjun. She lifted the curtain of the carriage after a while, and peeked outside. She pouted her little mouth and complained, "Why are we going so slowly? Elder Brother Chu Yang must be getting worried..."

She again lifted the curtain after a while, and looked outside, "How come we still haven’t arrived... what I would do if Elder Brother Chu Yang left?"

She waited for a moment to catch her breath. Then, she lifted it open again, "Too slow! Too slow! Too slow, ah, ah! When will we arrive, ah..."

Jun Lu Lu’s face became sullen.

[You have already peeked out three times and complained that it is too slow in a time frame of gasping for breath... This is a carriage you know... it can’t fly...]

Mo Qing Wu had never been this lively before. She had cried so much. But, her tear-stained face exuded the beauty of raindrops on a pear blossom. There was also excitement on her face. She would raise her little face time and again, and would take a look outside. However, she suddenly recalled something important after she had done this dozens of times in quick succession. And, she became nervous immediately-after...

"Elder Sister Ah Lu..." Mo Qing Wu pulled the sleeves of Jun Lu Lu with her little hand and showed her cute smiling face, "Please, you have to do one thing for me... you must promise..."

"What?" Jun Lu Lu vigilantly looked at her.

"Do you have a mirror? And... a comb? And, also that... Do I look ugly right now? My face isn’t dirty, right? And, and... do you have clothes? Pretty ones... the prettier the better..." Mo Qing Wu pleaded earnestly.

"No." Jun Lu Lu lowered her face to hold back her laughter.

Mo Qing Wu immediately abandoned her worn-out shoes. She then turned around and went up to Jun Xi Zhu. And, she made a flattering face, "Sister Xi Zhu... he he... you’re very beautiful. You seem only two or three years older than me... do you have a mirror, a comb, and pretty clothes?"

Jun Xi Zhu nearly fainted. [Two or three years older than you? Do I look like a cute little girl to you?]

"No." Jun Xi Zhu glared at her.

"This is bad... Oh no! Oh no! Oh no..." Mo Qing Wu got anxious. Her small face twisted, and got wrinkled. Her small nose also got creased. After that, a bitter look appeared on her face, "What should I do? What should I do? I look ugly right now, very ugly... Elder Brother Chu Yang says that he likes neat and clean girls..."

She tried to tidy herself in a flustered manner. However, the more she tidied herself... the more she felt dissatisfied. After that, she stood helplessly since she didn't know what to do. And, her face became rather pitiful to look at...

Jun Lu Lu and her elder sister exclaimed in unison, [This little girl has been poisoned! In fact, this poison isn't a mild one either...]

The two sisters couldn't help but despise Chu Yang. [What kind of magic potion has this bastard poured into this little girl? He has ruined this little girl...]

"Fortunately, she's still very young..." Jin Xi Zhu took a deep sigh, "I'm afraid this Elder Brother Chu Yang would've only needed to causally speak 'follow me' if she were a few years older... and this naïve little girl would've eloped with him without the slightest hesitation... it's really dreadful."

Jun Lu Lu nodded since she had the same feeling deep down. It seemed like both sisters could read each other's thoughts. Then, they began to teach some womanly-tricks to Mo Qing Wu. A girl must always act reserved... A girl should not take the initiative, and so on...

Mo Qing Wu absent-mindedly listened to them. She just replied with an 'oh' from time to time. After that, her eyes began to look all over the place in anxiety... [What should I do to dress up and

look pretty? I am so dirty right now. What would I do if Elder Brother Chu Yang saw me like this and didn't like me?]

[It's really awful! I would've brought many pretty clothes from home if I had known that Elder Brother Chu Yang would be here too. I'm done for... boohoo boohoo...]

Jun Lu Lu had vigorously promoted the so-called tricks of being a 'virtuous lady' a moment ago. But, she saw that this little girl had started to cry all of a sudden, and she couldn't help but choke up.

"What should I do, boohoo ... What would I do if Elder Brother Chu Yang didn't like me...?" Mo Qing Wu cried in grief.

"Here, I have a mirror and a comb..." Jun Lu Lu felt sad in her heart when she saw her crying. So, she had no other choice but to surrender, "I was just fooling you, he he."

Mo Qing Wu received the items. Unexpectedly, she looked at herself from all angles. The more she looked at herself in the mirror... the more she felt sad in her heart. Her eyes again became red as a result. And, more and more tears fell down in despair as her crying became more intense, "As expected... I look very ugly, boohoo..."

Jun Lu Lu felt helpless because she couldn't do anything about it. She looked at her elder sister with a pleading look. [We have no choice... we have encountered such an emotional and saintly little girl...]

"Well, there is a solution. So, you can dress and look pretty," Jun Xi Zhu spoke-up in a calm tone, "But, your eyes would swell and look like peach if you cry again. And, you wouldn't look good even if you dress up nicely after that happens. Then, your Elder Brother Chu Yang will never like you."

The impact of this sentence was very powerful. In fact, it was amazing. Mo Qing Wu immediately stopped crying. She twitched her nose and spoke, "I won't cry."

"But... how will I dress up?" The radiance of hope glittered in Mo Qing Wu’s eyes.

"If I remember correctly... there is a small market ahead. It’s not too far away from here..." Jun Xi Zhu blinked and replied, "You can wash your face there, and you can take a bath too... So, bathe there, and clean yourself properly. You can spray perfume and get dressed up as well. Then, you will look elegant and pretty... in addition, you also needn’t worry that your Elder Brother Chu Yang might go away... he’s here to snatch a wife for your Elder Brother Ji Mo. So, he won’t leave without snatching the wife. Therefore, you have a lot of time."

"Really?!" Mo Qing Wu’s little face started to shine, "I can wash my face? I can take a bath? I can buy pretty clothes?"

Jun Xi Zhu nodded her head in affirmation.

Mo Qing Wu immediately felt relieved. And, her face started to beam with joy. But, her complexion became suspicious soon after. She nervously asked, "Has he really come to snatch a wife for Elder Brother Ji Mo? And... not to snatch wife for himself...? Are you sure of that...?"

Jun Xi Zhu and Jun Lu Lu became speechless. They simply stared at her, and were unable to respond...

Chapter 474: King of Hell Chu Participates in Gambling

There had already been chaos on Mt. Dingjun because this competition. So, the matter of the Meng Clan spread as fast as a gust of wind!

At last, Meng Luo made a prompt decision, and rushed down the mountain with the experts of his clan. He returned to his clan that very night, and started to prepare for the countermeasures to deal with this mess. He had been gritting his teeth in anger along the whole journey, and had cursed without showing any signs of stopping!

"Chu Yang! Ji Mo! Luo Ke Di! Dong Wu Shang! You're good. You all have done it! I will remember you all!" Meng Luo clenched his teeth, "You guys have ruined a big event of my life. I won't rest until I kill you all!"

He thought about Luo Ke Di and Chu Yang in particular. These two were like big villains to him. One of them was an unreasonable robber. And, the other one was sinister...

...

On Mt. Dingjun...

The gambling house was becoming increasingly bustling and lively.

The beating sounds of gongs and drums would echo for a while. And then, they would echo again after a moment!

"Attention! Attention! Young Master Gao – Gao Sheng — has arrived. Young Master Gao's cultivation has reached to the peak of the Second Grade King level. And, he is accompanied by ten King Level experts of the Gao Clan."

"Attention! Attention! Young Master Li Xiong Tu of the Li Clan

has arrived! Young Master Li Xiong Tu is now the primary successor of the Li Clan! He has come to represent the Li clan, and is in full support of Young Master Gao Sheng!"

"Attention! Attention! Young Master Tu Qian Hao of the Tu Clan has also arrived. Young Master Tu is at the peak of Second Grade King Level. His chances of winning in this battle are very high. In addition, Young Master Tu has revealed that he would make a high-ranking King Level expert of the Tu clan participate in this battle..."

"Attention! Attention..."

...

Chu Yang didn't know where to begin with. And, he saw that more and more gamblers came to participate along with the sounds of beating of gongs and drums. There was a huge crowd. He couldn't help but become flabbergasted.

"Is this gambling? I give up... it's like the entire population of a country is gambling!" Chu Yang was startled when he saw that many Ninth Grade King level experts were also waving their silver notes to participate.

"This is normal." Dong Wu Shang remained calm and replied, "Let's just say that we struggle through our whole lives in the Middle Three Heavens. But, for what...? First — for authority; Second — for strength; And, Third — for influence. But, you must have some financial resources to have these!

"We all are always ready with our belts buckled-up to go out and look for rare drug ingredients, or do some business, or risk our lives to kill spirit beasts. But, our superficial knowledge doesn't allow us to use the fur and the inner core of spirit beasts. So, we exchange them for money. We do it to support our everyday requirements and our daily expenses. Or else, we go and rob others. And, that money is usually stained with blood, and earned by putting our lives in danger.

"But, gambling is different. You only need to use your head and gamble, and you may earn several thousand... or maybe ten-thousand taels. But, you can change ten-thousand taels into twenty-thousand taels without using even a bit of your strength if you have a good luck! And, you can even turn it into forty thousand taels. You tell... isn't it safer? Isn't it quicker?"

Dong Wu Shang sighed, "Therefore, the people of the Middle Three Heavens are very fond of gambling. Moreover, the people of four major clans are the bankers in the gambling house in this instance. So, there is no chance of mishaps; it's absolutely safe! So, how can one not take advantage of the opportunity and try one's luck?"

Chu Yang snorted and said, "But, what if one has bad luck?"

"You might as well go out and continue to try your best to earn money if you have a bad luck. Keep earning until you die. It doesn't matter if the worse comes to worst," Dong Wu Shang casually replied, "This is the type of environment here. The so-called 'fairness and truth' don't exist in the Middle Three Heavens. The so-called 'mercy and forgiveness' is even more nonsensical. As for what is 'justice and evil'... it is just an illusion here."

"Tu Qian Hao and Li Xiong Tu have also come to bet," Dong Wu Shang glanced over to the gambling party, and spoke in disdain, "These two are absolutely disgraceful! I will fight against Tu Qian Hao this time. Big Brother, you tell... how would it be if I slaughter Tu Qian Huo?"

Chu yang jumped in surprise, "Slaughter?"

[He is one of the twelve influential figures of the upcoming future. And, Dong Wu Shang wants to slaughter him?]

"Tu Qian Hao has showed up for Gu Du Xing! But, Second Brother Gu Du Xing got injured some time ago... It didn't have much impact on his strength, but his chances of winning are quite low in front of Tu Qian Hao. This is also the reason that the chances of Ji

Mo’s victory are so low."

Dong Wu Shang continued with a cold expression in his eyes, "It clearly shows that Tu Qian Hao wants to take advantage of other’s difficulties! He wants to take advantage of Second Brother Gu’s injuries, and wants to defeat him in one fell swoop. He wants to do this so that he can establish his supremacy! But, he’s dreaming. I – Dong Wu Shang — have despised such men for my entire life. Therefore, I want to exchange opponents with Second Brother Gu and slaughter this opportunistic bastard with my saber!"

"Du Xing is injured?" Chu Yang frowned and looked pensive as he said.

"Moreover, this competition is among two juniors of the participating clans. For instance, Ji Mo and Ji Zhu from Ji Clan... My clan has me and my elder brother, and the Luo Clan has Luo Ke Wu and Luo Ke Di. This is a competition between the juniors of aristocratic clans. But, Tu Qian Hao has unexpectedly brought along a senior King Level expert of his clan... this is such a wretched act!" Dong Wu Shang clenched his teeth.

"What would be the consequences if you kill Tu Qian Hao?" Chu Yang pondered and asked.

"The people of the Tu Clan wouldn’t leave the matter at that," Dong Wu Shang’s expression became cold, "They would continue to pursue for revenge to no end."

"What if the Tu clan also gets exterminated?" Chu Yang tilted his head and thought for a while. He then said, "This looks like a good way to get rid of the Tu Clan!"

Dong Wu Shang became shocked. And, he opened his mouth wide.

He had only said that he wanted to slaughter Tu Qian Hao, but he hadn’t thought that his Big Brother would unexpectedly suggest eliminating the entire Tu clan! The Tu Clan wasn’t inferior to a big

clan like the Dong Clan!

[Elder Brother is crazier than me. He is too crazy...]

"I presume Li Xiong Tu should be easier to deal with than Tu Qian Hao," Chu Yang said indifferently.

"But, Li Xiong Tu is a brave man. He wants to deal with me. He has so much free time on his hands!" Dong Wu Shang snorted. He then continued in disdain: "Second Brother Gao may be injured, but he can handle Li Xiong Tu very easily! Moreover, this man is a stupid martial artist. So, there would be no danger to Second Brother Gu's life even if gets defeated or gets injured in their match."

At this moment, a few men came over in a group, "Ha ha, I was just tell the others that you are nowhere to be seen. So, you were hiding here the entire time."

Dong Wu Shang maintained the calm look on his face as he slanted his eyes and stood up. And, he replied in a vague manner, "So, it's the big bosses. Why are the four of you not collecting money but looking for me instead?"

These were the four bankers of the gambling house — Ao Xie Yun, Mo Tian Yun, Ou Du Xiao, and Xie Dan Qiong.

The four of them had smiles across their faces. Only Mo Tian Wu had a somewhat gloomy color on his face. He had already received the letter from Dark Bamboo. So, he felt extremely sullen in his heart.

20 million taels wasn't a small amount. Mo Tian Yun could produce this ransom amount, but he would still suffer a major financial setback. And, it would inevitably become difficult to escape from financial issues thereafter. But, the news about it would spread out if he didn't produce the ransom amount. And, people would say that he didn't rescue his younger sister. And, that would be a big blow to his reputation.

Therefore, he had already handed over 20 million taels. And, his heart was aching endlessly because of it. How could he possibly be happy?

"We have assembled here to have some fun; that's all." Ao Xie Yun smiled elegantly. He looked at Chu Yang, "This is...?" He had seen Chu Yang several times, but Chu Yang had changed his appearance at those times.

"I'm Chu Yang," Chu Yang smiled, "This must be Young Master Xie — the man whose name shakes the entire Middle Three Heavens, am I right?"

Ao Xie Yun laughed heartily, "Don't speak like that. It makes me feel like I'm an evil person or a treacherous villain when you say it like that. Besides... King of Hell Chu – the man who flipped the entire Lower Three Heavens upside down with his power is praising me... I would have my life shortened."

Chu Yang faintly smiled, "Young Master Xie is very well-informed. In addition, his vision is also very keen. That's quite admirable."

He had only heard 'Chu Yang'. But, these two words were enough for him to figure that this Chu Yang was the King of Hell Chu in reality. He wouldn't have dared to speak this sentence if he didn't have a strong vision since he might have made a fool out of himself. And, Ao Xie Yun would've become the butt of everyone's joke if that had come to happen.

Ao Xie Yun replied with a smile, "Is that so? My vision is pretty good... but I don't know how strong Elder Brother Chu's vision is?" he jokingly looked towards Chu Yang and said, "These three on my side are very famous people."

The meaning was very simple. [Can you recognize the identity of each by merely looking at them?]

Chu Yang smiled and said, "This one is a graceful, and handsome

man. In addition, he is kind of free-spirited, quick-witted, spotless, and pure. He is presumably Young Master Xie – Xie Dan Qiong or Jasper Flower? This one is calm and confident. He looks graceful. I presume he is Brother Mo – Mo Tian Yun? And, this one in black clothes... his complexion is grave and stern. So, he must be the well-known 'poisonous spirit' of the Middle Three Heavens – Brother Ou – Ou Du Xiao, right?"

Chu Yang had spoken insipidly. However, he had unknowingly squinted when he had spoken about Mo Tian Yun. He felt a kind of irresistible desire to get rid of this guy! Suddenly, a mysterious light flashed in his eyes, and a good idea popped up in his mind...

"Elder Brother Chu has a very sharp vision!" Ao Xie Yun clapped while laughing. Mo Tian Yun and the other two men also exposed some expression of shock. They hadn't anticipated that this King of Hell Chu would tell the names of the three people right.

Chu Yang restrained his smile and thought, [Nonsense! I have met you people before! So, it would have been strange if I couldn't tell your names!]

"The four of you are going to make a lot of money, ah! This gambling joint is so big. You all are definitely going to make a huge profit regardless of who loses or wins." Chu Yang smiled since his idea was to shove these four bankers towards the topic of gambling.

"This is also a helpless risk, ah." Ao Xie Yun smiled wryly. Then, he pointed his head towards Dong Wu Shang, "Elder Brother Wu Shang will easily win from Ji Mo's side. This has already been taken into account. And, the Wolf Sword King also has a sixty percent chance of winning. Ji Mo's chance is somewhat inferior in the competition between Ji Mo and Gao Sheng. But, the battle would be very thrilling nonetheless. However, no predictions could be done on Dong Wu Lei's fight. Also, a person like Ji Zhu is hard to see through. Luo Ke Wu should make the team lose a point. But, this gang would still be undefeated if an overall calculation is

done. The key factor would be Brother Gu Du Xing because he is injured. In addition, I have heard that the injury is quite serious. Therefore, everyone's betting their precious money on the basis of this factor.

"But, the problem is... the gambling house needs both the sides to be evenly matched in strength. The current situation is that there is too much betting on Gao Sheng's victory. The rate of compensation on Gao Sheng's win has been adjusted to seven to one, but more and more people are still betting on his win. The compensation of betting on Ji Mo's victory is one to six at the moment. But, this still isn't enough... I'm afraid the gambling house won't earn any money if strong funds wouldn't be poured into it."

Ao Xie Yun sighed.

"You can rest assured about this. Brother Ao, I have known Ji Mo for a long time. In any case, I must do something to strengthen Ji Mo's strong impression. Moreover, there's a compensation rate of one to six on his victory. So, I would certainly like to bet some money too." Chu Yang spoke with a radiant smile.

"Thanks a lot, Brother Chu," Ao Xie Yun also smiled. Meanwhile, Mo Tian Yun and the others thought... [How much can you bet on your own, huh? Wouldn't it be like a drop of water in a bucket? It won't do any good!]

Ou Du Xiao spoke-up in a hoarse voice, "How much does Brother Chu wish to bet?"

Chapter 475: I'll Make You go Bankrupt!

"Ahm ahm... I don't have much money. I'm just a poor man. This is all I can come up with for the bet," Chu Yang touched his nose. Then, he took out a large stack of golden notes from his bosom and said, "Just these, okay? This should be enough to have some fun. The ancients have said some wise words. Betting small is quite joyful. You'd be cheerful if you win, and you'd still be happy if you lose!"

Ou Du Xiao received the stack of notes, and began to count one by one in order to calculate the total value. His complexion became increasingly surprised as he proceeded. Afterwards, he did the mental arithmetic until he had counted the last note. And, he suddenly cried out in surprise, "Three-million golden taels?!"

The shock dawned upon him as he shouted this number. And, he stood there with a blank expression on his face.

One golden tael was equivalent to one-hundred silver taels. So, 3 million golden taels were equal to 300 million silver taels! It was hard to imagine that Chu Yang was daring enough to place a bet of 300 million silvers!

The compensation rate was 'one is to six' at the moment! Therefore, the four bankers would have to compensate a sum of 1.8 billion if Ji Mo were to win!

Chu Yang had robbed this money from the Great Zhao Palace. Anyway, the silver and the golden notes were interchangeable in this world. So, Chu Yang had taken them out to gamble.

[300 million?!] Ao Xie Yun and the others turned pale in shock. They immediately gathered around Ou Du Xiao, and looked at the golden notes. After that, they looked towards Chu Yang with a look of astonishment.

Chu Yang spoke with a modest smile, "Eh, it is just a small bet to

have some fun. It’s just to make some pocket money."

The four Young Masters looked at King of Hell Chu as if they were looking at some monster, [Just a small bet to have some fun? It’s just to earn some pocket money? Damn it! So, pocket money is given out in counts of ‘hundred-millions’ in your clan?]

Ao Xie Yun shook his head, and replied with a forced smile, "Just a small bet... Brother Chu, your way of handling business is indeed... but, Brother Chu, you may be an outsider but we aren’t. You may not know that Ji Mo’s chances of losing this battle are a bit on the higher side. So, a little consideration would be better before you bet."

A light flashed in Chu Yang’s eyes. He thought, [This Young Master Xie is a man who behaves with integrity. His words are pretty decent.] Chu Yang replied, "No need. I believe in Ji Mo. He will definitely win. He he, even if he doesn’t win... it is just three-million in gold. It’s a very small amount. It’s nothing. It’s no big deal," he looked towards Mo Tian Yun with a somewhat strange smile on his face as he spoke.

Mo Tian Yun was already in a bad mood. Chu Yang had taken out so many golden notes, and all four bankers were going to make a good profit if Chu Yang were to lose. However, Mo Tian Yun heard what Chu Yang had just spoken and had also seen that Chu Yang was looking at him with a scornful expression on his face. So, he couldn’t help but feel angry in his heart. He secretly thought, [Fu*k! Have I ever done something wrong to you? You are so polite to other people, but why are you looking at me like that? Do you have some grudge against me?]

Mo Tian Yun had guessed it right. Chu Yang did hold grudge against him. In fact, he had deep-rooted hatred towards him!

Mo Tian Yun became furious. He curled his lips and said, "Just a small bet... but, I wonder if Brother Chu would like to place a bigger bet! And, how big would it be if he does?"

Chu Yang smiled. The expressions in his eyes flickered. He thought, [I saw it coming. This Mo Tian Yun is very greedy as expected.] He squinted and looked towards Mo Tian Yun. Then, he spoke in a tit-for-tat manner, "Could it be that Brother Mo is saying this... because he wants have a ‘big bet’ with me?"

Mo Tian Yun had only attempted to mock Chu Yang. But, Chu Yang had turned the mockery into a challenge.

A deadlock was formed in-between them in these short exchanges!

Mo Tian Yun gently smiled. Then, he gently said, "Brother Chu Yang, we four brothers will surely play along with you if you wish to bet." A fierce and cold light flashed in his eyes. He thought, [how much money do you have? Take it all out. And, I will make you to lose the entirety of it! You won’t be able to recover from such a loss until you die!]

Chu Yang looked towards Ao Xie Yun and spoke, "Brother Ao and the other two brothers... What do you guys say?"

Ao Xie Yun smiled and said, "Brother Chu, one must always act according to one’s own capacity. One needn’t feel forced to do it."

Xie Dan Qiong smiled, "Brother Chu Yang, you should make a decision on your own."

Ou Du Xiao took a deep breath and said, "This will be a very big amount."

It was quite obvious. The three of them weren’t ready to offend Chu Yang even though they had victory in their hands.

Chu Yang smiled. But, he felt a little disappointed in his heart, [I shouldn’t drag these three people into this mess...]

Therefore, he profoundly looked towards Mo Tian Yun and said, "Brother Mo, it seems that the other brothers don’t want to bet."

Mo Tian Yun snorted and replied, "This being the case, does

Brother Chu dare to gamble with me?"

The expression in Chu Yang's eyes looked very dangerous as he squinted. He said, "How?" Ao Xie Yun was sensitive enough to feel that there was something wrong between Chu Yang and Mo Tian Yun. So, he couldn't help but glance suspiciously at the two men.

"I bet on Gao Sheng, and you bet on Ji Mo. One-to-one. Let's gamble! The compensation would be one-is-to-one. How much do you have? I will put forth the same amount!" Mo Tian Yun replied in a relaxed manner.

Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao exposed displeased expression on their faces. [Mo Tian Yun, you want to eat all the food alone? These are bad table-manners.]

"Alright!" Chu Yang again fished out a big pile of gold notes. This pile was much bigger and thicker than the one that he had taken out before. He slightly smiled and said, "I don't have much right now. This is all that I have. Its ten-million golden taels! Brother Mo, put forth if you have that much money. Let's gamble!"

The faces of the three men – Ao Xie Yun, Xie Dan Qiong, and Ou Du Xiao – twitched at the same time.

[10 million golden taels! 1 billion silver taels!]

[This money would become Mo Tian Yun's if he is be able to bet this much money and Ji Mo were to lose!]

[And, Mo Tian Yun would obviously go bankrupt if Ji Mo wins...]

Chu Yang hadn't taken out all the money before... because this amount was very big. And, the compensation was one is to six. Ao Xie Yun and the others were sure of the outcome too. But, they probably wouldn't have accepted if he had taken out all this money before. Instead, it would have brought the situation to deadlock. However, the compensation was one-to-one, and it only involved Mo Tian Yun. So, the other three men were somewhat jealous, but they were also taking joy in other's misfortune. So, it wasn't a

problem anymore.

Mo Tian Yun displayed a happy expression on his face. He was also rich, but his wealth couldn't be compared with the national treasury of Great Zhao at the time when it used to be the most flourishing and powerful nation!

He gasped for a few moments. He stared at the golden notes worth 10 million golden taels, and exposed a greedy look on his face.

[I would be able to recruit at least one-hundred King Level experts and three-thousand senior revered martial artists to work for me if I win this money. In addition, I would be able to have all kind of armors, weapons, and cavalry at my service. It would make me tremendously powerful!]

[But, I don't have that much money at the moment!]

[I don't even have one-tenth of it!] He had put most of his share into gambling. So, he could only put forward a maximum of 80 million silver taels at present. He had kept this money to be prepared as follow-up means to deal with any contingencies during gambling.

Mo Tian Yun thought for a long time. Then, he suddenly turned around, and resolutely looked towards Ao Xie Yun. He said, "Brother Ao, I want you to lend me some money."

Ao Xie Yun frowned!

[You fu*king wanted to trample us and keep everything to yourself a little while ago. And now, you have the nerve to turn around and borrow money? Fu*k! Do you feel no shame?]

Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao wrinkled their brows as well. [This Mo Tian Yun... is ready to do anything for this one billion. He's so shameless...]

Ao Xie Yun stared at Mo Tian Yun and replied, "Brother Mo... don't you think that it would be too impetuous if I lend you money

under such circumstances? What would our gambling house do if I lend you money? Moreover, wouldn't I end up being a foe of Brother Chu in light of this?"

Mo Tian Yun became tensed. However, Chu Yang spoke-up before Mo Tian Yun could say anything, "Ha ha... you want to borrow money? Very good! I don't care if I lose these ten-million golds as long as you're borrowing money! Because it is so shameful of you! Ha ha ha... borrow money? Ha ha, borrow money?"

Chu Yang's demeanor was very arrogant. This made Ao Xie Yun and the others frown!

Mo Tian Yun's face turned red. He said, "So what if you have a little more of this filthy money? You're just a wealthy landlord that has come from the Lower Three Heavens. Do you think that you would come to the Middle Three Heavens with a lot of money and would get to act like a boss?"

Chu Yang coldly snorted and replied, "You're right. It's just a little filthy money. But, you couldn't even come up with this 'little filthy money'. So, why are you being cocky in front of me?"

Mo Tian Yun snorted. His face turned rose-red in anger. He said loudly, "Brother Ao, my clan has a gold mine and I mortgage it to you as security in exchange for a loan of 500 million taels! Brother Ou and Brother Xie, my clan has two iron ore mines. I provide one to each of you as security in exchange for a loan of 200 million taels each! Here is the contract. Those mines would be yours if I lose. And, I will give two-hundred million to Brother Ao, and one-hundred million silver taels to each of Brother Ou and Brother Xie as interest if I win these one billion silver taels. What do you say!?"

Mo Tian Yun knew that these three might not agree to lend him money even if he would provide his family property as security of the loan. But, he knew that they would do it for some naked profits. For instance... they would do it for the share that he had offered them from 1 billion!

So, he made a prompt decision, and made a commitment.

"Alright!" the three of them agreed at the same time.

They were going to make a huge profit regardless of the outcome. The worth of the Mo Clan's gold mine and the two iron ore mines was far more than what Mo Tian Yun had asked for. Mo Tian Yun was taking a huge risk even though he was sure of the outcome!

He handed over three contract papers to Ao Xie Yun and the others. Then, Mo Tian Yun razed all over his own body for money. He borrowed a sum of nine-hundred million from them. He also put forth the 80 million that he had with him. And, he took out two purple crystals, three precious stones, and twelve jade pendants from his pockets. All of this was enough to be rounded up to 1 billion silver taels!

However, Mo Tian Yun would literally go bankrupt if he were to lose all of this!

He was also taking a one-stroke risk! And, he was sure that he would win! Because... Gu Du Xing was injured. And, he knew it so clearly because he was the one who had commanded some experts to ambush him!

[Gu Du Xing is seriously injured! He might not be able to gain his agility even if he had the next half a year's time. And, he has to fight a battle soon. This is going to be an easy win!]

Mo Tian Yun was absolutely sure of the outcome. So, why wouldn't he dare to bet?

Chu Yang looked at the things that had been placed before him. An expression of cruelty flashed through his eyes as he smiled. Then, he tenderly said, "Shall we gamble then?"

Mo Tian Yun snorted. He stared at Chu Yang like a hungry wolf. Then, he coldly replied, "No. We don't! Aren't we just joking around here?"

Chu Yang burst into laughter. He threw that stack of notes worth

ten-million golden taels on the ground... as if he was throwing trash. And, he spoke, "Who will notarize this?"

Everyone looked at each other in dismay, but no one dared to speak.

Ao Xie Yun and other bankers were already supporting Mo Tian Yun. So, it was natural that they would be considered biased. Therefore, they couldn’t be the notary. Dong Wu Shang was already on Chu Yang’s side. So, it was even more impossible for him to be the notary. The bet had already been set, but they couldn’t find anyone who could be the notary.

A mischievous laughter was heard at this moment, and a man leisurely said, "How about this Young Master be the notary if you guys are still looking for one?"

Everyone saw the silhouette of a tall man in black clothes before their eyes even before the voice got a chance to fade away. This silhouette quietly landed down on the ground. He was wearing a proud smile on his face. He stood in the middle of the field with his arms crossed. In fact, he had stepped on that stack of notes... as if he was stepping on trash. After that, he disdainfully looked at everyone with a grin.

He stood in front of five great Young Masters of the Middle Three Heavens. But, he still stood there arrogantly and majestically! It seemed as if they were nothing in his eyes!

Young Master Yu!

Unexpectedly, this person turned out to be a very frightening personality of the Middle Three Heavens!

Chapter 476: Tangled and Complicated

Ao Xie Yun and the other three simultaneously revealed a look of dread in their eyes, and said with a smile, "Having Young Master Yu as the guarantor is a million times more reassuring." However, their hearts were beating incessantly like a drum. [How did this terrifying guy appear here at this very moment? Didn't he leave after he had withdrawn from the gambling house?]

Young Master Yu burst into loud laughter and said, "I didn't know that my moral standing is so strong! Everyone has so much faith in me. This is a very big thing for me!"

Then, he tilted his head, and looked at Chu Yang. He put on a humble smile and said, "King of Hell Chu! Long time no see. I hope you have been well since our last meeting?"

He ignored the young masters, and greeted Chu Yang first instead. It seemed as if this King of Hell Chu – who had recently arrived from the Lower Three Heavens – held far more importance in his heart than these four young masters.

"This little brother naturally won't fall sick as long as Brother Yu is still in good health!" Chu Yang smiled back in a humble manner.

Young Master Yu burst into laughter.

A shocked expression appeared in the eyes of the four young masters at the same time. It was extremely astonishing to see that Chu Yang had addressed Young Master Yu in that way. Moreover, Young Master Yu didn't even lose his temper over it!

Everyone in the Middle Three Heavens knew that Young Master Yu was a typical weirdo! The members of the Dark Bamboo Organization called him 'Minister Yu', but the outsiders had no choice but to call him 'Young Master Yu'. They couldn't call him anything else since he was bound to get furious if someone dared to call him something else. In fact, calling him 'Grandmaster Yu'

wouldn’t work either. He would even chase the offender for thousands of miles to punish them for the crime of disrespecting him.

However, Chu Yang had courageously called him ‘Brother Yu’. And, this freak unexpectedly seemed to be in such a cheerful mood for some reason? How did that come about?

Young Master Yu continued to laugh for a while. Then, he said, "Ao Xie Yun, you know well that we Bamboo people never renege on a debt. Actually, Minister Jun has ordered me to bet some money two days later. However, I am taking up the role of a notary here. So, I am afraid you people will say that I’m trying to extract money from their bet on the side. So, I am giving you the gambling stakes in advance."

He took out a small package from his bosom after he said this, and tossed it over to Ao Xie Yun. Then, he said in a thick voice, "Dark Bamboo bets an amount of 500 million silvers on Ji Mo’s victory!"

He tilted his head, and added with a strange smile, "I heard a while ago. It seems the compensation rate on Ji Mo’s victory is 1-6, right? Wa ha ha ha... this is going to be so much fun... irrespective of victory or loss. Of course, we would make a huge profit if we won."

The complexions of Ao Xie Yun and the other three suddenly turned ugly. They looked like they had stepped on cow dung first. And then, they had fallen head-first into it with their mouth open, and had thus ended up eating the same cow dung they had stepped on...

This gambling house had been opened a month ahead of schedule. And, the total sum that had been betted on Gao Sheng’s victory was 500 million. In fact, this sum had reached 200-300 million in just two days after the gambling had started. And, this feat was quite incredible.

However, the collection made on Ji Mo’s victory was pathetic. And, these four people had been worried that their income might not cover the expenditure. Therefore, they had raised Ji Mo's compensation rate. However, they would never have expected that increasing the compensation rate at the gambling house would bring in no income. And, they obviously wouldn’t have imagined that they would suddenly end up receiving a huge sum of 800 million outside the gambling house!

Chu Yang’s 300 million had already put enough strain on the gambling house. Now, Dark Bamboo had suddenly pawned 500 million out of the blue!

This meant that these four big clans would have to compensate 4.8 billion in case Ji Mo won! They could perhaps earn around 1 billion here at the end of the day, but they would still have to arrange 3.8 billion more!

This was equivalent to 1 billion per clan!

This was an astronomical figure!

The Mo Clan would without a doubt get ruined if Gao Sheng lost. Moreover, Ao Clan, Xie Clan and Ou Clan might also get semi-destroyed!

The Ao Clan was quite strong and robust. So, it would only suffer an injury; nothing more. However, the other two clans would get semi-destroyed for sure!

This was indeed… a huge price.

Therefore, the repudiation of debt would be even more impossible if Ji Mo won! Who in the entire Middle Three Heavens would dare to renege on debt against people like Jun Xi Zhu and Young Master Yu? And, there was a chance that they might not go into a debt. But, there would still be a fear that Dark Bamboo might come to collect protection fees…

"What’s wrong? Don’t you want to accept my gambling stake?"

Young Master Yu complexion turned unsightly, "Isn't my money — money...?! Is it made of stone?"

"Young Master Yu... surely likes to joke. We would obvious accept any gambling stake regardless of their size since we have opened a gambling house," the four men laughed together and replied.

"Then, open the gambling list at once." Young Master Yu rubbed his hands and said, "Make the entry for King of Hell Chu along with mine. The two of us have to go quickly so that we can have a drink or two."

... ...

Ao Xie Yun and the other three couldn't help but frown as they saw Chu Yang and Young Master Yu swagger away with the gambling bill in their hands.

"This doesn't seem right. Why do I feel like we have fallen into a trap?" Ao Xie Yun frowned.

A serious look appeared on Ou Du Xiao's face as he said, "They placed their bets with so much confidence... what if it's Ji Mo who is going to win? 800 million all of a sudden, ah! And, that becomes a total of 1.8 billion if you add King of Hell Chu's 1 billion to that!"

Mo Tian Yun solemnly said, "Our current calculation looks fine. Gao Sheng and Gao Liang are going to enter the arena from Gao Sheng's side. The brothers Li Xiong Tu and Li Hong Tu are participating from the Li Clan. Tu Qian Hao and Tu Wan Cheng are participating from Tu Clan. The participation of Tu Wan Cheng is somewhat against the rules, but it's excusable since the Tu Clan doesn't have a second young master. Also, add one more individual to the previously mentioned Gao Clan's side, namely Gao Meng. These people are going to be participating from Gao Sheng's side in the seven matches."

Ao Xie Yun said, "On the other side, there's Ji Mo, Ji Zhu; Dong

Wu Shang, Dong Wu Lei; Luo Ke Di, Luo Ke Wu, and Gu Du Xing."

"Gu Du Xing is severely injured. So, he is bound to lose in his match. Ji Mo's he has no chance of victory in his match against Gao Sheng. He's going to lose without a doubt! And, it doesn't matter who Luo Ke Wu fights since he's definitely going to lose! So, it's as good as saying that Ji Mo is already doomed to lose these three matches. Also, Tu Wan Cheng is a top King Level expert from the previous generation. He is going to win no matter whom he fights. This is equivalent to saying that Gao Sheng will win four matches with ease. Li Xiong Tu can also win a match... However, there are only two people who have sure chances of winning on Ji Mo's side. It's Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di. But, Luo Ke Di's victory will depend on who his opponent will be."

Ao Xie Yun was crouching, and drawing a match-chart on the ground. He shook his head again and again, and said in a puzzled manner, "No matter how we look at it... Ji Mo is going to lose."

The look on Xie Dan Qiong's face got serious as he said, "There has to be something that we aren't taking into our calculation! King of Hell Chu and Dark Bamboo wouldn't waste their money together. King of Hell Chu had reluctantly said that it's for the purpose of Ji Mo's publicity, but Dark Bamboo has no reason to stick its leg into this."

Ao Xie Yun stood-up quietly, and started to contemplate. Then, he abruptly said in a slow tone, "I don't want to be a part of such a thing again once this is over — irrespective of profit or loss. In addition, I won't be there at any place that Mo Tian Yun manages to reach first. And, you'd better leave if I am at someplace!"

Mo Tian Yun was startled. He sneered and asked, "Why? Do you feel implicated by me now? But, why didn't you say that earlier when you were thinking of making money? Moreover, why are you so certain that we are going to lose this time?"

Ao Xie Yun didn't speak. He just looked at Mo Tian Yun coldly.

Then, he turned around, and went seven or eight steps away. He stopped and spoke without turning his head, "This isn’t about victory or loss. It’s just that being with you in the same place makes me feel very uncomfortable."

Then, he walked away. He was unexpectedly walking in a very relaxed manner.

Xie Dan Qiong sighed, and looked towards Ou Du Xiao. The two of them exchanged glances, and Xie Dan Qiong said, "Brother Mo, there’s nothing we can do now. The gambling stakes have already been received. We can only wait for the final outcome now."

Mo Tian Yun’s face darkened. He slowly stood up and said, "I will go and inform Gao Sheng that he may have 10% of the gambling profits as long as he wins this time! We three will contribute to arrange this 10%. What do you guys say?"

Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao got stunned by this. They looked at Mo Tian Yun in astonishment. Xie Dan Qiong pondered for a long time, and said, "I don’t approve of this as an individual. But, I have to think of my clan’s sake. So, I have no choice but to approve. However, you must do it very carefully. Keep it an absolute secret."

Mo Tian Yun nodded his head. Then, he turned around and left.

The remaining two men smiled bitterly. Xie Dan Qiong asked, "Du Xiao, what do you think?"

Ou Du Xiao pondered, and then replied, "We won’t have bright future prospects even if we win like this. This is making me very uncomfortable."

Xie Dan Qiong sighed gently and said, "How about this... if we win..."

Ou Du Xiao had seemingly read the look in his eyes and said, "...we share the profits equally with Ji Mo and the others?"

"No! It will hurt his pride even more if you give him money. And,

he will definitely end up becoming a life-long enemy if you do that," Xie Dan Qiong solemnly explained, "How about this... we owe him a favor if we win. And then, we find a chance to help him out. What do you think?"

Ou Du Xiao's eyes lit up as he replied, "Great idea!"

The people of Jianghu have gratitude and grudges; they have graciousness and complaints. That's how Jianghu people are. The decision of Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao was the appropriate diplomatic policy that all large and influential clans appointed. [I can't offend you for the fear that you and I will end up in a life and death struggle... nor will I deliberately get close to you for the fear that it might make other people suspicious or jealous.]

[I have every reason to lean on you to rise up if you are strong. But, it's natural that I'll follow everyone else to trample you if you are in dire straits...]

This was the unspoken rule of the Middle Three Heavens!

Xie Dan Qiong nodded and said, "We have to go and eliminate the Ninth Level Spirit Beasts after this gamble. But, the Middle Three Heavens is getting more and more chaotic. It has almost reached its most chaotic phase. People will inevitably have to unite. Perhaps, the big clans will once again return to living together in harmony after this chaos gets washed off..."

Ou Du Xiao sighed as well, "Wasn't this our real purpose behind this time's gambling? But, who would have thought that it would become so big? We only wanted to gather a portion of everyone's wealth so that we could use the gathered resources to expand our power and influence. But, this gambling thing has grown so big that even our clans might get implicated by it..."

Xie Dan Qiong feebly spoke, "The two of us will become very weak if Gao Sheng lost. Then, we will be forced to avoid the world. We will have to return to our clans immediately after we have dealt with the Ninth Level Spirit Beasts, and we would have to do

our best to preserve the accomplishments of our ancestors... until our influence reappears."

Ou Du Xiao knitted his brows, "I'm afraid we won't be able to avoid the world even if we want to. Don't forget that the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master has constantly been lurking in the shadows.

Xie Dan Qiong suddenly got startled for a moment. He then sighed.

Both of them sighed, and then walked away.

... ...

"This bet of 500 million is a gift for you! It's a big gift. Minister Jun has said that it belongs to Minister Chu's brothers as long as they can seize it!" Young Master Yu said slowly as they walked.

"It is a huge favor!" Chu Yang was silent for a long time. Then, a smile appeared on his face, "This Minister Jun of yours is truly courageous!"

... ...

Chapter 477: Do Such Brothers Really Exist?

Young Master Yu looked at Chu Yang with a profound smiling expression in his eyes and said, "Let's go to my place and chat there."

Young Master Yu made arrangements of food and wine in his residence. He was drinking together with Dong Wu Shang, and Chu Yang.

Dong Wu Shang had already heard the ominous name of Young Master Yu. But, this was the first time that he had met the monster in reality. However, he was very calm and collected. He was neither servile, nor overbearing. And, he had maintained his natural character in front of Young Master Yu.

Young Master Yu rather deliberately looked at Dong Wu Shang several times. Then, he looked at Chu Yang and said, "I have seen these brothers of yours. I must say that you have a keen vision. You have made some pretty good friends."

He laughed and added further, "The ones with the greatest potential among them are... the one in front of my eyes, and that boy from the Gu Clan. But, the other three are also rare geniuses!"

It could be said that Young Master Yu was an extremely influential person in the entire Middle Three Heavens. And, he had spoken these words. So, it was evident that he was giving importance to these brothers of Chu Yang!

Chu Yang remained silent. But, he displayed a proud look in his eyes. Then, he deliberately lowered his head to hide this prideful look in his eyes.

[My brothers are my pride!]

Dong Wu Shang felt a warm feeling in his heart. He had accompanied these two individuals here to drink. So, it was natural that he was secretly paying attention to everything. He

could clearly see the proud look in Chu Yang's eyes... no matter how much he tried to hide it.

He suddenly felt like bursting into tears!

[Who will be proud of me...? My father and my mother... that's for sure.]

[But, I am seeing the same proud look in the eyes of someone apart from my parents for the first time. And yet, he's trying to hide it...]

[My own elder brother is also proud of me. He always has pride in his eyes whenever I achieve something big. But, his eyes also have fear along with pride. And, that is very complicated.]

Dong Wu Shang knew what his elder brother was worried about. But, he didn't wish to reveal it. [I don't want the position of the Clan Lord. It doesn't matter whether he suspects me or not. He's my elder brother, and I will assist him nevertheless. Because... I am surnamed Dong!]

[He ought to have these kinds of cautionary thoughts as a Clan Lord. Otherwise, he won't make a good Clan Lord.] Dong Wu Shang understood this well. But, this understanding wasn't enough to make him feel any better in his heart! After all, his own brother was suspicious and jealous of him. Who would feel good in this situation? Especially someone like him... who was whole-heartedly devoted...

Dong Wu Shag looked at Chu Yang. He then lowered his head, and didn't speak anything. His hair hung down on his forehead, and covered his eyes. Then, he raised his neck, and drank this precious feeling of brotherhood along with the wine and rinsed his heart!

He felt that his heart was burning.

"You have these many brothers. Moreover, such fine brothers! So, it's only natural that you wouldn't wish to remain a loner."

Young Master Yu said, "So, you must need your own place since you have already arrived in the Middle Three Heavens. But, you're King of Hell Chu and you wouldn't want to work under anyone, correct? No one can retain you... no matter if it is the clans of your brothers... or the Dark Bamboo, right?"

"Yes." Chu Yang straightforwardly admitted.

"So, you're using this gambling so that you can change the balance of power in the Middle Three Heavens! It would easily allow you to take advantage of the ongoing crisis for your personal gain." Young Master Yu narrowed his eyes, and stared at Chu Yang with a sharp light in his eyes, "Sometimes this Young Master genuinely doesn't understand. How are you always able to make such perfect use of every opportunity?"

Chu Yang smiled, "Isn't the Dark Bamboo using this gambling to cause chaos in the Middle Three Heavens? Wouldn't this allow your Bamboo clan to sow a seed for expansion into new territory later? These 500 million taels are a very big favor, but you're going to reap a lot more benefits than that... irrespective of whether I accept it or not... and also irrespective of what the outcome of the gambling would be, aren't you?"

Young Master Yu looked at him for a while. Then, he suddenly laughed, "King of Hell Chu, you're genuinely worthy of your name."

"Besides, Gao Clan has deliberately blown it out of proportion. Do you genuinely believe that all of this is just for fighting over a wife? Everyone knows that Gao Sheng doesn't even like Huyan!"

Chu Yang coldly smiled, "Four Young Masters of Ao Clan, Mo Clan, Xie Clan, and Ou Clan are operating this gambling. Do you genuinely believe that they are doing this just for money? All the big clans are participating in this contest. Do you think that it is just to help these two men snatch the wife?"

"Everyone in the Middle Three Heaven has their own plans." Chu

Yang added, "The bloody carnage, and unification of the Middle Three Heavens has already begun. My presence in the Middle Three Heavens and the existence of the Dark Bamboo clan has nothing to do with it."

"But, it's impossible for the Dark Bamboo to do with the unification of the Middle Three Heavens!" Young Master Yu held his wine cup, and replied in a sinking voice.

"Of course, that's because you're the underworld. The influential clans of the Middle Three Heavens will continuously protest against you if the unification were to done by you. Those who claim to be righteous will constantly resist you... so much so that your gains won't be able to make up for your losses." Chu Yang sneered.

"You're right. So, we need someone to do the unification for us," Young master Yu laughed heartily.

"But, aren't you Dark Bamboo people already aware of this notion?" Chu Yang profoundly smiled, "You know that I know this affair already. So, there's no need to tell me."

Dong Wu Shang was listening to all this. He didn't speak anything, but huge waves were raging in his heart!

[Perhaps, this is how decision-makers think, right? I'm afraid I can never do this kind of planning in my whole life...]

"I only want to ask you one thing about this gambling matter!" Young Master Yu stared at Chu Yang, "Do you want to get hold of the Ao, Mo, Xie, and Du clans with the help of this gambling? Do you wish to manipulate them for your own use later?"

Dong Wu Shag became gob-smacked as soon as this sentence was spoken!

[Big Brother has such big ambitions? How will this gambling proceed without the financial resources of these four clans?]

Chu Yang merely smiled, and did not say anything.

"I see. So, you will certainly make some moves later on. To tell you the truth... I am eagerly looking forward to your move!" Young Master Yu laughed out loud. Then, he pointed his finger at Dong Wu Shang and said, "These brothers of yours must be your helpers. Or should I say... your hired thugs!"

This sentence clearly had a poking meaning to it... regardless of whether if it was just a joke... or had some special intention behind it.

Anger dawned upon the entire face of Dong Wu Shang the moment this was said. He pounded the table, and stood up. But, Chu Yang held him down, and stopped him!

Chu Yang chuckled and replied, "My brothers are obviously my hired thugs as well as my helpers — just as I am my brothers' hired thug as well as helper!"

He gently smiled, "We brothers don't get together to drink or play around with women! We will do something since we are together now! Look at these brothers of mine. Does any one of them look ordinary to you?"

Young Master Yu laughed.

"Ten-thousand silver taels can allow a person to live a comfortable life for a lifetime. He wouldn't need to do anything for his whole life. He can live a pleasurable life as long as he isn't deceived by anyone. He wouldn't have to struggle for money anymore. In fact, he can leave behind some of it for his next generation as well." Chu Yang raised his wine cup, "However, even stingiest person in the world will make those ten-thousand silver taels vanish in less than half-a-year if you give him that money!"

"This is precisely what being a human is about!" Chu Yang mischievously laughed.

"Especially, in the Middle Three Heavens... who is safe in such chaotic times in the Middle Three Heavens?" Chu Yang squinted,

"Brother Yu, would you dare to say that you're invincible in the Middle Three Heavens?"

Young Master Yu stared blankly. Then, he forced a smile after a long while passed, "I won't dare!"

"In that case... how can we be safe?" Chu Yang asked.

"By practicing martial arts and upgrading your strength!" Young Master Yu replied without thinking.

"But, do you know you have already become the idol of the youths of Middle Three Heavens? Many people say – I wouldn't have to be afraid of anyone if I could accomplish as much as Young Master Yu has," Chu Yang smiled and sneered, "In addition, these are the words of the already-accomplished people. But, would they really become fearless when their accomplishments reach your level? Would they be content?"

Young Master Yu remained silent. He looked towards Chu Yang with flickering expressions in his eyes. He said, "Finish it in one breath."

"I'm also afraid when I'm alone!" Chu Yang softly said, "But, there are times when I'm not afraid. And, this moment is an example of such a time! Brother Yu, Wu Shang and I aren't a match for you if a serious battle breaks out between you and us. We'll die for sure. But, the fact is that we won't be afraid! Do you know why?"

Young Master Yu couldn't help but ask, "Why?"

Chu Yang and Dong Wu Shang smiled at the same time, and replied in unison, "Because it doesn't matter if I die or live as long as I have my brother at my side!"

Young Master Yu quietly stared at his wine cup. He didn't speak for a long time.

"I was in the Lower Three Heavens when I had once told Du Xing... I would help my brother if he wants to climb up a mountain

of blades. In fact, I would be willing help him across even I had to allow him to step on me. Then, he would only need to take one step... even if it means stepping on me!"

Chu Yang smiled, "I can also say that we have gotten together to be each other's hired thugs in your opinion. But, I can tell you that... none of us would be alive if any one of us sworn brothers needs to die!"

He proudly smiled and added further, "In fact, that dying brother would discover that his brothers have already died before his turn comes!"

"But, you won't understand this!" Chu Yang concluded his speech, "This is my reply to your 'hired thug' comment."

Young Master Yu laughed and cheerfully said, "Why are we talking about these things? Drink, drink."

The three people smiled. But, each smile had its own meaning.

Young Master Yu was drinking and thinking about this one word, [Brothers? Brothers? Do such brothers really exist? Who wouldn't want such brothers? Do such brothers really exist in the world?]

Dong Wu Shang was also thinking to himself, [Will I really be able to fight for my brothers till the very last moment?]

Chu Yang was thinking, [Brothers aren't disposable!]

They ate and drank to their heart's content in the blink of an eye. After that, Young Master Yu got up to see his visitors out. He then said to Chu Yang with a smile, "Don't forget. I still owe you one."

Chu Yang couldn't help but smile. He then replied, "I won't forget even if you do."

They waved their hands, and took their leave.

Young Master Yu also waved his hand. But, he stood there, and pondered for a while. And, he realized that Chu Yang and Dong Wu Shang had already arrived at the bend by the time he regained his

senses. They were walking side by side. Suddenly, a fierce look flashed in his eyes. He waved his hand, and a short knife was suddenly shot out with a ‘xiu’ sound!

It was shot towards Dong Wu Shang’s back!

This knife went flying like a thunder at a lightning speed! This had happened without any warning!

Chu Yang hadn’t anticipated this. Even Young Master Yu hadn’t thought before he had made this move! In fact, he had come to regret it immediately after!

30% of Young Master Yu’s strength had been used in this saber!

Moreover, it was a sneak attack!

The speed of this saber was unexpectedly faster than sound. The ‘Xiu’ sound echoed. The knife’s tip had already arrived near Dong Wu Shang’s vest by now.

Complexions of Dong Wu Shang and Chu Yang changed very drastically. It was absolutely unexpected that Young Master Yu would unleash such a vicious attack out of the blue. It was already too late to dodge the attack! Dong Wu Shang realized that the knife was going to pierce through his heart soon, and a look of despair appeared in his eyes.

Chu Yang became extremely tensed in an instant. His pupils expanded wide. He didn’t have enough time to think. And, he subconsciously held out his hand to grab it!

Puff!

Chapter 478: Saint Level Sparring Partner… Worth it!

The throwing-knife was caught by Chu Yang. The blade and Chu Yang's flesh came in contact, and the blood started to gush out. But, the residual momentum in the knife was far too high. And, it continued to dash towards Dong Wu Shang's vest along with Chu Yang's right hand!

The speed of the throwing-knife had slowed down…

However, it didn't slow down enough…

Chu Yang's body also tumbled a little to the side by the insane force of the knife. But, there wasn't enough time to think. Chu Yang suddenly shouted wildly, and instinctively extended his left hand and firmly grabbed the tip of the knife!

The knife-tip pierced through Chu Yang's palm-bone with a 'swoosh'. The protective layer of the Nine Heavens Technique got pierced in a flash. Then, a fountain of blood fiercely gushed out from his palm! Chu Yang turned over his wrist to one side in order to stop the knife that was now firmly sewn into his bone. [I have to stop it! My brother will die if I don't!]

Only this thought remained in Chu Yang's heart!

He didn't even consider that this knife had been thrown by Young Master Yu's hand!

The Sword Spirit reacted at this time, and immediately mobilized his power!

However, the power of the throwing-knife remained as ferocious as before. Chu Yang's body severely knocked against Dong Wu Shang's back, and the two of them fell down.

The throwing-knife had pierced through Chu Yang's hands like a stick piercing through a fruit. Then, it went forward and

penetrated into Dong Wu Shang's body. However, its direction got diverted after it had passed through the cushion of Chu Yang's hands. So, it pierced into Dong Wu Shang's shoulder instead of his heart.

However, the throwing-knife had sewn the two of them together!

Fortunately, the Sword Spirit had blocked the blow at the final moment. This knife would've pierced through Dong Wu Shang's vest after having penetrated through Chu Yang's palm if the Sword Spirit hadn't interfered!

The line traced by the flying knife in the air suddenly issued a sharp whistling 'woo' sound. The speed of the blade had beaten that of Sound! After that, a white smoke rose up in spirals and scattered.

Chu Yang flipped his body over as soon as he fell down on the ground. Then, he pulled out the knife from Dong Wu Shang's shoulder. His hands were still stitched together, but he didn't have the time to deal with it. The anger in his heart had already come to a boiling point. He suddenly turned his body around, and bellowed in rage, "Why?!"

Dong Wu Shang jumped up from the ground. He looked at Chu Yang's hands... they had been threaded together by the throwing-knife. He stared in anger, and roared furiously. He put his hand behind his back, and pulled out a 285 Kg black saber from his back. His eyes turned blood-red as his body fiercely flew over. And, he turned into black lightning as he threw himself at Young Master Yu without thinking about the consequences.

He had charged out with this saber to sacrifice his life... without any defense! He had been gripped in an intense bout of rage since he felt cheated. And, this had made him lose his senses.

His shoulder bled due to the ferocious movement of his spiritual power. But, he had seemingly forgotten everything.

[You're a despicable man! You're a disgrace in the name of an Expert!]

[You launched a sneak attack behind a man's back while he was unprepared!]

[My brother...! My Big Brother took a blow of knife for me! His hands have been damaged!]

Dong Wu Shang had forgotten everything at this moment! He only knew that he wanted to kill this man who stood before his eyes! He didn't even consider that he was no match for the said-man!

Young Master Yu's figure flashed. He had complicated expressions in his eyes. He dodged Dong Wu Shang's great saber. Then, his body drifted over towards Chu Yang like mist. The power of Dong Wu Shang's saber was earth-shaking. And, it had enveloped a radius of a hundred feet. So, Young Master Yu shouldn't have had any space to dodge it into...

However, he had casually dodged the attack in a weird way!

Dong Wu Shang angrily chased him to attack. But, Young Master Yu's body again flashed, and arrived near Chu Yang. He hung his hand over Chu Yang's head and shouted, "Stop!"

Dong Wu Shang shook from head to toe. He fell down from the sky with a 'thud' sound. And, the ground split up as soon as he stepped on it. He then shouted in anger, "Let my Big Brother go!"

Chu Yang had already stood up. He looked towards Young Master Yu with cold expression in his eyes, "Why?"

Young Master Yu looked at the knife that was stuck in Chu Yang's hands, and realized that his palms had been badly mutilated. A look of guilt flashed through his eyes. Then, he extended his hand, and quickly took out the throwing-knife from Chu Yang's hands. He did it so quickly that Chu Yang didn't even get the time to react!

Young Master Yu looked at the blade of the knife that was dripping with blood. Then, he let out a long sigh.

Chu Yang coldly snorted, and shouted with anger, "You self-centered show-off! You were testing us, weren't you?!" He thought about this, and figured it out. And, he was left to tremble from head to toe in anger at this realization.

[This bastard! He didn't believe our words! So, he used this cruel method to test us...?] He realized that Dong Wu Shang would've turned into a corpse if he had shown any hesitation. And, he couldn't help but feel a lingering fear in his heart. His anger towards Young Master Yu rose like a flame!

Young Master Yu looked at the knife with a look of guilt on his face.

He gently sighed and spoke, "I'm sorry!" Young Master Yu was a matchless person in the Middle Three Heavens. And, he had apologized for the first time in his entire life...

He further said, "I hadn't believed you when you had said that your brothers can live and die for each other's sake!" he let out a deep sigh and continued, "But, I believe now."

He laughed mockingly at himself and added, "The one who makes you feel so proud..." he again sighed. He then lowered his head and said, "...such a brother... why do I not have one? I would also fear nothing if I had such brothers..."

Dong Wu Shang arrived in front of Chu Yang at a very fast speed, "Big Brother! Big Brother, your hands..." he suddenly shouted loudly, "Young Master Yu! You son of a bit*h! I will kill you!"

There were two frightening big holes in Chu Yang's hands. In fact, his ten fingers had nearly been cut off. They were badly mutilated and mangled. It was a gory sight to look at...

Chu Yang held out his hand, and stopped Dong Wu Shang. He had already regained his calm even though blood was continuously

flowing from his hands. However, his chest was still moving up and down. The look in his eyes became as sharp as a knife, "Brother Yu, I want an explanation! Otherwise, I – Chu Yang – shall destroy the entire Dark Bamboo! And, you know that I can do this!"

"Explanation..." Young Master Yu laughed, "Well, I will give you an explanation." He suddenly turned over his hand. Then, he made ten big holes in his own arm with the throwing-knife. And, 'pfff pfff pfff' sounds were heard as he did so. After that, he grabbed the knife with his mouth, and made ten holes in his other arm in a similar fashion...

The blood flowed over. However, Young Master Yu remained standing in a perfectly straight posture with an unchanging look on his face. Then, he spat out the throwing-knife with a 'pfff' sound. The throwing-knife flew out, and issued a white light with a 'swoosh' sound. And, the knife unexpectedly got inserted into a rock... until only the handle was visible.

"This knife is drenched in a brother's blood. So, I throw it away!" Young Master Yu solemnly said, "Also, I shall act as your sparring partner when you and your brothers would be breaking through to the Saint Level. And, I will help you break through the bottleneck. That shall act as compensation for my actions. But, you can still exterminate the entire Dark Bamboo if you are dissatisfied with me."

[Saint Level? Doesn't it mean that Young Master Yu admits that he's a Saint Level Expert?!]

No one in the Middle Three Heavens knew the true strength of Young Master Yu. Everyone knew that he was extremely powerful. But, no one could've guess that this frightful character of the Middle Three Heavens was a Saint Level Expert in reality!

It could be said that the temptation of this offer was quite huge...

However, Dong Wu Shang didn't listen to any of what Young Master Yu had said. He furiously said, "Nonsense! Do you think

that my brother’s blood is so worthless? Who cares about the Saint Level? Even a single drop of my brother’s blood is worth more than this offer of yours!"

"Wu Shang!" Chu Yang shouted loudly, and stopped Dong Wu Shang. Young Master Yu’s intentions were true even though the method was too cruel. He had even given them this compensation. And, this had moved Chu Yang’s heart to some extent. [Having a super-expert like Young Master Yu as our sparring partner...? My brothers’ strength will progress by leaps and bounds!]

He lowered his head, and thought for a while. Then, he turned towards Young Master Yu, "Brother Yu, what if I hadn’t blocked the attack?"

"Hadn’t blocked?" Young Master Yu coldly snorted, "I deliberately gave you the chance to protect your brother and block the knife when I threw it. You bragged so much about your brothers in front me. So, it was only fair that the both of you would’ve become corpses if you hadn’t saved your brother!"

He coldly laughed, "Nobody is allowed to deceive me in the face!"

Young Master Yu heaved a deep sigh and said, "I regretted my actions immediately after I shot the knife!" He glanced at Chu Yang solemnly. It seemed to be an explanation of some sort. And, his reply seemed to be the apology. But, it also seemed to be loaded with envy, and various other emotions... In short, he was conflicted in his heart. He then slowly said in a deep and low voice, "I’ve never... had such brothers in my life..."

He further added, "Its fine that you hate me! And, I don’t mind if you blame me..." His body floated away and disappeared without a trace. Only a sigh came from the sky, "...I envy you so very much..."

He had already disappeared before Chu Yang could vent the anger that had filled in his chest...

Chu Yang couldn’t help but curse out loud, "Fu*k!" Then, he stretched out his hand wherein an incomplete Nine Tribulation Pills appeared, and he popped it. These knife-wounds were indeed very serious. Even his fingers had almost been cut off. No other medicine could heal these wounds as quickly as the Nine Tribulation Pill could...

Chu Yang felt very angry in his heart when he thought about this inexplicable sneak-attack. He didn’t know whether to laugh or cry! No wonder this Young Master Yu was considered to be a dangerous and threatening man in the Middle Three Heavens. This man was evil. He was moody and unreasonable. He was extremely whimsical!

Dong Wu Shang gnashed his teeth. And, his eyes turned blood-shot. He wasn’t ready to give up in his heart. In fact, his restless appearance made it seem as if he was going to go back and look for Young Master Yu, and put his life on the line to settle the scores...

Chu Yang sighed and spoke-up, "Wu Shang, watch your temper... you must control it. You may put your life on the line when the time demands it. But, you’d just be wasting your life for nothing if you put your life in danger when it’s not need. You must remember this."

Dong Wu Shang trembled as if someone had poured cold water on his head. He suddenly regained his sensibility and replied, "Yes, Big Brother!" He then supported Chu Yang with his hands, and walked away carefully.

He walked for a little while. But then, he suddenly turned around and shouted loudly, "Young Master Yu! I can’t defeat you at this time. So, I’m going away! But, I’ll come back to make you payback the debt for this knife!"

Dong Wu Shang said this, and waited for a while. He snorted when he saw that Young Master Yu didn’t respond. Then, he went away with Chu Yang.

...

In the Bamboo cabin...

Young Master Yu looked at the wounds on his arms with complicated expression on his face. He sighed with guilt. Then, he looked at the back-profile of the two figures walking side by side. Young Master Yu suddenly felt a warm feeling in his heart. It seemed that these two figures had made him think... [These two men genuinely fear nothing when they are at each other's side!]

[They don't even fear death!]

A deep feeling of envy emerged in Young Master Yu's heart. He lowered his head and sighed. He slightly activated his martial power, and stared at his wounds. His eyes suddenly emitted two dazzling white lights. And, the white lights illuminated the bloody wounds. Suddenly, those terrible wounds began to heal-up very quickly... almost at a speed which could be seen with naked eyes...

Young Master Yu had never felt so honest in his entire life. He had regretted the moment when he had shot that knife at Dong Wu Shang. He would've ended up killing the both of them if Chu Yang hadn't blocked the attack! But, Chu Yang had managed to block it subconsciously...

Young Master Yu had felt incredibly shocked in his heart at that moment. And, he had recalled Chu Yang's speech...

"I would help my brother if he wants to climb up a mountain of blades. In fact, I would be willing help him across even I had to allow him to step on me.

"None of us would be alive if any one of us sworn brothers needs to die!

"In fact, that dying brother would discover that his brothers have already died before his turn comes!

"Because, I don't fear death as long as I have my brothers by my side! I fear nothing!"

Young Master Yu had recalled this speech at that moment, and he had also recalled those two firm and determined faces. There had been sincere pride on those faces. Young Master Yu had suddenly felt very lonely in his heart. And, he had felt his heart heating up. And, that's why he had blurted out a promise that he would 'be their sparring partner to help them break through to the Saint Level'.

Any Saint Level Expert would never agree to be the 'sparring partner' of other people. Let alone someone like Young Master Yu... who was well-known for being moody, stubborn, arrogant, and cruel to others.

However, Young Master Yu didn't have any regrets at this moment! Because... he felt that it was worth it!

Chapter 479: The Power of Dark Bamboo Rules the World!

Dong Wu Shang didn't say anything. This matter of blocking the knife to save him wasn't a big deal for Chu Yang. But, Dong Wu Shang's heart was continuously trembling and burning because of it!

Dong Wu Shang's nature was quite different from that of Chu Yang's. It was somewhat similar to that of Gu Du Xing's instead...

Chu Yang's character was – whatever is said... must be done! A promise must be kept!

And, you must tell people about it after it is done!

Chu Yang had never shied away from taking credit; regardless of the situation. He had done a lot of good deeds in his past life, but he had felt embarrassed about talking about them. So, the people had often misunderstood him. And, he had seen many people who had been overlooked because they didn't speak about their achievements, and kept them hidden instead...

Therefore, Chu Yang had come to realize one fact – [How would other people know if you wouldn't tell them? How would others believe you if you wouldn't speak with confidence? This is a competitive world! Moreover, it's a competition that involves life and death!]

[One can't act like a fool!]

They walked for hundreds of feet. Chu Yang had mobilized his martial power to stimulate the medicinal efficacy as they had walked. He had gently been rubbing his hands together. And, his wounds had already turned into scars. A little pain still remained, but it was nothing serious anymore.

This left Dong Wu Shang to stare at Chu Yang's hands in bafflement.

Chu Yang smiled. He patted Dong Wu Shang's shoulder, and winked at him, "Relax, I have elixirs. So, I don't need to worry about injuries!" he again winked and added, "So, you don't need to worry either!"

Dong Wu Shang opened his eyes wide at first. Then, he suddenly felt relieved and laughed heartily. And, his mood suddenly became relaxed.

Chu Yang also happily laughed. He then abused with a smile, "Motherfu*ker, a sparring partner of Saint Level, ah! We have earned a fu*king big profit this time! That guy would be depressed to death if he found out that I have recovered so fast..."

Dong Wu Shang laughed so hard that he had to gasp for breath, "Right! Right! Ha ha ha..."

He laughed a lot at first, but suddenly came to a stopped. He then said, "Sparring partner or whatever... it's fine for now. But, I'll come back for Young Master Yu in time, and I'll make him pay for this knife-incident!"

Dong Wu Shang's voice became deep and low, "My martial arts goal was to be a Saber Emperor. I had never even thought of becoming a Saber Monarch. But, my goal had changed to becoming a Saber Monarch after I met you, Big Brother... But, I only have one goal now. And, that is to defeat Young Master Yu, and take revenge for what happened today!

"I will never forget about this knife-incident!" Dong Wu Shang stared blankly into the distance as he spoke in a heavy voice.

Chu Yang smiled, but didn't speak anything in response.

[It looks like defeating Young Master Yu has become Dong Wu Shang's long-term goal. It's a blessing to have such a goal!]

He pondered for a while and said, "We were talking and laughing freely one moment. In fact, we were sitting together and drinking wine. And, we encountered a situation of life and death the next

moment. And, only the cold edge of the knife trembled at that time. No friendship, no feelings, no benefits... none of these things matter to this man. He got mad out of the blue, and suddenly got carried away by his whim. Then, he acted impulsively, and tried to kill someone!

"Moreover, he tried to kill a man who he can regard as a friend to some extent!"

He softly sighed, "Wu Shang, Young Master Yu gave me a profound and impressive lesson today!"

"This is the Jianghu of the Middle Three Heavens, Big Brother!" A rustling sound was heard as Dong Wu Shang stepped upon thick pine needles. He continued in a deep voice, "Middle Three Heavens and Lower Three Heavens are entirely different places! We must understand this point very clearly, Big Brother. You mustn't be merciful or lenient by any means if you don't have your brothers at your side some day!"

Chu Yang silently nodded.

"Don't tell anyone about Young Master Yu's strength," Chu Yang warned.

"I know." Dong Wu Shang's heart felt heavy. He had seen Young Master Yu's insanely powerful knife attack. And, Dong Wu Shang had realized his own insignificance as a result...

This feeling of despair had shrouded his heart. In fact, it had left Dong Wu Shang's heart to tremble.

[I don't want to feel this way ever again!]

He looked towards Chu Yang's bloodstained hands, and his heart throbbed. [I won't let my brothers bleed for me ever again!]

[I don't want to feel this kind of heartache ever again!]

[I need to get stronger!] Dong Wu Shang didn't speak again, but the expression in his eyes had become abstruse. Then, a firm

conviction quietly arose within his heart.

Chu Yang was perhaps unaware that this knife of Young Master Yu's had changed Dong Wu Shang's conviction and his life's goal!

He would only aim to be on the top from now on!

They returned to the camp. And, they saw that Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were badly battered since they were wrestling with each other. Dong Wu Shang had just experienced a crisis of life or death. So, he couldn't help but feel reprehensible when he saw that these two were messing around so mischievously.

He took a step forward, and kicked the two of them without showing any trace of politeness. The two of them were sent flying as a result. He then shouted, "Why are you deliberately causing a ruckus? Is it that amusing? Do you have so much free time? Stand up! Grandpa Dong will accompany you in this farce of yours!"

"Motherfu*ker! You're insane!" Ji Mo turned over and jumped to stand, "I'm your Third Brother dammit!"

"Third Brother..." Dong Wu Shang mischievously laughed. He pulled out his black saber of 285 kg from his shoulder. He held it in his hand, and said, "I would like to swap pointers with my third brother if that's the case. Third brother, please teach me!"

Ji Mo's face turned black.

Dong Wu Shang didn't say anything further. He shouted loudly, and brandished his saber. And, a group of saber-lights shrouded the two of them. Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di turned pale in fright. They rapidly reacted, and joined forces to resist Dong Wu Shang.

They were beating each other up a moment ago. And, they were fighting side by side now. These two people were truly shameless! In fact, this even gave Chu Yang an inferiority complex when it came to being shameless.

Chu Yang shook his head, and broke into laughter.

Suddenly, a sharp ‘sword intention’ swept over from a distance. The person whom it belonged to hadn’t arrived yet... But, this kind of cold aura had made people’s bodies shiver.

A faint voice was then heard, "Why are you fighting amongst yourselves? Eh?! Big Brother...!" The dense ‘sword intention’ immediately transformed into a spring breeze, and brushed against everyone’s faces. Then, a slim silhouette suddenly appeared.

Gu Du Xing!

Gu Du Xing became pleasantly surprised when he saw Chu Yang, and rushed over.

Chu Yang also turned around, and went forward to greet him. The two of them were inexplicably happy to have met each other again...

Chu Yang looked-on with his sensitive vision, and noticed that Gu Du Xing’s complexion was somewhat pale. It was evident that he had sustained serious injuries, and still hadn’t recovered completely.

"Open your mouth," Chu Yang said.

Gu Du Xing didn’t get any time to speak since Chu Yang stuffed a pill into his mouth the moment he opened it to say something. A pure spiritual power welled up from his Dantian as a result. And, it made him very comfortable...

"Circulate your martial power now!" Chu Yang patted his shoulder.

Gu Du Xing realized that this was some kind of rare elixir. So, he didn’t dare to be negligent, and sat down cross-legged. After that, he started to circulate his martial power.

...

An hour later...

The five brothers were sitting together. Gu Du Xing had

completely recovered from his injuries by now!

"Du Xing, your injuries have healed. But, don't reveal this to anyone for the next two days. Wait until the crucial point, and unleash your full strength in one fell swoop!" Chu Yang said.

"I know. I will have to pretend to be an injured person for these two days. That's very easy." Gu Du Xing had met Chu Yang after a very long time. So, he was very excited in his heart. He was even talking in a cheerful voice. Gu Du Xing mobilized his martial power as he acknowledged Chu Yang's suggestion, and his complexion turned wax-yellow once again. He reverted to his 'seriously injured' appearance and said, "Is this okay?"

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mu burst into laughter, "Second Brother Gu is very skilled!"

Gu Du Xing felt like his head would explode in anger, "Motherfu*ker! Say that again and this Second Brother will slice you up!"

Everyone burst into laughter together.

"Only two days are left. I will give you a special training for these two days." Chu Yang slowly said, "This matter concerns Ji Mo's marriage. And, that would be a major turning point of his life. So, we mustn't show any carelessness! Ji Mo has taken a fancy to this woman. So, we won't just snatch her, but we will also win the matches in an extravagant fashion! Fair and square! We must do it with absolute perfection!"

Chu Yang paused for a while, and then continued, "We can't rely on other people. We brothers have to do it ourselves! Got it?

"Yes." Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and Luo Ke Di solemnly replied in unison.

Ji Mo felt a warm feeling in his heart, and his eyes turned red. His lips quivered a few times since he had been emotionally moved by this. He spoke-up with a smile, "Thank you! I'll treat you to

drinks as soon as I get my wife. Ha-ha..." he could only laugh twice since his voice was already shaking...

However, the rest four of them didn't make fun of him for being overexcited. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang were infamous for their naughty behavior, but even they reached out with their hands and patted on Ji Mo's shoulder.

[We understand, brother! We understand!]

"We will open the Heavenly Armament Pavilion... in the Middle Three Heavens after this matter is over." Chu Yang exposed a smiling expression on his face and said, "Moreover, the Ao, Xie, Ou, and Mo clans... are going to provide us a lot of money this time. In fact, Mo Tian Yun will be our biggest help when it comes to the opening of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion!"

"Ha ha ha..." everyone laughed out loud, and got overwhelmed with joy. They tried to imagine how miserable Mo Tian Yun's face would look when he would go bankrupt. A villainous guy would be at the receiving end. So, they were looking forward to the day.

...

A day later...

Armored cavalries surged forward towards the mountain. And, they issued loud rumbling sounds as they proceeded forward...

Anyone watching from the summit would see elite troops riding over from far away like a roaring black dragon!

Every horse was an extremely rare and precious breed! Every rider on those horses was an extremely rare expert... the likes of whom could be found only one in a radius of thousands of miles!

The men looked majestic as they sat motionless while they rode their horses. Their figures were tall and straight!

The horses were rushing over like dragons. Their auras could swallow the rivers and mountains!

The banners on the poles fluttered in the wind. The banners were black in color. And, clusters of golden bamboos stood proud and aloof in the darkness of the banners' backgrounds. The banners were fluttering in the biting cold winds of Mt. Dingjun!

This was the aura that reigned over the world. It spread out wreaking havoc everywhere!

Countless cheers exploded from different directions on Mt. Dingjun. And, these cheers reached straight up to the sea of clouds. Countless Dark Bamboo flags were raised tall and upright in quick succession! And, the entire mountain got covered in the flags of Dark Bamboo!

This prestige was genuinely world-shaking. It was astonishing, and wide-spread!

The black-armored troops surged forward like molten iron, and ran into the Mt. Dingjun. It seemed that a tsunami had crashed into this mountain!

"Jun Xi Zhu has arrived!" Gu Du Xing walked up to Chu Yang's side. He looked at the cavalry troops that were surging towards Mt. Dingjun like a mad dragon. The troops were sprinting up the mountain and towards the mountain-top at the moment. A keen glint was issued from Gu Du Xing's eyes...

[This kind of influence, this kind of might, this kind of aura... that can swallow the rivers and mountains to reign over the world should belong to a man! But, it actually belongs to a woman!]

The cavalries of Dark Bamboo had already entered the road on Mt. Dingjun. And, the smoke and dust they had left on the road behind had reached up to the sky!

"It's no wonder that the subordinates of such a mighty tyrant have managed to unify the underworld of the Middle Three Heavens!" Chu Yang sincerely exclaimed in admiration.

The black troops reached to the platform of the mountain after a

long while. They appeared on the platform with a rumbling sound. Then, they pulled the reins of their horses in unison, and the horses neighed loudly. After that, all the men stopped at the same time! Then, the cavalrymen dismounted from their horses, and stood perfectly straight on the side of their warhorses!

A graceful figure in black clothes came out from a carriage, and stepped down to the ground. Her stature wasn't very tall. She looked short amongst the men. But, she leisurely took a few steps forward. And, she looked around in a disdainful manner as a powerful aura scattered out from her body.

The invisible power and influence swept across Mt. Dingjun in a flash! And, the huge crowd fell silent!

This black figure slowly raised her head, and solemnly said, "It seems everyone had to wait for a long time!" her voice wasn't too loud, but it spread over the entire Mt. Dingjun. Unexpectedly, her voice didn't echo!

After that, she swept her eyes, and looked around the mountain. And, the entire mountain-range got filled with chilling cold... as if severe winter had arrived!

The Lord of Dark Bamboo... the overlord of the underworld of the Middle Three Heavens... Jun Xi Zhu!

Had arrived!

Chapter 480: Discord Between Brothers

"Minister Jun, thanks for your trouble!" thousands of people on Mt. Dingjun roared at the same time! These people had used enough spiritual power in their shout to shake the entire Mt. Dingjun. The dust flew upwards and shrouded the sky!

Jun Xi Zhu looked around to observe the situation. Then, she nodded and smiled. She had an aloof demeanor. It seemed as if no one could get close to her. She didn't say anything further.

Those hundreds of cavalrymen formed two columns with a 'shua'. And, Jun Xi Zhu was well-protected in the center. Then, they orderly walked towards the place where Young Master Yu was.

The arrival of Jun Xi Zhu was an indication that the battle was about to begin!

Every major clan sent their main representatives to discuss a number of affairs with Dark Bamboo. They obviously wanted to examine Jun Xi Zhu's attitude as well...

Only one person had a complex look on his face while he watched Jun Xi Zhu leave with her troops. He continued to do so for a long time, but didn't speak a word.

This person was clad in snow-white clothes. He looked very handsome. He had a calm and graceful demeanor. His eyes were as deep as the sea. He had a tall stature. His long ink-black hair was fluttering in the wind. He was held a purple jade flute. His body was sparkling, and was issuing a pure and limpid light.

It was Mo Tian Ji!

He had previously received an extortion letter from Jun Xi Zhu. In fact, Mo Tian Ji had become so impatient that the first thing he had done was to arrange the 60 million silver notes. Then, he had rushed to this place overnight in order to wait for Jun Xi Zhu's

arrival.

He had been here for several days, but he had never made an appearance.

Because... he didn't wish to run into Mo Tian Yun!

These were brothers from the same mother, but they were reprehensible towards each other. Mo Tian Yun felt like skinning Mo Tian Ji alive whenever he'd see him. And, Mo Tian Ji would feel depressed, disgusted, and nauseated whenever he'd see Mo Tian Yun.

Mo Tian Yun found Mo Tian Ji's strategies clever in trivial matters. But, he mostly found them unrefined. And, Mo Tian Ji felt that Mo Tian Yun's conspiracies were very childish and embarrassing...

The two brothers had stopped getting along several years ago. This had slowly developed to infighting and scheming against each other. Then, it had gradually evolved into an undercurrent of turbulence. And, this had advanced into vicious battles. Thus, they had slowly turned into irreconcilable adversaries who couldn't live under the same sky!

However, he had no alternative but to look for Mo Tian Yun at this time.

Mo Tian Ji's white clothes were fluttering in the wind. His countenance was calm. He walked over in a gentle manner, and arrived at Mo Tian Yun's place. Mo Tian Yun's bodyguard hastily went inside to report, "Eldest Young Master, the Second Young Master has arrived!"

"Second Young Master...? Mo Tian Ji?" Mo Tian Yun snorted and said, "Let him in!"

His voice hadn't even faded, and Mo Tian Ji had already arrived outside the door. He then spoke in an elegant voice, "I have come, Mo Tian Yun. Are you ready?"

They weren’t in the clan at the moment. So, they had torn-off the unnecessary mask of hypocrisy, and had started to address each other directly by name!

"Humph!" Mo Tian Yun coldly snorted, and his face turned gloomy. He walked out and stood at the door. Then, he said solemnly, "Mo Tian Ji! You are a junior of the Mo Clan. Don’t you know how you should behave before the future Clan Lord?"

"Future Clan Lord? Someone like you...?" Mo Tian Ji sneered and replied impatiently, "Are you ready or not? Hurry up and get ready. We must go and get Little Wu back. I have no interest in wasting my time and effort on talking nonsense with you!"

Mo Tian Yun snorted and spoke, "Of course, I will save my little sister! I don’t need you to urge me!" Mo Tian Yun obviously spoke these words in a virtuous manner. The experts of the Mo Clan had obtained the news about this matter, and had rushed over here en masse. In fact, more and more of them were coming here.

Mo Tian Ji wished that he could use his foot to maliciously trample this guy handsome face. [It is very aggravating to watch this bastard pretending to be all righteous and virtuous...]

"Hurry up!" Mo Tian Ji gently smiled, "Lan Mei is still waiting outside."

Mo Tian Yun’s complexion turned black as soon as he heard the name ‘Lan Mei’.

His lover and son were being controlled by Mo Tian Ji these days. And, Mo Tian Yun must first get Mo Tian Ji’s approval whenever he wanted to visit them. Lan Mei would have to go out on missions at times. But, Mo Tian Ji would make her consume a poison before she’d leave. And, he would give her the antidote once she had returned... This was a strict ritual that happened every time without fail.

But... this whole thing made Mo Tian Yun very uncomfortable.

Who could tolerate his own woman being controlled by someone else? The said-individual was his own blood-brother... but, Mo Tian Ji was still a man at the end of the day...

Mo Tian Yun would think of Lan Mei together with Mo Tian Ji every day, and he'd feel as if he had eaten a fly. The very thought of it made him feel like vomiting blood. However, there was no solution to this.

The two brothers were walking shoulder to shoulder. They appeared gentle and refined. There was the calmness of spring breeze on their faces. They looked like affectionate brothers — like a pair of brothers in arms.

It was hard to imagine that they were secretly at each other's throats...

"Second Brother, we must get Little Wu back at any cost. She is to be engaged soon. Ha-ha, the groom is that Meng Luo... you know..." Mo Tian Yun sighed and said, "Meng Luo has surely practiced an evil technique, but he's from a big clan at the end of the day. And, he's very powerful as well. So, he won't treat Little Wu badly."

Mo Tian Ji's complexion turned pale at first. Then, it immediately returned to normal. He smiled and replied, "Elder Brother put it well. I have also heard that Elder Sister Lan Mei dances pretty well. So, I will enjoy a lot if Little Wu is to get engaged because Lan Mei will be made to dance in front of a big crowd as a celebration for this matter. And, the men in the entire Cang Lan Battlefront would be blessed in that case... ha ha ha..."

Mo Tian Yun furiously retorted, "You!"

He obviously knew what Mo Tian Ji had meant when he had said 'dance before a big crowd'. It wouldn't be a dance with her clothes on... or perhaps it would be striptease... And, the phrase 'the men in the entire Cang Lan Battlefront would be blessed' was particularly malicious...

Mo Tian Ji smiled and said, "Elder Brother, you don’t need to worry. Who would dare to bully the Mo Clan as long as it has us two brothers? A conceited snob was acting recklessly a few days ago. In fact, he was boasting in front of me. So, I got mad and turned his three-year-old son into a eunuch. Sigh, it can be said that what I did was a bit cruel... I, I feel very guilty."

[I will turn your woman into a prostitute if you dare to act against Little Wu, and I will turn your son into a eunuch!]

How could Mo Tian Yun not have figured out the underlying meaning? Mo Tian Yun began to gasp. His hands and feet instantly went cold. He had a feel of congestion in his chest. He couldn’t even breathe properly and nearly fainted on the spot.

A King Level Expert of the Mo Clan was behind him. He spoke-up in a taunting tone, "Second Young Master is still somewhat soft-hearted. So what if you turned a child into a eunuch? It’s nothing worthy of feeling guilty about. You must know that ruthlessness is the mark of a truly great man. No gentleman has a petty mind. No true man is without venom!"

This guy belonged to Mo Tian Yun’s faction. So, he was naturally being rude to Mo Tian Ji. However, he didn’t know the backstory of this matter. So, he was unaware that the words he had said... were going to put him in a difficult situation.

"Oh? What do you suggest, Cheng Feng?" Mo Tian Ji modestly asked, "I don’t have the means to teach that guy a lesson at present. But, the son of that mossback is still in my hands... Cheng Feng, you might as well teach me a few moves if you have a brilliant idea."

"Isn’t that even easier?" Mo Cheng Feng laughed disdainfully. He assumed a preaching stance and said, "First of all, you can’t let that kid die. He would be of no value if he dies. But, you can peel off a layer of his skin every day..."

"Brilliant idea!" Mo Tian Ji praised him and said, "What after

that...?"

"After that... there are many ways to give this person hell. The best method is to train his son into a dog in human form. Ha ha ha... However, you must show this to that person who has offended you. I mean the little bastard's father. Well, the best way is to pull his son like an animal on a tether whenever he comes to see his son. Then, take the son away immediately-after..."

Mo Cheng Feng was genuinely worthy of being called a 'vicious person'. Each of his methods was more malicious than the previous one, "Moreover... you can hold an auction after you have trained him properly. Some rich people would likely want to play with this young boy, ha-ha. And, you must invite that mossback to participate in the auction, but don't allow him to bid..."

"Truly brilliant! Such a superb idea! Wonderful..." Mo Tian Ji clapped his hands, and praised him. He laughed and replied, "Your idea is genuinely sensible. I have made up my mind. I will just deal with that mossback's son if he dares to offend me again!"

Mo Tian Yun was breathing heavily. His face had nearly turned purple.

"Oh, by the way Cheng Feng... that bastard's wife is also in my hands... he he he..." Mo Tian Ji lowered his voice, but deliberately let Mo Tian Yun hear it.

"That makes things even easier!" Mo Cheng Feng patted his thigh, "You can simply toy with his feelings if his woman is in your hands. In fact, you can shame that mossback to death..."

A 'snap' was heart as soon as his voice faded. Mo Tian Yun couldn't take it anymore. So, he maliciously slapped Mo Cheng Feng in the face. Then, he roared fiercely, "You... you shameless bastard. Why are you talking about such vulgar things! You impudent little...!"

Mo Cheng Feng touched his face. He was visibly shocked.

He was very perplexed in his heart. And, his heart was filled with grief and indignation. He felt wronged, and tears almost came out. [Fu*k! I wasn't saying any of that without any reason, dammit...]

[Fu*k, I was only helping you vent your anger by shaming Second Young Master. Why did you slap me? What mistake did I make? I am sincerely devoted and loyal to you...]

"Eldest Young Master..." Mo Cheng Feng looked at Mo Tian Yu... as if to express that he felt wronged. There was a look of grievance in his eyes. Tears had also started to well up in his eyes...

"You still... trying to justify your grievance..." Mo Tian Yun flew into a rage. But, he kicked him instead of slapping him again, "You, you, you... you... Second Brother is... Second Brother is... Second brother is still young. And, you are teaching him these... these ... you, you, you are... immoral!"

Mo Clan's experts were stupefied as they looked at Mo Tian Yun. They looked stunned. They felt as if they had seen visitors from outer space!

[Why the hell is this?]

[Immoral?]

[Second Young Master is still young?]

[When did Eldest Young Master become such a caring brother? Furthermore... isn't this method his own specialty? He was very cheerful and delightful when he had talked about this method. Mo Cheng Feng had basically mentioned the same-method he had taught us... but, how come he has suddenly changed back into an upright gentleman? So clean and honest?]

However, Mo Tian Yun's face had already turned black in rage. Who would dare to go up to him and ask?

Mo Tian Yun gave vent to his burning rage, and arrived at Mo Tian Ji's side at once. Then, he chuckled and spoke, "Second Brother, you don't have to listen to this sundry gossip. Let's go

pick up Little Wu and bring her back. It’s a very important matter. My little sister, my own flesh and blood... is important to me."

Mo Tian Ji put-on a fake smile and replied, "What you are saying makes perfect sense, Elder Brother."

Consequently, the two brothers harmoniously walked forward...

... ...

Jun Xi Zhu went to the place where Young Master Yu was, but saw him taking care of the wounds on his arm. These wounds had almost healed, but one could still see that these arms had been pierced by something!

There were 20 holes, and each of them had been clearly bored into his arms!

Jun Xi Zhu was extremely shocked. [Taking Young Master Yu’s strength into account... who in the Middle Three Heavens can injure him like this? A person who can beat Young Master Yu to such an extent can even take his life very easily/effortlessly!]

[However, only a few such people exist even in the Upper Three Heavens. Yet, one such peerless expert has appeared in the Middle Three Heavens?]

Chapter 481: Cheated You? But How?

Jun Xi Zhu's complexion sank. She asked in a deep and resounding voice, "Which old fogy did this to you?"

The expression in Young Master Yu's eyes became quite strange. He seemed to be somewhat confused and perplexed. He heard the question, but didn't reply. Instead, he asked in a serious tone, "Xi Zhu, tell me... do brothers who can live and die for each other exist in this world?"

Jun Xi Zhu stared blankly. She thought for a while and replied, "I can't tell whether they exist or not. Legends say that they do. But, I've never seen such brothers in reality!"

Young Master Yu nodded. He spoke in a low voice, "But, I have seen them."

He exclaimed, "They are real!"

Human nature is the most despicable thing. Young Master Yu had never believed in human emotions; especially whenever he'd come across the so-called 'sworn brothers' who were ready to die for each other. He'd fight them until they had nowhere to go. Then, he'd put a condition in front of them — [Only one of the two brothers can live.]

Then, he'd see those two brothers massacre each other. And, Young Master Yu would enjoy seeing this ugly human nature unfold from the sidelines. He had always made fun of the so-called 'friendship'. He'd ruthlessly lashed-out-on and ridiculed the so-called friends. [Humans are ready to kill each other for their own life at the end of the day...]

He had done such a thing many times. No one had ever had the courage to sacrifice his own life for his brother's sake when confronted with Young Master Yu.

Because... they all believed that Young Master Yu was the kind of

man who'd never be sympathetic. So, they felt that he would most likely kill them both if they tried to be heroic.

However, Chu Yang used himself as a human shield and blocked the knife for Dong Wu Shang without any hesitation! And, Dong Wu Shang came to attack Young Master Yu to save Chu Yang without caring about his own life!

[Did that Dong Wu Shang not know that I could've easily crushed him to death? He must have known! But then... why did he do that?]

This compelled Young Master Yu to question his own belief that 'human nature is despicable since it makes everyone in the world kill for their own life'!

Jun Xi Zhu didn't reply. She merely snorted and asked, "Who injured you?"

"Don't ask about this matter." Young Master Yu insipidly replied, "It's not as serious as you think."

Jun Xi Zhu nodded and said, "You have a lot of things to do." She knew that no one could make Young Master Yu tell anything if he didn't wish to. So, there was no point in inquiring further.

Jun Lu Lu and Mo Qing Wu walked inside in the midst of their conversation.

Mo Qing Wu had changed her clothes. She was now dressed in red from head to toe, and looked adorable. She had the delicate frame of a young girl who had just started to mature. She looked like a slender and elegant flower. She was on the verge of blossoming into a flower of youthfulness. Her pretty face was shining, and her fine black hair was sliding down her head. There was a delicate looking butterfly knot on her head. It was made up of red cloud steel, and it seemed as if the butterfly would spread its wings and fly.

Her eyes were bright and clear. Her long eyelashes looked smoky.

Her facial expression made her seem innocent and intelligent. She had a pointed little chin. She was carrying a somewhat stubborn look...

"Where is Elder Brother Chu Yang? Is he somewhere on this mountain?" Mo Qing Wu pouted as she eagerly asked. She then looked towards Jun Lu Lu with an appealing look in her eyes. She had a pitiful expression on her face.

"Chu Yang?" Young Master Yu subconsciously said, "I've just had a fight with him..."

"What?" Mo Qing Wu opened her little mouth, and became anxious, "Did he get hurt?"

Young Master Yu suddenly came back to his senses. He rolled his eyes and spoke, "What does the fight have to do with whether he got injured or not? Can't one just have a fight with him?"

"No!" Mo Qing Wu opened her eyes wide in a stare. She puffed up her cheeks, and looked at Young Master Yu ferociously, "Why did you have a fight with my Elder Brother Chu Yang?"

"Huh...?" Young Master Yu scratched his head. Then, he looked at Jun Lu Lu, "Who is this little girl? Have you brought her here to lecture me?"

Ju Lu Lu couldn't help but giggle. She replied, "She is King of Hell Chu's darling. You can tell anyone that you've had a fight with King of Hell Chu. But, you can't say it in front of this girl."

"Did you really fight with him?" Mo Qing Wu glared at Young Master Wu. Her eyes had turned red, "Did he get hurt when you fought with him?"

Young Master Yu raised his hands in surrender when he looked that stubborn and limpid expression in her eyes, "I didn't hit him. But, it was him who hit me. Take a look at my hands. See. How pitiful ah..."

Young Master Yu extended his arms so that this cute little girl

could look at the wounds on his hands in an attempt to gain her sympathy...

He knew that she wasn't an outsider since Jun Xi Zhu had brought her here. So, he was coaxing this child in his favor to have some fun.

Mo Qing Wu let out a sigh of relief... as if she had been relieved from a burden. She said, "I know you can't beat him. But..." she rolled her eyes and said, "It's okay if he had beaten you..."

She jumped to the side of Jun Lu Lu as she spoke. Then, she held her arm and gently shook it. She said, "Elder Sister Ah Lu, lend me your mirror; I want to use it..."

Young Master Yu was dumbfounded.

[It's not okay if I beat him, but it's okay if he beats me? What kind of logic is this...?]

Just then, someone came in to report, "Minister Jun, Minister Yu, representatives from the big clans have come to pay a visit."

Jun Xi Zhu thought for a moment and said, "Minister Yu, you go and receive the visitors. Talk to them about random stuff for a while. Then, make them leave."

Young Master Yu nodded. He rushed out. However, it seemed as if he was escaping from something. This little girl's arrival had scared him a little. [It turns out that someone can be more unreasonable than me! Moreover, it's a little girl...]

The members of the aristocratic clans went away after not-too-long. But, Young Master Yu didn't return. No one knew where he had ran off to...

"Is Minister Jun in? Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji of the Mo Clan have come to pay a visit," an ample voice came from the outside; it was full of vigor. It was Mo Tian Ji's voice.

Mo Qing Wu's body shivered and her complexion turned deathly

pale.

[Second Brother, do you want to redeem me and marry me off to that bad guy?]

Mo Qing Wu had misunderstood him once again. Mo Tian Ji had indeed come to redeem Mo Qing Wu. But, he would never give her to Meng Luo.

He had found out about Mo Qing Wu's matter some time ago. So, Mo Tian Ji had asked his clan that his little sister be given to him. He had obviously done this once the uproar had died down in the Mo Clan. He had told them that he'd take her somewhere, and raise her himself. He wanted to take her responsibility since he wished to take care of her. But, he had been rebuked by Great Elder Mo Wu Xin. So, he had come here with the determination that he would take Mo Qing Wu to some place far way in order to protect her...

Jun Xi Zhu looked at Mo Qing Wu. She felt a sense of tenderness towards the little and said, "You two, go behind the curtain and sit there." Jun Lu Lu complied. She took Mo Qing Wu with her and walked away.

The two of them sat there. And then, they heard Jun Xi Zhu's heavy voice from the other side, "Send them in!"

Sounds of footsteps rose after a while. Two voices said in unison, "Greetings to Minister Jun."

Jun Xi Zhu sat on a large wooden armchair. She snorted and said, "Did you bring the money?"

Mo Tian Ji asked in a deep voice, "Is my little sister alright?"

Jun Xi Zhu coldly replied, "Don't you trust the reputation of Dark Bamboo?"

Mo Tian Ji gently replied, "The world shakes from the name of Dark Bamboo. Obviously, I trust it. But, this kidnapping thing is too unimaginable. May I dare to ask you what the reason behind

this was?"

Jun Xi Zhu coldly replied, "Mo Tian Ji, I only want your money — not your nonsense! Put the money forward if you have it. And, get out of here if you don’t! Don’t show-off your eloquence in front of me!"

Mo Tian Ji became silent for a while. Then, he said, "Here’s the silver notes." Mo Tian Yun had already given him the silver notes of his share before they had come in here. So, he had put all the money together.

Mo Tian Yun’s heart filled with more and more hatred. This hatred had been derived out of jealousy. He had always thought that he was superior to Mo Tian Ji in every aspect. In fact, he had believed it till now. But, Mo Tian Ji was speaking with confidence in front of Jun Xi Zhu today. He was even asking questions. But, Mo Tian Yun was afraid of the domineering presence of Jun Xi Zhu. In fact, he couldn’t even utter a word. He feared that his voice would tremble if he tried to speak in front of Jun Xi Zhu...

However, he didn’t know that Mo Tian Ji’s heart was also beating like a drum while confronting Jun Xi Zhu. He was also afraid of her power and influence. But, his heart would brim worry and resentment whenever his heart recalled his little sister. And, this instead helped him remain calm and collected.

"Golden hand Hua Cuo!" Jun Xi Zhu coldly shouted.

"Subordinate is here!" A man appeared in the tent with a ‘shua’ sound.

"Hua Cuo, come and check these silver notes." Jun Xi Zhu insipidly said, "Check if the money is real."

Mo Tian Ji wrinkled his brows. [Is Jun Xi Zhu playing some trick? Is this some kind of joke? Who would dare to give her fake money? Why would I defraud you? I don’t want to court death here...]

Golden Hand Hua Cuo was a middle-aged man with slim stature. His hands were dry and steady. He took the silver notes worth sixty million taels. Then, he applied a bit of saliva on his fingertips, and started to count the notes.

Mo Tian Ji stared attentively at the man as he steadily counted the silver notes. He suddenly got alert in his heart.

"...Minister Jun, there is something wrong." Golden Hand Hua Cuo spoke-up in a puzzled manner, "Silver notes worth of 60 million taels? These are only 20 million taels. And, white papers worth another 40 million are sandwiched between them. This... this is too much. Who would do such a thing...?"

"White papers worth 40 million?" Jun Xi Zhu's complexion sank, "What is the meaning of this?"

"Wait for a moment!" Mo Tian Ji shouted. He had counted 60 million taels himself before he had come here. [How did the notes change into white papers? This guy must've done something. But... his movements were very slow. How did he do it? I didn't see it!]

"Is it okay if I take a look?" Mo Tian Ji asked.

Golden Hand Hua Cuo seemed to be puzzled. He foolishly nodded with a blank expression and replied, "Alright, ah."

He handed over the silver notes.

Mo Tian Ji received them, and his heart immediately sank. They felt different. He flipped them over a little, and saw shining white papers instead of silver notes... He couldn't help but feel dizzy...

"What's the meaning of this?" Jun Xi Zhu frowned and asked.

Mo Tian Yun angrily said, "What does this mean, you say? Minister Jun, even thieves have principles. And, you're defrauding us like that?!" How couldn't he be anxious right now? He was already penniless. His share of money also couldn't come out yet since the gambling wasn't over... So, he would lose his face if they

were to get defrauded by Jun Xi Zhu...

Jun Xi Zhu eyes became cold. She squinted and coldly said, "Defrauding you... but how?!"

Mo Tian Ji was observing from the sidelines. He was looking at Jun Xi Zhu's crystal clear eyes. They had already begun to emit an evil glint. He couldn't help but shiver in his heart. He knew that Jun Xi Zhu was determined to extort these 40 million taels from them. He hastily said, "It is probably my carelessness. He he... I remember that I had some white papers in my pocket. I think I mixed them with the money. Please forgive me, Minister Jun! Let me compensate the remaining amount."

Jun Xi Zhu profoundly looked towards Mo Tian Ji. Then, she said with a faint smile, "Oh, really?" She couldn't help but think, [This Mo Tian Ji is worthy of being called the 'God of Crafty Plans'. He saw through the fact that I wanted to teach them a lesson. He realized that I don't want these 40 million silver taels...]

Mo Tian Ji took out the silver notes, and spoke with a smile, "I will give you the notes one by one this time so that there won't be any counting mistake."

Jun Xi Zhu replied with a smile, "Okay, I accept that!"

Mo Tian Yun felt relieved and said, "Sorry for the inconvenience, Minister Jun. Now, please bring out my little sister. Minister Jun must be busy; we shouldn't trouble you any further. So, we will take our sister and go back. Thanks a lot for taking care of her for this period of time, Minister Jun."

Mo Tian Ji handed over the money. So, Mo Tian Yun naturally came out to act as a good guy.

Jun Xi Zhu frowned and asked, "What? Mo Tian Yun, aren't you mistaking something? When did I say that you can take back the hostage after you had handed over the money?"

Chapter 482: Chu Yang Becomes Furious!

Mo Tian Yun gawked. He scratched his head and asked, "Minister Jun, what does this mean?" He thought, [You won't release the person if we hand you over the money? What kind of a rule is this?]

Jun Xi Zhu coldly replied, "Didn't you properly read the letter that I had sent you? And, you even came looking for the hostage now? It's really laughable!"

Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji stared blankly.

They spontaneously took out the letter of extortion from their pockets. Then, they looked at each other in dismay, [There's doesn't seem to be an issue!]

"Read it out aloud!" Jun Xi Zhu said.

"Daughter of the Mo Clan – Qing Wu is in the hands of Dark Bamboo. Quickly pay sixty million silver taels. The hostage would be killed if you delay!" Mo Tian Yun read out in a puzzled manner. He frowned since he didn't find the problem.

A mysterious light flashed in Mo Tian Ji's eyes. He had realized it, and felt that it was his bad luck.

Jun Xi Zhu sneered and spoke, "I had informed that the hostage would be killed if you don't pay the ransom. That's all. Did I ever say that I will hand over the person to you? Your younger sister is here with me. She's eating and drinking with me here. I'm providing her clothes. I'm taking care of her expenses. I'm providing her a place to live... Don't these things cost money?"

Mo Tian Yun was left dumbfounded. In fact, he had gotten so angry that he couldn't even retort.

"These 60 million silver taels are for the living expenses of your little sister!" Jun Xi Zhu indifferently explained, "You two Young Masters can go back if you don't have any other matter to discuss.

Of course, you're most welcome if you want to live here with me! You'd only need to pay 60 million silver taels each for your living-expenses."

Jun Lu Lu firmly covered her mouth to hold back the sound of her laughter. [I didn't expect that my elder sister had such a plan. It is indeed an excellent plan...]

...

Mo Tian Yun was standing outside. He angrily said, "Why did you drag me out?"

"You can still go in now!" Mo Tian Ji replied, "If you can produce another 60 million..."

Mo Tian Yun snorted and said, "Why did you give her 40 million? It was clear that she was defrauding us! I knew that you're a fool... but, I didn't expect that you're that big of a fool!"

Mo Tian Ji glared at him contemptuously. He said, "Jun Xi Zhu was looking to teach us a lesson. Didn't you notice? The two of us would've been in big trouble if we didn't pay her that money! The 60 million was for ransom. And, the 40 million was to buy our security! You can't even notice this simple point... How would you ever hold the position of the Clan Lord of the Mo clan?"

Mo Tian Yun got very angry, "You!"

Mo Tian Ji shook his head and said, "You go back to your own business! I won't stop you if you wish to go back and look for Jun Xi Zhu. I have something else to do. I need to find someone," He didn't wait for Mo Tian Yun's reply. And, he simply turned around and left.

Mo Tian Yun spat out a mouthful of spittle, and touched his pocked. His pocket was empty at the moment. He felt as if it had been washed clean. He couldn't help but grit his teeth. He hatefully muttered to himself, "I'll see how you'd be arrogant towards me once I've won my one billion, Mo Tian Ji!"

Then, he sneered and walked away.

Little did he know that Mo Tian Ji was also cussing in his heart... [This bastard! He even put the property of the clan into gambling. You'll end up being a joke if you lose, Mo Tian Yun! You'd be even worse than a joke!]

...

Chu Yang was with Gu Du Xing.

"Du Xing, how did you get injured?" Chu Yang asked.

"It's Mo Tian Yun's doing," Gu Du Xing casually mentioned, "I had heard something. So, I went to look for Mo Tian Yun to settle scores. But, many of his experts gathered, and besieged me. I killed a few of them, but got injured in the process."

Gu Du Xing had spoken this in a casual manner... as if it was no big deal. But, how could Chu Yang not sense the danger involved whilst hearing the description of that incident? [It seems that Gu Du Xing has managed to escape death!]

"What was that matter about? Was it even worth taking this risk?" Chu Yang wrinkled his brows.

Gu Du Xing looked at him with astonishment, "Don't you know it yet?"

Chu Yang gawked for a moment, "What is it that I don't know?"

Gu Du Xing got furious, "What is the matter with Ji Mo and the others. They've kept such a big matter hidden from you till now?"

Chu Yang's became shocked in his heart, and asked, "Is it related to Qing Wu?"

Gu Du Xing shouted loudly, "Ji Mo! You people, get over here!"

Dong Wu Shang and the others compliantly came over jolting their buttocks. Gu Du Xing glared at them and angrily said, "Why did none of you tell Big Brother about Little Wu's matter?"

Ji Mo scratched his head. Then, he opened his eyes wide and said, "What? Doesn't Big Brother know it already?"

Chu Yang didn't know whether to laugh or cry, "How would I know?"

Luo Ke Di, Dong Wu Shang, and Ji Mo – all three of them looked at each other in dismay. They then suddenly sighed at the same time.

"You were dealing with Meng Luo when we met you. And, you left the Meng Clan in a difficult situation. In fact, their clan almost sank into a situation where there's no hope to reprieve them. After that, you dealt with Mo Tian Yun in the gambling... So, we thought that you knew about it. How come you don't know?" Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di got baffled.

They had really screwed up this time.

Chu Yang puckered up his brows, "I dealt with Meng Luo because you wanted to snatch his Storm Leopard! I dealt with Mo Tian Yun because he mistreats Little Wu! What does this have to do with the current matter of Qing Wu?"

Chu Yang had thought that he would inquire about latest news on Mo Qing Wu after he had arrived here. But then, he thought that everyone was busy with Ji Mo's marriage, and had to deal with other troublesome stuff. Moreover, Qing Wu was still very young. So, she shouldn't have gotten involved in any major matter in the Mo Clan.

However, he didn't know that this matter of Ji Mo's would lead him to Mo Qing Wu in the end. [Did something happen to Little Wu?]

"Meng Luo and Mo Tian Yun had gotten close to each other some time ago, and they must have talked about Mo Qing Wu. Mo Tian Yun must have encouraged Meng Luo to form a marriage alliance with the Mo Clan so that both the clans could join forces," Gu Du

Xing slowly explained.

"Form a marriage alliance?!" Chu Yang stood up with a ‘whoosh’ sound, and angrily said, "Meng Luo and Mo Tian Yun, are they courting death?!"

He recalled Meng Luo’s evil technique. It was so vicious and cruel. [Meng Luo wanted to harm Qing Wu with it?] Suddenly, a murderous aura rushed forth from his whole body. He couldn’t hold it back! Even the bodies of Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang shivered from this aura.

"And, Meng Luo immediately followed the good advice, and requested for a marriage alliance with the Mo Clan. He requested to marry Mo Qing Wu so that he could make Mo Qing Wu his little concubine. Then, the Mo Clan discussed over it for a while. The Great Elder Mo Wu Xin made the final decision, and agreed with the marriage proposal!" Gu Du Xing explained in one breath.

Chu Yang became so angry that his hair stood on end! He gritted his teeth so hard that ‘ge ge’ sounds were produced. His entire body shivered, and started to make rustling sounds!

[Little Concubine?]

[Meng Luo! You son of a bi*ch! You have really fu*ked up this time!]

"I went to look for Mo Tian Ji when I heard about this matter. But, Mo Tian Ji had gone deep into the Cang Lan Battlefront at that time. So, I turned back. And, I returned to look for Mo Tian Yun... Sigh, and got into a fight!" Gu Du Xing exposed cold rays of light in his eyes and said, "But, you have come here, Big Brother. And, you will naturally take a stance. So, there’s no need to be worried. We will do whatever you tell us to do!"

Dong Wu Shang and the other two people also said in unison, "Yes, Little Wu is eleven years old. This act of the Mo Clan is immoral! Don’t worry, Big Brother! We will do whatever you tell

us to do!"

"Humph! It seems that I have handled things lightly!" Chu Yang felt deep regret in his heart, [Motherfu*ker! How would I have let that bastard Meng Luo go back alive if I had known this?!]

Someone hurriedly came running from the outside. It was a guard. He reported, "Second Young Master, there is a matter..."

Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo, and Luo Ke Di turned around at the same time, "Which Second Young Master are you calling?"

The guard was sweating profusely, "Second Young Master Dong... Second Young Master of the Mo Clan – Mo Tian Ji has come to pay a visit. He said that he wants to discuss something important."

The look in Chu Yang's eyes turned cold. He said, "Let him come in! I was about to go looking for him to settle the account!"

How could the guard dare to stay after having seen that the faces of all the Young Masters seemed densely covered in cold frost? He immediately rushed back.

A man hurriedly came in a little while later. He was still some distance away when he spoke, "Dong Wu Shang, is Chu Yang here?" This man was Mo Tian Ji. And, the man he was looking for was actually Chu Yang.

Mo Tian Ji already knew that Chu Yang had arrived in the Middle Three Heavens. But, he felt ashamed to meet Chu Yang. [I couldn't protect my little sister. In fact, my own clan members have snatched the precious saber that you gifted her...]

[How shameful this is...! How will I confess this to Chu Yang?] He recalled the time when Chu Yang had left after earnestly entrusting him the task to protect her. And, Mo Tian Ji had made a solemn vow to protect Mo Qing Wu... but, he couldn't fulfill his promise. How could he not feel ashamed in his heart?

He knew that Chu Yang had arrived on Mt. Dingjun. But, he had

hidden himself away because he was ashamed. In fact, he didn't even have the nerve to participate in such a lively gambling...

However, it was too late to hide things from Chu Yang now. He was still ashamed of his failure. But, the matter with Jun Xi Zhu had left him with no choice but to be shameless and come find Chu Yang.

He had heard that Chu Yang and Young Master Yu had friendly relations. In addition, his own elder brother and Chu Yang had made a bet, and Young Master Yu had taken the initiative to be the notary for it.

Therefore, he immediately came to look for Chu Yang. [It would be a piece of cake to take Mo Qing Wu back if Chu Yang agrees to ask Young Master Yu!]

It could be said that Mo Tian Ji's brain worked very quickly!

"Chu Yang, you're indeed here!" Mo Tian Ji felt pleasantly surprised in his heart, "I have come to request you something."

Mo Tian Ji had showed up at the right time! And, he got caught up in the outburst of Chu Yang's anger. He too had messed up this time!

"How do you have the face to request me for something?" Chu Yang furiously glared at him, "Mo Tian Ji, you couldn't protect your own younger sister. You let her get bullied and humiliated. And, you have come to request me something? Are you fu*king kidding me?"

Mo Tian Ji's face turned red. He replied in a sad voice, "I have come to you to discuss about..."

Chu Yang coldly said, "What is there to discuss about?"

Mo Tian Ji was helpless. So, he humbly apologized. His handsome face had turned red.

"I want an explanation," Chu Yang furiously said, "How is Little

Wu doing? What does your Mo Clan plan to do to her? What your Mo Clan has done... is absolutely disgraceful!"

"I have come to you to discuss about this matter," Mo Tian Ji helplessly said, "Only you can handle this matter."

"Only I can handle? Do I have such an influence in your Mo Clan?" Chu Yang was stunned.

"Little Wu had run away from home. But, she fell into the hands of the Lord of Dark Bamboo – Jun Xi Zhu. She has been held hostage ever since. And, Jun Xi Zhu is using this opportunity to teach the Mo Clan a lesson." Mo Tian Ji anxiously said, "I have heard that you are friends with Young Master Yu...?"

Chu Yang immediately became vigilant, "First... you explain everything properly."

Mo Tian Ji began to explain everything that had happened since Mo Qing Wu had left home. And, he slowly told everything that had happened till now. He sighed with bitter expression on his face, "I realized that Jun Xi Zhu didn't kidnap Mo Qing Wu for a ransom. I suppose... she doesn't like our Mo Clan. So, she is deliberately playing tricks with us. I have no idea how she would've taught our Mo Clan a lesson if this matter didn't involve Little Wu. But, the problem is that Mo Qing Wu is in that hut with Jun Xi Zhu. And, I clearly know that there's no danger there. But, I'm worried."

Chu Yang frowned and said, "What do you plan to do with Little Wu once you get her back? Would you take her back to your clan?"

"Taking her back to the clan is out of question!" Mo Tian Ji replied resolutely and decisively, "I will take her somewhere far away."

"I will bring Little Wu back. But, she will stay here with me after she comes back!" Chu Yang put forth his condition in a way that it couldn't be questioned, "I won't feel relieved if she's with you Mo

Clan people!"

Chapter 483: Reunion

Mo Tian Ji thought for a while. Then, he made a prompt decision and replied, "Alright!" [The clan is currently in crisis. Mo Tian Yun has mortgaged half of the clan's property. So, I would have to deal with Mo Tian Yun if he wins. Otherwise, he could use the newly gained financial resources against me. And, it would be very difficult for me to deal with him if that happens.]

[But, it would be a heaven-sent opportunity for me if he loses!]

"I will settle scores with your Mo Clan sooner or later..." Chu Yang coldly looked at Mo Tian Ji. He spoke in a dark manner, "I wouldn't have cared about anything if Little Wu was safe and sound, and was taken care of in a proper manner. But, your Mo Clan has mistreated Little Wu like that. So, I might as well inform you of this. You owe one to Little Wu. And, I will later come to balance the account with the Mo Clan... regardless of whether you or Mo Tian Yun becomes the Clan Lord!

"If I – Chu Yang — don't want it... nobody in the entire Nine Heavens can take advantage of me without paying a price!" Chu Yang heavily added.

Mo Tian Yun complied after Chu Yang finished speaking. Chu Yang took large strides to leave. He said, "I will go and look for Young Master Yu."

"Let's go together." Mo Tian Ji's face was flushed with shame as he followed after Chu Yang. He had never been scolded by someone like that. Mo Tian Ji felt sad, but he couldn't complain. Therefore, he swallowed his pride down his throat. [Who would like to turn their clan into an environment that lacks any feeling or sense of justice?]

"You guys don't need to come with me. You must seize the moment, and continue with your practice. We can't afford to make any mistakes in tomorrow's battle!" Chu Yang spoke to Gu Du Xing

and the others.

Gu Du Xing nodded. Then, he went back with his other brothers, and continued practicing.

"Brother Chu, why are you so good to my little sister?" Mo Tian Ji could tell that Chu Yang was more concerned about his sister than her own elder brothers.

"I adore Qing Wu," Chu Yang casually replied.

"You adore her... but in what way..." Mo Tian Ji whispered in his heart. But, he didn't dare to say it out loud.

It was obvious that Chu Yang didn't dare to inform him either. [I like your little sister. I want to marry her and make her my wife when she will grow up...] However, Mo Tian Ji would've opposed him with all his power if he had expressed his views! In fact, Mo Tian Ji would've thought that Chu Yang and that beast Meng Luo were no different...

"Don't worry. I will clean-up the evil elements from the Mo Clan if I become the Clan Lord," Mo Tian Ji exclaimed.

"Brother Mo, can I say something if you don't mind...?" Chu Yang said while taking quick steps.

"Please, go ahead!"

"Your vision is focused on one clan only. So, it is somewhat limited. Also... your approach isn't broad enough," Chu Yang gave his honest opinion.

"It's not that I don't know..." Mo Tian Ji let out a deep sigh, "Mo Tian Yun and I fight for power and profit. Do you think it's because I – Mo Tian Ji – want the position of the Clan Lord? I have deep sentiments towards the clan! I can't see my clan getting ruined in the hands of Mo Tian Yun. Mo Tian Yun is narrow-minded. He is vicious and merciless. He can use any fair or foul method for his own gain. So, I can't let the Mo Clan fall into Mo Tian Yun's hands!"

He took a deep breath and said, "I want to lead my clan to the Upper Three Heavens! I wish to complete the desires of the several past generations of the Mo Clan."

Chu Yang didn’t speak anything. Then, he sped up and spoke, "I wish for your success."

The two of them walked hurriedly with their heads lowered. And, they arrived at Young Master Yu’s place soon after.

"Brother Yu, Chu Yang is here to pay a visit. Please, come out!" Chu Yang shouted with vigor in his voice. And, his voice spread far and wide.

Mo Qing Wu jumped up in the inner parts of the area, and danced with joy, "It is Elder Brother Chu Yang!" She had heard this voice every night in her dreams. It would often console her tenderly, [Little Wu, don’t worry. Little Wu, you have me. Little Wu...]

Now, she was hearing this voice for real!

Mo Qing Wu jumped up, and was about to shout happily. But then, she suddenly fell into shock. She erected her small ears, and nervously listened what was going outside. Then, she suddenly grabbed Jun Lu Lu’s hand and anxiously asked, "Sister Ah Lu, I didn’t mishear that, right? Someone actually shouted, right? It was Elder Brother Chu Yang’s voice, right? It wasn’t my imagination, right..."

Jun Lu Lu tried to restrain her laughter and replied, "I didn’t hear anything."

Mo Qing Wu hung her head down in a dispirited manner. She then sat down on the ground and said, "Was it really my imagination...?"

Jun Xi Zhu’s voice echoed, "Ah Lu, you look after this little girl. I’ll go and see King of Hell Chu."

Mo Qing Wu stared blankly for a moment. Then, she became ecstatic, "So, it wasn’t my imagination!" She got up, and was about

to rush out before Jun Lu Lu could've gotten a hold of her. This little girl rushed to the door, but immediately turned around and ran back. She directly went in front of the mirror, and anxiously looked at herself from all angles. After that, she turned around, and once again rushed to go out.

Jun Lu Lu reacted quickly this time, and grabbed her hand to stop her. She then said in a low voice, "Don't worry. Let your Elder Brother Chu Yang and Elder Sister talk about their business first. I will send you to your Elder Brother Chu Yang after they are done talking."

Mo Qing Wu had tears in her eyes. And, she displayed an intensely unwilling look on her face. But, she obediently nodded, "I want to hear their talk..."

Jun Lu Lu complied, "Very well... But, only if you don't make any noise..."

Mo Qing Wu silently nodded and lowered her head. Her eyes had turned red. That ecstatic feeling had vanished, and a limitless feeling of grievance had bubbled up in her heart instead. [I want to tell everything to Elder Brother Chu Yang. I want to tell him about the sufferings that I've been through this year. Boohoo...]

Sound of footsteps rose from the outside.

Chu Yang had shouted. After that, a person came out and asked him to go in.

He followed that person and walked in. Mo Tian Ji also wanted to go after him. But, he was stopped by the guard. The guard said, "Minister Jun only wants to meet one man – Minister Chu."

Mo Tian Ji was helpless. He had no other choice than to wait outside.

Chu Yang walked in, and saw a black-clothed woman standing there. She had her back turned to him. Her silvery temples were like fog. Her stature was slender and graceful. She was dressed in

an ordinary black dress. But, it gave people a kind of mystical feeling.

She looked like an elusive fairy that was riding the clouds and controlling wind. She seemed to be floating high up on the ninth heaven.

"Your Excellency must be..." Chu Yang's pupils contracted as he indistinctly guessed, "Minister Jun, right?"

"Minister Chu has a sharp vision." Jun Xi Zhu turned around slowly. She looked at Chu Yang's face with her keen vision. And, Chu Yang felt like his face had been severely pricked by two steel needles since he felt a stabbing pain!

Jun Xi Zhu's face was covered by a black muslin veil. So, her face wasn't visible. But, her eyes were as shiny as the bright stars in the night sky. They could leave people dazzled.

"Minister Chu has presumably come for Mo Qing Wu," Jun Xi Zhu solemnly said.

Chu Yang's heart trembled as he replied, "Yes."

"Probably Mo Tian Ji has asked you to rescue her, am I right?" Jun Xi Zhu slightly smiled.

"Yes." Chu Yang frankly admitted.

"As expected... I deliberately made things difficult for Mo Tian Ji so that he would ask Minister Chu to come here," there was a cold smiling touch to Jun Xi Zhu's voice as she continued, "I could've visited you, but it would've been like giving you too much face. So, I had to follow this plan. I hope Minister Chu doesn't take any offense."

Chu Yang smiled, "Minister Jun is a capable person of this generation. She is a senior expert. Her position is very high. You're the overload of this generation. So, this Chu Yang should come to visit you."

Jun Xi Zhu had unleashed her domineering aura when Chu Yang had come in. And, she had formed a tyrannical energy field that had firmly shrouded Chu Yang when she had turned around to face him.

Meanwhile, she was carefully observing every expression of Chu Yang's while they were having this conversation. She observed everything – his voice, the look in his eyes, and even the movement of his muscles. However, she didn't find the slightest of changes in Chu Yang!

He had been neither servile nor overbearing when he had entered. And, he had maintained the same demeanor till now. Even, his pulse rate hadn't changed one bit.

[Such mental strength at this age...? This kind of a hero is very rare in the world.]

A kind of mysterious light flashed in Jun Xi Zhu's eyes. She thought, "No wonder Little Yu gives him so much importance. This boy doesn't seem to be ordinary."

"Minister Jun should say whatever she has on her mind," Chu Yang said.

"Minister Chu... how do you see my Dark Bamboo...?" Jun Xi Zhu hesitated a bit. Then, she suddenly asked.

"Dark Bamboo dominates the entire Middle Three Heavens. Naturally, it is the most powerful force!" Chu Yang pondered for a while and replied, "In fact, this kind of power would be sufficient to dominate the Upper Three Heavens. Unfortunately, it lacks some genuine top-notch experts. Otherwise, the Dark Bamboo can't dominate the Middle Three Heavens alone, but could very well have ruled the Upper Three Heavens!"

"Unfortunately, it lacks some genuine top-notch experts..." Jun Xi Zhu slowly repeated Chu Yang's words. She then exposed a smiling expression in her eyes, "Very good!

"I can return Mo Qing Wu to you." Jun Xi Zhu no longer beat around the bush, and said, "But, I want Minister Chu to promise me something... or, make a commitment."

"I never make commitments!" Chu Yang indifferently replied, "I never make commitments to anyone... or for anything!"

He firmly looked at Jun Xi Zhu and added, "Perhaps Minister Jun also knows that the so-called ‘commitments’ are often only used for betrayals. And, I never want to break a promise to anyone. So, making commitments is far too heavy for me!"

Jun Xi Zhu’s eyes filled with a look of admiration. She said, "Okay. You don’t need to make a commitment. But, how about Minister Chu accepts my request in future if he finds it appropriate?" She smiled and added, "I won’t make a difficult request!"

Chu Yang hesitated.

What Jun Xi Zhu had spoken may have sounded simple, but... would it be simple to fulfill the request of Dark Bamboo?

"Minister Chu, you have arrived here very recently. So, you aren’t able to contend against big clans yet. In exchange for this request, I – Jun Xi Zhu – ensure you... Mo Qing Wu will always be at your side.

"No one would be able to snatch her from you." Jun Xi Zhu smiled and declared her terms.

"Ok!" Chu Yang made a prompt decision and complied. This was exactly the most troublesome thing for him at present.

"It’s a deal!"

"Words can’t be taken back once they have been said!"

They looked at each other and smiled. Jun Xi Zhu felt relaxed in her heart, [With this... I will have a method to turn things in my favor when that peerless person with extraordinary abilities would

arrive. In addition, there's some time until his return... And, Chu Yang would be preoccupied with a lot of things during that time. In fact, he would be in endless troubles. Moreover, his ambitions are very big. Would Chu Yang really have time to worry about his relationship?]

Jun Xi Zhu would never have imagined that the 'man with extraordinary abilities' of her imagination was actually standing in front of her!

She softly smiled. Then, her body floated away like the gently drifting black mist. And, she disappeared from the front of Chu Yang without a trace.

After that, Jun Lu Lu gently released Mo Qing Wu from behind the curtains. Then, she quietly disappeared as well.

It seemed that the emotions that had been suppressed since ages had now broken out, "Elder Brother Chu Yang..." her voice was so loud that it almost damaged her throat!

"Qing Wu?" Chu Yang's body shook. He quickly turned his head, and was pleasantly surprised.

He saw a delicate and charming silhouette rushing over towards him. She rushed half-way and swiftly jumped in order to throw herself at him.

Chu Yang subconsciously opened his arms. His eyes couldn't help but turn somewhat red.

A burst of fragrance came over, and he felt something soft in his arms. Then, her soft body twined over his body like an octopus. Mo Qing Wu firmly buried her little head in his chest. She felt very happy, but she also felt very sad at the same time. However, she was content in this moment. She put on a sad expression, and her tone changed, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... you have come, boohoo..."

She couldn't even finish her sentence before she broke into tears.

Her small nose was opening and closing as she was avidly breathing to take-in Chu Yang's smell. And, she felt so happy that she wanted to cry. She felt a pain in her heart because of this happiness... [For how long I have longed for this hug...? How may time have I dreamed about it?]

Chu Yang tightly held her in his arms. He couldn't speak either. His heart was beating intensely, [Little Wu, Qing Wu! I have come! I will never let you suffer again! My Qing Wu...]

A long time passed like this. Chu Yang's chest had been soaked in Mo Qing Wu's tears. Mo Qing Wu lifted her head, and foolishly looked at Chu Yang's face... as if it was some dream. She couldn't get a grip on this reality. She looked at him in a daze for a long time. She then lowered her head, and spoke as if she was talking in her sleep, "Elder Brother Chu Yang... I finally got to see you again. I am so happy..."

Chapter 484: Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'm so happy

"Qing Wu..." Chu Yang tightly hugged her soft body. His voice was quite hoarse since he was trembling in the bottom of his heart. In fact, it seemed that the voice of his soul had trembled and called out this name.

Mo Qing Wu buried her delicate head into Chu Yang's bosom. She tried her best to control herself. She didn't want to cry out loud, but the look on her face had turned into an extremely sad one. And, her tears silently streamed down her face.

She started to choke on her emotions, and even felt somewhat dizzy.

Chu Yang felt the cloth on his chest rapidly soaking in Mo Qing Wu's tears. And, the range of that soaking was rapidly expanding as well. Mo Qing Wu's body gently shivered in his embrace. But, he didn't say a word. He firmly gritted his teeth, and held her in his embrace even more tightly.

[She must have gone through so much suffering this year, ah...]

[She needs to vent out her pent up emotions at this moment!]

[Give vent to the grievances in her heart.]

Chu Yang knew this. So, he didn't wish to ask her anything at the moment. If he asked now... Mo Qing Wu would only feel more pain later. So, he let her cry in his arms. And, he felt a cherishing feeling in his heart since she was in his bosom...

Chu Yang quietly kept holding her. He didn't speak anything. A long while passed like this, and the shivering of Mo Qing Wu's body eventually subsided. Then, her throat issued a groaning sound... as if she was choking. After that, she gently coughed a few times in Chu Yang's bosom.

Chu Yang could feel the breath Mo Qing Wu's mouth was puffing out. It felt warm against his skin.

She trembled in his embrace with her head lowered. At last, she removed her head from Chu Yang's bosom with a rustling sound. But, she continued to hold him tightly. Then, she freed a hand and silently extended it to wipe her tears.

Her movements were very gentle and slow. It seemed that she feared that Chu Yang would find out that she was wiping her tears. She didn't want Chu Yang to look at her in tears after the long separation of more than a year.

She wanted to be happy. She wanted to smile at Elder Brother Chu Yang. However, she couldn't help but shed tears... She shed tears of happiness. She shed tears of grievance. She shed tears of sadness. And, she shed tears because she had finally met him after a long time...

She rubbed her eyes hard in an attempt to wipe her tears off. After that, she lifted her head, and smiled at Chu Yang. She wanted to say, [Elder Brother Chu Yang, I've missed you so much.]

She wanted to expose that happy-smile of hers that Elder Brother Chu Yang liked. She wanted to expose the smile that would tell Elder Brother Chu Yang – [Elder Brother Chu Yang, I've longed for you for so long. But, I'm fine because you have come. So, I feel good... in fact, the best... regardless of what I have been through...]

However, more and more tears came streaming down as she rubbed her eyes... And, she couldn't clean her eyes as a result.

She became somewhat flustered. In fact, she also began to hate herself for this. [Why are you crying? Don't cry, Little Wu. Elder Brother Chu Yang has come. So, why are you still crying? You're safe now. You'll be alright. You have Elder Brother Chu Yang at your side. No one can hurt you now...] She tried hard to convince herself. But, it seemed impossible for her to stop her tears...

She eventually gave up, and stopped trying. And, she allowed her tears to flow unrestrained. She spoke as she sobbed, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'm sorry for you have to see me crying like this..."

Chu Yang gently caressed her long hair. And, he spoke with a somewhat astringent look in his eyes, "Just cry if you want to... Elder Brother Chu Yang is here with you. My Qing Wu, I will always like you. It doesn't matter if you cry or smile... I will always love you..."

His voice hadn't even faded away when he heard a 'boohoo' sound. Mo Qing Wu opened her mouth, and started crying loudly. She cried as if her heart had been ripped out. It seemed as if she felt deeply heartbroken...

"Boohoo... Elder Brother Chu Yang, I've missed you so much. Boohoo, I even dreamed about you the other day... boohoo..."

Mo Qing Wu was sobbing and crying. She was wiping her tears with Chu Yang's lapel while she was speaking her heart out in front of him. She couldn't think about anything else in this moment. She had thrown away the pain that had made her suffer in the back of her mind. And, she only wanted Elder Brother Chu Yang to know how much she missed him, and how much she had longed for him...

[I have longed for this embrace of Elder Brother Chu Yang's... this is the only thing in the world that makes my heart feel secure...]

Chu Yang held Mo Qing Wu, and slowly took a few steps. He then sat down in Jun Xi Zhu's wooden armchair. After that, he made her soft and delicate small body kneel, and sit on his thighs. Then, he tenderly looked at Mo Qing Wu as she continued to sob while she told him everything. Her rosy little mouth looked sad and flat. She had a look of grievance on her face. She was telling him everything very carefully. In fact, it seemed that she feared that Elder Brother Chu Yang would get bored...

Gradually... her cautiousness disappeared, and only the sadness and longing remained thereafter...

Her sadness also disappeared as time passed, and only a strong feeling of longing remained. It was as if Mo Qing Wu hadn't felt grievances and pain in this time period of more than a year. It was as if she had only felt longing...

And nothing else...

Mo Qing Wu had kept her head lowered while she was speaking. However, she slowly and courageously began to raise her head at this time, and looked towards Chu Yang. Her eyes were full of tears. She still had a sad expression in the depths of her eyes. But, it slowly began to turn into shyness and cheerfulness...

Mo Qing Wu's tears eventually came to a stop. And, she looked towards Chu Yang in a daze. Then, she wrapped her hands around Chu Yang's neck. Her face slowly turned red, while her eyes had swollen-up like peach. She bit her lips and timidly asked, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I don't look ugly, right?"

Chu Yang shook his head with all his might, "Of course not. My Qing Wu always looks the best. Elder Brother Chu Yang can never get enough of you..."

Mo Qing Wu felt relieved, and a smile blossomed on her face. She then gently placed her face on Chu Yang's chest. She lowered her head, and spoke in a satisfied manner, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'm so happy. I'm so happy..."

Then, she closed her eyes, and listened to Chu Yang's heartbeats. She felt the warmth of his aura. And, she gently curled up in his embrace like a little kitten. Then, the corners of her mouth slowly exposed a genuine smiling expression. Her little mouth had curled up into the shape of true happiness!

[There's no need to be afraid... nor is there a need to panic. I don't need to worry now. I don't need to feel sad anymore... Elder

Brother Chu Yang has come back...]

[There's no need to worry that someone would snatch my things. I don't need to worry that I would be sent to someone to become a concubine. I don't need to worry that people would look down on me... or abandon me...]

[Elder Brother Chu Yang will protect me! He definitely will!]

[Everything is fine now!]

Chu Yang felt tranquil and content in his heart. He had hugged her delicate and soft little body. And, it seemed that he felt like his life was finally whole in this moment.

"Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'm very happy," he repeated this sentence silently in his heart, "I am also very happy. I also feel full of energy when you're in my arms. I'm happy! I'm very happy..."

He recalled his previous life when Mo Qing Wu was weakly snuggled up in his arms. She had said, "I am more attractive than your sword." And then, he recalled the sentence she had spoken a moment ago, [I'm very happy...]

Chu Yang felt as if his previous life and his current life had converged together. His mind churned over, and became bizarre and full of colors. It seemed like he had returned to that sorrowful moment when they were in the bamboo forest in his previous life. Then, he suddenly came out of that thought... as if he had woken up from a dream.

Chu Yang suddenly felt satisfied when he sensed the warmth of her soft body in his bosom. He silently thought, "Qing Wu... I want Qing Wu as my partner if there's a next life... I'm content with her. I always want to be with you... I will always be with you, Wu..."

[I don't have any regrets now!]

He tenderly bowed his head, and looked at the red clothes on Mo Qing Wu's body. Her hair was gently draped over her shoulder. That butterfly made of red cloud steel glittered on her head. In

fact, she hadn't worn any other accessory or jewelry apart from this butterfly...

Her long eyelashes were spread out, and they looked similar to the wings of a butterfly that had gotten tired of flying and had settled down to rest... to rest in the warmth of his bosom...

Mo Qing Wu was content in this moment. So, she happily sighed. She slightly moved, and held Chu Yang's strong arm. After that, her body wiggled a bit as she changed her posture. Then, she again tightly hugged him. She didn't wish to let go of him at this moment...

Chapter 485: “Snatch the Wife, Snatch the Wife…”

The sun was setting in the western sky. The colorful rays of sunlight had illuminated the forest that was situated in the mountainous ravine. The scene was overflowing with brilliant lights and vibrant colors.

Chu Yang was carrying Mo Qing Wu in his arms as he walked. There was a smile on his face. It seemed as if this beautiful scene had come straight out of some fairy tale. His black robe was fluttering in the wind. His stature was tall. The red-dressed Mo Qing Wu was curled up in his arms.

The sunshine of the horizon was imbuing a golden tinge to the figures of Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu. It seemed like a heartwarming spectacle — at least to Mo Tian Ji’s eyes.

This feeling was so harmonious, and so touching.

It seemed as if Mo Qing Wu was a part of Chu Yang’s body. She wouldn’t get down no matter what he said. She would look up and smile at Chu Yang from time to time. Then, she’d lower head for a while. Then, she would raise her head again, and would smile at him again. There was always a radiant smile on her face. Moreover, it was a smile of satisfaction.

Mo Tian Ji just stood there looking dumbfounded.

He had been waiting here for an entire afternoon. And, he had been burning with impatience that entire time. However, he was touched as soon as he saw Chu Yang coming out with Mo Qing Wu in his arms.

He was no longer anxious in that moment.

Never ever ever… had he seen his little sister so happy… so happy that she was smiling from the bottom of her heart… as if her heart was filled with joy and satisfaction!

Mo Tian Ji also felt contentment when he saw her like this. He had been waiting anxiously for an entire afternoon. But, his anxiety seemed to have disappeared without a trace in this moment.

"Brother Mo, I am taking Little Wu with me," Chu Yang looked at Mo Tian Ji, and said in a heavy tone.

Mo Qing Wu raised her head in panic when she heard the two words ‘Brother Mo’. She turned her head and saw her own brother, Mo Tian Ji. Her eyes couldn’t help but turn red. She gently bit her lip and lowered her gaze.

"Little Wu..." Mo Tian Ji stepped forward and spoke in a trembling voice.

Mo Qing Wu continued to bite her lip for a while. Then, she somehow brought herself to say, "Second Brother..."

"Little Wu, do you want to come with me... or go with Brother Chu?" Mo Tian Ji asked as he dotingly looked at his sister, "Second Brother will also protect you."

"I want to go with Elder Brother Chu Yang," Mo Qing Wu replied without the slightest hesitation.

The look in Mo Tian Ji’s eyes turned gloomy.

"I am leaving." Chu Yang looked at Mo Tian Ji, "Brother Mo, don’t miss this opportunity if you want to control the Mo Clan."

"Yes." Mo Tian Ji agreed at first. But then, he suddenly called out, "Wait a moment."

After that, he ran to catch up to them. He looked at Mo Qing Wu and said, "Little sister, I wanted to ask you something, but I never got a chance. Can I ask you now?"

"What?" Mo Qing Wu was nipping at her rosy lips. The radiance of her eyes made Mo Tian Ji have a strange heartache.

"Why have you suddenly estranged your Second Brother?" Mo

Tian Ji asked in an anguished tone, "Second Brother is very uncomfortable in his heart."

Mo Qing Wu nipped at her lip. One could clearly see that she was biting firmly with her teeth. She looked at Mo Tian Ji with a complicated look in her eyes and said in a low voice, "I have always wanted to ask Second Brother... why didn't you come to see me on the day of clan meeting?"

Mo Tian Ji was startled. He suddenly raised his head to look at her.

However, Mo Qing Wu further asked, "Why did you tell them about my saber at that time?"

Mo Tian Ji was stumped for words. He only felt bitter and astringent in his heart. He had a thousand words to say, but he just couldn't get them out...

"The clan will marry me off once I go back. They are going to get me engaged. And, you are the first one to come to pick me up..." Mo Qing Wu angrily said, "Second Brother, don't you know what I will have to face after I go back?"

Mo Tian Ji felt as if he had been struck by lightning. He took three steps back in succession! He had finally realized where he had gone wrong.

[My fault is... I don't explain things! I have never explained the things I have done.]

[Mo Qing Wu has raised three matters. I didn't dare to see her back then because I didn't have the guts to see my little sister's sad face. But, I didn't realize that it was also the moment when she was feeling the most helpless. And, that was the moment she needed someone the most to look after her. One could tell at a glance that she was fighting an inner battle. So, she would have felt a lot better if someone had been by her side.]

[I had revealed the saber's existence because that was the final

effort on my part to save little sister from losing her status in the clan... that was my last resort to get her some attention from the clan. But, it backfired and little sister was left with nothing. She had placed all her hopes and desires on that saber at that time. It was like her psychological support. But, it also got taken away in a ruthlessly manner because of me...]

[And, now I have come to pick her up to take far away with me. I don't intend to take her back to the clan since I don't want her to face that cruel fate. But, she seems to have misunderstood that as well... because I didn't explain clearly...]

[She instead thinks that I want to take her back to that living hell...]

[Who can be blame for this?]

[Is it because little sister is too sensitive? But... would I be insensitive if I were to be in her place? How can one possibly be insensitive under such circumstances?]

Chu Yang sighed and said, "Qing Wu, your second brother... really loves you. His love for you is genuine. It doesn't have the least bit of pretense. He wants you to be well... but, your second brother has a habit of not explaining things clearly after he has done a good deed. This is your second brother's shortcoming... you must believe your second brother."

Mo Qing Wu lowered head. Her long hair covered her face as he nodded gently.

Mo Tian Ji looked at Chu Yang in a grateful manner, and expressed gratitude again and again, "Thank you... Thank you... Brother Chu... Thank you very much..."

"No need to thank me... it's no big deal. Especially because it's a good deed..." Chu Yang insipidly replied, "Brother Mo, it's good that you do good deeds, but not saying it won't do you any good. This weakness... can be detrimental to a Clan Lord who's in-

command of a clan."

Mo Tian Ji nodded deeply with a pensive look on his face.

[I am obvious more powerful than Mo Tian Yun, but there are still many people in the clan who support Mo Tian Yun. Ultimately, it's because of this point... Mo Tian Yun speaks openly, and wins over people's heart. And, I have always neglected this aspect.]

[I also have die-hard followers on my side, but their number is far too small. So, I have fallen into a disadvantageous situation!]

Mo Tian Ji understood this point, and everything became clear in his heart.

[If one does something... then it would be better to say it. Such acknowledgement would inevitably turn one into an unpleasant and mean human being, but at least one would be honest.]

He wanted to express gratitude after having realized this point. So, he turned his head, but found that Chu Yang had already walked more than hundred feet with Mo Qing Wu in his arms. So, he hastily shouted, "Brother Chu, Little Wu, I will come to see you whenever I have time!"

Mo Qing Wu raised her head from Chu Yang's bosom. She peeked over his shoulder, and saw her second brother standing afar. And, he was waving his hand at her. The look in his eyes clearly indicated his reluctance to part with her. She was touched by this. She extended her small hand from over Chu Yang's shoulder, and gently waved back a few times.

Mo Tian Ji immediately smiled at this, "Thank you! Little Sister!"

A smile bloomed on Mo Qing Wu's face. Then, she again hid her head in Chu Yang's bosom.

Mo Tian Ji heaved a sigh of relief. He smiled gently at first. Then, he softly moved his hand, and brought a purple jade flute over to his lips. A 'woo woo' flute's tune suddenly fluttered about in the

forest.

Mo Qing Wu listened to her second brother's flute tune whilst being in Chu Yang's arms, and felt as if she was floating high up in the clouds. [I feel like the happiest woman in the whole world...]

... ...

Next day...

The color of the sky seemed to be particularly bright early in the morning.

Mo Qing Wu got up early, and cheerfully ran into Chu Yang's room. She saw him lying in bed, and couldn't help but be relieved. She was scared that yesterday's events had been a dream...

However, she covered her cute little nose with her hand soon after, "It's so stinky in here... Elder Brother Chu Yang's foot odor can kill a person..." She strode out of the door like an arrow, and breathed a few times outside. However, she was reluctant to leave. So, she stayed at the door. She squatted on the doorstep, and rested her chin on her hands. She then looked-on with her sparkling eyes.

"Stinky...?" Chu Yang turned somewhat gloomy. [I had even washed my feet properly before going to sleep last night...]

[Sigh, I don't know what to do about such feet of mine. I may wash them ten times at night, but they still stink the next morning...] He called that Mo Qing Wu's only disaffection towards him in his previous life was his smelly feet...

He couldn't help but smile at that thought. He crawled out of the bed and stood up. Then, he flipped over the quilt, and filled the entire room with that fragrance. Consequently, the dense smell spread out. Mo Qing Wu covered her nose and ran away, "Elder Brother Chu Yang, why did you do that...? This stench is killing me..."

Chu Yang burst into loud laughter.

… …

Various big clans had already been waiting in full swing battle formations. The gamble had ended, and everyone was waiting for the results.

No one was present in the middle portion of this huge arena. However, this empty portion was surrounded by a sea of people. It was a full house!

The best spot was located in the middle of the line of sight, and a big chunk of it had been occupied by the Dark Bamboo. There were teams of big aristocratic clans on both sides of Dark Bamboo. Then, there was a huge crowd of ordinary people. And, they were all anxiously waiting for this battle to commence.

Dong Wu Shang and the other clans' members were present in the south, while Gao Sheng and the other clans' people on his side were present on the opposite side. The four big clans in-charge of this gambling match were naturally present at a spot that was nearest to both the sides since it would allow them to observe the outcome of the battles with ease.

Everyone was apprehensive in their heart.

This wasn't just a gambling match. It actually involved the net worth of many people!

Chu Yang and Young Master Yu had betted 800 million, and Gao Sheng's compensation rate had become 1:1 due to that. So, the people who betted on Gao Sheng increased many folds… in just one day! In fact, a total amount of 100 million was betted on him yesterday alone!

Mo Tian Yun and the others would've been grinning from ear to ear if this sum had been collected earlier. However, at this time these four people would only say with a deep sigh, [it's just drizzle…]

'Thump Thump' the loud sounds of drumbeats shook the ground

and the sky. The competition was about to begin.

The Master of ceremonies was standing in the middle of the arena. He applied his vigor to his voice, and shouted, "Everyone! Silence!"

However, countless people suddenly clamored-up in unison as soon as he said "silence".

"Snatch the wife! Snatch the wife!" several people bellowed at the same time. They obviously seemed in high spirits...

"Snatch the wife! Snatch the wife..." more people bellowed together.

"Ahwooh... wife!" Luo Ke Di's strange shout resounded at a high pitch. Ji Mo got angry at this, and smacked him on his head, "What are you shouting for? That is my wife!"

Luo Ke Di smiled mischievously and replied, "Who among us would marry her?! Of course it's your wife and not mine..." Ji Mo raised his leg and kicked Luo Ke Di. And, Luo Ke Di let out a weird cry as he got kicked in the air like a ball.

Suddenly a burly figure jumped from the spectator's grandstand, and landed in the arena. The figure raised its hand, and roared like a thunderclap, "Hold on a minute. I have something to say!"

Everyone's attention turned towards this person... who was tall, had a strong build, and arms so thick that one could stand on them. This person's thighs were so muscular that it seemed as if they could run in a horse race! It seemed like a big guy who had an imposing appearance!

It's just that this person had a big bosom, and a big butt that was sticking up. It was actually a woman!

This competition's biggest gambling stake – Huyan Aobo! Young Miss Huyan had appeared on the stage!

She looked around in a majestic manner. The sounds of

drumbeats had been resounding a moment ago, but they suddenly came to a stop. No one knew what she was about to say…

Chapter 486: Gao Sheng, Do You Dare to Marry?

"Ladies and Gentlemen!" Huyan Aobo shouted as she cupped one fist in the other hand to salute everyone. She had done it in an extremely heroic manner. Any man would've appeared very majestic if he had been in her place. But, now that she was the one who had done it... cough cough, she also seemed majestic!

Ji Mo's eyes lit up. He grasped Chu Yang's arm and said, "Big Brother! That's my wife! Look at her... isn't she very stylish and sexy!"

Chu Yang felt dizzy as soon as he heard the words 'stylish and sexy'. He felt that his head was spinning. He nearly lost balance, and sat down his buttocks. But, he almost sat down on Mo Qing Wu by mistake.

Mo Qing Wu giggled and hugged him. She then peeked from the seam of Chu Yang's arm, and saw the mighty Huyan Aobo who had just arrived in the arena. She couldn't help but exclaim in surprise, "This Uncle is very burly."

Luo Ke Di suddenly laughed out loud with a 'pfff'. Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing were also smiling. Ji Zhu and Dong Wu Lei also burst into laughter. But, Ji Mo's complexion turned bitter, "My dear little girl, you must look closely... how is that an Uncle? That's your sister-in-law!"

"Sister-in-law...?" Mo Qing Wu cutely spoke, and didn't say anything further. However, she doubtfully looked at Ji Mo. She particularly looked at Ji Mo's eyes, and seemed to have found something. So, she nodded in a very seriously manner. Then, she moved close to Chu Yang's ear and whispered, "Brother Ji Mo's eyes are so small. It's not surprising that he can't see clearly..."

Chu Yang's entire body twitched.

Gao Sheng’s complexion had turned as black as charcoal on the other side of the arena.

"Gentlemen... it must be known to everyone that I’m the girl who this competition is happening for!" Huyan Aobo exhaled at once. And then, she continued in a majestic voice, "I am Huyan Aobo. I am also Gao Sheng’s fiancée. We have been engaged by our families since childhood."

The crowd gradually calmed down, and began listening to what the woman in the arena had to say.

"However... Gao Sheng doesn’t like me! He even ran away from home, and went to the Lower Three Heavens in order to avoid our marriage." Huyan Aobo said solemnly, "I am aware of the fact that I look very different from common girls. So, he can’t bring himself to like me. I – Huyan Aobo – understand that well! After all, all men want their women to be beautiful and petite. I’m not attractive, and I acknowledge that!"

Huyan Aobo continued in a loud voice, "It’s excusable that Gao Sheng escapes from our marriage because I am unattractive! I won’t blame him for that! I won’t hate him either! I too wouldn’t want such a wife if I were a man!"

"Isn’t that right, everyone?" Huyan Aobo roared.

No one from the crowd answered. Everyone was merely watching this woman give her speech. And, everyone felt very heavy in their heart.

"Therefore, I hadn’t held any hope regarding my marriage... until I met Ji Clan’s Second Young Master Ji Mo. And, I was dazzled by him. He reignited the hope in my heart. We fell in love with each other. So, I went back to my clan, and requested them to break the wedding contract with the Gao Clan."

Huyan Aobo said loudly, "I had thought that this matter would be successful... because why would Gao Sheng have escaped from our

marriage if he had intended to marry me? So, the dissolution of the marriage contract should've been inevitable and right.

"But, who would've thought that Gao Sheng would unexpectedly clamor-up that Ji Mo was attempting to snatch his love... snatch his wife. He couldn't stand the insult. So, he decided to fight a decisive battle. Well, that's the origin of this entire matter," Huyan Aobo laughed out loud, "Isn't this ridiculous?

"After that, this matter got bigger and bigger. It presently involves eight big clans, and thousands of heroes are eagerly looking forward to it!" Huyan Aobo laughed in a ridiculing manner and said, "Gao Sheng, you are quite the performer!"

Gao Sheng's complexion turned ashen. He cussed loudly in rage, "Sl*t!"

Huyan Aobo burst into a loud laughter. She suddenly turned to look in Gao Sheng's direction and spoke in a loud voice, "Gao Sheng, you said that Ji Mo wants to snatch your wife. Moreover, you didn't hesitate to carry out such a grand decisive battle for this reason. So, I presume that you like me a lot? Well, if that's the case... I'll marry you right now if you are willing! Are you willing to make me your wife? Do you dare to marry me?"

Gao Sheng's complexion turned deathly white. He looked at Huyan Aobo's tall and sturdy body, and swallowed his saliva with great difficulty.

"Gao Sheng, are you willing or not?!" Huyan Aobo laughed, "It's your turn to speak!"

Gao Sheng finally couldn't take it anymore, and replied in an angry tone, "You have already committed adultery Ji mo. How can I still want you to be my wife?"

Booing sounds sprang up from all directions in the big venue as soon as these words came out.

"You don't wish to marry her, but you still want to fight a

decisive battle over her? Is fighting a battle that amusing for you?" someone clamored loudly.

"Ha ha, that's really ridiculous. He wants to fight a decisive battle for a woman he doesn't want to marry. This lofty Young Master is truly out of the ordinary," someone taunted with all their heart.

"It's nothing more than a stunt to get some compensation... Such a woman holds no importance in the heart of Young Master Gao Sheng. But, he may achieve both fame and fortune if he can gain something by treading upon such a woman. Moreover, he may even attain the glorious image of a hero for centuries via this stunt. That's really pathetic," someone laughed heartily.

Huyan Aobo looked coldly at Gao Sheng. Then, she suddenly laughed and said, "I only wanted to say these few things about this matter. Dear Gentlemen, my speech is over. You may enjoy the show to your heart's content now. I – Huyan Aobo – am unattractive, but I didn't wish to be talked about as some loose and fickle woman! So, I wanted to share this much with everyone; that's all!"

"Young Miss Huyan, you are a nice girl who's honest about her feelings!" a big guy bravely stood up and spoke with a laugh, "I would have decided to go on stage and fight a decisive battle against Young Master Ji Mo if I didn't already have a wife and children... ha ha ha ha..."

The whole crowd gave a round of thunderous applause.

Ji Mo was dumbfounded. He apprehensively muttered to himself, "This is too much. She only used a few words to attract so many love rivals for me. What should I do?" a look of panic flashed across his face as he said this.

Dong Wu Shang, Gu Du Xing, and Luo Ke Di rolled their eyes at the same time. They looked towards the sky, and spoke in their heart, [this guy is truly a nut-job. We also appreciate Huyan Aobo's temperament, and her personality. But, please excuse our inability

to comply when it comes to marrying her and taking her as a wife...]

Mo Qing Wu's eyes sparkled. She pulled Chu Yang's arm, and whispered to him, "This Elder Sister is so lovable!"

Ji Mo suddenly enraptured at this time, and spoke in a delighted tone, "Yes, yes, even her stature is very good. Just think about it. One can have a sense of security even during tough times if one has such a wife."

Chu Yang painfully closed his eyes. He had a strong impulse to beat the sh*t out of Ji Mo...

Thankfully... the competition had begun...

The Master of Ceremonies announced loudly, "The competition among seven big clans... the first match — Dong Wu Shang versus Li Xiong Tu!"

Dong Wu Shang stood up, reached out with his hand, and took off the jet-black cape. It went floating in the air, and fell on the ground. His tall and majestic figure was exposed to everyone's eyes. The black saber stood erect behind his shoulder as he walked forward... one step at a time.

He suddenly faced upwards after he had reached halfway, and let out a loud laughter. However, his laughter sounded more like a thunderclap. Then, his roar resounded in all directions, "Li Xiong Tu! You give up and switch with Tu Qian Hao right now. There's still time! I'm afraid it will be too late for you to regret once my saber strikes!"

A loud and forthright laughter sounded on the opposite side. Li Xiong Tu's tall and burly body stood up. An intense fighting intention erupted in his eyes as he laughed and said, "Dong Wu Shang, are you scared of fighting me?"

A sharp light flashed in Dong Wu Shang's eyes as he said, "Fine then!"

These two were separated by several thousand feet as they looked at each other. But, they seemed to have the majestic presence of two armies. They simultaneously released their mountain-like auras, and their auras then clashed into each other. The desire to win rose in the hearts of both of them as they suddenly laughed out loud!

Chapter 487: Dong Wu Shang versus Li Xiong Tu!

Dong Wu Shang and Li Xiong Tu had a similarly heroic laughter. The figures of both men were equally tall and sturdy. Both of them – one from the right and the other from the left – rushed over from the spectator's grandstands at the same time. Their figures then flew and landed in the central area of the arena.

These two people looked very tiny in the middle of such a gigantic arena. But, one could clearly feel that the man on the left had an aura as dominating as that of a mountain, while the man on the right had an aura that could shake the earth!

Dong Wu Shang's tyrannical aura was soaring up to the sky, while Li Xiong Tu's heroic demeanor was simply unparalleled! And, they were going to clash in the first match. It could be said that they were evenly matched. So, this match would be like a clash between two geniuses!

Chu Yang opened his eyes wide since he was quite excited.

These two men had the most tyrannical aura among the 12 most influential figures of the future generation. And, they were finally going to clash here! So, Chu Yang had some expectations from this battle. It was entirely possible to determine the direction of the future development of these two men today. After all, these two influential figures of the future generation would begin to shape the achievements of their lifetime from this point forth!

It would take time to describe the scene, but it happened instantly. Dong Wu Shang came flying as his body issued a whistling sound. His hand reached out to his back, and pulled out his black saber with a 'clang' while he was in midair! This action made the spectators cheer with excitement.

His body was tall and sturdy. And, it left people feeling as if he

was as motionless as a mountain even though he was in midair. He stretched out his right hand. And, he did it in slow-motion... so much so that everyone could see it clearly. However, this very slow action of his saber looked very stylish. In fact, every movement of the saber was very detailed, neat, and meticulous!

He lifted his hand, and pointed it towards the sky. Then, his hand went over his shoulder while the saber still remained therein. Each and every movement was clearly discernible. And, it left the spectators to feel overwhelmed. In fact, it felt a little uncomfortable... but also extremely mysterious.

Then, the saber-point drew a long and heaven-shaking rainbow!

After that, Dong Wu Shang slashed the saber down, and the saber issued a black light. Then, Dong Wu Shang suddenly changed his direction as he landed. And, he transformed into a long and black rainbow along with the saber. He then ferociously flew towards Li Xiong Tu!

Dong Wu Shang had changed his direction in midway. But, his speed had become much faster as a result of this! The saber light pierced the air like a black dragon, and issued intermittent thunderous sounds! The sleeves of his robe issued loud 'crackling' sounds as he streaked across the sky!

Li Xiong Tu also changed his movements in accordance with Dong Wu Shang's. He shouted out loudly. Then, he rolled his body, and dazzling sword-light suddenly emerged. After that, the sword-energy spread out like a thick drum. And, his entire body exuded brilliant rays of light. Then, he changed his direction in midair, and madly flew towards Dong Wu Shang like a meteor with a trailing tail!

It seemed that both of them had adopted a similar strategy by chance – Strike first with the power of thunderbolt and land a heavy blow to the opponent!

Chu Yang had attentively watched this scene unfold. Then, he

gently heaved a sigh of relief and softly muttered, "Wu Shang will win this match." Gu Du Xing and Ji Mo glanced at him as they heard this.

The bodies of the two men were gradually approaching each other in the arena like lightning.

They had already arrived in the sky above the arena!

Dong Wu Shang issued a fierce ‘fighting intention’ from his eyes. He shouted loudly, "Aah!" his voice was like a thunderbolt. And, the saber also fell like a thunder. He fiercely slashed-down his saber, and it seemed as if he had intended to chop-off a mountain!

Li Xiong Tu didn’t say a word. But, he continued to fly towards his opponent in a calm manner whilst his brilliant sword-light seemed to be blazing!

"Bang!"

Their majestic bodies collided in midair. The saber and the sword clashed with each other. Their legs also moved rapidly as they kicked each other. And, they had exchanged thirteen saber-blows, thirteen sword-blows, and nine kicks in an instant!

Whirling shock-waves spread around with a ‘Bang’! Dong Wu Shang shouted out loud, and his black hair suddenly flew upwards. His body went backwards, and somersaulted twice as he withdrew. Li Xiong Tu groaned on the opposite side, while his fine beard fluttered in the air. His movements were also similar to those of Dong Wu Shang’s. And, he also went tumbling high in the sky, and withdrew thirty feet away!

Both the men were about to fall to the ground. Dong Wu Shang suddenly pointed his black saber downwards. He exerted a little bit of strength, and the tip of the saber touched the ground and went in a little bit. Dong Wu Shang’s body that was about to fall at this time. However, he instead sprang up by leveraging support from the saber, and flew upwards like an arrow. After that, he and the

saber-light transformed into a rainbow again, and went flying to towards Li Xiong Tu.

The dragon-like beard on Li Xiong Tu's face fluttered in the wind. He inserted the tip of his sword into the ground, and his body bounced up in the air like a ball along with the sword. Then, he landed and got transformed into a big and white dazzling disk along with the sword-light. After that, he proceeded to greet the incoming Dong Wu Shang!

An intense light flashed in Dong Wu Shang's eyes. He suddenly moved his left hand to his back. After that, he slightly raised the saber he held in his right hand. Then, his body changed its posture in midair, and he assumed a forward leaning posture. And, he fiercely slashed his saber onto that disk of sword-light with incredible momentum!

The wildness of this saber-light left the spectators with a desire to close their eyes since they couldn't bear to see it unfold!

A loud 'clang' echoed! And, the disk-like sword-light was immediately scattered.

Dong Wu Shang slashed his saber a second time!

Again, a loud sound echoed!

Dong Wu Shang's right arm started to move as swiftly as a whirlwind. He would ferociously slash down his black saber like a thunderbolt. Then, he would lift it up again, and would slash it down again...

Barbaric! Yes, Dong Wu Shang's moves were extremely barbaric! They were completely berserk!

Everything was useless in the face of such a barbaric attack... no matter what kind of fancy technique or style was used! One couldn't even imagine fighting with him one-on-one. One could only hope to exploit that slight moment of gap between two consecutive strikes for a counterattack... if one could block his

attacks in the first place. Otherwise, one would only get hit by his barbaric attacks, and would eventually get chopped into dregs!

Ding Ding Ding...

The sounds of hammering echoed endlessly!

Li Xiong Tu's sword-light had eventually been damaged beyond description!

Li Xiong Tu had always been famous for his strength. In fact, the sword in his hand had also been specially forged with Star Iron! Its weight was more than fifty kilograms. Only Li Xiong Tu had the strength to use it properly. Therefore, Li Xiong Tu had always been intensely proud of his own strength. However, his pride had turned into embarrassment while facing an overwhelming opponent like Dong Wu Shang.

Dong Wu Shang was unreasonable. His fighting method was brutal. Li Xiong Tu also had a similar fighting style, yet he still felt sullen at this time. The men who Li Xiong Tu had fought in the past had always been left to feel something similar. But, it was his turn today!

Dong Wu Shang's face was callous. He didn't have any expressions on his face. His attacks were like violent storms. Their bodies continued to fall down unceasingly. But, they kept clashing amidst their fall. Dong Wu Shang didn't use any fancy technique or any skilled moves. He merely slashed nineteen saber blows with brute strength until they landed on the ground!

The two men landed on the ground with a loud 'Bang' as the final slash of the saber was unleashed. Consequently, the saber and the sword clashed with each other!

Dust rose up from the ground along with the explosion.

The several thousand spectators felt their eardrums vibrate!

Dong Wu Shang stood motionless on the ground — with tip of his saber pointed forward. His vision was cold and sharp. He stood

there expressionless. He was watching his opponent like an eagle.

Li Xiong Tu's body had been sent out flying like an arrow… along with his sword. But, he landed on his feet, and bounced off the ground once again. Then, he went flying seventy or eighty feet away, and landed on the ground with a 'thud' sound. He then sprang in the air, spun once, and stood firmly on the ground. His complexion turned dark red at first. Then, it turned pale.

He raised his head, and looked towards Dong Wu Shang. He had a solemn look in his eyes!

He had sustained serious internal injuries during this fierce and violent attack!

Dong Wu Shang was four or five years younger that Li Xiong Tu. So, it was hard to believe that the former had actually defeated him. In fact, Dong Wu Shang had even surpassed him in terms of strength!

This ferocious attack of Dong Wu Shang's had left the audience to hold their breaths. In fact, their hearts had almost jumped out from their throats!

It was too wild! This fighting style was too violent! But, it was extremely enjoyable at the same time!

Chu Yang had been watching the fight with rapt attention. He felt relieved in his heart. Dong Wang Shang's victory was certain at this moment!

His strength and his power weren't too different from those of Li Xiong Tu's. Their spiritual powers were evenly matched as well! But, Dong Wu Shang's strength had dominated because he had the courage to risk his life! He had dominated because he was very daring! Moreover, Dong Wu Shang's aura was fierce and indomitable. Li Xiong Tu's aura was also very powerful and overbearing. But, he didn't have the kind of recklessness that Dong Wu Shang possessed!

Most importantly... Dong Wu Shang's saber was more than five times as heavy as the sword of his opponent!

In fact, Chu Yang was quite surprised to see that Li Xiong Tu's sword hadn't been broken yet!

The two men looked at each other. They then shouted loudly, and rushed forth to fight.

"Du Xing, how would you handle Wu Shang if you were fighting with him?" Chu Yang asked Gu Du Xing. Chu Yang was very relaxed at this moment. So, he took the advantage of this opportunity to school Gu Du Xing and the others since it was a rare chance to learn. And, Gu Du Xing, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo immediately erected their ears to listen.

Gu Du Xing smiled, "Li Xiong Tu and I have different styles of fighting. I wouldn't engage with Wu Shang in a direct manner when he'd launch his intensive attacks. I would rather use my swift agility skills to tackle his unparalleled might. Then, I would exhaust him by making him expend his strength. And then, I would defeat him."

Chu Yang nodded and replied, "This method of yours is very good when it comes to dealing with others. For instance, it is easy to defeat Li Xiong Tu using this method. But, you can't deal with Wu Shang using this method. In fact, you'd only end up wasting your strength several times more if you did this."

"Why?" Gu Du Xing was puzzled.

"Dong Wu Shang's saber is heavy. So, it has its superiority. In fact, it's not just heavy — it is extremely heavy! Its weight isn't easy to get hold of. But, it forms a kind of inertia that you can exploit once you master it. This kind of inertia needs a little manipulation, but you can bring out the saber's maximum strength! This is the advantage of heavy weapons."

Chu Yang smiled, "You must've seen that Wu Shang displays the

maximum power of his saber in every attack. But, he doesn't spend much of his energy in doing so. Moreover, his attacks become more powerful and quicker this way! You can try to save your strength while hoping that he gets exhausted, but both of you will end up run out of energy at the end of it. Maybe both of you would get injured and lose to each other. The only difference would be that... your injuries would be lighter, while his' would be more serious because of his reckless fighting style.

"And, if the battle is of life and death — you would end up being severely injured, and he would die!" Chu Yang said, "And, only you – Gu Du Xing – among the experts on the same level can achieve this result."

Gu Du Xing pondered with concentration.

"The best way to deal with Dong Wu Shang's fighting style is... don't make him go berserk. Crush him down before it happens! And, the battle would be over soon," Chu Yang said.

"How can one crush him down from the start?" Gu Du Xing wrinkled his brows and thought hard. Then, his eyes suddenly lit up, "Dong Wu Shang's power is in his saber. Therefore, approach him by making use of the agility skill, and attack his wrist before he can unleash his crazy attacks. The wrist with which he maneuvers his saber is his fatal weak-point."

"Yes!" Chu Yang nodded, "But, it would be pointless for Li Xiong Tu to think of this in the current situation because the game is already in Dong Wu Shang's hands. Dong Wu Shang's power has already reached to its peak at this time! On the other hand, Li Xiong Tu's strength has already been reduced to half."

"Li Xiong Tu could've brought the match to a draw. But, he had been blinded by his belief in his own strength. So, he eventually has to suffer a loss now. Therefore, self-confidence is important. But, it shouldn't turn into over-confidence. One becomes arrogant if they are over-confident. And, arrogance often leads one to suffer

a loss." Gu Du Xing said with a sigh, "Just like the present Li Xiong Tu."

Chapter 488: Gu Du Xing, A Decisive Battle?

Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing were completely different. Gu Du Xing could be considered an inborn swordsman. But, Dong Wu Shang would undoubtedly be an inborn war-general! He was a trailblazer; through and through!

Chu Yang nodded, and looked to the front. Some people were already whispering things in each other's ears. They seemed to be somewhat fretful. They obviously hadn't imagined that Dong Wu Shang would be so overwhelmingly powerful and bold! Dong Wu Shang's reputation had become prominent in recent times, but he was much younger than Li Xiong Tu. Who could have thought that Dong Wu Shang would be able to push Li Xiong Tu into such a disadvantageous position?

The gamblers had especially fixed their eyes on the arena. They were very nervous. In fact, they couldn't even dare to gasp for breath.

However, a few people had gathered together, and had started to talk to each other in whispers. These people were the top members of the Gao Clan, the Li Clan, and the Tu Clan. And, they were looking at the arena with a somewhat heavy expression in their eyes.

A light flashed in Chu Yang's eyes. He thought to himself, [I see... So, that's how it is. These clans want to form alliance with each other with the help of this contest. They don't even care about the outcome. This is probably the reason why the Gao Clan has made this battle into such a big event...]

[It doesn't matter if Dong Wu Shang wins or loses. The Dong Clan and the Li Clan will definitely become rivals after this battle. These two clans are equally colossus. And, this rivalry will get worse and worse with time. And, Li Clan will have to lean against the support of powerful allies to get help in the hour of need if that

happens!]

On the other side, Jun Xi Zhu gently sighed from the secrecy of her black veil and said, "Li Xiong Tu will lose." Young Master Yu was standing with his hands crossed behind his back on her side. And, he was watching the match without blinking his eyes. He slowly nodded and added, "But, both of them have amazing strength."

Jun Xi Zhu thought for a while and said, "Dong Wu Shang seems stronger." Then, Young Master Yu said, "Li Xiong Tu made a strategic mistake. Li Xiong Tu may not get defeated if he had another match with Dong Wu Shang."

"But, Dong Wu Shang is five years younger than Li Xiong Tu." Jun Xi Zhu said, "You are only looking at his combat strength, and not considering this age factor. However, this is a very crucial point. In addition... you must pay attention to this point – Dong Wu Shang has started to progress rapidly since he has met Chu Yang! In other words, he wouldn't have been able to defeat Li Xiong Tu if he hadn't progressed so much in an insignificant period of more than a year.

"This is the key point." Jun Xi Zhu sighed and continued, "I am suddenly very interested in this King of Hell Chu."

Young Master Yu lightly nodded and spoke, "He's indeed a strange person. Moreover, he has so much potential that... it is frightening." Jun Xi Zhu's eyes lit-up at this remark, "Frightening?" She then pondered for a while and said, "Have you seen it in the past?"

Young Master Yu replied, "Yes." Suddenly, his figure distorted, and he disappeared from Jun Xi Zhu's side.

Jun Xi Zhu's eyes flashed. She whispered to herself, "Little Yu's agility skill of 'transcendent hidden shadow' has enhanced this much? What has he obtained to have stimulated such progress in his skill?" Jun Lu Lu faintly smiled at this remark, and a glint of

pride flashed in her eyes.

Young Master Yu arrived at Chu Yang's side. And, he saw that Mo Qing Wu was sitting in Chu Yang's lap. She was merrily peeling an orange. She stuffed a piece of the orange in Chu Yang's mouth, and then another piece in her own. She then puffed her cheeks and tenderly asked, "Sweet... isn't it sweet?"

Chu Yang moaned in satisfaction and replied, "It's very sweet. And, it has become even sweeter after touching Little Wu's hand."

"Hee hee..." Mo Qing Wu laughed in satisfaction, "Then, you eat this one. It's very sweet."

She again tore a piece of the orange, and put it in Chu Yang's mouth.

Chu Yang chewed the orange. He suddenly went absent-minded when he heard 'it's sweet'. Suddenly, a name surfaced at the bottom of his heart – Little Tian Tian...

He couldn't help but sigh...

The nearby space distorted, and Young Master Yu appeared beside him. He said, "Nice, nice... spending leisure time, are we?"

Chu Yang snorted and replied, "Your injuries have already healed?" Young Master Yu also snorted in reply. He then sat down on the empty seat next to Chu Yang and Mo Qing Wu. He then said, "Your injuries look good as well. They have healed so quickly!"

"Just like yours," Chu Yang winked.

Chaotic metal-clanging sounds were echoing from the arena. Dong Wu Shang's shouts had become more and more loud and majestic. Li Xiong Tu would also roar madly as he'd try to retrieve the lost ground.

Only two men were battling at this time. But, the battle was so violent that the imposing aura of these two men appeared similar

to that of a mighty army of thousands of men!

Dong Wu Shang suddenly let out a loud roar!

Then, the saber-light and sword-shadows violently clashed into each other!

Chu Yang closed his eyes and sighed, "Li Xiong Tu has lost!"

Young Master Yu nodded.

The saber-light and the sword-shadows converged in the arena. Dong Wu Shang stood perfectly straight in the arena. A waterfall of blood had started to flow-out from his shoulder. Li Xiong Tu fell back in a staggering manner. The veins on his forehead had bulged to an extent that they were visible to the naked eye. There was a terrible slash wound on his chest. He moved over a hundred feet back, and landed. He hastily lowered his sword to the ground to leverage support. However, his sword suddenly broke off with a ‘snap’ sound!

This sword and Dong Wu Shang’s black saber had clashed several hundred times by now. So, it was already past its durability limit, and had been riddled with scars. Thus, it broke off when Li Xiong Tu tried to take its support.

Li Xiong Tu staggered at first. Then, he sat down on the ground. He bellowed loudly, and gasped for breath. After that, he suddenly exposed a bitter smile. He then looked up, and shouted loudly, "It was fun!" he further continued, "I surrender!"

Dong Wu Shang’s face was expressionless. He lowered his saber, and showed courtesy to the opponent. After that, he turned around to walk away.

"Dong Wu Shang, I will definitely seek you out for a payback. So, you don’t need to be lenient towards me."

Dong Wu Shang replied without turning his head back, "Next time — I will kill you!"

Li Xiong Tu laughed in a heroic manner. He then said in a loud voice, "Dammit! I got defeated! And, the opponent even flaunted his kindness by not killing me. I have been defeated in its truest meaning today!" Then, he turned over, and looked at the Master of the Ceremony in a devilish manner, "Hurry up and announce the result dammit. Motherfu*ker, is it fun to see me sitting here in a mess?"

The Master of Ceremony got startled. And, he hastily announced in a loud voice, "First match of the contest between the seven great aristocratic clans – Dong Wu Shang versus Li Xiong Tu – is won by Dong Wu Shang!" He announced this, and hurriedly went to support Li Xiong Tu. He lent an arm to support him since Li Xiong Tu didn't have least bit of strength in his body. But, he still laughed as he walked away. In fact, he continued to shout, "It was fun! This fight was truly fun!"

Young Master Yu said, "What do you say?"

Chu Yang obviously understood what he had meant. He replied, "It was very good. Dong Wu Shang's victory was expected. But, Li Xiong Tu hasn't admitted defeat in his heart. It's quite rare."

Young Master Yu laughed, "You genuinely understood what I had meant. An ordinary man would've lost his will to fight with Dong Wu Shang again if he had lost the way Li Xiong Tu did today. Let's ignore the firm determination of Li Xiong Tu's martial way for a moment. He has lost to Dong Wu Shang, who uses a similar fighting style. But, this has actually become a good thing for his progress since he didn't lose his heart."

Chu Yang nodded. [He is one of the twelve influential figures of the future generation in the Middle Three Heavens. How can he lose heart that easily?]

The complexion of the three men – Ao Xie Yun, Xie Dan Qiong, and Ou Du Xiao – had turned heavy on the other side. Ao Xie Yun softly sighed and said, "What do you guys think?"

Xie Dan Qiong felt embarrassed as he forced a smile, "I could've used my Jasper Flower Attack, and could've attempted to bring the match to a draw if I had fought with Dong Wu Shang instead. But, the consequences would've been inevitable. I would've died, and he would've been seriously injured. But, it would be equivalent to my defeat!"

Ou Du Xiao nodded and said, "I could kill him. But, I would have to use my poison! However, there's a possibility that I may not get enough time to use the poison. And, I would get chopped by his saber first if that happens. So, I'm not sure whether I would be able to use my poison technique in the face of such attacks."

Ao Xie Yun nodded, "Dong Wu Shang has become one of the top-tier experts after this fight." He pondered for a while and added, "I would certainly win if I had a fight with Dong Wu Shang... but, I would have to pay a big price for that. It is hard to imagine that Dong Wu Shang has become so dreadful now!"

Dong Wu Shang came back with large strides. And, Luo Ke Di greeted him with a bear hug.

"Second match! Gao Liang of Gao Clan versus Luo Ke Wu of Luo clan!" the voice of the Master of the Ceremony spread across the distance.

Luo Ke Wu laughed out loud. He then looked at Luo Ke Di in an apologetic manner. After that, he stood up and walked to the arena.

"Gao Liang is a junior from a branch clan of the Gao Clan. He was originally a slave in the Gao Clan. But, they realized that Gao Liang possessed exceptional aptitude. So, the clan bestowed him with the 'Gao' surname, and trained him vigorously. He's a thirty-two-years-old First Grade Sword King at present." Luo Ke Di said with a solemn countenance, "I'm afraid that my elder brother will probably lose this match."

Chu Yang squinted. He looked at the two men who stood in the

arena. He then spoke with a sigh, "It's not like he will 'probably' lose... his defeat is certain! Luo Ke Di, your elder brother... doesn't have a heart to fight, ah. He can bring the fight to draw if he wants to. But, the problem is... he doesn't want to fight."

Luo Ke Di sighed, and lowered his head.

Luo Ke Di knew his elder brother's way of thinking. Luo Ke Wu had never considered him as a threat to his position in the clan since he wasn't born to the first wife. Therefore, they had always shared good brotherly relation. But... the problem was that this matter hadn't been acknowledged by the Luo Clan. However, it was a great thing that his elder brother could come to fight for him.

The opponent party had intentionally set up the fight between these two men. It was probably because of the aforementioned reasons. And, there was one more reason... Luo Ke Wu had once received a favor from Gao Liang. So, Luo Ke Wu would at most bring the fight to draw even if he had the potential to win.

However, Chu Yang had already thought about this. So, he replied, "We only need to win four matches out of seven! So, it doesn't matter. It's alright."

Things proceeded as per everyone's expectations. Luo Ke Wu didn't use a single move, and got defeated in one strike.

The next match was between Ji Zhu and Gao Meng. Gao Meng was the Second Young Master of the Gao Clan. He wasn't a child from the first wife. However, he was a martial arts genius.

Ji Zhu entered the arena. And, the two men went through tosses-and-turns in the battle. However, both of them became exhausted after they had exchanged numerous blows. So, they had no better option than to shake hands, and call it a draw.

Now the score of Ji Mo's team was – one victory, one defeat, and one draw.

"What a pity!" Young Master Yu shook his head and sighed. Jun Xi Zhu was also watching the match on the other side. She also uttered the same words – what a pity!

Young Master Yu noticed the look of disappointment on Chu Yang face, and said, "Ji Zhu could've won. But, his cultivation of 'Grand Dream Divine Technique' is stuck at the bottleneck. And, he's on the verge of a breakthrough. So, his cultivation would turn back to its primary form if he were to get injured. And, he would've had to wait for the next opportunity to practice it from the beginning if that would've happened. Ji Zhu obviously can't afford to wait that long. So, he had no choice but to moderately conclude the fight."

"Dream Big Divine Technique?" Chu Yang laughed, "No wonder he's so lazy... he practices such a lazy technique."

Young Master Yu smiled and said, "Actually... you can help him breakthrough quite quickly."

Chu Yang curled his lips and replied, "I don't have that kind of skill." Young Master Yu merely smiled at him in a profound manner.

"Fourth match! Tu Wan Cheng versus Dong Wu Lei!"

Dong Wu Shang's complexion changed. He said, "We would have to concede defeat in this match!" Tu Wan Cheng was one of the previous generation King Level Experts of the Tu clan. He had always been merciless and vicious. Moreover, he was a generation older than Dong Wu Lei. In fact, even Dong Wu Shang wouldn't necessarily win if he were to fight this match. How could Dong Wu Lei stand a chance?

It was obvious that Tu Qian Hao was fu*king with them!

Chu Yang calculated the updated scores after Dong Wu Lei admitted defeat – one victory, two defeats, and one draw. They were in disadvantageous position at this time!

People who had bet on Gao Sheng had started to beam with joy.

"Fifth match! Tu Clan has chosen their candidate for this match! It is Tu Qian Hao versus Gu Du Xing of the Gu Clan!"

These words created a serious atmosphere in the entire vicinity.

Many people had made their bet based on the fact that Gu Du Xing was injured. So, it could be said that this match was a crucial point. In fact, there would be no need for the competition to continue if Gu Du Xing were to be defeated.

How could he defeat Tu Qian Hao who was at the same level as him while being severely injured?

But... no one knew that Gu Du Xing’s injuries had recovered!

Chapter 489: You Got Duped!

Gu Du Xing stood up with ‘shua’ sound. His figure was as tall-and-straight as a sword. He advanced forward with an unprecedented sharp aura upon his body. Suddenly, a ‘sword intention’ surged up in the air!

However, people with a high cultivation-base could faintly see that Gu Du Xing’s complexion was somewhat pale. It seemed that his injuries hadn’t healed yet. They couldn’t help but sigh in the secrecy of their hearts. It seemed that... Gu Du Xing didn’t stand a chance in this match!

A sharp light flashed in Tu Qian Hao’s eyes. And, he burst into laughter, "Brother Gu, we will have another fight today."

Gu Du Xing faintly smiled and replied, "Yes, ah! I know that Elder Brother Tu has been waiting for this match for a long time. So, I don’t have any intentions to leave Brother Tu disappointed."

An embarrassed look flashed through Tu Qian Hao’s eyes. He spoke with a smile, "Brother Gu is very carefree. I am afraid that I wouldn’t be able to hold back in this fight. So, please don’t mind if I injure you in this fight."

Dong Wu Shang exposed a look of anger in his eyes. He shouted from behind Gu Du Xing, "Second Brother, kill him! Kill this son of a bi*ch!"

Gu Du Xing slightly nodded. He then spoke in a loud voice, "I also hope that you would understand if I end up injuring you instead."

Suddenly, his figure moved, and he flew over like a flying sword!

The sleeves of his robe fluttered. His gaze was swift and fierce. Each and every action of his’ was imbued with a swift and fierce ‘sword intention’!

The spirits of everyone present at the scene aroused at the sight of this.

Tu Qian Hao came over flying as well.

They were old rivals. And, they had been in several fights in the past year. But, they had been peer competition to each other since the beginning. However, Gu Du Xing's reputation had continued to rise this entire time. In fact, it was currently keeping pace with the fame of the number-one Young Master — Ao Xie Yun!

And, this had given rise to a strong murderous intention in Tu Qian Hao's heart!

Therefore, Tu Qian Hao wanted to beat Gu Du Xing in one fell swoop by taking advantage of Gu Du Xing's injuries! In fact, Tu Qian Hao had only participated in this battle with the aim to defeat Gu Du Xing!

Tu Qian Hao stared at Gu Du Xing with rapt attention. And, he noticed that the face of his opponent was somewhat pale. In fact, it seemed to be stifled to some extent. And, his eyes filled with amusement as a result. He couldn't help but feel happy in his heart. [Mo Tian Yun's information was genuinely true. This guy is very severely injured...]

A ruminating look flashed in Young Master Yu's eyes. He was still beside Chu Yang. Jun Xi Zhu's reaction was no different on the other side.

Young Master Yu laughed and asked, "King of Hell Chu, do you wish for Tu Qian Hao to die?"

Chu Yang faintly smiled. Then, a desire to commit murder flashed in his eyes, "He wants to take advantage of someone's difficulties. But, he's going to end up worse-off while trying to gain an advantage!"

Young Master Yu mischievously laughed, "So, would he die?"

Chu Yang indifferently spread out his hands, "It totally depends upon Du Xing's wish. Killing someone... also need proper skills and strategies at times. For instance... how to clear yourself of a guilty

conscience after you've killed someone..."

Both of the men had already drawn out their swords in the arena!

Majority of the gamblers who had bet on Gao Sheng's win were smiling in exultation. They appeared so happy that it seemed as if they could see silver notes falling from the sky, and landing directly into their pockets.

Ao Xie Yu sighed atop the tall platform, "It would be very unfair if Gu Du Xing suffers defeat because of his injuries! I feel sorry for the 'Lone Traveler!"

Ao Xie Yun had an insightful vision. So, he could tell what Tu Qian Hao was up to at a glance. He then knitted his brows and asked, "Have you prepared people to make all arrangements?"

Xie Dan Qiong confidently smiled, "Of course."

"Good... we would have to put up an act later... no matter who wins or who loses. We will draw the money of these poor guys that are going to go bankrupt. After that, we will split it evenly into three parts. We won't let Mo Tian Yun make heavy profits this time," Ao Xie Yun said.

"Yes, but I am afraid that the Gao Clan is also eyeing the gabling profits. We can snatch only a part of it at the most," Ou Du Xiao was somewhat annoyed.

"I'm afraid that our three clans will be exterminated tomorrow if we try to hog it all..." Ao Xie Yun smiled indifferently, "Whatever happens... we need to keep things in equilibrium."

The other two slightly nodded and replied with a smile, "Gao Sheng has managed to form a small alliance in this gambling battle. But, they haven't realized that they have also contributed in the formation of a rival alliance. In addition... our interests are also linked now since our three clans drew back from this matter."

Swift and fierce sword-energy frantically burst forth. The two men had already started the fight in the arena. Two sword-lights

glistened as soon as the match began. And, they proliferated everywhere. In fact, the light was so bright that the two men's shadows couldn't be seen because of it.

Gu Du Xing's sword-light gave people a feeling of loneliness, pride, and aloofness. But, Tu Qian Hao's sword-light gave off a fierce and murderous aura!

However, nobody knew what these two fighters were whispering to each other in the arena.

"Gu Du Xing, you're going to die today!" Tu Qian Hao crazily brandished his sword. He then exposed a pleased smile on his face, "And, you will only be able to blame the wind for being too vigorous for you!"

Gu Du Xing coldly snorted, "It's not yet certain who would die!"

A loud 'ding' echoed. Tu Qian Hao suddenly slashed his sword, and Gu Du Xing's body stumbled. He took a few steps back, and his face flushed red.

Tu Qing Hao's long sword was a light and agile weapon. So, parrying Gu Du Xing's sword this hard would've been impossible unless it was a custom-made sword like the one in Li Xiong Tu's hands. Something like this wouldn't happen in a normal match between two experts. However, Tu Qiong Hao felt proud of himself right now. He wanted to use such a method to humiliate the 'already injured' Gu Du Xing.

Everyone looked at Gu Du Xing's situation, and they all sighed. [Is the young genius of the Gu Clan — the leader of the younger generation going to fall from the sky in this match...? Just like that...?]

Tu Qian Hao was very excited at this time. His moves were very vigorous as well! He would bellow every time he'd use his sword. His attacks seemed to be rather grand and heroic! In fact, he reminded people a bit of Dong Wu Shang's attitude.

However, Dong Wu Shang was bold and mighty. He gave off a feeling of being overwhelming and domineering to people. But, Tu Qian Hao was giving off the feeling of a villain who was trying to accomplish his evil ambitions.

Gu Du Xing continued to withdraw step by step. His body shook violently every time he blocked a sword blow. And, he had moved back several steps in that fashion. Moreover, his pale face had turned deep red by now, while his forehead seemed to be covered in sweat.

Tu Qian Hao's blows became more and more vigorous at the sight of this!

Only a few smart people could see that things seemed to become more and more difficult for Gu Du Xing each time he parried a sword blow. In fact, it appeared as if he had fallen into a disadvantageous situation. However, he was using the swaying movements of his body to absorb the impact of Tu Qian Hao's attack in reality.

Moreover, Gu Du Xing's counterattacks didn't seem to work on Tu Qian Hao! And, it had seemed as such because Tu Qian Hao hadn't taken any steps back. Moreover, his imposing aura still appeared like a rainbow. However, Tu Qian Hao's spiritual power had been consumed to a greater extent when compared to that of Gu Du Xing's!

Tu Qing Hao wouldn't have acted so foolishly on an average day. But, he didn't care about the consumption of his energy at this time! And, that was because... it would be the most supreme glory to defeat Gu Du Xing in this manner since he was considered a world-hero! In fact, his fame would surpass that of Ao Xie Yun's as long as he could defeat Gu Du Xing today. And, he would then become the number-one expert of the younger generation!

The reason was quite simple – Gu Du Xing and Ao Xie Yun were equally famous.

The sounds of clashing echoed endlessly. Gu Du Xing had already retreated to the boundary of the arena, and had reached the big platform by now. Moreover, he had been shuddering the entire way back!

Tu Qian Hao was gasping for breath. Gu Du Xing was still swaying on his opposite side, but he hadn't collapsed yet...

Tu Qian Huo felt angry in his heart, [this stubborn bastard has managed to remain firm till now...] In fact, more and more fire started to rise in his heart as he thought of this...

He slashed another eighteen blows in a row!

Gu Du Xing lifted his face after he had parried the blows. And, Tu Qian Hao suddenly discovered that Gu Du Xing was faintly smiling at him. In fact, this smiling expression reeked of ridicule. Gu Du Xing was looking at him as if he was a fool!

Tu Qian Hao's was startled in his heart. And, he instinctively felt that something was wrong.

"You're really stupid! How did you get the position of the Eldest Young Master of the Tu Clan?" Gu Du Xing spoke in a low voice, "The Mo Clan and my Gu Clan have always been allies... yet, you have stepped into this trap? Really... I feel sorry for you!"

Tu Qian Hao got startled as he heard this. And, his mind went blank, [trap?!]

[Mo Tian Yu set me up?!]

However, the nineteenth strike of his sword fiercely slashed down at this time...

Gu Du Xing shouted loudly under the watchful eyes of thousands of spectators. And, his body suddenly became straight. Then, he drew an incredibly sharp sword out of the sheath. It issued a stunning ray of light. His Black Dragon Sword then slashed out like a dragon, and ruthlessly clashed with Tu Qian Hao's sword!

Bang!

Gu Du Xing's body remained motionless, and straight. Moreover, there was a cold look on his face.

Tu Qian Hao shouted loudly. He stumbled, and drew back along with his sword. He took a step back, and his footprints appeared on the ground. Then, he took three steps back, and suddenly he felt some strange taste in his throat. Then, a mouthful of blood came out from his mouth with a 'poof' sound!

Gu Du Xing's counterattack had inflicted very serious injuries to Tu Qian Hao!

The super-loud cheering sounds that were coming from the spectator's platform suddenly vanished away. This scene was too unbelievable for everyone to comprehend. In fact, they could hardly believe their own eyes.

[This... how can this be possible?]

Gu Du Xing shouted as he wielded his sword again. But, he whispered before he made the final attack, "I'm not injured. Do you understand now?"

Tu Qian Hao opened his eyes wide in anger, and looked at Gu Du Xing. In fact, he was so angry that he couldn't speak. His heart was filled with intense hatred towards one person at this moment, [Mo Tian Yun! That bastard provided false information to me!]

[So, Gu Du Xing and Mo Tian Yun were together in this!]

Tu Qian Hao's anger exploded as he finally realized this...

[Mo Tian Yun, that bastard! I will kill him with a thousand knives! That wicked a*shole will die!]

[I will kill you, ah! Ah! Ah! Ah! Ah! You cheated me, and made me suffer like this! I am so bitter! How dare you cheat me?! Ah...]

Tu Qian Hao became extremely sad and grieved in this moment.

He wanted to curse in anger. But, blood was readily gushing out

of his mouth. He would open his mouth, but only to spurt out blood...

Gu Du Xing had already slashed his sword by now. So, Tu Qian Hao had no other choice than to withstand the blow!

Bang!

Tu Qian Hao's body again staggered backwards. And, a mouthful of blood spurted out of his mouth again. Gu Du Xing took large strides, and advanced forward. And, he slashed his sword again!

Tu Qian Hao had an upper hand only a moment ago. But, Gu Du Xing was pushing him back now. The situation had been completely reversed. The eyeballs on the spectator's platform remained fixed to the arena, [Crap! Fu*k! oh fu*k! This situation is really freakish!]

There was no doubt that Gu Du Xing had turned defeat into victory. But, Tu Qian Hao was now in a miserable condition even though he had victory in his hands a moment ago...

"Mo Tian Yun has asked me to do this," Gu Du Xing slashed his sword again, "I didn't wish to do it. But, the Mo Clan and my Gu Clan have over ten years of cordial relations. So, I had to comply. Tu Qian Hao, blame yourself if you wish to blame someone... blame yourself for being so stupid!"

Tu Qian Hao looked at him with grief and indignation. His heart was about to explode. He finally opened his mouth, and bellowed as blood flowed out of his mouth, "Ah...! I will kill you both..." There was limitless hatred and resentment in his heart. His anger and hatred had nearly taken shape and substance in this moment. In fact, Tu Qian Hao would've eaten Mo Tian Yun alive-and-uncooked if he were in front of Tu Qian Hao at this moment!

His agility skill and sword-play had already lost balance since he was experience such extreme anger. They had been rendered completely useless under his rage. He had suffered a big betrayal!

Gu Du Xing shouted. His Black Dragon Sword trembled. Shua, shua, shua... three consecutive blows were unleashed — one on Tu Qian Hao's chest... one on his right shoulder... and, his face was also cut by the last one. Then, a mass of sword-light blossomed on his chest!

Gu Du Xing burst into loud laughter. He rose his foot, and stamped it firmly on Tu Qian Hao's chest. He kicked this Young Master of Tu Clan... a man who was also one of the 12 influential figures of the future generation, and sent him flying as if he was a sandbag!

Chapter 490: Mo Tian Yun's Tragedy

Tu Qian Hao was sent out flying, and several hundreds of feet away at that. He felt as if the sky was spinning and the earth was going round in circles. He again puffed out a mouthful of blood. He had already sunken into a semi-comatose state. He could only hear what Gu Du Xing had said at the end in a low voice, "Mo Tian Yun had requested me to carve 'number-one fool in the world'– on your chest if you were to fall into the trap and got defeated at the end. I'm very sorry that I have carved these words on your chest. And, I apologize even though you can't hear what I'm saying..."

However, Tu Qian Hao had actually heard these words. He had heard exactly what had been spoken, and had become so angry that he fainted immediately-after...

The crowd of spectators became silent!

Who would've thought that this match would end like this?! Who would've imagined that this insufferably arrogant Tu Qian Hao would be sent off flying like a sack by a kick?

Gu Du Xing leisurely returned victorious to the spectator's grandstand while the men of the Tu Clan came up to carry Tu Qian Hao back. However, they couldn't help but look at Gu Du Xing with complicated expressions in their eyes. Gu Du Xing had indeed shown mercy. Tu Qian Hao wasn't dead. The injuries he had sustained were very heavy. However, they weren't life-threatening... nor had he been crippled...

This was akin to owing a big favor to Gu Du Xing...

Ou Du Xiao and Xie Dan Qiong opened their eyes wide. They extended their necks, and foolishly looked at the arena. They could only think two words in their minds – We're doomed! [We will have a tragic financial loss this time...]

Ao Xie Yun's eyes were also fixed to the arena. And, his eyes

issued some signs of bluing. He then patted his thigh, and spoke-up with a fierce countenance, "Fu*k! We have been tricked!"

This ‘Evil Young Master’ had always been calm and elegant. In fact, he had used obscene language for the first time today!

He finally understood why Chu Yang had suddenly bet such a big amount! And, he finally realized why the Dark Bamboo organized such a big underground gambling, but eventually pulled back and openly staked 500 million instead!

Everything had suddenly made sense. However, this realization had made him dumbfounded and sullen. [So, Gu Du Xing wasn’t injured. Or maybe his injuries were nowhere close to being as serious as Mo Tian Yun had reported. He has healed...]

[And, Tu Qian Hao suffered such a big loss as a result. Otherwise, Tu Qian Hao had the capability to bring this fight to a draw. But, his carelessness has resulted in his defeat. Moreover, this defeat is so pathetic that he won’t have the strength of turning it over again!]

The three Big Young Masters looked at each other in dismay. In fact, they looked at each other with such mournful expressions that it seemed as if their mothers had passed away. They were extremely sullen in their hearts. [Motherfu*ker, which one of us isn’t a talent individual with God-given wisdom...? How could we get fooled like this...?]

"Don’t be sad. This expression isn’t good," Ao Xie Yun quickly regained his composure. Then, he gently smiled, "We should be glad, ah... fortunately, the Greatest Young Master over there hogged all of that 1 billion for himself. Otherwise, we would’ve had to pay six billion more as compensation. And, our three clans would’ve gone bankrupt if that had happened... In fact, our three clans would’ve had to sell ourselves into slavery in order to repay those debts if that had happened."

Ou Du Xiao and Xie Dan Qiong complied. In fact, they now had

smiles uglier than cry on their faces.

Ao Xie Yun pouted and continued, "See... what a wonderful expression is there on the face of the Greatest Young Master!" Both the men turned to look as they heard this. And, they couldn't help but smile gleefully. They were obviously taking pleasure in someone else's misfortune.

They had just looked at Mo Tian Yun, who was seated on the other side. Mo Tian Yun was lying in his seat with his legs spread out... as if he had become paralyzed. His complexion was deathly white, and his lips were shivering. He had an expression of indescribable shock in his eyes. He seemed lifeless!

Mo Tian Yun had personally planned this entire gambling scenario. And, his great efforts had gone in vain at this time. His schemes had been wasted. Moreover, he had even ended-up creating a situation in which the entirety of his wealth had been lost...

Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao became very satisfied when they imagined about Mo Tian's state of mind. They felt relaxed and refreshed throughout their body. In fact, they felt as if they had taken a cold water bath in summer. They were going to lose a billion soon. So, they shouldn't be so happy at this moment. But... they still felt very proud of themselves. This kind of mood was quite strange. In fact, they seemed to be so happy that one would think that they had won instead of suffering a major loss...

[Fu*k, I lost! And, I will have to pay the compensation amount as well. But, Mo Tian Yun will be in a far more miserable condition than us.]

[I won't be the most pathetic one...] They felt comfortable in their hearts as they thought this.

"The fifth match — Gu Du Xing versus Tu Qian Hao — has been won by Gu Du Xing!" the voice of the Master of the Ceremony had changed because of the shock. In fact, he was still perplexed. This

outcome had struck him as the most unexpected possibility...

The entire viewing platform flared up as this announcement was made. It seemed as if oil had been poured into fire...

"Crap! How is this possible? Didn't they say that Gu Du Xing was injured...?"

"Who had spread the rumor that Gu Du Xing's chances weren't high...? Motherfucker, wouldn't I have bet on Ji Mo's victory if I hadn't heard that rumor? Ah! Ah! Ah...! I am so mad..."

"How did he win? What exactly happened?"

"Who released the fake information? I will slaughter his entire family!"

"Didn't they say that he had been injured by Mo Tian Yun?"

"That fu*ker Mo Tian Yun! He cheated me like that...?! I have gambled two-hundred-thousand... dammit..."

"This fu*king Tu Qian Hao! This motherfu*ker would flamboyantly clamor about his valor every day, but he got defeated by Gu Du Xing! Fu*k! This bastard has clearly eaten far more food than Gu Du Xing for all these years. Moreover, he has also crapped several times more than Gu Du Xing in all these years... He's a very shitty man! I lost my money because of him!"

"Mo Tian Yun released the fake information?"

"Mo Tian Yun released this fake information?!"

"Mo Tian Yun released this fake information!"

"Mo Tian Yun cheated us..."

...

Suddenly, a person wailed. Then, hundreds of responses came en masse. And, countless people started to cry out. Then, a man suddenly stood up. And, he shouted in a very loud voice, "Fu*k Mo Tian Yun!"

These words immediately reached everyone’s heart. These words were the best reflection of how they were feeling at the moment. So, they all teamed up. And, thousands of spectators shouted loudly:

"Fu*k Mo Tian Yun!"

"Fu*k Mo Tian Yun!"

"Fu*k Mo Tian Yun!"

...

Each of these men had a good cultivation base. And, all of them had bellowed out loud with their entire strength at this time. So, the impact of their clamor was sky-shaking!

Mo Tian Yun’s popularity had reached the peak of his lifetime at this time.

Chu Yang looked towards Gu Du Xing as he walked over. There seemed to be a tacit mutual understanding between the two. Chu Yang merely winked at him and asked, "Didn’t kill?"

"Didn’t kill." Gu Du Xing exposed a solemn and stern look on his face. He then sneered, "I will let him play with Mo Tian Yun first. And, I’ll kill him later," he winked-back at Chu Yang after he said this.

Chu Yang couldn’t help but smile. He suddenly recalled Gu Du Xing’s invisible sword-energy. And, he immediately understood that Gu Du Xing was by no means merciful-enough to let Tu Qian Hao off that easily...

Two wins, two defeats, and one draw. The score was even so far. And, only two matches were left to decide the winner of this competition.

However, the mood of the people on the spectator’s grandstand had detonated like an explosive barrel. And, they were unable contain their anger. In fact, the spot where Mo Tian Yun was

sitting had been submerged by banana peels, fruits, stones etc. by now. These things had obviously been thrown at him in a crazed manner!

Moreover, many people even took off their shoes to throw. People had also started to throw all sorts of bizarre things to the viewing platform where Mo Tian Yun was seated. In fact, anything that one could think of... had already been thrown at him. The thing that was especially odd was that — some people had even taken-off their bellybands, and had thrown them at him as well. Moreover, these clothes still had the lingering smell of cosmetic powder from their bodies... as well as their body's warmth. It wasn't known where these had come from...

The Master of the Ceremony was at a loss in the arena. So, he was helplessly standing there in a panicked state of mind. And, he obviously didn't know what he ought to do. In fact, his shouting had also turned out to be useless at the moment. Therefore, he was unable to conduct the contest further since the berserk crowd wasn't willing to listen to anything he had to say in this matter...

Young Master Yu wrinkled his brows besides Chu Yang. Then, he suddenly let out a long and loud roar. Wind and thunder surged up all of a sudden, and suppressed the loud cries of tens of thousands of people in one fell swoop. After that, Young Master Yu began to rain curses, "Why are you people shouting? Do you want to die? I would like to see who dares to shout again?!"

"It's Young Master Yu!" someone from the crowd said in a low voice.

The arena immediately fell silent. Most of the people had an aggrieved look on their faces. But, no one dared to jump up to cause ruckus.

[Young Master Yu. Fu*k me! This guy will kill people even if someone dares to speak another word. Moreover... Jun Xi Zhu is also here! Ah... Crap! How did we forget this...?]

Young Master Yu looked around and said, "Members of Dark Bamboo... listen to my order — Maintain order here. Kill whoever dares to clamor. There's no need to give them any warning!" his voice had a stern murderous aura. And, everyone had listened to his voice... loud and clear.

"Yes! Minister Yu!" the subordinates of Dark Bamboo roared in unison.

The entire vicinity immediately became silent out of fear!

Chu Yang marveled in his heart. [The criminal underworld is maintaining the order. It's indeed more effective than the likes of Ao Xie Yun and the others...]

The Master of the Ceremony let out a sigh of relief. And, he hastily announced, "Sixth match! Luo Ke Di of Luo Clan will battle Li Hong Tu of Li Clan!"

Luo Ke Di shouted 'ahwooh' loudly, and stood up in excitement. He looked up and howled loudly, "Ahwooh~~~ finally, it's my turn!"

However, Gao Sheng suddenly started to laugh at this moment. He then stood up, and said in a loud voice, "Ji Mo! There have been two victories, two defeats, and one draw by now. So, we can simply skip this match of Luo Ke Di's. How about we have a fight and determine the winner instead?"

He smiled and continued, "Ji Mo, you also understand that our fight can't be avoided. So, it would be better to settle things here at once! The brave heroes of the world are present here. So, you must show your courage and valor if you want to rob somebody of what they cherish! You must do it yourself! Come and fight me!"

Everyone started to rain curses as soon as these words were said – [Gao Sheng is so shameless!]

Li Xiong Tu was obviously no match for this newly promoted Wolf Sword King. So, it was evident that Gao Sheng had raised this

idea to selfishly take the easy way out!

"Gao Sheng, you are so shameless!" Huyan Aobo pranced up to stand. She then scowled in anger, "Rob somebody of something they cherish...? How could you even say this...?"

Luo Ke Di also got furious, "Gao Sheng, what do you mean by this?"

Gao Sheng didn't answer. Instead, he looked at Ji Mo...

Ji Mo laughed out loud. He stood up and said in a loud voice, "Gao Sheng, I was going to teach you a lesson anyway. You good-looking bastard! You may be handsome on the outside, but you're hollow inside. How dare you occupy a latrine but not shit in it...?! You son of a bitch!"

Huyan Aobo was stupefied when she heard this. She fiercely glared at Ji Mo at first, but furiously sat down the next moment. [Occupy a latrine but do not shit in it? What does this mean? Ji Mo, you're dead!]

Young Miss Huyan angrily thought to herself, [How dare he say that! I will teach this loud-mouthed bastard a proper lesson!]

Chu Yang looked towards Gao Sheng. He then hurriedly said in a low voice, "Ji Mo, don't forget what I had told you."

Ji Mo nodded. He pursed up his lips and replied, "Don't worry, Big Brother. I'll win for sure."

"There's no hope in this match," Young Master Yu looked at Ji Mo, and then at Gao Sheng. After that, he wrinkled his brows. He possessed an insightful vision. So, he could obviously see that Ji Mo's inner foundation was insufficient even though he had progressed very rapidly. However, Gao Sheng had a more stable, strong, and reliable foundation on the other hand.

Both of them were Second Grade King Level Experts. However, Gao Sheng was at the peak of the second grade, while Ji Mo was in the intermediate stages of it. And, this difference was quite big!

"I think Ji Mo will win," Chu Yang spoke with full confidence, "This match is going to be full of twists and turns, but he will win in the end!"

"How are you so sure?" Young Master Yu suspiciously looked at Ji Mo and Gao Sheng. Then, he made his calculations again. But, he still felt that Gao Sheng's chances of winning were somewhat higher. Consequently, he couldn't help but become doubtful at Chu Yang's statement. What he had seen with his insightful vision couldn't be wrong since he could see the outcome very clearly.

"Brother Yu, how about we both have a bet again? We can make extra profit that way...?" Chu Yang squinted. He looked at the expression in Young Master Yu's eyes, and it seemed as if the famed monster had found a mountain of gold...

Chapter 491: Second Master Ji Enters the Arena!

"Eh, bet?" Young Master Yu tilted his head to one side, and looked at Chu Yang. He couldn't help but be somewhat apprehensive in his heart. Young Master Yu wouldn't have hesitated to gamble if it were someone else...

However, the one in front of him was none other than Chu Yang! Young Master Yu had always been skeptical about the unpredictable methods of this guy.

His eyes twinkled as he was lost in thought for a while. Then, he finally felt assured, [Ji Mo may have some super-strong attacks. Perhaps he knows those exquisite and incredible sword moves like Chu Yang does. But, he can only throw Gao Sheng into confusion at the most with them. He can't possibly jump the barrier of levels to attain victory in the end.]

He asked, "What do you want to bet?"

Sword Spirit hastily pointed out to Chu Yang in his mind, "White Crystal! Bet for his white crystals! The Nine Tribulations Sword doesn't exactly need the top-tier purple crystals the most at the moment — it needs those white crystals!"

Chu Yang smiled mischievously. He took the hint and said, "How many white crystals do you have?"

Young Master Yu's eyes flashed as he disgruntled in reply, "So, this Boy has taken a fancy to my white crystals? You ask me how many white crystals I have in total?! How big of an appetite do you have?"

"I want you to bet all of it. I will bet as much in worth." Chu Yang was very calm and composed. His net worth was very high at present. In fact, he was filthy rich. There were two of the 'nine great herbal medicines' and a jade snow spirit ginseng in the Nine

Tribulations Space. Furthermore, the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and the Mysterious Yang Jade had also been piled-up like a mountain therein. Even a small portion of these items could be considered as rare treasures in this world! Therefore, he wasn't afraid of anyone when it came to the aspect of gambling.

"I don't have many white crystals," Young Master Yu looked at him somewhat jokingly, "I only have a few tens of thousands of white crystals; that's all. Also, I also have a white crystal mineral reserve... Do you want them all? What do you want bet against these?"

Sword Spirit made rapid calculations in the midst of the conversation, and his face lit up. [Tens of thousands of white crystals, white crystal mineral reserves...! Getting all of that would be like making a fortune! The Nine Tribulations Sword can upgrade by one full level if it gets to absorb them all!]

"Bet one piece of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal, and one block of Mysterious Yang jade," Sword Spirit made a quotation, "Both are fist-sized."

Chu Yang nearly fainted.

[You want to bet a block of Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and a block of Mysterious Yang Jade against Young Master Yu's bet of an entire white crystal mineral reserve...?]

"Relax, you just say it," Sword Spirit replied confidently, "Young Master Yu seems to have practiced a section of the 'Transcendent Secret Shadow' technique. These two jade chunks aren't that valuable, but he will accept the bet! I have a feeling that this is exactly what he needs most at the moment. And, those white crystals are anyway a burden on him. "

"What do you want to bet with me?" Young Master Yu curiously looked at Chu Yang. He found this somewhat ridiculous in his heart, [when have I lost to someone when it comes to smashing one's wealth into the other person's face?] However... Young

Master Yu still felt a great sense of accomplishment when he saw that this boy appeared somewhat dumbfounded.

"These are the only most precious items that I possess." Chu Yang sighed, "So, let's bet if you are fine with it. But, let's forget it if you don't like these..."

Chu Yang reached out into his chest pocket, and fished-out something as he spoke in a dejected tone, "These two chunks... constitute my net worth."

Young Master Yu had been smiling complacently. However, his jaw suddenly dropped, and his eyes popped out when he saw the items that Chu Yang had taken out!

There were two fist-sized jades stacked one upon the other in Chu Yang's palm. The one above was exuding a faint yet deep coldness, while the one below was exuding a faint trace of warmth.

One cold, and one hot — one Yin, and one Yang. It seemed as if they formed a perfectly balanced loop upon Chu Yang's hand. The pure warm of the resultant vapors rose up, and began to float in a radius of 3 feet around Chu Yang's palm. Moreover, they didn't even seem to drift away!

"Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal... Mysterious Yang Jade..." Young Master Yu's eyes got glued to them in no time. And, his Adam's apple started to move up-and-down as he swallowed his saliva.

"Is this enough...?" Chu Yang asked somewhat nervously, "I know this isn't enough... So, it can't be helped if you don't wish to gamble for them."

"It's enough; it's enough! These are more than enough!" Young Master Yu replied adamantly, "I will gamble! How can I not gamble?! I will definitely bet! A real man never goes back on his word. A promise must always be kept. It's upon a brave man's honor to stand by his word. He won't have any regrets even if he has to die for the sake of the promise..."

"Shall we bet then?" Chu Yang asked for confirmation.

"Yes!" Young Master Yu had started to burn with impatience. So, he snatched the Mysterious Jade Ice Crystal and Mysterious Yang Jade, and began to fiddle with them admiringly. He then said, "I will take care of the gambling stakes. I will also be the notary... do you feel reassured? Ha-ha, you must be feeling very relieved..."

Chu Yang went speechless for a while. [You are participating in the gambling. That makes you an involved party. Yet, you still want to be the notary? What kind of logic is this?]

"Relax." Young Master Yu patted his shoulder and added, "I won't let you suffer a loss. These items will obviously belong to me in case you lose. But, I will still make-up to you by giving you a thousand white crystals. However, I will use my entire stock of white crystals to trade these with you if you win...! What do you think?"

Chu Yang got furious!

[What the hell is this guy talking about? He has lost all sense of shame!]

"Why would I have to trade something I already won...? I'm betting against your entire stock of white crystals!" Chu Yang flew into a rage.

"Well... why are you getting agitated for no reason?" Young Master Yu shamelessly replied, "You see, these two jade chunks are already in my hands. And, you won't be able to do anything if I run away with these, correct? However, this Young Master's moral standing is so strong that I'm not running away... Moreover, I am even staying here to gamble with you! In fact, I'm even willing to compensate you after I've won the bet. And, I will certainly repudiate the debt I owe if I lose. You should be grateful to me!

"There are many people in the Middle Three Heavens who kill people for money. How many do you think negotiate with honesty

like I do?" Young Master Yu asked.

Chu Yang tried to force a smile, but failed to do so.

[Awesome, you take these away if you win the bet. You take these away even if you lose the bet. And, you still claim to have a strong moral standing? Then, you even talk about honesty? Elder Brother, you will surely get filthy rich if you step into business!]

"Fine. But, I have a condition." Chu Yang finally revealed his hidden intention. [I am giving you such a cheap deal. So, I would obviously have my request as well...] "I want to go with you to your secret treasure house if you lose. And, I'll personally inspect the treasures present there. In addition, you still owe me a purple jade core from the Lower Three Heavens. I also want to take that away."

Young Master Yu suddenly got enraged and annoyed, "Do you think that I wouldn't payback the debt I owe?"

Chu Yang said in his heart, [you think you still have the face to speak such words? Your current behavior is giving the vibes of a man who reneges on a debt through and through!]

"What do you say?" Chu Yang sneered.

Young Master Yu held out his hands, and hugged Chu Yang's shoulder. He then said in a brotherly manner, "Alright, it's settled then! It's a deal! Ha-ha, these two jade chunks are mine... regardless of the outcome. This Young Master won't go back on his word. Ha-ha, who is more qualified than me in the Middle Three Heavens? Isn't that right?"

Chu Yang turned his face away and spat. He had been rendered speechless.

Mo Qing Wu had been on Chu Yang's lap this entire time, and she had been listening attentively to the conversation of these two people. She raised her head at this time, and angrily looked at Young Master Yu, "You are a bad person! You even dare to cheat

my Elder Brother Chu Yang of his things. I believe that the right thing should be that you return the two jade chunks to Elder Brother Chu Yang. And then, you should give all the treasures you have in your secret treasure house to Elder Brother Chu Yang — regardless of the outcome of the gamble! Got it?"

"Eh, Eh..." Young Master Yu opened his eyes wide to look at this cute little girl. He eventually let go of Chu Yang, and spread out his hands as he spoke, "I'm a bit unreasonable. But, you are even more unreasonable than me..."

"You are unreasonable!" Mo Qing Wu savagely retorted.

"Fine, I am unreasonable." Young Master Yu hung his head dejectedly as he conceded his defeat. Then, he twisted his buttocks, and went away to sit with Gu Du Xing instead. He was about to get into trouble, but he managed to run away in time. And, he heard that cute little girl muttering from afar, "He's too unreasonable..."

Young Master Yu staggered, and nearly fell to the ground.

The Sword Spirit merrily spoke-up in Chu Yang's mind, "You can make a great development as long as you can win this bet!"

"How?" Chu Yang curiously asked.

"The essence present in so many white crystals can help the Nine Tribulation Sword separate itself from the mundane iron level. The other levels are the following — gold, silver, copper, and iron. In fact, it can even rise to become a spiritual sword! And, you can even treat Mo Qing Wu's injuries once it becomes a spiritual sword." Sword Spirit explained in a tempting manner.

"I can treat her injuries right now." Chu Yang rolled his eyes and said, "In fact, I don't even need an extremely safe space to do it..."

"Nonsense! You can certainly cure her Three Yin Meridians if you treat her injuries right now. However, the most important function of the Nine Tribulations Pill will be lost in the process." Sword Spirit rolled his eyes, "But, I can use the Nine Tribulations

Pill to reconnect her Three Yin Meridians after the sword has risen to the spiritual sword level. And then, I will seal the medicinal efficacy in her body. After that, she will gradually level up one grade after another. Consequently, the sealed medicinal efficacy will detonate within her body when it's finally time for her to step into the Emperor level, and that will send her to the Monarch level in one fell swoop!

"This is the real power of the Nine Tribulations Pill! The pace of her cultivation will be far more than the pace of those so-called geniuses as long as this is done properly. Moreover, this process will also save her life at a critical moment," Sword Spirit snorted and continued, "That's it; now you decide. I won't stop you if you still insist on treating her injuries right now..."

Chu Yang was overjoyed at this unexpected good news. So, he replied, "What else is there to say? We must first obtain the white crystals! Let the competition end. Then, I will make Young Master Yu repay the debt he owes, and I'll go fetch the white crystals. It won't take much time and effort anyway, ha ha..."

Sword Spirit looked at him disdainfully. Then, he quietly went back into the consciousness, and didn't speak further.

... ...

Ji Mo had a somewhat low-key presence as he entered the arena. He gradually walked forward. He secretly regulated his own strength as he walked step by step.

He knew that the disparity between him and Gao Sheng wasn't small. So, he didn't dare to act with the slightest carelessness, and decided to control his own temper very diligently since he didn't wish to waste any strength before the match.

Ji Mo's stance was obviously quite magnificent. However, he was reluctant to use too much strength. [This relates to a major turning point in my life — my marriage. This will determine who the wife will belong to. However, this won't affect Gao Sheng's mentally

much since he doesn’t care whether he loses or wins. But, the same can’t be said about me.]

Gao Sheng had been waiting in the arena for a while. And, Ji Mo wasn’t walking fast; but, he wasn’t walking too slowly either. Gao Sheng got angry and said, "Can you go faster?"

Ji Mo rolled his eyes and replied, "Why do you fu*king care whether I am going faster or slower? Are you in a hurry to get you’re a*s kicked?"

He was vigilant in his heart, but he was still as vocal as ever. In fact, he didn’t even stammer once. He was firmly adhering to Big Brother Chu’s suggestion. [You must keep calm. You don’t need to be anxious. In fact, it would be more ideal to berate Gao Sheng if you genuinely can’t help but be anxious, got it? Go, go! I believe in your eloquence.]

Gao Sheng sneered and said, "Ji Mo, could it be that you are scared? Could it be that you have the courage to act, but not-enough courage to bear the consequences?"

"Ha ha ha, Gao Sheng, your words are truly laughable. What do you mean by saying ‘I have the courage to act, but not-enough courage to bear the consequences’?" Ji Mo let out a long laughter, "You think that it would’ve been possible for you to arrange for such a big event if I hadn’t nodded my head in agreement?"

This statement was true in reality. Gao Sheng’s challenge was one thing. However, there wouldn’t have been a grand event if Ji Mo hadn’t agreed!

Ji Mo loudly said, "I – Ji Mo – came here! I – Ji Mo – came to fight you! At least I did that much! I – Ji Mo – dared to challenge you, dared to love, dared to fight for my woman! At least I did that much! I – Ji Mo – unlike a certain someone didn’t agree to marry under the parents’ pressure, and later fled away to avoid the marriage. You didn’t want to marry her. So, why didn’t you say so? No one would’ve forced you to marry her. But, you are still

dragging the marriage contract and haven't rescinded it even now!

"Why?!" Ji Mo roared loudly, "It's only because you have taken a fancy to the wealth and status of the Huyan Clan. You think these world heroes who have come here are fools? You think that they can't see your real intentions?"

"Ladies and gentlemen, isn't this correct?" Ji Mo crazily bellowed.

Thousands of people responded in unison, "Yes!" Their voices were neat and orderly.

This itched-up Ji Mo's complacence even more. He was gracefully waving his hand with the poise of a great leader on the one hand. On the other hand, he continued to weave a flowery speech with his tongue, "Gao Sheng, you covet power and you covet wealth. That is still understandable since this is human nature. And, the most one can say about your morality after considering these points is that... you are a bad guy. However, there's something you mustn't have done while you were seeking money and fame — you shouldn't have been so ruthless towards a woman's precious youthful years!

"Do you even know how short-spanned a woman's youthful years are? Yet, you tyrannically wasted her youthful years at your wish. But, you backed off when it came to marrying her in reality. You, you... are you even a man?!"

Gao Sheng was so angry that his lips had started to tremble. He stretched out his hand, and pointed it at Ji Mo, "You you... you are talking nonsense! I – Gao Sheng – am not like that. How can I be that kind of a man?!"

"You are!" Ji Mo occupied a commanding position and bellowed. And, he let out a series of shouts when he saw Gao Sheng refuting, "You are! You are! You are..."

The tens of thousands of people in the audience laughed out loud

at first. They then followed suit, and began to clamor in mockery, "You are! You are! You are..."

Huyan Aobo stood up inside the Huyan Clan's camp, and looked at Ji Mo from afar. She was deeply touched by this...

Ji Mo raised his hands in an awe-inspiring manner, "Everyone, I haven't finished my speech yet."

"Ha ha ha... Second Master Ji, please continue," everyone laughed, and ceased to make the noise.

"Now, I – Ji Mo – shall spare no effort for the sake of my beloved. I am willing to go through every trial and tribulation for her. I even traveled for ten-thousand miles... through day and night... to get here in order to participate in this decisive battle! But, why?" Ji Mo looked up to the sky and roared, "For the true feelings of love that linger in my heart! Ahwooo! Dog Aunt!"

Tens of thousands of people shouted at the same time, "For the true feeling of love that linger in my heart! Ahwooh! Dog Aunt!"

However, someone quietly asked the person sitting beside him, "Hey buddy, what's the meaning of this... Dog Aunt?"

The man had raised his arms in the air when he had shouted loudly. And, he snapped as soon as he heard this question, and replied, "How would I know that? You go ask Second Master Ji." He said that, and continued to wave his arms as he shouted, "For the true love... Ahwooh! Dog Aunt!"

Ji Mo was in high spirits. He again took a few steps, and raised his arm as he shouted loudly, "I must rescue my beloved woman from the clutches of this villain! I want to give her happiness! I want to give her a bright future to look forward to! I will never allow someone's conspiracies to succeed in trapping her! Ahwooh... Dog Aunt!"

Thousands of spectators shouted at once, "Second Master Ji is so mighty! Ahwooh... Dog Aunt!"

Ji Mo was excited. He was waving his arm. There was an impassioned look on his face. He suddenly felt the blood boiling throughout his body. He raised his hand towards the sky and exclaimed, "Heaven! Give me strength! Let me overcome the evil! Let me save her! Love her! Be with her! Make her happy!" Then, he suddenly let out an earth-shaking bellow, "Let her be my wife! Ahwooh!!!"

Cheers!

The audience suddenly burst into cheers! Who amongst those who had come here had seen such a bold courtship in their life?

Huyan Aobo looked at Ji Mo. There was endless love in her eyes.

Many female members of the Huyan Clan also stood behind her. And, they all held their own shoulder and said, "This is disgusting." However, each of them had a shade of deep envy flashing in their eyes.

Gao Sheng was seething with rage! His whole body was shaking. In fact, he nearly spouted blood from his mouth, [fu*k you Ji Mo! Have you come here to fight or perform in opera...]

Chapter 492: Ji Mo's Decisive Battle!

Ji Mo had already walked till the halfway point. He had actually fanned the mood of the crowd on the way. Only people of the four big clans – Gu, Luo, Dong and Ji – had been cheering for his victory in the beginning. And, the people who had bet on his victory were obviously cheering for him. But, the entire audience had joined them by now!

Even the people who had bet on Gao Sheng had started to cheer him.

And, that was because Ji Mo had given a speech that had touched the hearts of the people – [It is excusable if you pursue power and wealth. But, you can't drag a woman who you don't even like into this matter because you want power and wealth!]

[Doing this will let down the two major clans. And, it will also be unfair to that woman. In fact, it would be unfair to everyone... including yourself. What qualifications do you have to fight in this match? What right do you have to duel with Ji Mo?]

[I gambled on you because I want to make profits. But, this doesn't mean that I don't despise your character! I may scold you, and I may 'shush' you. But, I will still make a profit as long as you win! I may praise you, I may support you... but, I will still lose the compensation money if you lose. So, what does it have to do with this?]

This was the reason why the influence of Second Master Ji had become increasingly magnificent. He gracefully waved his hand as he walked forward. And, he seemed to be carrying the radiance of spring on his face. In fact, he was so excited that he was unconsciously swinging his buttocks while walking.

He continued to listen to the cheers while he swung his buttocks, and walked confidently with his toes pointed outward... He walked as steadily as a mountain, but his mannerism was still very stylish.

"We must win!" Second Master Ji raised his arm and shouted.

"Must win!" tens of thousands of people in the crowd shouted in response.

"We must defend true love!" Second Master Ji took two steps, and continued to shout in an inspiring manner.

"Defend true love!" the crowd shouted in unison.

"We must defeat the demon!" Second Master Ji continued with persistence.

"Defeat the demon!" The mood of the crowd became more and more excited.

"Ahwooh!!!" Second Master Ji waved his arms. He tightly pressed his lips together, and howled like a wolf.

"Ahwooh!!!" the crowd also howled like a pack of wolves.

"Dog Aunt!!!" Second Master Ji was excited beyond limits. He swung his buttocks and hopped once.

"Dong Aunt!!!" the crowd was seething with excitement...

However, this made Gao Sheng so angry that his hands and feet became ice-cold. He couldn't bear it anymore. His face turned wax-yellow, and his lips started to shiver. He looked at the incredibly flashy Ji Mo with hatred and killing intention in his eyes. He gritted his teeth with so much strength that they produced a 'ka-cha' sound. In fact, it seemed as if his teeth would get grinded!

[I, I, I... If I don't kill you, I... I will, I will, I will....] Gao Sheng crazily thought in his heart.

On the spectators' grandstand... Chu Yang looked at Young Master Yu and asked, "Are you still certain that Gao Sheng will win?"

Young Master Yu let out a deep sigh, "I'm not sure anymore. Ji Mo is getting all the public attention at this moment. And, Gao Sheng is already annoyed with this. He's very hot-tempered, and

can flip any moment now. In fact, he may not be able to stay calm during the fight. So, it’s difficult to predict the outcome of the battle."

Chu Yang smiled mischievously. He pointed at the flaring crowd, "Such kind of power is also a significant factor in a decisive battle. It’s indeed a fact that one can display a stronger might as they get more support."

Young Master Yu replied, "Using such tricks to this extent is understandable. But, it’s still somewhat despicable."

Chu Yang sneered, "This is a decisive battle! Everything that can be made use of... should be exploited to strike-down the enemy! But, do you think that this much is enough? It’s not even close to being sufficient. You just wait and watch."

It had taken Ji Mo half-an-hour to get down from the spectators’ grandstand and walk arrogantly to the middle of the arena. And, this had made Gao Sheng — who was already waiting — even more gloomy. He was so angry that he felt as if he would die due to an excess of anger.

Gao Sheng suddenly blew his top as looked at Ji Mo, who had continued to walk over at a slow pace. An incredible rage welled-up in his heart, "Ji Mo, get ready to die!" And, he rushed towards Ji Mo as soon as he finished speaking.

"Wait a moment!" Ji Mo bellowed loudly. He extended his hand, and made a ‘stop’ gesture.

Gao Sheng stopped. He then furiously asked, "What are you up to now?"

"How can you begin without the announcement?" Ji Mo looked at the Master of the Ceremony in dissatisfaction, and said, "Can’t you see that this ‘Great Young Master’ Gao can’t wait to get his a*s kicked?"

Gao Sheng immediately trembled from head to foot. [Well, well,

Ji Mo... I will make you see who can't wait to get his a*s kicked!]

The complexion of the Master of the Ceremony became strange. He lifted his hand, "Commence the battle!"

His voice hadn't even faded yet, and Gao Sheng had already rushed over without any delay. He rushed to the front of Ji Mo. His fist arrived in front of Ji Mo, and blew the hair on his forehead upwards with the sound of a wind.

"Wait a moment!" Ji Mo shout was as loud as a thunderclap. He stood there motionless with his eyes wide open.

Gao Sheng had to stop his hand again. He angrily gritted his teeth. Then, he spoke-up almost powerlessly, "Now what?! What do you want? What? What? Huh...?!"

Who would have imagined that Ji Mo would suddenly shoot his fist even when Gao Sheng had stopped...? His fist fiercely hit Gao Sheng in the face with a 'Bam'. And, blood madly splashed from his nose. Consequently, his face swelled, and turned pink. Gao Sheng obviously felt an acute pain in his face. In fact, it seemed that this punch had impacted his tear-gland. He couldn't even open his eyes properly as tears crazily welled-up in them and streamed down.

Ji Mo laughed heartily and said, "I said... wait a moment... because I wanted to punch you first!" Then, he mercilessly kneaded his fists. 'Bam', 'Bam', 'Bam'! He continuously let-loose three punches, and 'Bam''Bam'... two consecutive kicks! Gao Sheng had been covering his face at this moment. So, he took advantage of the opportunity, and attacked him crazily.

Gao Sheng was sent flying like a sandbag.

The clamor in the venue turned into absolute silence. Everyone looked at this scene. They were baffled. They didn't know how to react.

Ji Mo rapidly caught up with him. And, he again kicked Gao

Sheng's body in a majestic manner. Then, he shouted joyfully in satisfaction, "I got you! You stupid c*nt! Master of the Ceremony had told us to begin. But, you still stopped when I asked you to? Are you genuinely that obedient? Huh...? Will you head over to hell if I asked you to, huh...? You are very... Ahwooh Ahwooh... stupid..."

Gao Sheng frantically tried to escape while being battered. His whole body was in unbearable pain. Moreover, he was so angry that his stomach had started to hurt.

However, the gamblers in the audience had finally understood what was going on. So, they all shouted and cussed out loud, "Ji Mo, you are so shameless. You've launched a sneak attack!"

Then, someone else retorted, "Stop your fu*king nonsense! What do you mean by 'launched a sneak attack'? This is a duel. The Master of the Ceremony has already announced to start the duel. So, who is to blame when Gao Sheng has let his guard down? He's stupid! I have nothing else to say. Would we fall into this trap if we were in his place...? Never!"

Whatever this guy had said... was pure nonsense! Eight or nine people out of ten would've gotten caught off-guard in such a situation. And, they would've likely fallen into this trap...

However, these words were enough to instigate an individual, "Gao Sheng, are you stupid, eh...? The duel has started! Are you still dreaming? Motherfu*ker! Ji Mo asked you to stop, and you actually stopped, huh? You're so obedient... huh... he's your opponent, not your dad... Damn it, my money, ah..."

Gao Sheng flew into a rage. He rapidly pounced over. There was blood over his entire face. And, his handsome face had already become bloodstained. He roared wildly as he rushed over in a crazed manner.

"Stop!" Ji Mo shouted loudly.

However, Gao Sheng didn’t pay attention to him this time. He shouted out loudly, and rushed over towards Ji Mo. But, then he saw a sword-light flashing before his eyes. His body suddenly ached, and he hastily withdrew. He soon felt a piercing pain, and started to pant. He lowered his head... There was a terrible sword-wound in his thigh. In fact, it was so bad that he could almost see his bone!

"You... you are despicable!" Gao Sheng was angry and confused. [This bastard pulled out the sword so silently. And, I was so busy being angry that I didn’t even notice when he drew out his sword.]

"I had asked you to wait for a moment. And, it was because I wanted to warn you... that you still haven’t drawn out your sword..." Ji Mo innocently shrugged his shoulder, "Damn! I am so kind, ah. Everyone, can’t you see? I had the good intention to remind him to draw out his sword. Who in the entire Middle Three Heavens doesn’t know that I use a sword? However, he abused me because of this. A man can’t do anything good these days. A man’s intentions may be good, but people take his good-will as ill-intentions, ah..."

Gao Sheng roared loudly in anger. He puffed out blood with a ‘poof’ sound, "You are a self-centered show off, Ji Mo. No sound came when you drew out your sword. So, it’s clear that you intentionally launched a sneak attack!"

The gamblers on the spectators’ grandstand felt cheated. So, they changed sides, "Yes, ah! Your sword didn’t make any sound. It was clearly an intentional sneak-attack."

"Everyone, I’m being accused wrongly..." Ji Mo turned over his body, and showed it to Gao Sheng, "You take a look. You take a look. The entire Middle Three Heaven knows that the sword I use doesn’t have a scabbard, ah! See...? Where is the scabbard...?"

Over a thousand of the people shouted loudly, "Right, Second Master Ji’s sword doesn’t have a scabbard!" These men clearly

trusted him.

However, majority of the huge crowd was still perplexed. So, they started to criticize Gao Sheng instead, "You stupid c*nt! Your opponent uses a sword that's without a scabbard, and you don't even know this? This is why you got injured..."

Gao Sheng became so angry that his vision turned dark. [How would I possibly not have known if Ji Mo didn't use a scabbard for his sword? This is clearly a lie!]

However, he saw that Ji Mo was already approaching him in a lively and vigorous manner, "Gao Sheng! I wouldn't dare to bully you in front of all these world heroes! Come, come, come! We will have a fair fight now! I won't take any advantage of you again!"

He spoke this in a manner so righteousness that it almost inspired reverence! And, it aroused a round of applause from the crowd.

Gao Sheng felt an intense rage building up within his chest. He almost spat out a mouthful of blood. [You broke my nose. That blurred my vision. Then, you again took advantage of the situation, and punched me. After that, you launched another sneak attack, and almost crippled my leg. You made me so angry that I even spouted blood from my mouth. And now... you want to have a 'fair' fight with me?]

[And, you actually say that 'I won't take any advantage of you'. What's left to do now? You have already done it...]

Gao Sheng's face twitched in anger. But, he somehow resisted the hatred in his heart. Then, he pulled out his sword, and slashed it with the intention to chop Ji Mo into pieces!

Ji Mo dodged the attack while shouting and clamoring, "Good! Such a nice sword! It looks very cheap though! Wow! It is indeed cheap. Cheap, cheap, cheap..." He started to jump around like an agile monkey.

Gao Sheng bellowed loudly. The speed of his sword became more and more rapid as he unleashed violent attacks on Ji Mo.

Ji Mo had suddenly become silent. And, it seemed that it was becoming hard for him to face the enemy head-on. In fact, it was indeed very difficult for him. Gao Sheng's cultivation level was much higher than his. Gao Sheng may have lost control of himself, and couldn't use the full range of his martial powers because of his anger. But, he was still very powerful.

Ji Mo remained silent. So, Gao Sheng started to feel proud of himself. [So, you have finally shut your big mouth and started to focus on fighting instead. But, you're no match to me!]

Such silence remained for a good while. And, Ji Mo was only defending most of the time, while Gao Sheng was attacking.

Soon, Ji Mo was about to fall into a desperate situation... Gao Sheng had already weaved a densely-packed net of sword strikes...

Ji Mo suddenly let out a pitiful scream, "Ah!!!"

This scream had arisen out of nowhere. And, it shook the spirit of the audience. They were suddenly taken aback. A cold and gloomy feeling arose in their hearts. Gao Sheng was also somewhat puzzled. [Where did he get cut?]

He looked with rapt attention.

The speed of his sword also slowed down since he was focusing on looking. However, Ji Mo's long sword unleashed a violent counterattack. He murmured as he attacked, "Fu*k me! I almost got cut..."

Chapter 493: You're My Wife Ahwooh...

Gao Sheng became furious as soon as he realized he had been tricked by Ji Mo. So, he brandished his sword to attack violently...

Ji Mo tiptoed, and rapidly drew back his body. Gao Sheng madly chased after him with no intention to let him go. The strength of Ji Mo's body had gotten exhausted by now. So, he flew backwards to increase the distance between them. Then, he suddenly opened his eyes wide, and looked behind Gao Sheng's body. He then shouted loudly with grief and indignation on his face, "Gao Qiang! Do you want to bully me by ganging up on me? And, that too in front of the world heroes?!"

Gao Sheng became furious. He ferociously turned around and shouted, "Who asked you to come..." He turned around to see, but found no one behind him...

The sharp whistling sound of a golden blade came piercing the air from behind his body. He had now understood that it was a wicked trick of Ji Mo's. But, it was already too late to turn his head. So, he swung his long sword towards his back. After that, he turned his body around, and made a strange posture as he went flying backwards.

Two 'bam''bam' sounds echoed. Suddenly, Gao Sheng felt that these sounds had vigorously come from his buttocks. Ji Mo had actually kicked on his buttocks in a firm manner. Consequently, he was immediately sent flying at a high speed!

Gao Sheng puffed out blood while he was in midair. He hadn't vomited blood because he had got beaten... this had happened because he was very angry. His body was in pain. But, this pain was far less than the frustration that had plagued in his heart!

Ji Mo didn't wait for him to get up. He had wielded his sword, and had come flying-after. He shouted out loud, "Gao Sheng! Get up! We will have a fair fight!"

Gao Sheng turned over and sprang up. The desire to spit out blood welled-up more and more in his heart. He had enough time to get up assume a stance. But, it seemed that he had deliberately taken more time to get up since he had wasted too much time in yelling out of frustration.

Ji Mo was already high up in the sky by the time he stood up, and his sword-light had arrived in front of Gao Sheng!

Gao Sheng set firm footing on the ground. And, he changed his stance to defense. Ji Mo's sword-light came with a tiger-like ferocity, and made a strong impact. He didn't spare the opponent any time to relax, and his attacks turned more and more intense.

Gao Sheng's heart was already in a chaotic mess. He had become terribly aggrieved. He was being pushed back again-and-again by these relentless attacks. So, he couldn't help but suffer more and more pain in his heart. But, he did his best to defend the attacks. And, he was desperately looking for the opportunity to launch a counterattack on his opponent.

However, Ji Mo's attacks were steady, persistent, and powerful. In fact, this was an unceasing barrage of sword attacks. Gao Sheng had researched the sword play of the Ji Clan before the decisive battle. But, he had now discovered that Ji Mo's sword moves had some rather strange variations mixed-in. In fact, these variations were appearing very frequently!

Moreover, he had never seen such sword moves in the past. These sword moves were odd, yet they had formidable power. In fact, each of these sword moves had left him a difficult situation.

Ding Ding Ding sounds echoed without a pause.

Gao Sheng continuously drew backwards... step by step. And, Ji Mo continued to pursue him. He would jump high up in the air, and would attack Gao Sheng. His aura was aggressive and imposing. However, his energy eventually got used up in one round of attacks. And, Gao Sheng noticed that the attacks of his

opponent were about to come to an end. So, he drew his feet back, and prepared to counterattack.

However, he saw that Ji Mo somersaulted backwards. He landed far away, and shouted, "Don't say that I was unfair to you. Now, it's your turn to attack me."

Gao Sheng was about to attack a moment ago. But, he suddenly became confused, and staggered as this happened. In fact, his body even swayed a few times...

[You are too shameless! Do you think that I wouldn't know when to attack if you won't tell me?]

Someone exclaimed from the spectators' grandstand in a loud voice, "Second Master Ji! This is a decisive battle, ah! Second Master Ji, don't give him the chance to take a breath! You are so benevolent and righteous. But, your opponent wouldn't appreciate this, ah... Quickly attack him, Second Master Ji."

This guy turned out to be the man whom Luo Ke Di had forced to bet on Ji Mo at the sword point. He was looking at the arena at this moment. And, he saw that the victory was in sight. So, he couldn't help but exclaim. But, his face had an expression of resentfulness on it... as if Ji Mo had failed to live-up to his expectation. [This is the crucial point. How could Ji Mo stop at this time and allow the opponent to make a counterattack? Oh my God, Second Master Ji, what are you thinking? He's your opponent in this decisive battle! And, you're still paying attention to your etiquettes, ah...?]

In fact, this guy wished that he could rush over and take Ji Mo's place in this decisive battle... [My money, ah! I'm about to get a lot of money, ah!]

However, he wouldn't have expected that Ji Mo had exhausted his strength even though he seemed to be confident and at ease. So much so... that he would've ended-up collapsing if the opponent were to unleash a barrage of counterattacks in case he had continued to attack at that time...

"Second Master Ji is righteous and benevolent, ah!" Several men profusely praised him. This had happened because Second Master Ji had appeared to be more heroic in contrast to Gao Sheng. And, more so because he appeared to be open and candid!

Gao Sheng had suffered internal injuries at first. Then, he had become muddled because of excessive. Then, he again got beaten up, and took a lot of kicks and punches. His internal organs had been shaken up as a result, and he had already sustained severe injuries. Moreover, the wound on his thigh was still bleeding...

However, the man who had been so despicable, and had used such shameless methods... had unexpectedly won the reputation of being benevolent, and righteous. In fact, he had been deemed as a man of unquestionable integrity and noble character! This obviously became unbearable for Gao Sheng. He opened his mouth and shouted, "You people are talking nonsense! This is totally rubbish! Waa~~~"

He couldn’t restrain his blood from coming out as he spoke these words. And, the blood puffed out like an arrow from his mouth. His vision turned blurred as soon as he spat out blood. And, his body tottered since it was on the verse of a collapse!

"Gao Sheng has lost." Young Master Yu was looking at the arena in a pensive manner. He had been observing Ji Mo’s method very carefully thus far. But, he hadn’t laughed. Instead, he had been contemplating...

"This method was quite fierce... I must say this much! It was such an effortless victory." Young Master Yu looked at Chu Yang, "It’s your style, right?"

Chu Yang laughed out loud and replied, "Half of it is!"

"Gao Sheng can be considered as a rising star. So, it’s obvious that his mental fortitude is very strong. But, he has been taken over by his anger and insanity at this time. Perhaps another man wouldn’t have been so furious if they had been in his place..." Young Master

Yu sighed, "So, this method wasn't a wise one, but it was very effective."

Chu Yang spoke with a smile, "The most important factor is obviously... Ji Mo himself."

Young Master Yu was stumped for words for a second. Then, he suddenly laughed heartily, "Yes. Yes. Indeed! This plan would've been useless if Ji Mo wasn't so shameless."

Mo Qing Wu chuckled, "Brother Ji Mo has always been the most thick-skinned person out there."

Young Master Yu's face became serious as he said, "These words stand gravely mistaken. Your Elder Brother Chu Yang is a hundred times more thick-skinned than your Brother Ji Mo! In fact, a thousand times!"

Mo Qing Wu pouted her mouth in a displeased manner. She then looked at Young Master Yu, and spoke with a snort, "But, you stole my Elder Brother Chu Yang's things. So, you're a thousand times more thick-skinned than Elder Brother Chu Yang. In fact, ten-thousand times more!"

Young Master Yu pretended that he didn't hear this. He fixed his eyes in the arena, and ignored Mo Qing Wu altogether. In fact, the look on his face hardly changed at this remark – He was indeed very thick-skinned!

Inside the arena... Gao Sheng was finding it difficult to breathe. He could only feel the sky spinning and the earth going round. He was no longer able to withstand his internal injuries. But, he could hear Ji Mo shouting from the opposite side, "Are you coming? Perhaps you can't come...? I'm giving you a chance. I will count to three. And, I will come to you if you don't come to me – one, two, three! I'm coming to you now... I'm coming to kick your ass... I will really kick your ass... Sh*t! Your body is making creaking sounds... Do you really want me to come over to you..."

Gao Sheng loudly shouted. And, he again puffed out a mouthful of blood. He didn't wait for Ji Mo to 'actually come over', and he lost his consciousness instead. His body became limp, and he fell down on the ground with a 'thud' sound. He had genuinely lost his consciousness...

Ji Mo startled by this. He saw Young Master Gao, who had fallen on the ground. And, he thought, [is it possible that he's only pretending?] Then, he continued to shout and make a fuss, "Get up! Get up! I – Second Master Ji – am generous and upright. I am very humane and righteous. I have a noble character and unquestionable integrity. I can't hit my enemy if he's lying on the ground! Get up! Get up, ah..."

However, Gao Sheng didn't get up... no matter how much Ji Mo shouted since he was unable to hear a thing... In fact, it was fortunate that he couldn't hear these remarks. Otherwise, he would've again fainted because of his anger...

"Did he genuinely faint...?" Ji Mo carefully drew near to him. He then kicked him with the tip of his toe. But, Gao Sheng didn't react.

"Crap! You fainted? You really fainted, huh? You really fu*king fainted!" Ji Mo kicked him a few times, but there was no reaction. So, he was eventually reassured that Gao Sheng had fainted for real. But, he couldn't help but scratch his head in a puzzled manner, "I didn't even hit you, ah... how can you faint...?"

He stood there and pondered for a while. Then, he turned his head towards the Master of the Ceremony and asked, "It seems that I won, right?"

Master of the Ceremony, "..."

"Does this count as a victory?" Ji Mo was somewhat uncertain, "I fought him, but he didn't fight back, then?"

"You won!" the Master of the Ceremony was dumbfounded when

he replied. [I was here, you know. I saw you win!]

"Then, why don't you declare that I won?" Ji Mo glared at him and said, "You're the Master of this Ceremony. But, your reactions are too slow. Can't you see that this man is lying here? Are you still dreaming?"

The Master of the Ceremony almost fainted due to anger. He hastily drew a few steps back. Then, his mood calmed down. He mixed his energy in his voice and roared loudly, "The final match has been won by Ji Mo!"

He obviously didn't need to say this. Everyone already knew this... because the entire venue was already in uproar! In fact, the clamor had risen up to the sky, and had overturned the heavens!

Several people wailed... The money that they had collected after struggling of so many years... had been lost. These were the people who had bet the complete net worth of their clans! So, they were left with nothing in their hands now since Gao Sheng's defeat was equivalent to bankruptcy for them...

Many people started to abuse, "He's such a useless man. He's so much older than his opponent. His cultivation rank was also higher. But, he couldn't even counterattack his opponent! Goddamn Gao Sheng! I lost my money because of you..."

These people had bet most of their clan's property. But, they also had some savings. Yet, they felt extremely angry in their hearts!

However, there were many who were laughing like mad-men, "I won, I won! I won a fortune... I truly didn't expect this..." These were obviously the people who had bet on Ji Mo.

Moreover, many people felt regret, "I would've bet a little more if I had known this earlier, ah... I would've taken a loan with high interest, but I would've still bet more. The compensation was one-is-to-six, ah. Damn it..." These people were greedy and never satisfied...

The happiest of them was that fatty who had been forced to bet on Ji Mo by Luo Ke Di on sword point. His hands were dancing, and his feet were tripping. [I don't know what his name is, but that fortuneteller must be a noble guy since he helped me make such a fortune. No wonder that blind fortuneteller said that my luck's good, and I am going to make a fortune! I was going to lose my money. But, I was then forced to change my decision at sword-point. And, I unexpectedly won... if this is not good luck... then I don't know what is?]

The most miserable man was undoubtedly the Great Master Mo Tian Yun! He also fainted the moment Gao Sheng fainted... In fact, he still hadn't woken-up... Or, perhaps he didn't wish to wake up? After all, he would have to face the debt of several billions if he were to wake up...

"People of Gao Clan?" Ji Mo finally recalled an important matter, "Take out the wedding contract! I want to tear it! Your wedding contract with the Huyan Clan won't exist from now on! The only thing that would exist... is my love!"

Everyone felt like vomiting out of disgust.

Gao Meng of the Gao Clan took out the wedding contract, and handed it over to Ji Mo under thousands of staring eyes. After that, he commanded his men to go and lift Gao Sheng. Gao Sheng had woken up some time ago. However, he was having a heartburn due to excessive anger. He was extremely ashamed. So, he simply pretended to be unconscious when he was carried away by the Gao Clan's men...

Ji Mo tore the wedding contract to shreds. He then raised his hands, and threw the pieces in the air. He jumped as he howled, "I won! I won! Aobo~~~ you're my wife, Ahwooh~~~"

Chapter 494: Demands the Gambling Debt!

A tall and sturdy figure came sweeping through the wind as soon as Ji Mo said this. It was Huyan Aobo! Miss Huyan kept her shyness aside, and ferociously kicked on Ji Mo's buttocks. She unexpectedly kicked his skinny and petite body, and angrily said, "Who is your wife..."

Her face had turned red as she had said these words.

Ji Mo looked straight in her eyes, and shouted... but, it seemed as if he was cussing, "Wow, so cute! You're blushing..."

Miss Huyan became furious at this moment. She took unfair advantage of her strong body, and beat him up. Ji Mo held his head to protect it, and shouted loudly as he begged for forgiveness... Luo Ke Di, Dong Wu Shang, and Gu Du Xing had jumped over to congratulate Ji Mo. However, they saw this, and held their breaths. They gazed at those two with their round eyes, [she is truly valiant...]

Then, the three of them saw that Ji Mo was sent flying high in the sky like a rubber ball. And, they couldn't help but feel cold in their hearts as they watched this scene with a crooked mouth and slanting eyes.

[It's said that we only beat and scold the ones that we love. And, it is said that beating is passion, and the scolding is love. But, this kind of beating... is very cruel, isn't it? Is this Ji Mo's dream girl?]

[If it is so... then we...] Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang glanced at each other. However, all they could see was a look of horror in each other's eyes.

Gu Du Xing curled his lips. He thought, [Sister Xiao Miao surely isn't like this girl Huyan Aobo... Sister Xiao Miao is tender. Ahm! Ahm! She's the best.]

Huyan Aobo and Ji Mo were done fighting by the time he

thought this. Ji Mo patted-off the dust from his body. And, he happily smiled... as if nothing had happened. Then, he even extended his hand to hold Huyan Aobo's arm...

Huyan Aobo avoided it. And, she harshly glared at him instead.

But, Ji Mo was persistent. He again extended his hand to hold her hand.

Huyan Aobo again avoided his hand. And, she scolded in a low voice, "Behave properly!"

Ji Mo had a flirtatious look on his face. Then, he again flatteringly pulled her arm... But, she didn't avoid his hand this time!

Then, both of them walked hand-in-hand.

The eyes of Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang became lifeless...

The bride usually seems to be shy, timid, and cute-looking when she links arms with the groom. And, the groom always has a proud look on his face, while the bride's face looks happy.

But now... the tall and lofty Huyan Aobo and petite and delicate looking Ji Mo were walking hand-in-hand. And, it was Ji Mo who looked timid and cute...

Huyan Aobo's face was calm and steady. And, Ji Mo had a happy look on his face...

"Poof..." Luo Ke Di couldn't bear it, and spitted out. Dong Wu Shang also started to cough.

"Greetings to both gentlemen!" Huyan Aobo straightforwardly cupped her fist in her hand. In fact, she even forgot that Ji Mo was still holding her arm. Consequently, Ji Mo's legs got lifted up from the ground when she cupped her fists...

"Greetings to Young Miss Huyan!" Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di hastily returned the greetings even though they were still in a daze.

"Aobo..." Ji Mo let go of her arm, and landed on the ground with a ‘thud’ sound. He then introduced them with a proud look on his face, "This is my Fourth Brother — Dong Wu Shang. This is my Fifth Brother — Luo Ke Di... Umm, and over there is my Second Brother — Gu Du Xing..."

"I know!" Huyan Aobo looked at him and whispered.

"I know that you know. But, I’m introducing them to you as formality." Ji Mo seemed joyfully satisfied, "This is different!"

"Who is your Big Brother?" Huyan Aobo curiously asked. [Who is that capable man who has made these few men willing to follow him?]

"Look! Here he comes." Ji Mo pointed his finger.

Chu Yang was coming over in big striding. He exposed a bright smile on his face from a distance, "Young Miss Huyan... Wait, I should call you sister-in-law now. We meet again. Ha ha..."

Huyan Aobo became startled at this. She had never imagined that Chu Yang would turn out to be Ji Mo’s Big Brother! However, she immediately came out of her thoughts. She mildly smiled, "So, it is Brother Chu!"

Everyone exchanged greetings for a while. Gu Du Xing also came over.

Huyan Aobo’s body-structure was thick. She had a tall and forthright appearance. But, she wasn’t ugly if she was looked at with a careful eye. It’s just that she had the appearance of a beautiful woman that was several times enlarged. Moreover, her style of conversation was refined, gentle and elegant. She was neither servile, nor overbearing. Instead, she seemed to have an elegant charm.

Ji Mo was a lazy and mischievous person, and he had anyways been looking for such a woman to marry. So, everyone thought that she was a perfect match for him...

Huyan Aobo looked elegant and graceful. She didn’t have the slightest of shyness that an ordinary woman possesses. Moreover, her facial features had a threatening and heroic air to them. All the brothers thought the same thing when they saw this... [This woman is pretty good.]

She could come over to meet Chu Yang and others because the representatives of the Huyan Clan had already accepted the marriage of Huyan Aobo and Ji Mo. Everyone understood this point. Only Chu Yang thought, [Perhaps... Huyan Clan hadn’t consented, but she has still come over? This woman is indeed very incredible!]

An ordinary woman wouldn’t have come to see the friends and relatives of the groom if the marriage contract wasn’t set. And, she would certainly have been very shy if she did. But, Huyan Aobo was different since she didn’t show that kind of shyness. Therefore, Dong Wu Shang and others found this woman very pleasing to the eyes.

They obviously turned away their eyes even though she was pleasing to their eyes since only Ji Mo should be able to enjoy if she were to become his wife...

Huyan Aobo wanted to go back after these conversations came to an end. However, Ji Mo suddenly said, "Aobo, you see, our coyote and Wu Shang haven’t found wives for themselves yet. So, they are still bachelors. I was thinking that you have a few younger sisters, right? Wouldn’t it be better if they also found a match?"

The complexion of Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang changed drastically as soon as he spoke this!

In fact, Luo Ke Di had been spooked out of his mind. And, he knelt on the ground with a ‘thud’ sound. He then pounded the ground with his head, "Ji Mo, Third Brother... you you you... spare me... boohoo..."

Dong Wu Shang’s complexion had turned pale. His body also

swayed.

Huyan Aobo smiled in a carefree manner and replied, "Idiot, do you think that everyone has a taste like yours?" she glanced at Ji Mo as she said this. Then, she bid farewell to everyone.

She walked away a few steps, and again stood still. She then turned her head around, and looked towards Ji Mo with a serious look on her face. She then said, "Ji Mo, thank you."

Ji Mo giggled and scratched his scalp.

"I seriously want to say something to you." Huyan Aobo looked at Ji Mo and slowly said, "I'm saying this in front of your brothers... I'll be waiting for you if you decide to marry me one day. But, you can just write me a letter if you come to have regrets someday..."

She glanced at Ji Mo with a profound look. Then, she turned over to depart. Her faint voice came floating with the wind, "Today, I have no regrets in my life."

Ji Mo was dumfounded. His face turned red in anger as he shouted, "Huyan Aobo! You fu*king listen to me — I have set my mind on you; and only you! You go back, and get ready. You prepare a warm bedding, and wait to give birth to my child!"

Huyan Aobo's body trembled. But, she didn't turn around. However, her body swayed as she walked away.

Anyone watching from the front could see that this Young Miss Huyan was blushing even though she had a manly appearance...

Ji Mo took heavy breaths. He turned around while panting. And, he saw that four thumbs-up had been pointed at him, "Good job! You're genuinely worthy of being called Ji Mo!"

Ji Mo snorted. He muttered to himself, "I'll kick you... Where else would I find so much peace and sense of security..." he said this, and causally waved his hand, "Let's go. We should go and collect the debt of gambling..."

All of them nearly fainted at the same time... including Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing...

Ji Mo and the others found that these four Great Eldest Young Masters easily... However, they saw that Ao Xie Yun and the others had become four weak and feeble Young Masters by now...

It seemed that only one phrase was written on their faces – we're done for...

Mo Tin Yun's face had particularly turned deathly pale. Young Master Yu had done the notary for his bet with Chu Yang. So, he couldn't dare to renege on the debt either.

Moreover, he looked at the immensely satisfied appearance of Chu Yang, and could tell that Young Master Yu had already given him that 1 billion taels. But, Mo Tian Yun didn't know that... Young Master Yu was also in a similar situation.

He also owed a debt to Chu Yang!

"Brother Mo, I am sorry. I have already accepted those 1 billion taels." Chu Yang chuckled and said, "So, I was actually looking for you four men to talk about the matter of the other 2.1 billion." He insipidly smiled, "I remember that I betted around three-hundred million. And, the compensation was one-is-to-six. So, after adding the return capital... he he, it becomes 2.1 billion, right?"

Ao Xie Yun had a bitter smile on his face, "Yes. Yes. Elder Brother Chu's math is very good..." Dong Wu Shang thought with a smile when he heard this, [Eighteen plus three is equal to twenty one... this seems to be a child's calculation, isn't it? What's so great about such an easy calculation?]

Xie Dan Qiong awkwardly coughed a few times and said, "Brother Chu... Young Master Yu came and took away 3.5 billion a moment ago... Ahm ahm ahm... So, the four of us are already penniless... Ahm Ahm Amh, the support from our clans hasn't arrived yet... Ahm Ahm Ahm... So, about Brother Chu's money... is it... is it

okay, ahm ahm ahm... is it okay to extend the time-limit for two days?"

Xie Dan Qiong couldn’t help but be embarrassed. These people were the Young Masters of the Great Aristocratic Families in the Middle Three Heavens. When had they gone into debt? But, they were under pressure at this time, and they couldn’t run away from the situation...

"I see... that is indeed pretty bad." Chu Yang had an awkward look on his face, "Let’s do it like this. The four of you will equally share this debt of 2.1 billion, okay? So, everyone give me a certificate of indebtedness. And, return the money within three days. Pay me according to the general interest of double-the-amount in every three days’ interval if you take more time. Okay?"

"Will do. Will do. Will do." Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao felt relieved from the burden. They clearly understood the calculation of how each of them would pay their debts. Moreover, they didn’t need three days since the support from their clans would arrive in two days. So, they could pay the debt then. But, the loss of this wealth would still be extremely painful...

"I don’t need to write a certificate of indebtedness in this case."Ao Xie Yun smiled, "I can pay you the money right now."

Chu Yang attentively looked at him and replied, "Brother Ao is filthy rich." Ao Xie Yun smiled. He then took out golden notes, and handed them over to Chu Yang.

However, Mo Tian Yun was mourning because he had already gone bankrupt. He didn’t dare to renege on the debt when Young Master Yu had come to collect the money. In addition, he even had to mortgage yet another clan’s property to Ao Xie Yun to pay-off the debt that he owed to Young Master Yu. Only then he was able to send that God of Death away...

As for the debt that he owed to Chu Yang... even thirty days would not be enough...! His clan would get to know about what

had happened here soon or later. And, he would be extremely lucky if didn't get his skinned for it.

Chu Yang had spoken about the general interest-rate. And, this amount would be doubled after three days in accordance with it... So, it would be even more malicious than the usury. And, perhaps the Mo Clan would have to sell everything if it took him a month, and still they won't be able to repay the debt...

He didn't know that Chu Yang had raised this request with him being the real target. In fact, Chu Yang had done this for him alone. The reason was that... he had bullied Mo Qing Wu...! And, that had already touched Chu Yang's nerve. In fact, Chu Yang would feel that taking a rebirth was meaningless if he couldn't make his life miserable...!

This was a matter of principles. So, there was no possibility to show any mercy to Mo Tian Yun!

Chapter 495: Humiliates Mo Tian Yun!

Ou Du Xiao and Xie Dan Qiong helplessly wrote down their IOUs. They felt aggrieved and helpless. Mo Tian Yun also lifted the pen, but it felt as heavy as a mountain to him. And, he couldn't bring himself to write down those few words.

Could he really afford it? How...?

He had already used up the clan's fluid funds. The clan had eight big estates, and he had already mortgaged four of them! Mo Clan used to have great wealth and influence, but the clashes between the two brothers had already ruined most of that wealth...

"Brother Mo..." Chu Yang smiled and said, "Write the IOU. It's only 525 million silvers. Brother Mo, don't tell me... ha-ha... you are unable to produce such a meager amount?"

Mo Tian Yun's complexion turned ashen!

He would've been able to take out this amount under normal circumstances, but... he had just lost about 2 billion. Moreover, he also had to hand over four properties! So, he was completely broke at this time.

Ao Xie Yun, Xie Dan Qiong, and Ou Du Xiao looked at Mo Tian Yun. And, it seemed as if they were taking pleasure in his misfortune, [Serves you right! You were being greedy! You wanted to hog-up that one billion! Do you like the taste of retribution now?]

"Ha-ha... Brother Chu, you see... if you could show some leniency and extent the time limit..." Mo Tian Yun clenched his teeth, and spoke-up in a submissive manner. He had finally decided to put his pride aside. He was in trouble. So, he had no choice but to lower his head. The other party had already caught his weakness. So, what he could he possibly achieve by trying to hide it further?

"Brother Mo... this is wrong. This isn't fair." Chu Yang

interrupted unhappily, and bluntly asked, "Don’t you have the money?"

"I’m kind of in a pinch right now..." Mo Tian Yun summoned his courage and confessed.

"I see. Well, I can also tell that Brother Mo is in a financial crisis! You wouldn’t have borrowed that 1 billion if that weren’t the case!" Chu Yang sneered and replied, "But Brother Mo, you must understand that each one of us took a huge risk in this gambling match, didn’t we? And, we were ready to bear the consequences. Maybe I turned out to be smarter than your expectation, but that doesn’t mean that you are some stupid retard, correct?!"

Mo Tian Yun had retreated step-by-step, whereas Chu Yang had continued to press-on harder and harder! [You take a step back, and I will take two steps forward! And, I will do that with an aggressive attitude, a despising look on my face, and a disdainful expression in my eyes! I will use every possible means to pressure you, and I will stop at nothing!]

[I will hound you to death! I will infuriate you! And, I will toy with you to death!]

Chu Yang felt a strong sense of pleasure in his heart when he thought of the pain and suffering that Mo Qing Wu must’ve gone through because of this guy. The young masters who stood nearby were also taking pleasure in others’ misfortune. In fact, they found this very enjoyable!

Who in Jianghu could push the Eldest Young Master of a big aristocratic clan into such an embarrassed state?

Mo Tian Yun’s complexion turned pale. He somehow restrained his rage. He submitted himself to the humiliation and said, "If only Brother Chu could extend the time limit to a fortnight... I would definitely... anyhow arrange the debt amount for you!"

"Ha ha ha..." Chu Yang faced upwards, and laughed heartily.

Then, he ruthless replied, "No matter what... you are signing this IOU and handing it over to me right now! I said three days. I won't extend it even by an hour! I will make you to write the IOU against your will you don't agree... Moreover, there are plenty of witnesses here. Gambling debt is repaid with life. That's the established rule of the Jianghu!"

He sneered. A sword-like sharp light flashed in his eyes as he said in a serious tone, "Brother Mo, it's your choice!"

Gu Du Xing held his sword in his bosom, and causally spoke-up, "I can help Brother Mo if he wishes. I can ensure that you die very happily, and without the slightest pain! My sword is very swift. Nobody in the Middle Three Heavens would deny this!"

A bloodthirsty look flashed in Dong Wu Shang's eyes as he added, "Mo Tian Yun, I – Dong Wu Shang – can also assist you with this!! My saber is well-known in the Middle Three Heavens!" he gripped the hilt of his saber as he said this, and a strong killing intent surged from his body.

Xie Dan Qiong couldn't bear anymore. He stepped forward and said, "Brother Chu..."

Chu Yang turned around. He then said with an affable smile on his face, "What? Brother Xie also wants to repay his debt right now? No problem. I certainly wouldn't mind if Brother Xie can take out the amount right now."

"Eh... no no no. Never mind. It's nothing." Xie Dan Qiong awkwardly wiped his sweat, and retreated. [I almost got dragged into this. This King of Hell Chu is like the King of Hell who chases after debt. He is using simple words to reveal the true colors of the creditors. Motherfu*ker, I can't afford to provoke him... or I will also end up getting in trouble...]

Ao Xie Yun was the only one among these four Young Masters who was debt-free at this time. It could be said that Ao Xie Yun and Mo Tian Yun didn't like each other. So, he would never help Mo

Tian Yun. However, Ao Xie Yun was a conscientious guy who would never hit a person who is down...

[There could be a conflict here. But, I would only have Ou Du Xiao and Mo Tian Yun on this side... whereas the other side would have Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo... plus this unpredictable and unfathomable King of Hell Chu!]

[That would be like courting death!]

[Not to mention that they still owe the other party... So, I would have to carry this infamy for a lifetime if I take part in this conflict!]

He was motionless. Ou Du Xiao was obviously motionless as well. After all, there was no friendship between Ou Du Xiao and Mo Tian Yun. So, why would he be willing to offend his creditor for this guy?

Luo Ke Di shouted loudly, "Mo Tian Yun, I tell you motherfu*ker... you either fu*king repay the debt... or commit suicide and be done with it...! Don't beat around the bush! Hurry up and speak what you want! Everyone here is busy. This Second Master Luo's each moment is worth billions, you know. You are wasting my time..."

Ji Mo turned his face the other way. His body twitched, [Motherfu*ker, each moment is worth billions he says. This Luo Ke Di really knows how to exaggerate when it comes to bragging... I think his time isn't even worth a few pennies when I look at his appearance...]

Mo Tian Yun had been put in a very difficult situation. These four people were glaring at him from four directions like a tiger would watch his prey. It seemed as if they would prance at him any moment, and would rip him to shreds. When had the Eldest Young Master of the majestic Mo Clan faced such humiliation in his life?

Mo Tian Yun wished he could die right now and rid himself of

this humiliation. This was too humiliating! It was too disgraceful and embarrassing!

However, he also had a dark and hateful thought in this heart at this time. [How can this King of Hell Chu be so disrespectful? Who in Jianghu would handle matters in this way? How can he humiliate an honorable and prestigious person like me...?]

He was unaware that Chu Yang was deliberately driving him into a corner. In fact, Chu Yang was deliberately pushing him further and further against the wall in order to make him more and more uncomfortable. And, this was making Chu Yang feel more and more pleasurable! How could Chu Yang possibly be willing... to forgive him?

Mo Tian Yun kept turning white and then green... he kept switching back and forth between those colors. In fact, he felt like yelling out loud, [Yeah! So what, you wanna fight?! You think I am afraid?! You guys want to take my life? Fine, I'd like to see you try. Bring it on!]

However, he then thought of the possible consequences of the conflict and his inevitable doom. He imagined the frightening spectacle after the intervention of Young Master Yu, and ultimately didn't dare to think along these lines anymore...

He thought for a long time, and finally clenched his teeth as he said, "Ok! I'll give you an IOU! Three days! Three days it is!"

"Good, that's the spirit of a great clan's young master! This is the boldness of the future Clan Lord of the Mo Clan! This is Mo Tian Yun — the great young master." Chu Yang said in a mystical tone at first. Then, he ridiculed him to his heart's content, "Brother Mo genuinely knows how to adapt to a particular situation. He can be soft, and he can be hard. He can be firm, and he can be tender. He can push forward, but he can also retreat. He can go up, but he can also go 'down'. He's that kind of a character!"

Luo Ke Di held his tummy and laughed wildly, "Big Brother, your

description is so vivid. I even imagined Second Brother Gu..." Gu Du Xing got furious and launched a kick at once. And, he sent this bastard flying far away from there. Second Young Master Luo begged for mercy whilst in midair, "Forgive me... I was talking about Second Brother Gu's second brother..."

Ji Mo and Dong Wu Shang trembled...

Ao Xie Yun, Xie Dan Qiong, and Ou Du Xiao tightly pursed-up their lips, and held their tongue as they tried their best not to burst into laughter. The dignified Eldest Young Master of the Mo Clan had been described... as a 'di*k'?

It was already beyond the point of humiliation for a person of Mo Tian Yun's status. This could be considered as a big anecdote in the Middle Three Heavens!

Mo Tian Yun lowered his head, and scribbled in a rapid manner. He had an endless sense of humiliation in his heart. He felt as if his chest would explode of anger. His complexion had nearly turned purple. And, it seemed like blood would seep out from his face. However, he firmly clenched his teeth, but didn't say a word.

He was done writing the IOU after some time. Chu Yang took it, and carefully blew air on Mo Tian Yun's ink-seal. He smiled complacently, and shook it against the wind. Then, he carefully folded it into two, and put it into his bosom.

Then, he politely smiled and said, "Brother Mo, I only wish to remind you. There are only three days, ok...?" he said this and clicked his tongue to show his disappointment. Then, he further added in a tone so frivolous that it could infuriate anyone, "I must say that Brother Mo's handwriting is pretty good. It's a pity that it's worthless. This writing itself isn't enough to pay off the debt."

Mo Tian Yun's lips trembled a bit. He looked at Chu Yang with an unwavering determination. His eyes had almost turned red in their entirety. He clenched his teeth and said, "Three days means three days... I – Mo Tian Yun – will not forget that!"

"No, no, no... I meant... the man who will come to look for you if you don't show up with the debt's amount at the end of three days won't be me. It will be Young Master Yu! Don't forget that he is the notary! So, who else would I turn to for help?"

Chu Yang made a hypocritical show of affection as he sighed, "Things may turn ugly if Young Master Yu doesn't like this. I won't be irresponsible for that. Who made him to be the notary?"

Mo Tian Yun's face suddenly lost all its color.

"However, I have another solution if Brother Mo is genuinely unable to return the debt's amount..." Chu Yang faintly smiled.

"What solution?" Mo Tian Yun suddenly raised his head.

"I have heard that recently... Mo Clan has obtained a peerless and treasured saber!" Chu Yang's smile seemed to have a bloody feel to it. He then gently said, "The exact time should be... a year-and-a-half ago? Correct? Isn't that so?"

Mo Tian Yun suddenly went three steps back. He stared at Chu Yang with a stupefied look, "You... how do you know?"

"Ha-ha, that's none of your concern. I only wish to remind you. Give me that saber in a month's time if you can't return the debt's amount within three days. And, I will consider dropping the debt." Chu Yang added, "I won't mind suffering some losses for it."

The time limit of three days wasn't enough. So, the entirety of Mo Tian Yun's hopes would be on the saber now.

This was indeed a deal of loss for Chu Yang. That was because he could always create such a saber within half-a-days' time as long as there was enough material. Moreover, he wouldn't even need to spend any money on it. However, he had been listening to Mo Qing Wu talk in her sleep. And, she had been dreaming of her saber every day, [my saber, my saber...]

Chu Yang wasn't heartless-enough to not understand that the saber held unmatched significance for Mo Qing Wu.

But, how could Chu Yang’s plan merely be to take-back that saber? This was a sinister and ruthless trap aimed at Mo Tian Yun in reality!

Mo Tian Yun clenched his teeth. He had never felt this depressed in his entire life. He replied, "But, that saber... is my Mo Clan’s family heirloom..."

Chu Yang put on a profound smile, "Family heirloom? Ha ha ha, family heirloom? Ha ha ha..."

Mo Tian Yun’s face turned red as he shouted, "Why are you laughing?"

Chu Yang’s countenance changed as he replied in a cold and gloomy tone, "I don’t care whether it is a family heirloom or whatever. You only have four options — First, give me 525 million taels within three days! Second, the amount doubles after every three days and the interest keeps adding up. This will only continue for a month at the most! Third, I want that saber! Fourth, you repay the debt with your head!"

...

Chapter 496: Various Situations

Chu Yang coldly said, "I think you should be clever-enough to make the right choice, Brother Mo! I have complete faith in your wisdom."

There was no way for him to settle the debt in three days' time. The interest would stand to double every three days. So, he would have to pay 1.1 billion after six days... 2.2 billion after nine days... 4.4 billion after twelve days... and then after fifteen days... the interest would continue to compound like this... Mo Tian Yun could mortgage the entire Middle Three Heavens after a month would pass, but it still wouldn't be enough for him to pay off the debt...

It was natural that Mo Tian Yun didn't wish to say anything further since he wasn't willing to repay the debt with his head.

Mo Tian Yun walked away in a daze. But, he left behind a few words before he walked away, "I will give you that saber within one month!"

Chu Yang smiled in a cruel manner as he looked at this Great Young Master's back profile.

Mo Tian Yun left. Ao Xie Yun also bid goodbye and left. He wanted to gather his residual wealth. Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao also wanted to take their leave soon after. But, Chu Yang enthusiastically asked them to stay behind, "Brother Ou, Brother Xie. Wait a minute! I want to say something."

[These two are very important people. It would be a pity to let them go like this...]

"What's the matter?" Both of them looked at him with a sense of vigilance. The two of them didn't dare to look down on this King of Hell Chu even though he had recently come up from the Lower Three Heavens.

This man’s methods could only be described as terrifying...

Chu Yang spoke with a warm smile on his face, "I just want the two of you to remember this thing... you two Young Masters can also repay your debt in the form of items instead of money. You don’t need to gather such a large amount of silver taels... he he, I’m your friend. So, I feel somewhat embarrassed while talking about money... therefore, it would be better not to talk about money."

Eyes of Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao brightened up at the same time. They asked, "Brother Chu, what does this mean?"

"I’m saying... for example... some unusual elixir or some precious gems... Some rare materials... such as, Exquisite Herbs, Dipsacus Roots, Seven-colored Jade, Purple crystal, Red Crystal, and Blue crystal. Or maybe, Star Iron, Nightmare Steel, Volcanic Silver, and Hell Gold... he he he... I want a lot of these. In fact, I would even do business with you guys if you are still left with much of these items after you’ve redeemed the gambling debt.

"We can even do long-term business... I am very willing to establish business relations with two such trust-worthy friends."

Chu Yang subtly smiled, "Rest assured. I won’t let the two of you suffer a loss. In fact, I will purchase these items at 20% higher than the market price; regardless of whether it’s before or after you have repaid this debt! Moreover, I’ll purchase any extremely rare items at double the price! What do you say?"

Chu Yang didn’t lack anything at the moment... whether it was gold, silver, golden notes, or silver notes. He was filthy rich at the moment! Money was like trash for him. He could throw away as much money as he wanted, but he still wouldn’t feel sorry. Moreover, he could easily buy valuable items with this money...

He still hadn’t finished speaking this, but the eyes of the two men had already lit-up. In fact, a golden road of opportunity had suddenly appeared in front of the eyes of these two Great Young

Masters when Chu Yang had said ‘at 20% higher price than the market price’! Let alone double the price...

How much would be the twenty percent of the market price? It can be said that one can earn two-hundred million extra if one sells stuff worth one billion! And, this would be considered a great deal of wealth...

It could be said that these items had great value when one considers the accumulation of several hundred years of these two great aristocratic families. But, most of these items couldn’t be used despite being very precious. It was a pity to throw them away. But, they were useless anyway...

In addition, these aristocratic clans needed to develop armed forces and influence. And, most of this would be done with money! Moreover, money was equally important to have hold of cultivation crystals, inner core of the spirit beasts, and elixirs...

It was obvious that the two clans were wealthy. So, there wouldn’t be any problem in complying. As for these so-called Star Iron, Nightmare steel, Volcanic Silver, and Hell Gold, and so on... everyone knew that they were precious items, but they couldn’t use them in reality... So, what was the point of hoarding them?

Selling these things off wouldn’t be an issue. And, the main point was that the selling price of these stuffs wasn’t fixed... but, Chu Yang had more ‘money’ than ‘sense in his mind’ since he was willing to purchase them at 20% more than the market price!

Wasn’t this like ‘finding a lantern in the dark’ scenario?

"Well! We have a deal as long as Brother Chu means what he says!" A big stone had suddenly fallen-off the hearts of Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao. They had already lost much of their wealth. And, their entire clan would have to suffer financial crisis for at least a year if they would put forth another 520 million of funds! And, that would be a fatal problem in these critical times!

However, there won't be any issue if they repaid their debts with these items.

"Brother Chu, when are we going to have the business deal?" Both of them seemed somewhat impatient.

Chu Yang affably smiled and replied, "I remember that Ou and Xie clans come on the way while going north. So, we can have a business deal whenever I arrive there..."

Chu Yang chuckled, "There's no harm in going on the same journey together. I have heard that Young Master Yu of the Dark Bamboo also hails from the extreme north..."

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, and Ji Mo – all looked at each other. They thought, [it seems that Big Brother has decided to plunder his way north...]

Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao were pleased and relieved as they walked away. They had to be happy at this time! Their crisis had been solved, and they had also discovered new source of income for their clans...

Chu Yang smiled as he watched them leave. Then, he turned his head towards Ji Mo and said, "Ji Mo, you must remember that Mo Tian Yun will steal the divine saber from the Mo Clan. You must inform Mo Tian Ji about this without any delay... I believe that Mo Tian Ji will teach Mo Tian Yun a proper lesson. But, you also have to inform him... that I want Qing Wu's saber back!"

A radiance of victory flashed in Chu Yang's eyes. It also had a hint of maliciousness in it.

"Big Brother, you want to purchase these things. I'm afraid... your stash of billions won't be enough for all of them." Gu Du Xing pondered and spoke, "Do you want me to transfer some money from my clan?"

Ji Mo, Dong Wu Shang, and Luo Ke Di also nodded. It was evident that they were also thinking the same thing.

They didn’t understand what Chu Yang wanted to do. But, they chose to support him unconditionally. [We don’t know what Big Brother wants to do, but it would surely be good!]

Gu Du Xing’s words were quite reasonable. Everyone knew that these unusual and rare items were very precious. They didn’t have a market, but they were still very expensive. For example... a fist-sized chunk of Star Iron was worth several hundred-thousand silver taels.

Some of them were even more precious... such as Nightmare Steel. Only a small chunk of it was worth millions. As for the Red Cloud Steel... it was the finest material. In fact, the Red Cloud Steel that’s the size of a person’s head was worth more than ten-million!

Chu Yang’s net worth was very high at present. But, it would be far less than sufficient... if he wanted to purchase all these items!

Chu Yang mischievously laughed, "It’s not easy to handle money. We would be able to get some wealth if we plunder some of it from the powerhouses of the Middle Three Heavens. For example, we would have profit pouring-in from all sides if we snatch and loot while playing it safe..."

The four brothers were left stunned after they heard this. And, they didn’t know whether to laugh or cry...

"Big Brother, but how should we go about our journey?" Luo Ke Di seemed very concerned about this issue, "Should we go with our clans? Or should we go on our own as a group of us brothers?"

Chu Yang replied in a very relaxed manner, "This depends on the wishes of you people."

"I want to be on my own." Dong Wu Shang resolutely replied.

"I also want the same," Ji Mo added.

"Me too! Me too!" Luo Ke Di hurriedly responded.

"State your reasons," Chu Yang knew that the so-called idea of

‘being on their own’ actually meant to be with Chu Yang whilst being separated from their own clans. However, he didn’t reveal his own expression regarding this matter since he didn’t have anything of his own to give-up like his brothers did. So, he said, "You all will still be traveling in the same direction if you follow your clans. So, we can still meet each other every day like we used to..."

"I feel uncomfortable with my family." Dong Wu Shang’s eyes revealed a trace of pain, "I am willing to sacrifice everything for my clan, but there are some things that I can’t bear. But, I have no other alternative..."

Chu Yang nodded as he clearly understood this. [Dong Wu Shang must be talking about his elder brother Dong Wu Lei. He is clearly hesitant, but he has chosen a fair and justifiable point of view.] Chu Yang pondered and replied, "Wu Shang, your elder brother cherishes you a lot. But... there are some qualities that the person who occupies the position of a leader must have. And, you must understand this as well."

"I do understand. And, I suffer only because I understand." Dong Wu Shang sighed.

"Me too... My elder brother treats me well. But, my existence threatens him." Luo Ke Di raised his hand and said, "Moreover, what he did today makes me feel very uncomfortable. Therefore, I must leave for a few days since that will allow him to introspect."

This was similar to harboring a childish grudge. And, the others laughed when they heard this.

"I don’t want to be with my family because... my elder brother is very lazy..." Ji Mo hung his head dispiritedly, "He is only thinking of every possible way to make me take his place so that I can become the Eldest Young Master of the Clan... And, I fear that I would mess up big-time. How could a brick like me be the Clan Lord? This would be a joke... I don’t want to manage the matters of

the clan since they are only as important as piles of junk in my eyes. I want to hold the sword, and travel the Jianghu. I wish to have no worries, and be with my wife. I want to roam care-free. Then, I want to return home when I feel homesick. After that, I would show filial respect to my parents, and stay for a few days. But then, I wish go out without any restrictions... this is the kind of life I want..."

Everyone became speechless.

"You two guys can easily follow Big Brother. But, what do I do?" Gu Du Xing took a deep breath, "Someone killed those two brothers of mine. Its direct consequences are that I'm now tied to the clan. How can I selfishly abandon the Gu Clan and the people over there?"

"This is nothing." Luo Ke Di embraced his shoulder and said, "We brothers will cover our faces and follow your Gu Clan's team. We will go more quickly than the other clans... So, wouldn't we get best of both worlds as long as we don't expose our identity?"

Ji Mo's eyes shone as he said, "Brilliant idea. Let me tell you, our Heavenly Armament Pavilion will have might and awe-inspiring influence in the Middle Three Heavens as well. How about we make some masks and cover our faces? After that, we will loot and snatch things together..."

Everyone's eyes lit-up, "Yes! We will start our Heavenly Armament Pavilion from tomorrow itself!"

Chu Yang pondered and said, "Very well! I will make some small items tonight as a symbol of our Heavenly Armament Pavilion."

The brothers cheered in unison.

Chapter 497: The Heaven Armament Pavilion Opens in the Middle Three Heavens!

The troops of the Dark Bamboo left Mt. Dingjun immediately after. In fact, they didn't even greet anyone before he left.

"Little Yu, how was our profit this time?" Jun Xi Zhu insipidly asked.

"Very good! We have harvested a total income of more than three billions. Also, we have recruited 11 King Level Experts, and 45 Revered Martial Experts." Young Master Yu faintly smiled and added, "A few Emperor Level Experts also came. However, all of them were from great clans. So, this Young Master has no interest in making use of them."

Jun Xi Zhu nodded as she smiled. She said, "It's great! This harvest was beyond my expectations." She muttered something to herself at first. Then, she changed the topic, "You have known that King of Hell Chu for quite some time. And, this King of Hell Chu must've played a major role in this event if my guess is to be correct. What do you think?"

Young Master Yu knitted his brows and replied, "Right. Others didn't see it. But, King of Hell Chu's grasp of human nature is extremely precise! Moreover... King of Hell Chu is the kind of man who believes in his own strength. So, there's not much possibility that he would accept external help."

Jun Xi Zhu uttered an 'oh', and started to contemplate. A long while passed before she said, "We must investigate. All men have a weak point. And, they also need some help once in a while. But, it's far better to inform them about such matters before the situation occurs instead of helping them when they are in need after that event has already happened. Otherwise, we won't be able to have

friendly relations with him."

Young Master Yu sighed and said, "It’s not possible to do that anymore. He’s my creditor now."

"Creditor...?" Jun Xi Zhu twitched her eyebrows and asked, "You lost to him?"

Young Master Yu spread out his hands, "Did you feel that Gao Sheng would lose that fight to Ji Mo?"

Jun Xi Zhu smiled, "I see." She pondered for a while, and recalled the battle-scenario between Gao Sheng and Ji Mo. She sighed after a long while, "No."

Young Master Yu sighed, "I also thought the same. So, I lost to Chu Yang... but, what’s more aggrieving is... that bastard Gao Sheng had a killer technique to beat his opponent. But, he got defeated because of the excess of his anger before he could even use his killer technique! And, this makes me fu*king depressed!"

"Are you talking about that mysterious technique of the Gao Clan that Gao Sheng has practiced?" Jun Xi Zhu had an incisive expression in her eyes.

"He hasn’t mastered it yet. But, he has practiced it!" Young Master Yu replied, "In fact, he could’ve beaten Ji Mo with ease even if he had only reached the threshold of that technique! But, this technique needed him to be in a cool mood. Only then could he have displayed its formidable power. But, he became an angry like a pig, and blew his top in the arena. How could he use the technique in that state? It makes me very furious, very furious..."

He recalled that he could’ve obtained those two jade at minimum price. But, he had to pay a very high price at the end. And, this had happened because Gao Sheng could’ve won... but didn’t...! Young Master Yu was about to vomit blood. Moreover, he had learned that he must hold his sharp and reckless tongue in front of Chu Yang if he wanted to save himself from getting plundered again

during his journey to the north. However, he had learnt this lesson the hard way...

He felt wronged when he thought that his wealth would shrink substantially. In fact, Young Master Yu wanted to tear Gao Sheng to shreds...

Jun Xi Zhu said ‘oh’, and sunk into her thoughts once again. She was seemingly pondering something, but it was hard to tell as to what was going through her mind...

Young Master Yu looked at her complexion. He observed it for a while and said, "How is your health these days?"

Jun Xi Zhu wrinkled her brows in a weary manner, and replied, "I’m good. But, I feel anxious about this whole ninth-grade spirit beast situation."

Young Master Yu exposed a pensive expression in his eyes and said, "The ninth-grade spirit beasts have appeared in the extreme north this time... Perhaps there’s something fishy going on. So, you must make safety preparations."

Jun Xi Zhu closed her eyes and said, "Which matter isn’t strange? We all have emerged from strange origins. You take good care of Ah Lu when the time comes. I may move into action, and I may fail to succeed. So, you will have to move into action if that happens..."

Young Master Yu exposed a warm smile on his face and said, "I’m going over to Ah Lu’s side."

Jun Xi Zhu didn’t speak anything. And, Young Master Yu quietly disappeared.

...

Chu Yang quickly created six masks at midnight. They were neither made of gold, nor silver. But, they were still extremely exquisite. They covered one’s face in such a way that the person wouldn’t feel any sense of suffocation. In fact, he would feel comfortable instead...

It was the Heavenly Armament Pavilion! So, it was rather obvious that the preparation of Heavenly Armaments would be on the roster. Therefore, Chu Yang manufactured a pile of short knives and daggers. They were short... and, not just in the name alone. In fact, they were pocket-sized at the most. The longest ones were as long as the palm of a hand, and the shortest ones were as long as a finger.

Finally, Chu Yang also manufactured a few tokens. Cloud and mist were curling-up on the surface of the tokens. A dazzling golden sword was looming inside the clouds. In fact, it was flaring-up in the cloud and mist. It was only faintly visible, yet it had a dominant presence. It looked flashy!

‘Heavenly Armament Pavilion’– these three words had been carved in flamboyant and boldly cursive calligraphy on the tokens! There was a circle on the lower-left of the token, and ‘1’ was carved inside this circle. Similarly, numbers successive till ‘6’ had been carved on the other tokens...

Chu Yang had decided to keep them to six for the time being because they didn’t have many elite soldiers in their group. In fact, they only had these brothers. However, these six brothers would be unstoppable when they’d advance hand-in-hand!

Chu Yang handed-over these tokens to everyone the next morning. Number 2 for Gu Du Xing, number 3 for Ji Mo, number 4 for Dong Wu Shang, number 5 for Luo Ke Di, and number 6 for Rui Bu Tong...

Rui Bu Tong obviously wasn’t present there at this time. So, Chu Yang kept his token for the time being.

"You guys must remember one thing." Chu Yang solemnly said, "There’s a purple crystal space in this token. And, you can open it if you want to. I have put some life-saving pills in there. Pop the pill if you encounter any bad situation by chance, and run away to save your life!"

He then said in a heavy voice, "Heavenly Armament Pavilion is ours. But, I don't want any of you to receive any harm! You must remember that life is the most precious thing... no matter what the circumstances would be! Missions and organizations... are merely transient! I want my brothers to move unhindered through the Nine Heavens. But, I don't want to mourn over the corpses of my brothers and fall into the whirlpool of revenge thereafter! Do you understand?"

"Understood!" the four of them replied in unison. Their eyes were sparkling at this moment since they could clearly perceive Chu Yang's feelings from these words.

Then, everyone held the short-knifes and the daggers. These were small, but they could cut iron like it was mud. In fact, they were even sharper than their own swords. Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo were tossing and turning them. Whereas, Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing merely looked at them once, and kept them aside.

After that, Chu Yang provided them with the masks. The six masks had nothing in common.

The masks of Dong Wu Shang and Gu Du Xing were stern and ruthlessly ominous looking. The ones for Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo had a smiling expression, and their mouths were grinning. Chu Yang's mask was a dull and expressionless face.

Everyone liked their masks very much.

"Big Brother, what's the purpose of establishing our Heavenly Armament Pavilion?" Ji Mo asked.

Obviously, this was the most concerning issue for all of them. So, they started to look at Chu Yang for an answer.

"Our present purpose is to expand and grow stronger, and attract other experts to join us. But, our ultimate purpose is to conquer the Middle Three Heavens!" Chu Yang insipidly replied, "This should be very easy for us as long as our cultivation levels enhance

at a rapid pace."

[It should be very easy...] The four of them looked at Chu Yang. They had been dumbstruck by this reply. [Elder Brother Chu, what you're saying... sounds kind of weightless, ah! We may be considered to be outstanding in the younger generation. But, we six people are nothing when one takes a broader view of the Middle Three Heavens... ah...]

"The Heavenly Armament Pavilion must be successful, and must gain a reputation." Chu Yang cautiously reminded, "So, we mustn't expose our real identity before our strength reaches a certain level."

Everyone would've understood this even if he hadn't said so...

"The Heavenly Armament Pavilion will start its operation from today. After that, I will make use of every means and give you special training to help you progress!" Chu Yang's eyes brightened, "The progress-speed of your cultivation is extremely slow..."

The four of them were left speechless once again.

[Everyone in the Middle Three Heaves is already terrified of our present progress speed. And, you say it's still slow...? However, it's certainly somewhat slower than Big Brother's...]

"You must advance to the Emperor level in half-a-year... or a year at most! After that, you must continue to advance to the Monarch level!" A lightning like expression flashed in Chu Yang, "I will train you. The one who wouldn't be able to cultivate to the Emperor level in one year's time would automatically become a lower-rank member of the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. Consequently, he would have to serve the other brothers. Also, it can be any service..."

"Eh?" This goal was too much... even for Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang. In fact, this was an unrealistic goal.

Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang had a personal goal that they

would advance to the Emperor level within ten years. And, they were very confident about it! [It would be incredible if we could advance to it in ten years. But, Big Brother has asked us to advance to it in one year...]

[Isn't this too farfetched?]

"Believe me! I can accomplish this. I can make you achieve the target." Chu Yang looked at the four of them, "Did you think that you could accomplish your current achievements in such a short period of time before you met me?"

The four of them lowered their heads, and pondered. [Indeed! Who could've imagined that we would dramatically advance from Martial Great Master to a King level Expert in one-and-a-half years? We could never have imagined that in our dreams before we had met Elder Brother Chu!]

Chu Yang mischievously laughed, "You will see when the facts will prove it to you. So, speaking about it is useless at this time... You still remember my training method, right? Half of the men will go out, and half of you will train. This will happen every day. And, this will go-on in rotation."

This matter had been decided.

Their journey started from this day. The Gu Clan had already gone ahead of the other clans. What was worth noting was... Chu Yang made five chunks of star steel, and each of them was 500kg in weight. After that, everyone carried one chunk each, and hastened-on with their journey.

They weren't allowed to ride horses. They could only walk. Anyway, the horses would've become extremely slow if so much weight had been put on them...

Dong Wu Shang was the most miserable because he also had his 285-kg black saber on his back.

In addition, Chu Yang had strictly stipulated – you can die of

exhaustion! But, your breaths must remain steady throughout...

Chu Yang also had a chunk on his back. Mo Qing Wu was following Chu Yang through the entire journey. And, she was cheerfully smiling in a lighthearted manner. In fact, she accompanied him as he led the way. And, the cute little girl would hurriedly take out her handkerchief the moment she'd see sweat on Chu Yang's forehead. After that, she would carefully help him wipe the sweat...

Chu Yang had thought that he would make this cute little girl to sit in a carriage. But, the Sword Spirit had resolutely stopped him – [Make her run! Her physical strength and martial power would be used up slowly. So, we must push her to her current limits. Her meridians must be brought to the volatility they had when they had been damaged. We would be able to unblock her meridians ahead of time by doing so...]

They ran madly in the morning. Then, they had a lunch break. Gu Du Xing was the kind of man who wouldn't break a sweat that easily. But, he used his spiritual power until it got completely exhausted. Then, he used his physical strength... and it also got exhausted. Consequently, he reached his limits...

This was similar to a session of morning jogging. But, Gu Du Xing felt that he was already past the limits of his body...

Dong Wu Shang was even more miserable. In fact, his legs had started to shake by the time they sat down to eat. And, he drank half-a-jar of water in one breath...

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di nearly dozed-off from exhaustion. In fact, they were about to put off the chunk from their backs and lie down. But, they were strictly stopped by Chu Yang – [Eating, drinking water, and taking rest... but, you aren't allowed to sleep!]

These words left Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di to whine in grief.

Chapter 498: Yang Ruo Lan Arrives

Chu Yang was also very tired. But, he had to endure. This training would end if he were to show that he couldn't withstand it anymore...

They had a meal in the afternoon. They then rested for more than half an hour. However, the duration of this break-time was insignificant if the bitter torment that these four people had suffered was taken into account.

After that, they started to dash-about wildly in the afternoon again...

Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, and Ji Mo – these four people had started to strive harder and harder!

And, that was because Big Brother Chu had said – [I was a Martial Master when you guys were Martial Great Masters. But, we are on the same level now. So, I can see how much hard work you people have done!]

[Fifty kilograms of weight would be added on the back of the person who falls one grade behind my cultivation level. Similarly, a hundred kilograms of weight would be added if I were to surpass you by two grades... And, the weight would keep-on adding-up...]

These words left the brothers dumbstruck and unable to reply. Chu Yang's speed was purely monstrous. Wouldn't comparing themselves with him feel overwhelming to them? [But, Big Brother Chu has made a good point. He's also a man. His progress is very rapid because he's diligent, ah... So, it would be very embarrassing if he manages to surpass us again...]

Consequently, they trained so hard that they almost collapsed...

They had the evening meal. After that, they rested until their bodies were no longer sweating. In fact, Chu Yang showed them a little mercy, and allowed the brothers to put down the Star Iron.

They felt as light as a feather they moment they put it down. In fact, they felt as if they could fly. Luo Ke Di lay down on the ground, and faced upwards. After that, he let out a long sigh of relief and said, "This is pure pleasure, ah..."

Ji Mo looked at him in a disdainful manner. However, he didn't have the strength to say anything to him. [Motherfu*ker! You don't even feel happy when you eat exotic delicacies. But, today you feel happy after putting down this big chunk...]

They rested for a while. After that, Chu Yang – the supreme leader of this Heavenly Armament Pavilion, Dong Wu Shang, and Ji Mo went out, and started their journey to become famous.

Gu Du Xing and Luo Ke Di stayed behind in the Gu Clan's camp.

Gu Du Xing sat cross-legged in meditation, and tried hard to operate his martial power. He could feel that this one day's training had exhausted him to his limit. He had certainly broken through some limits of his physical strength, but the effect wasn't that obvious. Instead, he had started to feel that his body had become even heavier...

He recalled what Chu Yang had said, [you wouldn't be able to adapt to this training in the beginning. But, you will see the progress if you're able to withstand it for seven days.]

[All that sweat won't go in vain.]

Luo Ke Di was pacing back and forth with his hands clasped behind his back. Ten King Level Experts of the Gu Clan were looking at their own Young Clan Lord and his friend with expressions of admiration in their eyes.

No one had even dared to think about such kind of training since it would've exhausted them to death. But, these youngsters were so determined that they weren't willing to give up... even if they would have to put their lives into it!

These people used to be fearless when they were younger.

However, could they have gone through such a hard training back in the day?

[These youngsters have become King Level Experts at the ages of eighteen, nineteen or twenty. How could we have done that by relying on our meager family status and luck?]

After that, Gu Du Xing started to look for ten King Level Experts of his clan, and started to talk to them one by one. He wanted to understand everyone's thought process and attitude. After that, he would try to evoke a heroic feeling in everyone.

Gu Du Xing had an idea – [Tie up the Gu Clan with the Heavenly Armament Pavilion! This is perhaps the only way out for the Gu Clan.]

Gu Du Xing felt a sense of embarrassment towards the Gu Clan as far as the wider view of the Middle Three Heavens was concerned. Almost all the other clans had an Emperor Level Expert to oversee their respective clans! However, the Gu Clan didn't. Gu Du Xing was one of the rising stars of the younger generation of the Middle Three Heavens... but, what was to be done if the Emperor Level Experts of the other clans were to attack them?

Therefore, how could he compare himself with the young masters of the other clans? After all, they had strong supports to back them! This had nothing to do with one's personal cultivation level. Instead, it had everything to do with abundant heritage and backing of the clan!

Heritage and backing! These were the true wealth of a clan. In fact, his clan's development would become an unrealistic notion if he were to work alone...

However, the Heavenly Armament Pavilion had created an opportunity. And, Gu Du Xing was convinced that Chu Yang would make the Heavenly Armament Pavilion rush to the Upper Three Heavens!

And, his clan would no longer be a lone army that struggles without support if some experts of the Gu Clan were to enter the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. Moreover, this could also be considered as a repayment to his foster father for everything he had done...

Therefore, Gu Du Xing wanted to put up his painstaking efforts into the 'Heavenly Armament Pavilion'. [It would be great if it succeeds! But, I would at least struggle along with my brothers if it doesn't.]

[I will gain life experience regardless of whether we succeed or not. And, that will be a magnificent feat in its own way. Moreover, I will have my brothers by my side. So, I'll have no regrets in life!]

News had recently come from the clan, and it had conveyed that his Elder Sister Xiao Miao's situation had improved a lot. His Elder Sister Xiao Miao had been released from the Dragon Prison Cave since his fame had risen. She was in house-arrest now. But, she wasn't allowed to show her face in public.

It was obvious that the residual anger of those old fogies in the clan hadn't faded-away yet.

However, Gu Du Xing's heart was very satisfied by this. In fact, he felt relieved. [I will reach the Emperor Level. After that, I will immediately marry Elder Sister Xiao Miao and take her as my wife!]

[As for those old and stubborn fools in the clan... they will enjoy a good life in retirement!]

Gu Du Xing was progressing with great effort, but Chu Yang and others were wantonly plundering and robbing. Anyone who was going to the North on this road wasn't mediocre by any means. And, everyone had valuable belongings with them. So, they obviously weren't poor either.

They would go alone sometimes, and sometimes in the teams.

After that, they would capture and loot! However, they were frank and honorable robbers. They would wear strange masks, and would throw the name - ‘Heavenly Armament Pavilion’. And then, they would turn and leave in an abrupt fashion...

They would leave the ones they would rob with a desire to cry... but no tears to shed.

Some resistances were relatively more intense. People had even put their lives in danger...! Everyone had soon been doomed to panic at the slightest sound, and had started to treat everyone as their enemy along their journeys!

The popularity of the Heavenly Armament continued to increase. And, the rumors of the acts of these robbers spread overnight like forest-fire. One rumor even said that a seventh grade King Level Expert had been robbed by them! And, this had left everyone shocked and astonished...

[Heavenly Armament Pavilion?! What in the world is this organization?]

It was already dark in the night. Everyone was quiet, and at rest. A faintly discernable and graceful white shadow came over at this moment. She arrived so smoothly that it seemed as if a fairy had suddenly come riding the wind... after having fallen from the ninth heaven...

This person was a graceful woman. And, it was obvious that she had arrived here after having pursued her target from Mt. Dingjun. In fact, she had already gone after the barracks of a few clans. She had charged in, and had only asked one thing, "Who knows Chu Yang? Is Chu Yang here?"

However, she could get only one explanation in reply, "He’s the one who uncovered the evil technique of the Meng Clan."

Most of them didn’t know where Chu Yang was. Therefore, she went asking throughout the entire journey. And, she eventually

tracked down and chased after the people of the Ao Clan during nightfall.

The cultivation level of this woman was very high. The experts of the Ao Clan couldn't withstand her formidable aura. Therefore, Ao Xie Yun personally appeared to negotiate with her.

"Chu Yang?" Ao Xie Yun wrinkled his brows, "Why are you looking for him?"

"I'm looking for him to settle an account!" that woman snorted and replied.

"He isn't here with us. Go and look for the Ji Clan, Luo Clan, Gu Clan and Dong Clan if you want to find him. Brother Chu would certainly be in one of those clans," Ao Xie Yun showed her the clear direction in a refined and courteous manner.

The white-robed woman departed immediately-after. She continued to look for Chu Yang, and went to the slowest clan first... this was obviously the Ji Clan. The Eldest Young Master Ji Zhu had sleepy eyes and a drowsy look. It was obvious that he didn't know where Chu Yang was. Therefore, she left and pursued forward...

This woman was Yang Ruo Lan. She had returned from the Lower Three Heavens.

She was passing through the Middle Three Heavens. And, she obviously wanted to find the heartless youth who had abandoned her junior sister. She wanted to teach him a lesson since she had never seen such a heartless man. He had gotten up, and left in a very selfish fashion. He didn't even know anything... he didn't have any tender sentiments or sweet intentions. Instead, he wasn't even aware of the situation!

[Its fine for you to not be aware of many things in life. But, how can you be irresponsible-enough to not know about this?]

[That's your child!]

She recalled that she had lost her child, and had been depressed for years as a result. She had constantly been frowning in worry ever since. She had wanted to find her child, but couldn't. Yang Ruo Lan was completely unaware that the man who she hated, and thought was very irresponsible... was actually her own child!

[This is such an enviable domestic bliss, and you're actually going to abandon this?]

Yang Ruo Lan wanted to capture Chu Yang so that she could ask him – [Are you not a man?! Don't you have the least bit of conscience left?]

She went through the troops of the Luo Clan and the Dong Clan as well. And, Yang Ruo Lan eventually set a clear-cut target – [He must be in the Gu Clan! It would be an easy task from here on]. So, she started to approach random troops, and asked them only one sentence, "Are you the people of Gu Clan?"

She would continue the pursuit if they weren't...

She continued to pursue until it was the middle of the night. At last, she saw the location of a camping area ahead!

Yang Ruo Lan swiftly landed, and walked towards the camp.

Luo Ke Di had slipped away, and had gone for a stroll. He was returning from his stroll at this time. And, he was waiting for Chu Yang and the others to return. In fact, he was even fantasizing in his heart, [Loots, ah! This is so amazing, ah. I don't know what all things I would get in my share after they come back...]

He would become very excited whenever he'd think about it. So, he'd go out on a stroll from time to time to see if they had come.

Soon, the moon was at its peak in the sky. But, they hadn't returned yet. So, he thought of going to bed.

A pleasant voice was heard from the outside at this moment. It clearly, yet coldly asked, "Excuse me, is this the camping area of the Gu Clan?"

Luo Ke Di was startled. So, he reflexively replied, "Yes, it is. Who are you?"

"I finally found it!" Yang Ruo Lan let out a sigh of relief, "Is the man called Chu Yang here?"

Luo Ke Di laughed heartily and said, "Ahwooh~~~ who is looking for m... e..." He wanted to say, ‘who is looking for my Big Brother?’ But, Gu Du Xing had already woken up by now. And, he had also heard that someone was looking for Chu Yang so late in the night. So, he couldn’t help but have a cold feeling in his heart. He managed to stop Luo Ke Di by holding his arm. He then hurriedly whispered to him, "Don’t leak Big Brother’s information. First, ask her who she is."

However, Gu Du Xing was too late to stop him. Luo Ke Di had already spoken half of it.

Therefore, it should’ve been ‘who is looking for my Big Brother?’ But, Luo Ke Di had swallowed half of it. And, it became, ‘who is looking for m... e...?’

This obviously wasn’t what he had intended to say.

In fact, it was contextually opposite of what Luo Ke Di had wanted to say. However, that was all irrelevant!

The person outside seemed to be startled at first. Then, she said, "You are Chu Yang?" her voice had already become cold. And, her berserk and murderous aura was on the verge of exploding.

[Such intense murderous aura...? Has she come to carry out a vendetta against Chu Yang?]

Luo Ke Di felt a deep heroic feeling surging inside himself, [Motherfu*ker! Big Brother isn’t here. Let me take his place and make her leave! She came to us to carry out a vendetta against our brother. Damn! She’s very courageous!]

[How can I – Second Master Luo – demonstrate my matchless military glory if I don’t even teach her a lesson?]

Luo Ke Di lifted the curtain of the tent. Then, he walked out of the tent in a proud and carefree manner with his nose held high. He then asked arrogantly, "Ahwooh, Ahwooh... Wa ha ha ha. Beautiful woman, why are you looking for me – Chu Yang? Ha ha ha ha..."

[This is Chu Yang...? So, this is that bastard?!] Yang Ruo Lan became so angry that she nearly fainted... [Junior Sister, ah! Junior Sister, ah! What kind of a taste do you have...]

...

Chapter 499: An Accident Arises From Many Causes

"You're Chu Yang? King of Hell Chu...?" Yang Ruo Lan looked at this rascal whose front lapel was opened obliquely. This flashy looking Young Master was somewhat unbelievable.

"What's wrong?" Luo Ke Di mischievously laughed, "Aren't I very handsome?"

"Very well!" The rage within Yang Ruo Lan's eyes blazed more and more. She slowly nodded, "Chu Yang, do you still remember what 'good deed' you have done in the Lower Three Heavens?"

"Good deed... he he he..." Luo Ke Di was startled. She had genuinely come to carry out a vendetta, "I have done a lot of them. Ha-ha, I generally do good deeds, but I often don't take the credit. I have noble character and unquestionable integrity. I never demand anything in return..."

Yang Ruo Lan blew her top, "You had thoughtless s*x, and then abandoned the girl. You, filthy man! You are only playing innocent! You don't have the least bit of conscience! You have committed a sin, you're utterly heartless! Don't you have any sense of shame? You even have guts to boast about it?!"

Luo Ke Di became startled at this. He spat out a mouthful of saliva. Then, he cursed, "Nonsense!"

His voice hadn't even faded when he saw a white shadow flashing. This graceful woman had already arrived near him. And, he was startled by this, [She's so fast!]

He was about to dodge. But, he felt a tight grip on his neck. After that, his neck was ruthlessly grabbed and pinched.

Luo Ke Di screamed. The 'smack''smack''smack''smack' sounds of a dozen or more slaps were heard before he could react. Consequently, Second Master Luo's head wobbled from left to

right in a wildly hysteric manner.

‘Thump!’ a loud sound echoed as he was pounded onto the ground by his neck. Then, he was sent flying in the air by a kick. He hadn’t even fall on the ground by the time he had been kicked more than dozens of feet away in succession. He didn’t even have enough time to scream!

A ‘thump’ was heard again as he finally crashed to the ground. Then, she resolutely stepped on his neck. Luo Ke Di issued a stuffy groan. His face got covered in soil, and some of it even went inside his mouth. He had been overtaken by grieves and pain in this moment...

His limbs twitched for a moment. His eyes rolled back, and revealed the white of his eyes as he issued ‘boohoo’ sounds. And, he kept paddling his legs while being chocked.

"I will show you what happens when you abandon your conscience!" Yang Ruo Lan was so angry that she punched and kicked him to vent her anger. She would also curse him while she thrashed him.

"Senior, please stop! Calm your rage. Let’s talk it out..." Gu Du Xing was watching this from one side. He hadn’t expected that such an unexpected turn of events would take place...

However, there wasn’t enough time to think about how to react since the situation had already gotten into a deadlock. Therefore, saying ‘please stop, let’s talk it out’ wasn’t going to work. So, he also pulled out the sword, and dashed over in an impatient manner.

He was clearly no match for this woman if their martial powers were taken into consideration. But, he also couldn’t see his own brother getting beaten up.

Yang Ruo Lan became angrier in her heart, [They are jackals of the same mound!]

She fiercely waved the sleeves of her robe. And, she used the power of her Emperor level cultivation as she did it. Consequently, the sleeves of her robe went out hitting like a large steel-plate.

Gu Du Xing's sword pierced the sleeves with a 'chi' sound. But, he felt suffocating sensation in his chest the next moment. And, he was sent flying by an incomparable force!

Comparing himself and an Emperor level powerhouse would be like comparing the fluorescence of the sun and the moon. He was sent flying hundreds of feet away. Then, he fell on the ground with a 'thud'. His whole body ached as he got up. He felt as if his body was falling apart.

However, Yang Ruo Lan also felt gloomy in her heart. In fact, she had been startled. [This was the 'Drifting Cloud Iron Sleeves' technique – a 'master art' of the Yang Clan. How did it get pierced by the meager sword of a Sword King?] She had also felt a dense 'sword intention'. And, it left her heart to beat like a drum...

The ten King Level Experts of the Gu Clan rushed over. They surrounded her from all directions, and were about to launch an attack.

Gu Du Xing became greatly alarmed. He suppressed the discomfort in his body, and shouted out loud, "You're not allowed to attack. Senior, please stop! This is a misunderstanding... he is..."

He had clearly understood that they won't be able to get away alive from here if he genuinely provoked this woman!

Yang Ruo Lan coldly snorted. This cold snort echoed to the bottom of the hearts of everyone like a great thunderclap. And, everyone's body was suddenly shaken by its impact. Gu Du Xing was about to speak, but he got interrupted by an incredible sonic wave. He then saw dazzling stars revolve before his eyes.

"A true man must have the courage to accept the consequences of his actions!" Yang Ruo Lan looked at the 'King of hell Chu' under

her foot. She felt extremely disappointed. She then said, "You're unworthy of my Junior Sister. A man like you doesn't deserve her!"

She raised her leg, and kicked Luo Ke Di again. But then, her body floated back, "Today, I'm sparing your petty life for the time being. But, someone would come looking for you and teach you a lesson in future!"

She gently let out a sigh. Then, she turned over in midair, and flew away as lightly as a feather. She then suddenly sped up, and disappeared before everyone's eyes with a 'whistling' sound.

She then turned around, and left straight for the Upper Three Heavens.

Luo Ke Di screamed as he fell to the ground. He knocked against a stump where a horse was tied up. And, he went rolling under the buttocks of the horse. Then, he crawled up while whining. He felt that there was no part of his body that was not aching, "What kind of a sin have I committed, ah..."

Gu Du Xing was speechless.

[How could we have reached an agreement on this matter? The other party had clearly come looking for Chu Yang to carry out a vendetta against him. And, it probable that she had been instigated...]

However, Gu Du Xing didn't believe that Chu Yang could do such a filthy deed of 'having thoughtless s*x, and abandoning the girl later'. Chu Yang wasn't that kind of man!

Luo Ke Di had taken his place in this calamity... as a brother should have done. But, Gu Du Xing thought that there was something wrong about this matter...

This matter was an accident that had arisen from many causes. Chu Yang and Yang Ruo Lan would only have needed to exchange a few sentences if they had met face to face, and he would've realized

that this lady was his long-lost mother.

Moreover, Yang Ruo Lan would've also been able to sense that Chu Yang seemed familiar by using her 'motherly instincts'... Perhaps she could've recognized him fairly early-on. And, she would've known that he was her own son when that time would've come. Then, would Yang Ruo Lan have concealed that she was his mother?

However... such a big misunderstanding had ended up happening... It could be said that it was providence...

Yang Ruo Lan bitterly went away. It wasn't known how many months... or how many years she would have to wait to meet her son...

"Second Brother Gu... boohoo..." Luo Ke Di's snot and tears were streaming down as he inspected his injuries. He almost wailed, "Two of my ribs have broken... the tendons of my both ankles have twisted. My shoulder got dislocated. And, I can't move my neck... boohoo... my buttocks feel numb. And, my face has also swollen..."

"Awful! That's so pitiful!" Gu Du Xing was shocked.

"Second Brother, save my life..." Luo Ke Di was in a very tragic state, "I, I... I almost died on behalf of Big Brother, ah. I've made this devotion to him. Second Brother, you can take the credit on my behalf when Big Brother comes back, ah... but please save me... Ow Ow..."

Gu Du Xing shook his head, and heaved a sigh. He thought to wait for Chu Yang's return so that he could tell him about this incident. Then, he went and carefully picked-up Luo Ke Di in his arms. He then went in to heal him.

...

Chu Yang, Dong Wu Shang, and Ji Mo had made a new discovery.

There was just endless wasteland stretched across. There was no road to be seen!

These three people had decided to go back to the camp after they had looted several people. But, they discovered that some people were covertly coming over from the other direction. Their speed was very quick. These people were more than twenty in number, and they all were experts!

Chu Yang accidently discovered them. And, a big suspicion arose in his heart.

[The people on this route are basically going north. None of them has anything to hide since their target is fairly obvious. So, going stealthily loses its meaning...]

[But, what is going on with this team? Just look at their strength... they don't need to be afraid of anything, ah. So, what is the need of traveling stealthily in such a hurry in the dark of the night?]

Therefore, these three men signaled to each other, and secretly jumped up to follow this group.

These 22 men were moving while taking advantage of the cover of the trees. Chu Yang and others quietly followed them. There were more than 20 King Level Experts! And, they were being led by two men who had unfathomable cultivations. Such a team could easily intimidate someone at a first glance!

Chu Yang, Dong Wu Shang, and Ji Mo didn't dare to think about robbing this group...

They themselves would've gotten robbed if they had even attempted such a feat...

These people remained silent throughout the entire journey. They didn't speak a word with each other. They rushed for more than ten kilometers. And, nothing could be heard... except for the sound of their footsteps!

Chu Yang felt somewhat surprised by this. [What kind of a team is this? What mission do they have? They seem to be so cautious!]

Soon, they were about to turn around a corner. Suddenly, one of the men who were leading them issued a ‘whiz’. He stretched his head, and looked ahead. Then, he waved his hand, and the rest of the men bent down and gathered together to listen this man whisper, "There’s nobody ahead. Besides, we are already ahead of everyone except for the Dark Bamboo. So, you guys can relax a little. Take rest here for a while. And then, we will hasten-on with our journey before the dawn breaks!"

The others didn’t say a word in reply. They made four groups of five, and sat down in circles. The remaining two men stood guard behind them.

Dong Wu Shang moved close to Chu Yang’s ear and whispered, "People of Meng Clan..."

Chu Yang was startled. He slowly nodded.

[Meng Luo’s clan?]

Chu Yang immediately understood. He had exposed the evil technique of the Meng Clan, and hence they had become the target of public criticism. However, they still wanted to get their hands on a ninth grade spirit beast. So, they had to separate from the other troops to try out their luck.

[They themselves have caused such circumstances.]

Chu Yang heard that man speak again in a low voice. In fact, his voice was filled with hatred, "It was our bad luck this time. We could have gone with the other aristocratic clans... without having to be ashamed if it weren’t for that little son of a bi*ch Chu Yang!"

Another man puzzlingly said, "But, this matter is somewhat mysterious. It has been several hundred years since our clan discovered this incomplete and damaged technique. No one could ever master it. I’m almost certain that... this technique has never been seen in the Middle Three Heavens. So, no one must’ve known about this, ah! How come that person knew how to crack it even

though the Young Master had used it for the first time?"

He pondered and added in a low voice... it seemed as if he was thinking out loud, "Even our Meng Clan doesn't know how to crack it... How did he know? There's a lot to think over regarding this matter, ah."

"Wait for this event to end. After that, we will catch that boy and interrogate him properly," another man said in a dark manner, "Perhaps we will make some profit out of it."

"We will encircle and hunt this time... but, it is difficult to say how it would turn out." That previous man sighed and said, "It's just that ninth grade spirit beasts have never appeared in the Middle Three Heavens. So, everyone wants to have a piece of it... there will be so many experts over there. And, we may not be able to obtain anything even if we put our lives at stake!"

"I have heard that there are more than one ninth grade spirit beasts," another man objected and said, "So, we can also get something at least, right? Moreover, we would have the advantage of time over those clans which are far behind if we arrive four or five days in advance. And, we can reap a great profit during this period of time."

Everyone said 'yes' one after another.

Chu Yang silently gave a hand signal, and these three men quietly moved back.

They moved away to a distant section of road. Then, Chu Yang stopped. He thoughtfully stroked his chin.

[Meng Luo is obviously present in there.]

[It's good that the people of Meng Clan are counting their chickens before the eggs have hatched. They are hastening-on with their journey without sparing day or night. They also want to arrive a few days earlier to gain the advantage of time and make profits... Humph! Humph! But, you have allowed me to find out

about this plan of yours. How can King of Hell allow you to have your wish?]

[Your Meng Luo dared to target my Mo Qing Wu! Wouldn’t I be unfair to myself if I allowed you to have a comfortable life?]

Chapter 500: Lets Someone Else Do His Dirty Work

"Big Brother, what should we do?" Dong Wu Shang asked in a low voice.

Chu Yang pondered for a moment, and said, "I just realized that I never asked anything about these ninth grade spirit beasts. But, it seems to be very important for the Meng Clan from what we saw today. And... perhaps this thing is useful for the other clans as well. Otherwise, that old man wouldn't have said 'even if we put our lives at stake'."

Dong Wu Shang and Ji Mo nodded. The clans in the Middle Three Heavens had many King Level Experts. But, it would be absurd if they were told to sacrifice their lives...!

And, that was because these King Level Experts were the basic support of these clans. And, the Emperor Level Experts were the main backing. As for the expert at even higher levels... it was unknown.

"Let's dig deeper to be on the safe side. Wu Shang, you might as well tell everything you know about this matter." Chu Yang said.

Dong Wu Shang nodded and said, "Big Brother, there's a legend you must have heard about... there used to be nine major races in the Nine Heavens. Our Human Race was one of them. And, the strange technique of the Meng Clan is a lost technique of Devil race. So, it is referred to as devil technique.

"However, the Beast race also had similar techniques. The spirit beasts of present times carry the bloodline of the Beast race. The only difference is that they don't have the status that they used to have at that time. And, they rarely change into human-form beasts now... or you can say, the heritage of the Beast race doesn't exist in the Middle Three Heavens anymore.

"But, the Beast race was very prosperous once upon a time. They used to have heroes pouring forth in large number. Some of the powerful beast clans used to marry human women, and would even take them as concubines. They reproduced and bred... it was the most chaotic era. Every race used to intermarry. So, the blood relations were also very complicated..."

Chu Yang nodded. He continued to listen very patiently.

"At that time, there was a powerhouse who accidently found a ninth grade spirit beast that was on the verge of its death. So, this individual drank its blood. And, they then refined its inner core. After that, they discovered that this had accidently opened something incredible within himself..."

Dong Wu Shang took a deep breath and said, "This was the blood inheritance."

"Consequently, the human race came to know that... one can sometimes obtain formidable power by obtaining the blood and inner core of spirit beasts. Moreover, they had a flash of realization that this method could enable them to even comprehend the powerful cultivation methods of the Beast Race. Then, they could witness an instant advancement, and become powerful experts!

"Therefore, the spirit beasts of the Nine Heavens have become everyone’s target."

Chu Yang wrinkled his brows and asked, "Has this happened several times before?"

"There are dozens of examples. In addition, some people have also written down their personal experiences." Dong Wu Shang forced a smile and said, "Therefore, this matter is authentic.

"There are many spirit beasts in the Middle Three Heavens. But, the ones that have surpassed the seventh grade aren’t too many in number. You may swallow the spirit beasts that are grade seven or lower, but it’s not necessary that you would be able to open any

bloodline... or obtain any inheritance...

"However, the ninth grade spirit beasts have appeared this time. So, the great aristocratic clans are obviously trying out their lucks. In fact, obtaining the mere blood of one ninth grade spirit beasts would be more than what they had hoped for..."

Dong Wu Shang sighed.

Chu Yang silently nodded, "So, that's how it is. Let's say they obtain the inheritance and open the bloodline... then what?"

"There used to be two clans in the Middle Three Heavens three-hundred years ago. One was the Miao Clan, and the other was the Mu clan. They had opened the bloodlines by gaining access to the inheritance of the Beast race. They then swept away the Middle Three Heavens. And, they eventually took their clans to rush straight into the Upper Three Heavens! The horror of it could be clearly seen, ah..."

Dong Wu Shang exposed look of envy in his eyes. After all, leading their clan to the Upper Three Heavens was the dream of every clan in the Middle Three Heavens. He further added, "Both the clans became a huge sensation in the Upper Three Heavens. After that, the Miao Clan got the acknowledgement of the Li Clan, and they became allies. Later, they became relatives by marriage, and changed the clan name from Miao to Li. But, this newly branched Li Clan got banished a hundred years later. And, most of their experts got beheaded. So, the Li Clan again came down to the Middle Three Heavens. And, now it is the same Li Clan which Li Xiong Tu belongs to!"

"The other clan – Mu Clan was cleverer. It is still in the Upper Three Heavens. I have heard that it is one of the medium-sized clans of the Upper Three Heavens." Dong Wu Shang mischievously smiled.

Chu Yang nodded. Then, he took a deep breath and said, "I understand the whole thing now. It's not surprising that people

have made a big fuss about the emergence of these ninth grade spirit beasts."

"This has to be that big of a fuss... Who doesn't wish to rush to the Upper Three Heavens? They would go even if they would have to become minions in the Upper Three Heavens. Damn it!" Dong Wu Shang spat.

"Don't you?" Chu Yang smiled and asked, "Don't you want to lead the Dong Clan to the Upper Three Heavens?"

Dong Wu Shang erected his thick eyebrow and said, "Obviously, I want to! I do wish to go there. But, I don't want to go up to work as a slave!" He spoke in a low and deep voice, "I have decided that I – Dong Wu Shang – will replace one of the clans of the Upper Three Heavens if I ever go there! And, I would rather not go up if I can't!"

Chu Yang patted on his shoulder. Then, he slightly smiled and spoke, "You can do it!"

Ji Mo was standing on one side. He suddenly interrupted and said, "You don't want to be a slave. But, that doesn't mean your clan isn't willing too either! Wu Shang, it would probably be beyond your control if that time comes."

Dong Wu Shang looked up and let out a long sigh. Then, he patted his black saber with a desolate expression on his face.

"That time hasn't come yet." Chu Yang indifferently said, "Besides, he he, you don't know what the circumstances would be at that time..."

"Come on, we must go back." Chu Yang stood up.

"Big Brother, what about the matter of the Meng Clan?" Ji Mo was shocked. [Would we not deal with them?]

"We will send a letter to Young Master Yu after we go back." Chu Yang softly replied, "I believe that he will know what is to be done. In addition... We will make Du Xing mobilize a few men of his clan. We will tell them to overtake the Meng Clan. Then, we might

obtain the blood of spirit beast. And, we will perhaps obtain it very early... We won't need to attack ourselves. The Meng Clan have become infamous... he he, we sometimes don't have to dirty our own hands to kill someone."

Ji Mo prostrated himself in admiration, "Big Brother is indeed... so clever, ah! You are on a whole new level when it comes to being sinister..."

The three of them returned to the Gu Clan's camp, and found that the entire camp was in a mess. They couldn't help but become shocked. They walked fast, and went in...

It was tragic sight to see Luo Ke Di lying down inside the tent. Chu Yang angrily asked, "What happened?"

Gu Du Xing wanted to say something, but stopped. He merely stood there since he felt that it wouldn't be good to open his mouth at this time. So, he coughed a few times. But, he eventually explained the whole incident.

Chu Yang got furious, "What do you mean by 'filthy man who had illicit se*ual relation and abandoned the girl'? Where did that come from? This accusation is going too far!"

"That woman ought to be an Emperor Level Expert!" Gu Du Xing reminded.

"Emperor Level Expert... I will slaughter that Emperor Level Expert..." Chu Yang exposed a cold expression in his eyes, "Which direction did she go in? How dare she injure our coyote?"

"His injuries aren't that serious. That woman's attacks were well-calculated," Gu Du Xing explained, "These are merely external injuries. He will suffer a few days of pain at the most. The suffering would be endless. But, he hasn't sustained any grave injuries...

"It's just that... his ribs are somewhat in trouble. Coyote said that they have broken. But, I have checked. They haven't. But, I don't

know what method was used that his ribs have become very soft. Two of his ribs have joined together into one... I'm afraid he would have to suffer a lot of pain if we try to separate them."

Gu Du Xing was somewhat bewildered since he didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"This guy is too much... could you not ask that woman to wait for a moment since I wasn't here? But, you just had to raise your head for me, and take the blame in my place!" Chu Yang let out a sigh. But, he felt warm in his heart. [My brother would prefer to be beaten up or killed... But, he would still take the blow in my place...]

"I will have a look at coyote's injuries. Wu Shang, you handle the matter that we discussed earlier, and tell Du Xing what to do." Chu Yang squatted down. He channelled his spiritual power to his palm, and started to permeate through Luo Ke Di's body.

Luo Ke Di mischievously laughed, "It's not necessary, Big Brother. I would have let you come if I had known that she wanted to beat you so badly... ha ha, this feeling is very unpleasant. Ahwooh..."

"Shut up! Even such heavy injuries can't keep your mouth shut..." Chu Yang mocked him in a happy mood. [Playing the clown all the time has become this guy's habit...]

He took out an incomplete version of the Nine Tribulations pill from his bosom. He then made this guy open his mouth, and stuffed the pill in. After that, he waited for the medicinal efficacies to circulate in his whole body. Then, he suddenly put his hands on Luo Ke Di's chest. And, he separated his two ribs with a 'snap' sound.

"Oh my fu*k~~~" Luo Ke Di bellowed in pain. He was sweating all over his face, "... Good~ I feel good!"

The brothers couldn't help but burst into laughter at once.

Chu Yang glared at him in a strict manner. Then, he carefully examined him again. And, he discovered that Luo Ke Di didn't have any other major injury. The other spots had only suffered small dislocations; nothing more...

Luo Ke Di exercised a few times. Then, he hopped up, and landed on the tip of his toes. He twisted his body a few times. Then, he moved his ankles. He couldn't help but click his tongue in wonder, "There is no pain... it's so strange... what a pity..."

"What's the pity in this?" Ji Mo slanted his eyes and asked.

Luo Ke Di put on a mourning look on his face, "Motherfu*ker, how come my feet don't hurt? It would've been good if they still hurt..."

"Why?" Dong Wu Shang was also somewhat puzzled. [He didn't want his injuries to be healed?]

"I wouldn't have to carry five-hundred kilograms of weight on my back tomorrow and run on the journey if my feet were still to hurt..." Luo Ke Di replied in a disappointed manner, "I could just ride on a horse. I would very much enjoy seeing you guy carry a mountain on your backs while I'd drink wine and eat meat on my ride. In fact, I would've even cheered for you guys to make extra effort..."

His voice hadn't even faded, and Dong Wu Shang and Ji Mo had landed beside him to greet him with kicks and punches...

These brothers had turned into a lot in no time...

....

Mo Tian Yun proceeded on his journey at the fastest possible speed. He was leading the experts of his clan as he gloomily rushed towards his own clan. Mo Tian Ji was also rushing wildly towards the clan from some other direction.

This would be the first time in history that these brothers would return home at the same time!

Mo Tian Yun had been out of luck throughout the whole journey. To the extent that he became so twitchy that he wanted to kill someone...

And, that was because everyone thought that Mo Tian Yun had deliberately given out false information to manipulate the gambling on Mt. Dingjun since Gu Du Xing seemingly hadn't sustained any injuries...

[Motherfu*ker! Mo Tian Yun gave out false information! And, he's himself a banker. God knows how much profit he has earned in this gambling...]

Mo Tian Yun was penniless at this time, but he had become filthy rich in the eyes of people! In fact, he was like an incomparably fat cash-cow in their eyes. The anger of being deceived, coupled with the greed of wealth, had made a disastrous mixture...

Mo Tian Yun had met seven or eight groups of people who had blocked his way, and had tried to rob him on his journey.

This had made Mo Tian Yun vomit out blood.

In addition, another rumor had slowly spread in the Middle Three Heavens, and this one had made Mo Tian Yun's mood even gloomier. In fact, his misery had reached a point where only suicide could save him...

Young Master Tu Qian Hao of Tu Clan had announced a reward in the Middle Three Heavens – Young Master Tu would bestow a reward of 10 million on the person who would catch Mo Tian Yun!

This price couldn't be considered as 'low'. And, it had caused Young Master Mo Tian Yun even more difficulty on his journey.

...

Table of Contents

- Transcending the Nine Heavens
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 401: What Do You Mean?
  - Chapter 402: Doesn't it look like…? Doesn't it look like…?
  - Chapter 403: This is the Backstory!
  - Chapter 404: Heaven Shakes and Earth Moves
  - Chapter 405: The Gods Fight… the Mortals Suffer a Calamity?
  - Chapter 406: You Can Rest Assured… We Will Take Good Care of Her
  - Chapter 407: Push… Push…
  - Chapter 408: Everyone Buried Alive
  - Chapter 409: Sword Spirit Wakes Up
  - Chapter 410: Mysterious Yang Jade Essence
  - Chapter 411: King of Hell Chu Commands the Army!
  - Chapter 412: Calling Me 'Daddy' is Useless!
  - Chapter 413: What Does It Mean to Get Rid of Somebody Once He Has Served His Purpose?
  - Chapter 414: Thank Heavens for He Came Back!
  - Chapter 415: Isn't This What You Want?
  - Chapter 416: I'm Already a Legend!
  - Chapter 417: Nine Revolutions Mysterious Yin
  - Chapter 418: Unusual Transformation in the Sky's Appearance!
  - Chapter 419: The Minister is Shocked!
  - Chapter 420: Stupid C*nt, Are You Tired?
  - Chapter 421: The Moment of Decisive Battle?
  - Chapter 422: What is Diwu Qing Rou Doing Here?
  - Chapter 423: Let's Talk Frankly and Openly!
  - Chapter 424: Condition!
  - Chapter 425: A Foolproof Plan!
  - Chapter 426: The Decisive Battle Begins!
  - Chapter 427: Diwu Departs
  - Chapter 428: Who Was the One Who I?
  - Chapter 429: Bu Tian Pavilion Vs Golden Horse Riders Department
  - Chapter 430: Proposes Marriage?
  - Chapter 431: I Become Your Wife, and You Also Become My Wife?

Chapter 432: How Can Such A Thing Happen in the World?
Chapter 433: The Hero who Controls the World Dreams to See Soldiers and Swords No More
Chapter 434: She Was Called Little Tian Tian
Chapter 435: Leaves on a Long Journey!
Chapter 436: Arrives in the Middle Heaven
Chapter 437: Mo Qing Wu's Last Hope!
Chapter 438: Big Brother Chu Yang, Please Come Soon ah...
Chapter 439: The Middle Three Heavens is in Chaos!
Chapter 440: Botches the Blame onto Someone Else!
Chapter 441: Meets Chu Fei Ling for the First Time
Chapter 442: The Path of the Nine Tribulations Sword's Master!
Chapter 443: Obey Me, and Prosper; Defy Me, and Perish!
Chapter 444: Saber Emperor Wages War!
Chapter 445: Taking Drastic Measures to Deal with a Situation!
Chapter 446: What Harm is there in Slaughtering the Entire World? Slaughters a Saber Emperor!
Chapter 447: Who's the Murderer?
Chapter 448: I'm the Murderer; What of It?!
Chapter 449: What a Coincidence… We Are Both Surnamed Chu...
Chapter 450: Isn't it Just the Mysterious Yang Jade? Thought it'd be Something Great…
Chapter 451: Became Sworn Brothers?!
Chapter 452: A Gift for the First Meeting
Chapter 453: Your Son is Definitely Handsome, Confident and Dashing...
Chapter 454: A Timely Meeting with the Second Master Ji!
Chapter 455: Ji Mo's Romantic Outlook and Love Affair
Chapter 456: Noisy and Chaotic...
Chapter 457: Mo Qing Wu Leaves Home
Chapter 458: I'm Called Jun Xi Zhu!
Chapter 459: It's Impossible? Even For a Supreme?!
Chapter 460: The Best Treasure of the Nine Heavens?
Chapter 461: My Principle is to Make a Profit!
Chapter 462: I Must Ask Elder Brother Chu Yang...
Chapter 463: I Don't Feel Any Regret Deep down!
Chapter 464: Whose Child Is It?
Chapter 465: Such a Silly Girl!
Chapter 466: Ruo Lan, Go and Teach That Bastard A Lesson!
Chapter 467: Brothers Reunite!

Chapter 468: Battles Meng Luo!
Chapter 469: Force You to Reveal Your Hidden Trump!
Chapter 470: Breaking the Vivid Spring Dream Divine Technique!
Chapter 471: Terrible Rumors
Chapter 472: Whose Victory Are You Betting On?
Chapter 473: Wow! I Want to See Elder Brother Chu Yang!
Chapter 474: King of Hell Chu Participates in Gambling
Chapter 475: I'll Make You go Bankrupt!
Chapter 476: Tangled and Complicated
Chapter 477: Do Such Brothers Really Exist?
Chapter 478: Saint Level Sparring Partner… Worth it!
Chapter 479: The Power of Dark Bamboo Rules the World!
Chapter 480: Discord Between Brothers
Chapter 481: Cheated You? But How?
Chapter 482: Chu Yang Becomes Furious!
Chapter 483: Reunion
Chapter 484: Elder Brother Chu Yang, I'm so happy
Chapter 485: "Snatch the Wife, Snatch the Wife..."
Chapter 486: Gao Sheng, Do You Dare to Marry?
Chapter 487: Dong Wu Shang versus Li Xiong Tu!
Chapter 488: Gu Du Xing, A Decisive Battle?
Chapter 489: You Got Duped!
Chapter 490: Mo Tian Yun's Tragedy
Chapter 491: Second Master Ji Enters the Arena!
Chapter 492: Ji Mo's Decisive Battle!
Chapter 493: You're My Wife Ahwooh…
Chapter 494: Demands the Gambling Debt!
Chapter 495: Humiliates Mo Tian Yun!
Chapter 496: Various Situations
Chapter 497: The Heaven Armament Pavilion Opens in the Middle Three Heavens!
Chapter 498: Yang Ruo Lan Arrives
Chapter 499: An Accident Arises From Many Causes
Chapter 500: Lets Someone Else Do His Dirty Work